



# DRAGON MARKED WAR GOD

BOOK 03

*Su Yue Xi*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Dragon-Marked War God

(龙纹战神)

by

**Su Yue Xi**

(火星引力)

# Synopsis

---

The once greatest Saint underneath the heavens has been reborn after one hundred years. He cultivates with mighty skills, and he fights to once again reach the top of the world!

Don't compete with me when it comes to concocting pills, 100% effectiveness means nothing to me.

Don't compete with me when it comes to cultivation speed, I won't be responsible when you die from embarrassment.

Don't compete with me when it comes to experience, as I'm an ancient ancestor.

The existence of Jiang Chen is destined to ridicule thousands of geniuses.....

# Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

---

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by ares @ [Xianxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 201 – A Perfect Fight

---

The True Dragon Flame was simply too formidable. Of course, it was also scaled with Jiang Chen's base strength. The Early Divine Core black crows was not Jiang Chen's match at all. Under the combined attack of the True Dragon Flames and the True Dragon Palm, it was instantly killed by the intense flames.

The Double Header Black Crow was a rare specie of the dark element, their had very powerful combat strength, and abilities that few people could guard against. An Early Divine Core Double Headed Black Crow was more than enough to fight an ordinary Mid Divine Core human warrior. However, since its opponent was Jiang Chen, it couldn't exercise all the advantages it had as a Double Headed Black Crow. Usually, they weren't afraid of any ordinary flames, but the mighty True Dragon Flame had proven to be their natural enemy.

Jiang Chen retracted the True Dragon Palm, then he retrieved the two demon souls. Ordinary Heavenly Core demon souls couldn't provide much help with forming new Dragon Marks, only Divine Core demon souls were sufficient.

These two Early Divine Core demon souls could help Jiang Chen form at least another 40 Dragon Marks, increasing his overall combat strength.

"A Double Headed Black Crow can give me two demon souls. Looks like I need to put more time into looking for these kinds of monsters in the future."

Jiang Chen smiled. Obtained two demon soul from killing only one demon beast, this was something really promising for Jiang Chen.

The True Dragon Flames flew towards the Black Crows once again, and it kept burning and killing them. Endless demon souls rolled out like steel balls into Jiang Chen's hand, and was immediately stored into his storage ring.

Caw...

Witnessing their leader being killed, the remaining Black Crows let out loud cries and burst into passionate weeping.

“Big Yellow, hurry up and run!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly. Using the True Dragon Flames, he tore open a path right in the middle of the Black Crows. With a flap of his blood wings, he turned into a trail of light and disappeared from the scene. Big Yellow dared not hesitate, and he quickly followed behind.

This flock of Black Crows was really frightening. They were incredibly fast, and they were extremely difficult to kill. If not for the True Dragon Flames, it would be at least ten times more difficult for them to escape from the trap.

Of course, the remaining Black Crow couldn't pose any threat to Jiang Chen and Big Yellow anymore, but they had no idea how

many Double Headed Black Crows lived in this area. The entire woods was probably their territory. Also, these Black Crows were actually calling for their mates. If all of a sudden more than a hundred, or even a thousand Black Crows stormed in, the two of them would have a hard time dealing with the situation.

Besides, they still had no clue about how dangerous Inferno Hell truly was. If there was even Mid Divine Core Black Crow, or even a Late Divine Core Black Crow, with Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's current combat strength, they would have a hard time defending themselves.

Therefore, the best strategy right now was to run away from here.

After Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had fled a small distance from the scene, they easily some noisy sounds coming out from the sudden. All of a sudden, the skies above were filled with Black Crows. All of them flapped their wings and started crazily chasing Big Yellow and Jiang Chen. The leading Black Crow had a gigantic body, and was at least 15 meters tall, and its cultivation base was at the Mid Divine Core realm.

“Oh my god!”

Big Yellow exclaimed, “So many Black Crows, I think there are at least a few hundred of them! Damn it! Buddy, luckily you were smart enough to ask me to run, if not, we would be trapped in an endless fight right now.”



“Save your breath and increase your speed! These Black Crows really live in a group, I think there are more of them.”

Jiang Chen violently flapped his blood wings and flew forwards with full force. Big Yellow dared not hesitate either; his wings of light glowed brightly in a golden light. The duo had increased their speed to its maximum.

Jiang Chen even used the Dimensional Shift skill to assist his speed. However, the Mid Divine Core Black Crow wasn't falling behind, it was actually catching up from behind.

“Buddy, that big guy is catching up.”

Big Yellow said.

“Don't worry, only that big guy is that fast, just let it chase. As long as the huge group behind it can't catch up, it'll be fine.”

Jiang Chen looked calm. His mind had no comparison, he could take any tense situation calmly without over reacting.

Big Yellow kept cursing as he escaped. It was really shameful for him to have to run away from the energy after having just arrived in Inferno Hell.

The Mid Divine Core Black Crow was incredibly fast, and it was only because both Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were abnormal monsters that they were able to flee. If it was some other ordinary



man being chase, he would have already been killed by its sharp beak.

The Black Crow kept chasing while letting out furious roars. Its eyes were fierce, and it kept spitting black poisonous mist from its mouth which took the shape of a sword and pierced towards Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. However, all the attacks were easily blocked by Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“Hmph! Just keep flying, once we are far away from the huge group of Black Crows, this Mid Divine Core Black Crow will die! Mid Divine Core demon beast’s demon soul, I can’t wait to get my hands on it!”

Jiang Chen said as he licked his lips.

“Buddy, you want to kill it?”

Big Yellow was surprised. It was a Mid Divine Core Black Crow, which possessed combat strength almost equal to an ordinary Late Divine Core warrior. Jiang Chen’s courage was huge.

“Yes, a Mid Divine Core Black Crow is really powerful, ordinary Late Divine Core warriors would be unable to fight it at all. But, that’s only because of its special abilities. The Black Crow is incredibly fast, it possess powerful poison, and its sharp beak is its most powerful weapon. However, when its opponent is me, all these advantages become useless. I don’t fear its poison, the True Dragon Flame is its natural enemy, and I have 410 Dragon Marks. I can easily kill an Early Divine Core warrior with my bare hands,

and I'm able to have a fair with a Mid Divine Core warrior. This Black Crow is restrained by my abilities, so I'm sure I can kill it."

Jiang Chen had a meticulous mind and a vast fighting experience. Even when he is in the middle of a fight, he can easily get hold of his and his enemy's advantages and disadvantages, and come out with a plan to win the fight. He never fought a battle where he is uncertain.

At the same time, Jiang Chen flipped his hand and retrieved two Early Divine Core demon souls and absorbed them immediately. With the help from the Dragon Transformation skill, they helped him form another 40 Dragon Marks, giving him a total of 450 Dragon Marks, as well as more confidence in dealing with the Black Crow chasing behind him.

Caw!

The Black Crow kept letting out furious roars. It was furious as it kept attacking from behind. The powerful energy coming from his body had scared off a lot of nearby demons and devils.

As for the huge group of Black Crows, they were ditched far behind, and couldn't be seen anymore.

"Looking at how the big guy is behaving, I think it'll only return after killing us."

Big Yellow said.

“Just let it come, I’ll let it taste something good later.”

A grin emerged on Jiang Chen’s face.

Inferno Hell was a really huge place. They flown another 300 miles, but they were still in the same desolated area.

Jiang Chen estimated that the huge group of Black Crows couldn’t catch up anytime soon, or they might even stop pursuing. So, he stopped and stood firmly. As long as he was far away from the Black Crows’ territory, he felt safe. In his mind, these Black Crows were just a great resource for him.

The Black Crow became startled upon seeing that the human and dog had stopped fleeing. In its mind, the duo should have kept running for their lives, it was really abnormal for them to suddenly stop, as it meant death.

Caw!

The Black Crow didn’t care so much. It dashed towards both of them immediately upon seeing them stop fleeing.

“Big Yellow, stay aside, let me handle it.”

Jiang Chen unleashed his energy and shout countless golden lights from his body, causing the air to tremble and ripples to

spread across the scene. There was even illusory dragons shaped from qi and blood hovering above his head, it seemed so powerful that few would dare face him.

“True Dragon Palm!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly as he unleashed the True Dragon Palm and threw it towards the Black Crow.

Bang!

A black colored barrier appeared outside of the Black Crow's body. It tried using its sharp beak to smash the dragon claw unleashed by Jiang Chen. But, the True Dragon Palm was a combat skill that could only be used by real dragons. It was extremely powerful, and although a gigantic hole was made by the beak, the massive force carried by the dragon claw still pushed the Black Crow back.

“What incredible combat strength! I think this attack carries at least a few million jins of force! Buddy is just an abnormal monster!”

Big Yellow who was standing aside had a face filled with astonishment.

“Hmph!”

Jiang Chen continued attacking, as he had won the first

exchange. With a sway of his body, he unleashed the Nine Phantom Wolves, and in an instant, nine identical Jiang Chens surrounded the Black Crow, confusing it.

Caw!

The Black Crow let out another loud cry as it shot out countless poisonous energies from its body, each piercing towards Jiang Chen. An attack like this would kill any ordinary man. But, Jiang Chen had no need to fear any deadly poison, or any dark energies.

Bang!

Suddenly, a sea of flames appeared in the skies. The golden colored flames danced around violently, and it seemed capable of burning the entire skies to a crisp. Nine Jiang Chens, no one could really see which one had started the fire, but when the poisonous gas met the flames, it was all burnt away without even a chance of harming Jiang Chen at all.

“Die!”

Jiang Chen cried out. A battle axe emerged in his hand, then he forcefully slashed towards the Black Crow with a thunderous light and a scorching flame. The flame made the Black Crow’s soul tremble.

Jiang Chen was simply too fast. Before the Black Crow had the time to respond, it had been cut in half by Jiang Chen’s attack, and

died on the spot.

Big Yellow was bouncing up and down next to Jiang Chen. He was thrown underneath Jiang Chen's feet because of admiration. He had just witnessed a true battle! Jiang Chen's way of killing the Black Crow was so smooth. Firstly, he had used the True Dragon Palm to force it back, and while it was immersed in shock, Jiang Chen distracted its focus with Nine Phantom Wolves. Then he unleashed the True Dragon Flames, which was the Black Crow's natural enemy, causing it to sink into a panicked state. And at last, he killed it with his battle axe. The entire battle could be considered a perfect fight.

Bang bang!

Jiang Chen unleashed his energy and shattered the Black Crow's body into tiny pieces. Then he grabbed the two demon souls.

“Buddy, you are damn awesome!”

Big Yellow said in an excited manner.

“Let's go, we need to leave this place and find a place for me to absorb these demon souls and increase my strength. In this place, only strength can guarantee survival.”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up as he started flying once again.

“Damn it! Daddy also wants to level up! Daddy wants to break

through to the Divine Core realm!”

Big Yellow couldn't help but curse. Inferno Hell was a really dangerous place. They were only at the border of Inferno Hell, and they had already bumped into such powerful demon beasts. This really told them how dangerous this place actually was.



## Chapter 202 – Consequences Of Looking Down On The Master Dog

---

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow finally left the desolate area. Due to its flat terrain, they didn't bump into any more demons or devils. The duo were travelling with extremely great speed, and they eventually found themselves a chilling and quiet valley.

“This place is filled with gloomy energies that can give people unpleasant moods. There are probably some demons or devils hiding somewhere here.”

Jiang Chen said.

“There are dangers everywhere in Inferno Hell, it is perfectly normal to bump into some strange things.”

Big Yellow nodded his head in agreement. After having spent some time here, he finally understood how dangerous this place was. Since their arrival, they had bumped into three strange creatures; the Evil Devil, the Nine Life Crystal Beast, and the Double Headed Black Crow. They might even bump into weirder and rarer creatures soon. But, no matter how many incredible the demons and devils were, Big Yellow wouldn't feel shocked anymore.

This was Inferno Hell. To any human cultivator, this place was just a deadly hell. It was a place of brutality, life-threatening scenarios, darkness, bloodshed and slaughter, and in order to keep one's life here, the person could only rely on his own strength.

Without incredible strength, the place could kill the person at any time.

“Big Yellow, help my guard while I cultivate. I’ll need to absorb these two demon souls from the Black Crow. Once I do so, I’ll probably have 600 Dragon Marks, and increase my combat strength to an incredible level. When that time comes, unless it’s some Late Divine Core warrior that personally strikes, I’ll be invincible.”

A smile emerged on Jiang Chen’s face. To him, the Mid Divine Core demon souls would provide great help. The combination of two demon souls could at least form 150 new Dragon Marks, and that combined with the existing 450 Dragon Marks, he would have a total of 600 Dragon Marks.

The combat strength he would get from 600 Dragon Marks was incredibly frightening. Jiang Chen was able to kill a Mid Divine Core warrior with his current strength and terrifying abilities, so if reached 600 Dragon Marks, the level of his mightiness would be beyond anyone’s imagination.

“Damn it! Every time, you ask daddy to ask to guard you while cultivating! When are you going to guard me while I cultivate?”

Big Yellow curled his lips. In his mind, he was still willing to guard Jiang Chen while he was cultivating.

“Next time you go to sleep, I’ll guard you for three days and three nights.”

Jiang Chen immediately promised with a serious expression. Soon after, he found a quiet place and immediately started absorbing the demon souls. With his current cultivation level, he couldn't go too fast when absorbing Mid Divine Core demon souls. It would probably take him at least an hour to completely absorb the two demon soul. If it was an Early Divine Core demon soul, he would be able to absorb it in just a few minutes.

The True Dragon Flames burst out and covered both demon souls. Soon after, the dark energies emitting from the were completely gone, and both demon souls turned into the purest energy forms. Without any hesitation, Jiang Chen swallowed both demon souls.

Bang!

Massive amounts of pure energy erupted from both demon souls and penetrated into all parts of Jiang Chen's body. With the Dragon Transformation skill leading the energy, the pure energies son entered his Qi Sea and started forming into new Dragon Marks which circulated around the Heavenly Core.

Jiang Chen's combat strength would increase whenever a new Dragon Mark was formed, and this was the most frightening part of the Dragon Transformation skill. It didn't have any requirements for breaking through. The Dragon Marks represented strength, and each Dragon Mark was equal to 10,000 jins of force. When the number of Dragon Marks increased to a great number, the total force it provided would be truly mighty. Also, when Jiang Chen cultivated the Dragon Transformation skill

to its highest realm, his combat strength would reach the absolute peak. [\[1\]](#)

After half an hour, Jiang Chen had leisurely absorbed one of the demon souls, and his energy had increase by a lot. Because of this, his rising energy had attracted some uninvited trouble.

Roar!

Load roars came from not far away and sounded out throughout the entire valley. After that, two massive creatures appeared not far away from Big Yellow, two gigantic lions. Each of them had a bot between 12 to 15 meters tall, which made them look like a small hill, and their energies were really frightening.

Both lions looked identical, gray stone fragments could be seen all over their bodies. On top of their heads, there was a long stone horn which glowed dimly. The eyes of these lions were the same color as their stone, but they carried a fierce look.

“Damn it, Twin Stonerock Lions, and both of them are Early Divine Core monsters. The Inferno Hell really does have all kinds of creatures.”

Big Yellow immediately cursed out loudly. He knew about the Twin Stonerock Lions, demon beasts like these were rare to the outside world. But, in this place, he just bumped into two of them.

This kind of twin demon beast were incredibly vicious, their

minds were linked, and once they entered a fight, they could achieve absolute perfect teamwork. The combat strength of the two Twin Stonerock Lions was not as simple as one plus one.

Roar!

When the Twin Stone Lions saw Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, they immediately walked towards them while roaring fiercely.

“Damn it, these pets won’t be easy to deal with. Too bad, daddy’s powerful innate abilities won’t fully awaken until I’ve broken through to the Divine Core realm. If they had, these two would be nothing in front of the master dog!”

Big Yellow felt somewhat depressed. He was a mighty existence, a Divine Beast who possessed the Dragon Horse bloodline. But now, he was actually being bullied by two lions, and this really pissed him off. However, what made him even more furious was that, aside from his treasure hunting innate ability, his most powerful strength was his head. The powerful innate abilities in his bloodline would only awaken upon breaking through to the Divine Core realm.

But in the next second, Big Yellow’s eyes lit up, and he blinked with a cunning look in his eyes, “I am certainly unable to handle two of them at the same time, but if I can take out one of them quickly, I might stand a chance. Let dog master pretend I am afraid of them at first, I’ll make them put down their guards.”

Big Yellow was very intellectual. After having followed Jiang

Chen for so long, he had learned a lot of crafty actions, and he had gained a lot of combat experienced. He could be considered an experienced warrior now.

In an instant, Big Yellow took a step back. His body trembled, and his eyes were filled with fear as he stared at the Twin Stonerock Lions.

Indeed, when the two lions saw how Big Yellow acted, looks of disdain immediately emerged on their faces. They looked at each other, then one of them said, “Jiejie, so this one is just a coward. Dealing with a crappy dog like this, there is no need for both of us to strike at the same time. You just stand here and watch, I’ll go skin the dog now.”

Hearing what they said, Big Yellow tripped on his feet and almost fell down onto the ground. The fury in his eyes seemed like it was going to shoot out. He, as noble descendant of the Dragon Horse specie, not only was his bloodline incredibly prestigious, he also had a mighty and majestic body. How dare the bastard in front of him say he was a crappy dog, this was really unbearable. Big Yellow made up mind, he was going to teach this lion a good lesson later on.

The stone lion still had the same smile of disdain on its face. It was looking down at Big Yellow as it walked step by step towards him. It had just found out that the big yellow dog in front only had a cultivation base at the Late Heavenly Core realm. Therefore, he didn’t take him seriously.

“Puppy dog, stand there and don’t move, let me kill you by

stepping on you.”

The stone lion said.

Hearing this, Big Yellow couldn't bear it any longer. How dare this stone lion ask him to stand there and let it kill him? This was an insult, it was outrageous! Besides, only Yan Chenyu was allowed to call him puppy dog!

The stone lion really raised his feet and stepped towards Big Yellow.

“Fuck you!! How dare you look down on this master dog?!! I'll let you know the mightiness of master dog!”

Big Yellow gnashed his teeth with anger. Flames of fury were dancing in his eyes, and his head begun glowing in a golden light. In an instant, he turned into a sharp arrow as he rammed towards the huge feet of the stone lion.

Bang! Slash!

Following a loud bang sound, Big Yellow pierced through the stone lion's foot, causing a huge hole to appear, and blood to splash all over the place.

Aowuu~



The stone lion let out a horrible cry. The injury on its foot caused its massive body to tilt forwards uncontrollably. It had never expected this situation, the stone lion hadn't taken Big Yellow seriously, and that's why it hadn't covered its foot with Yuan energy just now. This was the same as having no defense at all. Under such circumstances, no matter how strong it was, it couldn't withstand Big Yellow's destructive head blow.

The stone lion was falling down, and everything was going according to Big Yellow's plan. He wouldn't let go of this opportunity to kill it, so with his extraordinary head, Big Yellow forcefully pierced towards the falling stone lion.

“How dare you look down on this master dog?! I'll let you die a glorious way!”

Big Yellow's head rammed into the stone lion's head. Similarly to the previous time, it was without any protection. Also, due to Big Yellow's extremely high speed, only a fraction of time had passed since the stone lion had its foot penetrated until now. That's why it didn't have any time to protect itself.

Stone fragments flew around, the gigantic stone lion's head had been crushed by Big Yellow, and its huge body fell down onto the ground. It died on the spot.

Big Yellow descended next to the body from the skies. Laughing heavily towards the skies, he said, “Kakaka! I'm the invincible master dog!”

Big Yellow felt incredibly proud of himself, and an incomparable narcissistic expression emerged on his face. He felt as if he was the most talented being in this world. Under his crafty plan, an Early Divine Core stone lion had been killed without wasting too much of his effort.

“This was strategic, this was intellectual, this was charismatic, this was the master dog, me!”

Big Yellow turned around and wiggled his butt in front of the dead stone lion while portraying an extremely prideful expression.

On the other side, the other stone lion who was getting ready to watch a good show immediately became startled. It was stunned by what happened, and it kept staring at the narcissistic big yellow dog in front of it with its stone eye. It didn't know how this dog was so strong. After all, this dog had actually pretended to be afraid. This was ridiculous.

“Brother!”

The stone lion became extremely angry. Its own brother was dead, and the corpse wasn't even intact, because it had been shattered by this dog's head. It was such a miserable way of dying.

“Kaka, fool made of stone, you and your brother are both idiots! How dare you look down on this master dog?! This is the consequences of your actions, the master dog is the ultimate existence in this world, those who have the audacity to look down upon me... Let this be their example!”

Big Yellow became completely excited. He had killed one of the stone lions, and there was only one left. He wasn't scared off just dealing with one stone lion.

---

Notes:

[\[1\]](#) It's implying that the Saint realm is the highest realm here.

## Chapter 203 – Guan Yiyun’s Whereabouts

---

“Damned dog, I’m going to eat you!”

The last stone lion had become enraged. However, its energy was obviously weaker than it was before. Although being part of a twin demon beast specie brought lots of benefits, there were also a lot of disadvantages as well. Because their minds were linked, their combat strength could be combined during a battle. Similarly, if one of them died, the other one would be greatly affect, and would only be able to unleash half of its combat.

Besides this, once a stone lion died, the other stone lion would start aging extremely quickly, and die shortly afterwards. This was the meaning of living and dying together.

“Kaka...”

Big Yellow let out a hearty laughter. Once again, he turned into a beam of light and started sprinting towards the stone lion. If the stone lion was still in top shape, Big Yellow would never sprint toward it like this, because he didn’t have the confidence to kill it, so he would just stay in front of Jiang Chen, and never let it pass.

But now, the energy of the stone lion had been reduced by half, and its combat strength had also halved. The high spirited Big Yellow had absolute confidence in being able to kill it.

The stone lion roared out in anger, and engaged in an intense fight with Big Yellow. One of them was extremely fast, and had an

incredibly defensive body, and the other one was trying to avenge its brother.

“Sigh!”

Jiang Chen sighed and opened his eyes. He looked at the two animals in front of him who were fighting endlessly and shook his head, feeling speechless. Damn it, he was in the middle of his cultivation, couldn't this damn dog be more reliable? How was he going to cultivate when both of them were right in front of him?

Luckily, Jiang Chen was only forming new Dragon Marks, and wasn't trying to break through. If not, even if he had the Great Soul Derivation skill, he wouldn't be able to stand a disturbance like this.

But forming new Dragon Marks by using demon souls was different than breaking through to a new stage or realm. Jiang Chen wasn't scared of the disturbance, because even with the disturbance, he could still continue absorbing the demon souls. Therefore, Jiang Chen just continued absorbing while watching the fight between Big Yellow and the stone lion.

“Big Yellow, can you finish this fight faster? That guy only has half his normal combat strength right now. Wasting so much time fighting him, isn't this an insult to your mighty reputation?”

Jiang Chen couldn't bear it any longer.

“Damn it buddy, you can still talk while absorbing the demon souls? But, what you said is right, it will really affect master dog’s reputation if I still can’t kill it.”

Big Yellow nodded his head seriously. Soon, he went into a frenzied mode, mystical symbols begun appeared between his eyes, and wings of light appeared on his back. At this point of time, Big Yellow’s figure could be seen everywhere at the scene.

Bang bang bang...

Aowuuu...

Followed by a few banging sounds and the miserable screams of the stone lion, in just a few breaths time, holes and wounds could be seen everywhere on the stone lion’s gigantic body, and blood splash all over the place.

“Last strike!”

Big Yellow’s arrogance and courage rose as the battle progressed. A trail of light collided with the stone lion’s head in an instant. The weakened stone lion couldn’t withstand Big Yellow’s brutal attacks any longer, and it shattered into pieces because of Big Yellow’s head, repeating the footsteps of its own brother.

After kill the Twin Stonerock Lions, Big Yellow’s narcissistic attitude had reached a whole new level.

“This is the true combat strength of the master dog! During this fight, the master dog showed both beauty and intelligence! No matter how strong the enemy is, it will be killed in front of this master dog!”

Big Yellow stood up on both back legs like a human, and placed both front legs behind his back and wiggled his head. Jiang Chen couldn't watch it any more, so he covered his eyes with his hand.

Big Yellow spent more than half an hour showing his narcissistic side, and when Jiang Chen had finally absorbed the demon souls, Big Yellow still hadn't finished.

Slap!

Jiang Chen slapped Big Yellow's head and said, “That's enough!”

“Buddy, do you really not know what gratitude is? If not for daddy guarding you during your cultivation and killing the Twin Stonerock Lions, do you think you could cultivate in peace?”

Big Yellow said with a slightly depressed tone.

“Fine, I'll remember your great effort this time.”

Jiang Chen extended his hand and retrieved the two demon souls from the dead stone lions, and stored them in his storage ring.



“Why don’t you just absorb them straight away? These two Divine Core demon souls, I’m sure they will provide you great benefits.”

Big Yellow felt puzzled. Usually, Jiang Chen would absorb the demon souls he got directly to increase his strength. But to his surprise, this time, he didn’t do it, he just stored it away.

“I have successfully formed a total of 600 Dragon Marks in my body, so if I continue using the same method to cultivate, it will actually affect my foundation. The effects of the Five Elemental Pill could only last until now. Therefore, in order to continue absorbing demon souls, or even breaking through to the Divine Core realm, I’ll need to strengthen my foundation. That’s the reason why I need the Nine Life Crystal Beast’s crystal core when I absorb demon souls in the future.”

Jiang Chen explained. He couldn’t afford any carelessness when cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill. The most important aspect for a cultivator was actually his foundation. If the foundation became loose, future cultivation would become devastatingly harder.

Jiang Chen, as the once greatest Saint in the world, his experience with cultivation was simply magnificent. He understood better than anyone else the importance of a foundation. Therefore, he wouldn’t allow himself to make such a mistake.

In order to break through to the Divine Core realm, Jiang Chen would need a total of 800 Dragon Marks, and he was 200 behind his goal. It was no easy task for him to break through.

However, six hundred Dragon Marks had given Jiang Chen enough combat strength to walk around in Inferno Hell with more safety. Soon after, he and Big Yellow left the valley and continued flying towards the inner parts of Inferno Hell.

After flying for nearly a hundred miles, both of them could hear some fighting coming from upfront.

“There is someone fighting ahead of us.”

Big Yellow said.

“It’s the energy of a human, not a demon beast.”

Jiang Chen said, “Hide your energy, let’s go check it out.”

The duo hid their energies and flew towards the battle with great speed. Shortly afterwards, they saw a cliffy mountain range in front of them. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow landed on one of the cliffs and looked down into the valley, where they saw four men.

Three of them seemed to be in their late thirties. Two were Early Divine Core warriors, and the other one was a Mid Divine Core warrior. The three portrayed images of hostility, they were obviously exiled warriors, and they were vicious and merciless.

Of course, living in the environment of Inferno Hell, anybody

could become like them sooner or later.

Right now, three of them surrounded a young man who was bleeding from all over his body. The young man seemed to be in his late twenties, and he was wearing white clothes which could hardly be seen, due to all the blood. His cultivation base was at the peak Early Divine Core realm, just one step away from breaking through to the Mid Divine Core realm.

With Jiang Chen's experience, he could easily tell that this young man was a rare genius. Although he was only at the peak Early Divine Core realm, if he engaged in a fight, the Mid Divine Core warrior standing opposite of him would be no match for him at all.

But too bad, the young man was seriously wounded, and some of his wounds didn't look new, which made his combat strength weaken a lot. Facing three ferocious Divine Core warriors, he had nearly come to the end of his life.

“Young man, just keep running, you have offended young master Yang Shuo, you'll die even if you run to the end of the world!”

The man said.

“Hmph! What did you to do Guan Yiyun and the other men?”

The young man let out a cold snort. There was no fear to be seen on his face, a fury could be seen burning in his eyes. After a restless escape, in the end, he still couldn't run away from them.

“Haha, Tian Yishan, you are soon going to die, but you still ask about your friends? Let me tell you this, Guan Yiyun and the others are still alive, but that’s only because young master Yang Shuo won’t let them die so easily!”

Another man said with a scornful tone.

“Indeed, Guan Yiyun and the rest of them men are still alive, but it’s hard to tell how well they’re living right now. Tian Yishan, hand over all of your wealth, especially those crystal cores. We’ll consider only bringing your head back to young master Yang Shuo, that way you won’t have to suffer his torture. You should know very well how cruel our yang master is, he would rather see you alive in agony than dead.”

The leading adult man said with a smile on his face. The three of them totally considered Tian Yishan as a turtle in a jar. In fact, Tian Yishan’s current situation was really like being a turtle in a jar. If there were no miracles, he would surely die this day.

“Guan Yiyun.”

At the cliffs, Jiang Chen who had just been casually watching the show had a change in expression once he heard the name Guan Yiyun.

“I think this Tian Yishan is a friend of Guan Yiyun, it looks like he has been caught by that young master Yang Shuo. Judging from their words, I think Guan Yiyun is in a bad situation right now.”

Big Yellow said.

“No shit! I heard it too.”

Jiang Chen's face darkened. Guan Yiyun had treated him pretty nicely, he had risked his life to help Jiang Chen back in Whirling Sun City. Jiang Chen was not a person without gratitude, he would never forget those who had helped him.

Since Guan Yiyun was now in trouble, there was no way he could pretend nothing had happened.

A look of misery appeared on Tian Yishan's face, together with a slight hint of hopelessness. He gazed at the three men surrounding him. If he was in his best shape, these three men would never be his match, even if they attacked at the same time. But too bad, he was too weak right now. Even the weakest man amongst them would be able to easily kill him.

“In Inferno Hell, it goes without saying that the weak are prey to the strong. Slaughtering and robbing; today, I, Tian Yishan have been defeated by you. I have nothing much else to say, just kill me now.”

Tian Yishan thought he was going to die no matter what, therefore he maintained his pride, which made Jiang Chen nod his head in approval. Few people could face death with calmness. Perhaps it was the environment here that cause it, but no matter what, it was something that deserved respect.

“Fine. Tian Yishan, since you can still maintain your pride, I’ll let you have a quick death today.”

One of the Early Divine Core warriors said. In an instant, he unleashed a gigantic palm and slapped towards Tian Yishan.

Bang!

A loud bang sounded out above Tian Yishan’s head. It wasn’t his head that had shattered, it was the gigantic palm unleashed by that man.

A bright light beam was shot from the cliff and collided with the palm, causing it to shatter into pieces.

“Who’s there?”

The leader was shocked as he shouted towards the cliffs.

“Three Divine Core warriors bullying a serious injured man, shame, shame!”

A voice sounded out from the cliffs. After that, a man and a dog descended from the skies above.

## Chapter 204 – Actually A Fellow Disciple

---

Jiang Chen wore white clothes, and his black hair was fluttering in the breeze. His delicate and handsome face couldn't hide his ruthlessness. In the blink of an eye, he and Big Yellow landed within the valley.

“Kid, who are you?”

One of the Early Divine Core warriors stared at Jiang Chen and asked with a cruel voice.

“Someone who doesn't like injustice. When I see something I don't like, I'll jump in and get my hands dirty. You three are all Divine Core warriors, don't you feel ashamed about bullying a seriously injured man?”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

“Haha...”

Hearing this, all three men burst out into laughter. It was as if they had heard the funniest joke in their life. The way they looked at Jiang Chen was as if they were looking at an idiot.

“Little brother, hurry up and get out of here, you're not their match!”



Tian Yishan turned to Jiang Chen and said. He knew he was going to die today, and he didn't want to involve anyone else. Besides, he could tell that this young man in white had just come to Inferno Hell, and didn't know the rules for survival in Inferno Hell. There was only one rule here – the weak are prey to the strong. No one would get involved in matters that didn't involve them. There was only slaughter and bloodshed here. If an ordinary man had witnessed this scene, it would be normal for him to join the attacking group. As for those who acted bravely for a just cause, it was impossible to do such a thing in Inferno Hell, only an idiot would do so.

In fact, Jiang Chen was not someone who would act bravely for a just cause. He knew better than anyone else what kind of place this Inferno Hell was. If it wasn't for him wanting more information regarding Guan Yiyun from Tian Yishan, he would not bother showing himself at all.

However, upon hearing Tian Yishan asking him to leave immediately, Jiang Chen's impression of him became even better. Besides, this Tian Yishan was obviously a friend of Guan Yiyun. Therefore, Jiang Chen decided to save him.

“Someone who doesn't like injustice? What a joke! Kid, do you not know the rule of Inferno Hell? Those who don't like injustice are merely idiots. Looks like there's something wrong with your brain as well. However, since you had the courage to stand out, I'll fulfill your wish and allow you to die together with Tian Yishan.”

Another adult man said while laughing out loud.

“Kid, before we strike and kill you, hand all your valuable items over to us.”

The Mid Divine Core leader stared at Jiang Chen with an insidious look.

“You want my valuable items? Perfect, I also want to rob your valuable items! Looks like there is only way to solve this problem; I’ll have to attack all of you.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“This kid is seeking death!”

One of the Early Divine Core warrior’s expression became stern, and he showed a strong killing intent. However, just when his killing intent leaked from his body, the young man in white had disappeared from his sights. In the next sect, he had appeared right in front of the man.

Slash!

The man heard a slashing sound, then he felt a violent tremble on his body. He felt like a huge mountain had just crashed into him. Following that, there was a shivering sensation that ran across his entire body.

The man immediately became startled, he had an intense feeling of death creeping up on him. He slowly lowered his head, then he

saw a longsword having impaled his body, and his blood dripping down from the tip of the sword. His vital signs were fading away.

“I know the rules of survival much better than any of you, especially the rules of Inferno Hell.”

A bright smile appeared on Jiang Chen’s face, an innocent smile. However, in the man’s eyes, it was a devil’s smile.

“No...!”

The man let out a loud cry, and his voice turned hoarse. This was the last sound he left in this world. The sword Jiang Chen had used to kill him was a high-ranked combat weapon, it was the Soaring Heavens Sword that Jiang Chen had snatched from Yun Can. Jiang Chen unleashed a massive amount of energy, shattering all of the man’s internal organs, and his life-force at the same time.

Jiang Chen slowly pulled out his sword. Right as the man’s body was about to fall down onto the ground, Jiang Chen removed his storage ring with lightning speed. These men had been in Inferno Hell for quite some time, so they must have obtained some nice items, and Jiang Chen really needed more crystal cores right now. Before he could bump into Nine Life Crystal Beasts, robbing someone else was the best option.

Plop!

The man’s body fell onto the ground. Their body had become

without motion, and only fresh blood poured out from the wound right in the middle of the man's chest, which looked terrifying.

“What?”

Three people exclaimed at the same time. Even Tian Yishan was staring at Jiang Chen with awe, and a look of disbelief in his eyes. The other two men were even more shocked. Who would have expected that a young man with a mere Late Heavenly Core cultivation base could be so fierce and brutal? An Early Divine Core warrior couldn't even withstand a single attack of his, and died on the spot.

“It's your turn now.”

Jiang Chen raised the sword in his hand and pointed it towards the other two ferocious men, “I'll give you both a chance, hand over your storage rings and destroy your Divine Cores.”

Jiang Chen's words almost made both men trip on their own feet. This was ridiculous, what was the difference between destroying their own Divine Cores and committing suicide? After their Divine Cores were destroyed, they would become cripples! A cripple without any cultivation base would die within an hour in this Inferno Hell.

“Kid, do you know what you just did? The man you just killed worked for young master Yang Shuo! I think you came here seeking death!”

Another Early Divine Core man voiced out his threatening speech. But too bad, he had threatened the wrong man. Just as he finished his words, Jiang Chen disappeared from where he stood. The man could only feel a beam of light falling in front of his face. What happened next, the man would never be able to know.

Jiang Chen's movement was too fast. He had chopped off the man's head with his sword. When the head flew high into the skies, a deep, frightened expression could be seen on the face. The man had no idea how he was killed, and he had no idea why a Heavenly Core warrior could strike so quickly. It was so fast that even he, as a Divine Core warrior, didn't have the time to react.

“Heavens!”

Tian Yishan exclaimed with great shock. He simply couldn't believe his own eyes. He looked at Jiang Chen as if he was looking at a ghost, this young man looked only to be in his late teens, but was extremely strong and frightening. His opponent was a Divine Core warrior, and even Tian Yishan at perfect wouldn't be able to kill his opponent so quickly and fiercely.

The fierce and brutal attacks of Jiang Chen had stunned the Mid Divine Core warriors. He stared at Jiang Chen, and the look of despise on his face had disappeared.

“You are the last one. I'll give you the opportunity to strike first.”

Jiang Chen looked at the last man.

“Hmph! Looks like you are a genius disciple from some big sect. You’re really extraordinary, able to kill two Early Divine Core warriors with just your Late Heavenly Core cultivation base. But too bad, this is Inferno Hell, it doesn’t matter what status you have, or how big of a genius you are; only true combat strength is valued here. Although you were able to kill two Early Divine Core warriors, you are not my match. The difference between an Early Divine Core warrior and a Mid Divine Core warrior is not something you can imagine.”

The man let out a cold snort, then he unleashed all of his energy. At the same time, a golden hammer that glowed in a golden light appeared in his hand. It was a high-ranked combat weapon.

Bang!

A loud sound burst out from the golden hammer. The man raised the hammer high up into the air and forcefully struck it towards Jiang Chen.

“Let me show you the real difference.”

There was a look of defiance in Jiang Chen’s eyes. He held the sword with both hands and raised it up high. The sword produced an ear-splitting sound as a bright beam covered the sword. In an instant, Jiang Chen shouted out loudly and brought the sword down towards the man.

Clang!

Two combat weapons collided into each other and let out a large amount of sparks. This was a brutal collision which caused both sides to bear the weight of a massive amount of energy.

Bang!

The massive amount of force caused the man to fly back like a kite that just had its string cut.

Puh!

While the man was still flying in the air, he couldn't help but throw up a mouthful of blood. His face was filled with astonishment, and he had become speechless. The force that came from 600 Dragon Marks was not fun to encounter, and that combined with a high-ranked combat weapon, ordinary Mid Divine Core warriors would be no match for Jiang Chen. They wouldn't even be able to withstand a single attack from Jiang Chen.

Swoosh!

With extreme speed, Jiang Chen left a tail in the air and caught up with the man who was flying backwards. He swing the sword in his hand and neatly cut off the man's head.

“Can't even withstand stand a single blow.”

A grin appeared on Jiang Chen's face. After successfully forming

600 Dragon Marks, his combat strength had reached an unimaginable stage. He stored the Soaring Heavens Sword, then he bent down and removed the storage ring from the man's finger. He took it for himself without any guilt.

“What a monster.”

Big Yellow raised his head as he spoke. The current Jiang Chen had become incredibly much stronger than before. Although he was able to deal with Mid Divine Core warriors then, he wouldn't be able to kill them so smoothly and neatly.

Tian Yishan who was standing beside had his mouth wide opened, he glanced at three dead bodies on the ground, and out of sudden, he couldn't think of anything to say, he thought he was going to die today, but never expect someone so mighty would appeared out of nowhere and killed all three enemies easily.

“My name is Tian Yishan, thank you for saving me!”

Tian Yishan bowed deeply towards Jiang Chen. His face was filled with gratitude, as Jiang Chen had saved his life today.

“I'm Jiang Chen, from the Black Sect.”

Jiang Chen introduced himself. After that, he asked, “Just now, you mentioned Guan Yiyun, I want to know more about his current situation.”



Upon hearing Jiang Chen mention the Black Sect, Tian Yishan was shocked, then an extremely joyful expression emerged on his face.

“So brother Jiang, you’re also from the Black Sect! Haha, I never knew we had such a genius in the Black Sect! You’re the Black Sect’s biggest fortune!”

Tian Yishan let out a hearty laugh.

“You’re from the Black Sect as well?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. He had never seen this guy in the Black Sect before.

“That’s right, I’m a core disciple of the Black Sect. When I became a core disciple two years ago, I immediately left the Qi Province and went to the Jian Province to further improve my cultivations; that’s why brother Jiang doesn’t know about me.”

Tian Yishan explained.

“So you’re the core disciple.”

Jiang Chen’s mind became clear now. The Qi Province was the smallest province in the Eastern Continent, and the core disciples from the four big sects would leave the Qi Province after breaking through to the Divine Core realm, and go to a bigger territory to cultivate. This Tian Yishan was actually a core disciple of the Black

Sect, that explained why he was with Guan Yiyun before this.

## Chapter 205 – Inferno City

---

“Brother Jiang, you’re able to kill a Mid Divine Core warrior with your Late Heavenly Core cultivation base, this is really an eye opener for me! I wouldn’t have believed it if I hadn’t witnessed it with my own eyes! How come the Sect Chief allowed a genius like you to come to this place?”

Tian Yishan asked with a shocked expression.

“I came here by my own decision. By the way, how is Guan Yiyun’s situation right now? Also, who is that young master Yang Shuo?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“I suppose brother Jiang just came to Inferno Hell and doesn’t know much about it. There is a city right in the center of Inferno Hell, Inferno City. The city belongs to humans, and only humans are allowed to enter it.”

Tian Yishan said.

“Oh, so there is actually a city in Inferno Hell?”

Jiang Chen was surprised, he hadn’t expected this at all.

“Inferno City is a unique existence. Demons and devils will not

enter the city no matter what, that's why it had become a gathering place for all humans. Supposedly, this Inferno City is the safest place in Inferno Hell, and as long as you stay within the city, you won't have to worry about being attacked by demons or devils, and your safety will be guaranteed. The tunnel leading to the outside world only opens once a year, therefore, Inferno City has become the most important place to protect. But now, it has become the most dangerous area in Inferno Hell, no different than the deepest area of Inferno Hell.”

Tian Yishan said.

“How did that happen?”

Big Yellow asked.

“Very simple; where there are humans, there are conflicts. In Inferno Hell, conflicts can be found everywhere. Between demons and devils, between humans and demon beasts, between humans and humans... Blood is shed everywhere, there are no rules here, only raw slaughter. In order to survive in Inferno Hell, you need powerful strength. Right now, there are all kinds of bad and good people mixed in Inferno City, and neither of them are simple. They are either some vicious criminals who were exiled here, or some genius disciples from some big sect. When so many powerful people are mixed together in a single place, conflicts will break out.”

Tian Yishan explained.

Jiang Chen nodded his head. He could understand the situation here. There were no rules in Inferno Hell, and the most important thing here was strength and ability. Without it, one would be nothing but prey to the strong. Although Inferno City could help a person escape from the attacks of demons and devils, it couldn't help them escape from conflicts between humans.

“Explain in detail about this Inferno City.”

Big Yellow said.

Tian Yishan glanced at Big Yellow. He knew that this dog came with Jiang Chen, therefore he didn't hesitate to speak, “I left the Qi Province 2 years ago and went to the Jian Province. Four months ago, I came to Inferno Hell to further my cultivating here, and I supposed I know pretty much everything about this place. There are all sorts of demons and devils living in this land, many of them are rare and strange creatures, but they are all powerful existences. The most frightening creatures, with the most numbers are the Evil Devils and Nine Life Crystal Beasts. Many people come to Inferno Hell just to look for Nine Life Crystal Beast crystal cores.”

Tian Yishan paused for a short moment, then he continued, “The crystal core is a kind of pure energy form which can provide great help for a human's cultivation. Not only that, the Nine Life Crystal Beast is preyed on by all devils, demons and humans. On the other side, these Nine Life Crystal Beasts were also preying on humans, demons and devils. Put it this way, the crystal core is really helpful for human cultivators, devils and demons, and the Heavenly Core and Divine Core in a human's body, the demon souls and devil

souls, they all bring great benefits to Nine Life Crystal Beasts. This is the root cause for all the chaotic situations in Inferno Hell, and the main reason behind most slaughter and bloodshed.”

“Also, because those Nine Life Crystal Beasts are very strong and extremely difficult to kill, it has made fights become even more violent. There are cases of people being killed and robbed every day in Inferno City, because everyone wants crystal cores. Even if they are going out from the city to hunt for some Nine Life Crystal Beasts, they usually work in a group, because it’s certain death if a human warrior bumps into a Nine Life Crystal Beast the same level as him. Also, they might bump into all kinds of demons and devils along the way. Besides, in order to survive in the harsh environment of Inferno Hell, working together in a group is a must.”

Tian Yishan explained the basic situation of Inferno Hell to Jiang Chen, giving them a whole new perspective on Inferno Hell. From what Tian Yishan had told them, they knew that the Nine Life Crystal Beasts were key existences in Inferno Hell. Basically; humans, Nine Life Crystal Beasts, demons, and devils, these four had formed a chaotic food chain.

No wonder why everyone were so scared of this place. This was a world where humans ate humans, beasts ate humans, and humans ate beasts. Life-threatening situations arose everywhere.

“I see. I suppose you all have some sort of an alliance, right? Besides, how did you all offend that young master Yang Shuo?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“That’s right, we do have our own alliance, and most of us are from the Qi Province and the Qian Province. When I met junior disciple Guan Yiyun for the first time in Inferno Hell, he was still at the peak Heavenly Core realm. But, he is a man with amazing talent, so in just a short amount of time, he broke through to the Divine Core realm. I’m the leader of our alliance, there are eight of us, and with our strength and abilities, we could only find a place to stay outer parts of Inferno City. A few days ago, Yang Shuo brought his men and tried to take over the place where we were staying, and not only that, he also wanted to take all our belongings and crystal cores, and that’s when the conflict arose.”

“Yang Shuo is a genius from the Jian Province’s Myriad Sword Sect, and with his Mid Divine Core cultivation base, I am not match for him. Besides, that Yang Shuo supercilious and self-conceited man. He is extremely cruel and brutal, he would slowly torture those who offends him before finally killing them. I killed two of his men and escaped, but junior disciple Guan Yiyun and the rest of the men were unable to escape, and were caught by Yang Shuo. I don’t know anything about their current situation. Yang Shuo kept sending his men to hunt me down, and if it wasn’t for brother Jiang’s help today, I would most likely be a dead man right now.” [1]

Tian Yishan said.

“So that’s what happened.”

Jiang Chen’s face darkened. He wasn’t too surprised that Guan Yiyun had broken through to the Divine Core realm so quickly.

Guan Yiyun was at the peak Heavenly Core realm before he came to Inferno Hell, just one step away from the Divine Core realm. An environment like Inferno Hell was best at helping one break through, therefore it wasn't really that shocking.

But Jiang Chen couldn't sit back and ignore Guan Yiyun's current situation. Not only had he helped Jiang Chen before, he was also Jiang Chen's fellow disciple, so Jiang Chen had to help him no matter what.

“Is this Myriad Sword Sect powerful?”

Jiang Chen asked again.

“Yes, they are really powerful, and nothing a sect that the Black Sect can compare with. The Jian Province is the second largest province in the Eastern Continent, the largest province being the Saint Province, which is also the heart of the Martial Saint Dynasty. Aside from the Saint Province, the Jian Province is the strongest province. There are quite a few Combat Soul warriors residing in the Myriad Sword Sect as well. Also, countless geniuses with amazing potential have joined them as well.”

Tian Yishan said. He had spent quite a lot of time in the Qi Province, therefore he knew pretty much about them.

“There are no privileges for any geniuses in this Inferno Hell. In here, even if you are the Martial Saint Dynasty's prince, I don't think anybody would care.”



Jiang Chen sneered.

“What brother Jiang said is correct. In a place like this, reputation and fame from the outside world is useless. This is an extremely violent and wicked world, and therefore, I have no complaints about us being defeated by Yang Shuo. More people get killed every day in Inferno City.”

Tian Yishan said.

“Brother Tian, I’ll have to rush to Inferno City to save Guan Yiyun.”

Jiang Chen said.

Hearing this, Tian Yishan’s eyes lit up. He had witnessed Jiang Chen’s combat strength just now, it was simply amazing and astonishing. He was actually thinking about how he should ask Jiang Chen to help him, but he had never expected Jiang Chen to say he would help first.

“Thank you, brother Jiang! But, that Yang Shuo is a Mid Divine Core warrior, and he’s very difficult to handle.”

Tian Yishan reminded.

“Don’t worry, I have a good relationship with Guan Yiyun. He helped me once, and since he is now in trouble, there is no way I can just stand aside and watch. Besides, I have some interest in this

Inferno City. I'll just take this opportunity to visit the city and meet that Yang Shuo at the same time."

Jiang Chen said.

"Alright! With brother Jiang's help, I'm sure we'll be able to defeat that Yang Shuo and rescue junior disciple Guan and the rest of the men."

Tian Yishan had an excited look on his face. He could feel the mighty confidence coming from Jiang Chen. This confidence made him see the light of hope.

"Your injuries are quite serious. We'll stay here and take some time to rest, I'll concoct a pill that can help you heal. After that, we'll leave for Inferno City."

Jiang Chen said.

"I didn't know brother Jiang was also an alchemist. If that's the case, thank you!"

Tian Yishan cupped his fist toward Jiang Chen. He knew very well about his current condition. After being wounded by Yang Shuo, he had engaged in a few battles along his escape, which caused him to become extremely weakened. If he still couldn't recover in time, he would just become a burden for Jiang Chen.

Tian Yishan immediately found a spot and sat down with both

legs crossed, then he started slowly healing his injuries. On the other side, Jiang Chen begun concocting a pill. He had brought quite a lot of herbs with him, which he had gotten from Guo Shan. He could now put them to good use.

In just a short amount of time, Jiang Chen successfully concocted a Revival Pill. The Revival Pill was one of the best medicinal pills used to heal wounds. A 100% effectiveness Revival Pill, it would cost a fortune if it was sold in the outside world.

Tian Yishan grabbed the Revival Pill with a shocked expression on his face. In just a couple of minutes, a rare Revival Pill had been concocted. Not only that, it was actually a 100% effectiveness Revival Pill. This miraculous pill concocting skill was not something that those ordinary master alchemists could achieve.

“Quickly absorb this Revival Pill, then we’ll leave for Inferno City at once.”

Jiang Chen said. The longer Guan Yiyun was in Yang Shuo’s captivation, the more danger and torture he would have to go through. Since Jiang Chen had decided to save him, it would be best if they could get there faster. Besides, Jiang Chen had a great interest in this Inferno City. A place with intensive fights could ignite his fighting spirit and desire to conquer.

Tian Yishan dared not hesitate, so he swallowed the Revival Pill in an instant. The massive effect of the pill made his body tremble violently. With the help of this Revival Pills, his injuries started recovering, and his energy became much stronger than it was before.

“What an amazing pill! Brother Jiang, you really have amazing talent! We can leave now, I’ll just absorb the pill bit by bit along the way.”

Tian Yishan said as he strengthened his spirit.

## Chapter 206 – Master Dog Will Get Angry

---

After receiving help from Jiang Chen's Revival Pill, Tian Yishan's injuries had recovered a lot. At least, he was much stronger than before. Of course, it would still take him some time to fully recover.

Two men and a dog flew up into the skies. Under Tian Yishan's guidance, they flew towards Inferno City.

"Inferno City is located in the center of Inferno Hell, we won't bump into too many powerful demons or devils if we fly in this direction. Unless we're unlucky and bump into some demon beasts that live in huge groups, the real danger of Inferno Hell is in the deepest parts of Inferno Hell, which is located on the other side of Inferno City."

Tian Yishan said. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow immediately looked at each other, it seemed like they had pretty bad luck, as they had bumped into a huge group of demon beasts right after arriving.

"Since there aren't many powerful demon beasts along the way, let's speed up and rush to Inferno City."

Jiang Chen said.

"Alright. Yang Shuo is a mean and cruel guy, he knows many insane torture techniques. The longer junior disciple Guan is with them, the more he will suffer from torture, and his life might end at any time."

Tian Yishan seemed worried. He and Guan Yiyun were both from the Black Sect, and after spending some time together, they had built up a good relationship. Tian Yishan was a man who cherished friendship, that's why he worried so much about Guan Yiyun's safety after he had been captured by their enemies.

“Are there many groups in Inferno City?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Yes, there are all sorts of groups in there. Many people group together in an alliance. Besides, Inferno City is a huge place, and with our strength, we were only able to find a place to stay around its perimeter. There is no way for us to stay inside the city. I heard there is a Combat Soul warrior residing within the city. There are often days where trading is going on in the city, and it's only during these days that Inferno City will be in peace. It's a rule set by the Combat Soul warrior, so nobody dares attack and rob during these trading days.”

Tian Yishan said.

“Combat Soul warrior.”

Jiang Chen felt surprised, he didn't expect the Inferno Hell had such a huge attraction that even a Combat Soul warrior was here, the more Tian Yishan explained, the greater interest he had to this Inferno City.

Jiang Chen was here, the chaotic Inferno Hell would definitely become even more chaotic. Jiang Chen's arrival was the same as a devil incarnate descending from the skies.

“Since the doorway to Inferno Hell only opens up once a year, it'll make more and more people come to Inferno City. Besides, there are many people who doesn't want to leave Inferno Hell when the doorway opens, and they're mostly the vicious men who were exiled to this place. Without powerful strength, they would be killed immediately upon leaving this place. New people come here every day, and people die every day as well.”

Tian Yishan said.

Jiang Chen understood the situation. Although people from the Qi Province feared Inferno Hell, there were still millions of people across all 28 provinces in the Eastern Continent. Countless people were exiled to this place, and numerous people came here to improve their cultivation. Compared to the other powerful provinces, the Qi Province was the weakest, doesn't matter if you judge from population, or strength.

Those powerful sects in the other biggest provinces would send their disciple to Inferno Hell to seek more strength while experiencing life and death situation. If you were able to leave Inferno Hell alive, you would definitely become a powerful man. But if you were killed, it was just your destiny.

“When is the next time the doorway opens?”

Jiang Chen asked. He didn't want to stay here for too long. Yan Chenyu and Han Yan were still waiting for him to return, and he would leave this place immediately upon reaching his goal.

“Another three months.”

Tian Yishan said.

Jiang Chen nodded his months, three months was considered a short amount of time. He was here for the Earth Devil, but he had yet to receive any news about this demon.

When thinking about the Earth Devil, Jiang Chen couldn't help but ask, “Brother Tian, do you know if there are any Earth Devils in Inferno Hell?”

“Earth Devil?”

Tian Yishan was startled, but he immediately thought about something, and his expression changed, “There is a mighty monster king living in the deepest part of Inferno Hell, and it calls itself the Earth Devil. I heard that this being is a legendary existence, and even the fiercest devil has to obey its commands. It's very frightening, but I've never seen it before. Of course, with my strength, it would be able to kill me with nothing but a breath if I bumped into it.”

“That's it, that must be the Earth Devil. The Earth Devil is an



Earth element devil, and it possesses the purest devil source. Considering the fact that it's a royal descendant of the royal devil, its bloodline is extremely noble. That's why no matter how fierce a devil is, it'll have to obey its command. Brother Tian, do you know what cultivation realm this Earth Devil has reached?"

Jiang Chen seemed excited. Finally, he had received news about the Earth Devil.

"This creature you're looking for is the king of Inferno Hell, and it's at the Combat Soul realm. Jiang Chen, don't tell me you're looking for this devil? I hope you can give up this idea."

Tian Yishan warned.

"What? Combat Soul realm?!"

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow shouted out in shock at the same time, and both their faces darkened. They never expected this Earth Devil to be so powerful. There was no way for them to defeat an Earth Devil at the Combat Soul realm. Dealing with an Earth Devil was completely different than dealing with Firethorn Savage; when faced with an extremely powerful creature, no crafty plots of strategies would work. No matter how strong a Heavenly Core warrior was, there was no way for him to deal with a Combat Soul opponent. This was a fact that no one doubted.

"Buddy, what should we do now? I think our plan has been ruined."

Big Yellow said.

“No matter what, this is considered good news for us. As long as there is an Earth Devil here, it is good news. As for how we’re going to kill it... we’ll need to come up with a plan along the way. Don’t forget, we were in the same situation when we decided to kill Firethorn Savage.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face.

“That’s because we set up a trap using the Green Sanctuary Sect. Who are we going to frame this time? Besides, I don’t think there is anyone here who are actually stronger than this Earth Devil.”

Big Yellow rolled his eyes.

“Let’s proceed to Inferno City and rescue Guan Yiyun. We’ll talk about the Earth Devil after that. Since we’ve come to Inferno Hell, we’ll have to utilize the environment to push our cultivation to new boundaries. Big Yellow, you’ll have to work harder as well, it’s very difficult to survive in this place when you’re just a Heavenly Core beast.”

Jiang Chen said. It wasn’t until he came to Inferno Hell that he realized how small the Qi Province was. In the Qi Province, a Divine Core warrior was a man who sat on a high throne, and a peak Divine Core warrior was like an immortal existence. But in all other big provinces, although Divine Core did have a somewhat prestigious status, their numbers were far greater than the Qi Province.

“Heavens! Brother Jiang, don’t tell me your purpose for coming here was the Earth Devil?”

Tian Yishan was stunned. This was simply an impossible mission, the Earth Devil was simply too powerful. A Combat Soul Earth Devil, even the Combat Soul warrior in Inferno City wouldn’t be its match at all.

“That’s right, I need the Earth Devil’s demon soul to save a friend. Let’s not talk about this right now, we need to get to Inferno City as quickly as possible.”

Jiang Chen said.

Along the way, the trio bumped into some demons and devils, but none of them could withstand more than a single blow from Jiang Chen, and all of them were killed on the spot. Tian Yishan was really surprised by Jiang Chen’s strength, he had never seen a Heavenly Core warrior that could be so powerful. If he hadn’t witnessed it by himself, he never would have believed it, even if he was beaten to death.

Jiang Chen had also gone through all three storage rings that he had taken from the three men he had previously killed. There were pills, demons souls, devils souls, and even some crystal cores stored within. All these things were great for Jiang Chen.

“Looks like we need to rob more people in future.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face.

Inferno City was located right in the center of Inferno Hell. It was a huge city which covered more than a few hundred miles in circumference. It looked like a historical city with dolled colors, scars and marks everywhere. It was the remains of time, which proved that Inferno City had been around for a long period of time. At least, it had been here since the discovery of Inferno Hell.

“Jiang Chen, cultivators are forbidden from flying in the city. Let’s descend here.”

Tian Yishan said as they floated outside the city.

“Alright.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. The trio landed on the ground and walked towards Inferno City’s main gate.

Inferno City’s main gate was actually a huge breach on the city wall, and it didn’t fit the standards of a city gate. Big Yellow looked through the main gate, then his expression became a focused one, and his ears stood up.

“Big Yellow, what did you discover?”

Jiang Chen hurriedly asked through his Divine Sense. There was

only reason why this dog behaved like this, and that was when he sensed some treasure.

“There are hidden treasures in this city, I can sense it.”

Big Yellow’s tail begun wagging.

“What is it?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“I don’t know, but I’m sure there are some treasures here! I was thinking about why those demons and devils don’t attack Inferno City, there must be some reason behind it, and perhaps it’s related to this hidden treasure.”

Big Yellow said.

“Looks like there really is a treasure here.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up.

“Don’t get too excited so early, the treasure is hidden right in the center of Inferno City. With out current strength and abilities, there’s no way we can go there.”

Big Yellow dampened Jiang Chen’s enthusiasm.

“Stop right there.”

Right at this moment, four middle-aged men leapt out from hiding, blocking Jiang Chen’s path.

“You two, hand over all your belongings now! If not, don’t blame us for attacking you!”

A man with a ferocious scar on his face threatened them.

Looking at this, Jiang Chen burst out into laughter. Pretty good luck for them to bump into some robbers right as they arrive in the city. These four men had pretty strong cultivation bases, all of them were Early Divine Core warriors. However, trying to rob Jiang Chen with those mere cultivation bases, it was a funny joke.

“Brother Jiang, welcome to the chaotic Inferno City. There are people who group together and hide outside the main gate, and when they see someone with weaker cultivation bases than themselves, or the ones who come here for the first time, they will strike and rob them. These men are really smart, they know about all the alliances, and their strengths, in details. They know who can be offended and who can’t be offended like the back of their palm.”

Tian Yishan said.

“Interesting, it seems they consider me a newcomer. Since they

want to rob us, we won't have to be polite with them."

Jiang Chen shrugged his shoulder, then he looked at Big Yellow. Big Yellow instantly understood what he wanted, so he took a step forwards and said, "You four! Hand over all your belongings to us! If not, this master dog will get angry!"

## Chapter 207 – Fury

---

The four men stared at the mighty big yellow dog in front of them, startled.

“What the fuck?! How could a dog be so aggressive?”

“Hey, what the fuck? We are the ones robbing you, not the other away around! Look carefully at the current situation and the difference between our strengths! Hurry up, hand over all your belongings, and we will spare your lives. If not... well, it's perfectly normal for people to die in Inferno Hell.”

The four men were extremely aggressive. They had found out the cultivation levels of their targets, two Heavenly Core warriors that they were not worried about at all, and one Divine Core warrior whose energy was in a mess. Obviously, he was badly wounded, so they didn't need to worry about him either. This group was just an easy target that walked up to their doorstep. They would be struck by thunder if they let them go just like that.

“Are you sure you want to rob me?”

Jiang Chen tried to confirm it again.

“Damn it, looks like this kid doesn't even know how to judge a situation. Let's teach him a lesson! Brothers, let's do it, strip everything they got!”



The man who looked like their leader of this group shouted out loudly. Four men dashed towards Jiang Chen at the same time.

Bang bang bang...

Sounds of punches sounded out from the scene. In just a few breaths of time, Jiang Chen, Big Yellow, and Tian Yishan left the place, walking towards the main gate, and leaving behind the four aggressive men.

The four men stared back at the trio, and they could stop themselves from crying.

This was too mean, couldn't they just leave them some clothes? How could they meet other people like this?

The four men left leaving behind a glorious image. They were robbed off everything, and were standing naked in the shivering breeze while covering their crotches with both hands. All of them had panda eyes and looked really miserable.

“Boss, this is all your fault! Why did you ask us to strip them off everything they got? If you hadn't done that, perhaps we would still have our clothes now!”

“Don't say any more. Don't we still have extra clothes in our storage rings?”

“Damn it, our storage rings were taken away as well! Now we are

left with two balls that might be worth some money...”

“Sigh! The fish which nibbles at every bait will eventually be caught. Why was that young man so strong? Was he really just a Heavenly Core warrior?”

.....

The four naked men were standing straightly in the cold breeze. The shivering wind kept blowing at their crotches. It was a miserable encounter for these four Divine Core warriors, but luckily, they were still alive at least.

“Kaka, Little Chen, you’re so fierce, you should have at least left them with their underpants.”

Inside Inferno City, Big Yellow was laughing with joy as he stared at the burning clothes in front of him.

“They are lucky I didn’t kill them.”

Jiang Chen gave Big Yellow a smile. He turned around and looked at Tian Yishan, then he said, “Brother Tian, where are Guan Yiyun and the other men?”

“It’s very easy to find them in the outer perimeter. Yan Shuo has occupied our previous stronghold, and I’m guessing he’s keeping junior disciple Guan there. Let me lead you there quietly.”

Tian Yishan said.

“Alright.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head and followed Tian Yishan as they began rushing towards the stronghold. There was no difference between night and day in Inferno Hell, as there was no sun or moon, and the skies had the same color all day long. It was a depressing sight.

Soon after, Tian Yishan led Jiang Chen to a manor. The manor wasn't huge, but there was a historical feeling to it.

“There is a secret chamber in the manor, and if my guess is correct, they should be keeping junior disciple Guan in that secret chamber. I know of an entrance behind the secret chamber, we can enter directly from there. Let's not alert Yang Shuo and his men, let's first get our men out. If not, once we engage in a fight, junior disciple Guan and the other men might lose their lives.”

Tian Yishan said. He was a man with careful thoughts as well.

Behind the manor, a majestic demon lord was laying in front of the entrance to the secret chamber. It was at the peak Heavenly Core realm, and it had a pair of fierce eyes.

“This demon beast was caught by Yang Shuo, he's using it to guard the door.”

Tian Yishan said.

“Kill this demon beast and enter the secret chamber.”

Right as Jiang Chen finished speaking, Big Yellow turned into a beam of light. With extremely great speed, he opened up his big mouth and cut the throat of this demon beast with his razor sharp teeth and killed it on the spot. Its blood was splashing all over the place, but not even a single sound was made.

Tian Yishan was shocked. He had never seen Big Yellow attack before, so he didn't think this dog was so powerful. He could actually kill a peak Heavenly Core demon lord in an instant. But, in the next second, he felt like it did make sense. Since Jiang Chen was so mighty, a dog following him would not be weak either.

The trio opened up the narrow back door and snuck in. Behind the door, there was a tunnel which lead downwards. It was pretty dark inside. At the end of the tunnel, there was an underground secret chamber.

Ahh!!

Not long after they walked in, Jiang Chen began hearing some horrible screams from the secret chamber. The screams didn't seem to stop, and it really gave them an eerie feeling. It wasn't hard for them to imagine what kind of pain the men inside were experiencing.

“It’s Guan Yiyun!.”

Jiang Chen’s expression became stern. He had heard Guan Yiyun’s voice from the screams just now. He couldn’t bear it any longer, and his killing intent was unleashed from his body.

Right now, inside the underground secret chamber.

This was a huge secret chamber, and cruel torturing was being carried out right now. It was a horrible scene. Right in the middle of the secret chamber, seven men with naked upper bodies were tied onto some iron poles. Their bodies were covered with blood, their skin was split and flesh broke forth. Horrible scars could be seen everywhere, and blood kept leaking out from their terrible wounds.

Right in front of them, a luxuriously dressed adult man was sitting on a bamboo chair, pleasantly watching the ongoing torturing as if he was viewing the nicest scenery.

“Bastard! Kill us now if you dare, kill us now!”

A young man in his mid twenties roared out. He kept spitting out blood as he let out horrible roars. He had the most wounds and scars on his body, and his vision was blurring. Obviously, even with his Divine Core cultivation base, he was going to pass out after going through such cruel torture for a long period of time.

This man was Guan Yiyun.

“You want me to kill you? Not that simple! You have offended young master Yang Shuo, and that is a crime that deserves eternal torture! Men, give me something more explosive!”

The adult man said.

There were four of Yang Shuo’s men in the secret chamber, but they were only peak Heavenly Core warriors. When they heard the adult man’s words, a ferocious smile emerged on all their faces. One of them took out a palm-sized tube, then he walked up to Guan Yiyun and opened the tube. Immediately, a pure red snake swam out from it. The snake sent forth a pungent smell which told that it carried a deadly poison

“Guan Yiyun, this is a King Serpent. I think you should have heard of it before.”

The man said with a hideous smile on his face. After that, he placed the poisonous snake on Guan Yiyun’s body. When the snake smelled the blood, it immediately went towards one of the wounds on Guan Yiyun’s body, and tried its best to penetrate itself into his wound.

Ahhh!!

Even the toughest men wouldn’t be able to withstand this kind of pain. Guan Yiyun instantly let out a terrifying cry. A sizzling sound

could be heard from his body, and his skin quickly turned into a dark purple color. The pain coming from the corrosion was not something ordinary people could imagine.

Ahh!!

At the same time, terrifying screams once again sounded out throughout the entire secret chamber.

“I can’t take it anymore!”

Someone let out a painful shout and completely silent afterwards. The deadly poison from the King Serpent was not something anybody could resist. Besides, all of them were severely injured. The pain they were experiencing was unimaginable.

“Hahaha...”

The adult man who was sitting in a bamboo chair let out a pleasant laugh, as if this kind of creepy scream was the most beautiful melody in this world. The pleasant feeling brought to him by torturing people could really satisfy his twisted mind, and he had learnt all this from Yang Shuo.

Right at this moment, three figures appeared in the secret chamber. When Jiang Chen looked at Guan Yiyun, flames of fury exploded forth in his eyes, and he was unable to restrain his anger any longer.

“Who are you?”

When the adult man saw the uninvited guests, his expression immediately became cold.

“The man who is going to kill you.”

Jiang Chen’s body swayed, and he arrived in front of the adult man in an instant. He clenched his palm onto the man’s throat, causing the man to feel like there was a gigantic mountain pressing him, making it so that he couldn’t even breathe properly.

“Big Yellow, Yishan, capture all these men, but do not kill them.”

Jiang Chen ordered.

“Understood!”

Tian Yishan replied as he immediately dashed forwards. The four Heavenly Core warriors were no match for Tian Yishan and Big Yellow, they were pressed onto the ground in an instant.

“Junior disciple Guan.”

Tian Yishan walked up to Guan Yiyun and hurriedly broke the iron chains on his body, then he helped him down.



“Senior disciple Tian, why did you come back?”

Guan Yiyun kept throwing up blood as he spoke. His life force was getting weaker and weaker.

“Junior disciple Guan, look who is here to save you!”

Tian Yishan said.

Jiang Chen threw the adult man onto the floor, then he walked up to Guan Yiyun.

“Senior disciple Guan, I’m here to rescue you.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face.

“Junior disciple Jiang, it really is you...”

Cough cough...

When Guan Yiyun saw that Jiang Chen had come to his rescue, a joyful expression emerged on his face. But, he had no idea why Jiang Chen had come to Inferno Hell, or why he was with Tian Yishan.

“Don’t speak right now.”

Jiang Chen placed his palm onto Guan Yiyun's body. With a powerful force, he sucked out the King Cobra and all the deadly poison in Guan Yiyun's body. After that, Jiang Chen threw out his hand and sucked out all King Cobras and poison from the other men.

Witnessing this, Tian Yishan was stunned once again. It was a deadly poison, and Jiang Chen had absorbed it all into his body, and he was still not affected by it. This was really frightening.

Ahh!!

Guan Yiyun let out another horrible cry, then he passed out instantly. When a man was relieved from a long, tense situation, he would immediately pass out.

“Brother Jiang, junior disciple Guan's condition is really serious.”

Tian Yishan said. He glanced at the rest of the men, and all of them seemed to be have the same serious conditions. None of them could remain conscious right now, they had all passed out.

“Hmph! An eye for an eye, I'll serve them the same treatment, and let them taste the feeling of having deadly poison in their bodies!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. He was covered in flames of fury, he was really furious right now. Since the enemies were so cruel,

he would pay them back with an crueler approach.

Jiang Chen glared at the few men who were laying on the floor, then a hideous grin emerged on his face.

## Chapter 208 – Wicked And Merciless

---

“You, what do you want to do?”

The adult man was freaked out, he could sense fierceness and danger from Jiang Chen’s gaze.

“What you have done to them, I will do to you.”

The hideous smile on Jiang Chen’s face became bigger and bigger, striking terror into their heads.

“Who are you? Do you have any idea where this place is? This is young master Yang Shuo’s territory! If you offend him, you’ll die without a burial ground!”

The adult man threatened.

But this kind of threat was useless against Jiang Chen, the evil smile on Jiang Chen’s face wasn’t shaken at all. He extended his palm, then a green light appeared on all five fingertips. The lights flickered like beautiful snakes. The man however, he could sense a shivering danger from the lights, enough danger to make his soul tremble.

Tian Yishan placed Guan Yiyun on the floor and set the other men free. Due to suffering from serious injuries, all of them had passed out, and two of them had forever lost their breath.

Sigh...

Tian Yishan let out a heavy sigh, a painful look of grief emerged on his face. These men had followed him for quite some time, and although they were only in an alliance to increase their chances of survival, they had actually established a pretty solid relationship between each other. Watching them die in such a horrible way made him feel really bad.

“Two died, and the rest are seriously injured.”

Tian Yishan glared at the five men on the floor as he spoke in a vicious manner. After that, he looked at the green lights on Jiang Chen’s fingertips. His words just now were for Jiang Chen, because if he wanted to fight young master Yang Shuo and bring justice to his men, he would need Jiang Chen’s help.

“Today, I’ll kill them all, no mercy.”

Jiang Chen spoke fiercely. With just one sentence from him, the temperature in the secret chamber had dropped. Jiang Chen took a step forwards and arrived in front of the peak Heavenly Core warrior.

“You, what are you trying to do?”

The frightened man was trembling all over his body. This young man in front of him was too frightening. Their leader couldn’t even withstand a single attack from him, they were like sheep

waiting to be slaughtered by Jiang Chen.

“What am I trying to do? I’ll do the same as you did to them. I’ll cut open your skin, and inject deadly poison into your bloodstream. Oh, I forgot to tell you, the poison on my fingertips is the poison of the Green Hellish Python. Also, it has been mixed with the deadly poisons from the Silent Poisonous Needle. I don’t know whether or not you have heard about the needle before, so I’ll tell you. It’s a poisonous needle made from 49 poisonous herbs, and now I’m going to use this poison on you. I wonder how long you can last, before you die.”

Jiang Chen spoke without any emotions. Although he sounded calm, his words were like a lightning strike to these people.

They might not have heard about the Silent Poisonous Needle, but they were surely familiar with the Green Hellish Python. Its poison was far more poisonous than that of the King Serpent. Furthermore, it was mixed with other poisons as well. At this moment, everyone including the Divine Core warriors, had a change in expression.

“Kaka, I’m guessing they won’t last more than a minute!”

Big Yellow let out a hearty laughter.

“I had the same thoughts.”

Tian Yishan said with a grin on his face.

“Buddy, let me help you.”

After saying that, Big Yellow leapt onto one of the man and bit down on the man's chest with his sharp teeth. Followed by a tearing sound and shrill scream, a deep wound was drawn out on the man's chest. His skin was ripped apart, and he was bleeding nonstop.

Swoosh!

At the same time, Jiang Chen crooked his finger and shout out a green light, which went right into the man's wound.

Hsss...

The deadly poison was tremendously good at corroding, it turned the red blood into black blood in an instant.

Ahh!!

The man let out a shrilling scream, it was absolutely terrifying, and it didn't sound like it was coming from a human. Just from the scream itself, only could easily tell what kind of pain this man was suffering. This simply was one of the cruelest torture methods in the world.

Soon, the poison penetrated into the man's hurt, and made the

entire body black. All his flesh and blood was severely corroded, and the man had become completely silent. He just laid motionlessly on the floor, even his eyeballs had melted because of the deadly poison.

The Green Hellish Python's poison was a violent poison. Normally, just touching it would make a person feel extremely bad, and risk dying. And if the poison was injected into one's bloodstream, even the Yuan energy wouldn't be able to resist it. The deadly poison would penetrate into all internal organs and kill the man.

The outer four men had been keeping silent like cicadas in the cold weather upon seeing Jiang Chen using the deadly Green Hellish Python's poison. Now, when they saw their man being killed by it, they were even more frightened. Three Heavenly Core warriors were trembling nonstop with terrified expressions and cold sweat dripping down from their faces.

The Divine Core adult man couldn't resist this kind of fear either. His face became extremely dark, and he breathed rapidly.

Terrifying, this was extremely terrifying. Being killed like this was simply too cruel. Witnessing this torture, and knowing that it would soon be his turn... It was a feeling no one could understand.

“Your turn.”

Jiang Chen said in a casual manner with a calm smile on his face, as if killing someone was something very normal to him.



But in these men's eyes, Jiang Chen's smile was like the smile of the devil. All of them were cruel and fierce, but compared to this young man in front of them, they couldn't even be called ruthless.

Jiang Chen walked up to another Heavenly Core warrior.

“Big Yellow.”

Right as Jiang Chen's words left his mouth, Big Yellow leapt onto the man and tore a big wound on the man's chest with his sharp teeth. Once again, Jiang Chen shot out the green light from his finger into the wound, causing the man to let out a shrill cry. Soon afterwards, he followed the footsteps of the previous man and died on the spot.

Jiang Chen didn't look at the dead body, he just walked towards the third man.

“No, please don't...”

The man extremely terrified. Everyone were scared of death, even if there were some who weren't afraid of death in Inferno Hell, no one would want to be killed like this. This was really terrifying.

Slash!

It was useless to beg right now. Big Yellow was not slow at all, once again, he tore open a wound on the man's chest. The pleasant feeling of kill someone had made Big Yellow start bouncing up and down with excitement. Tian Yishan who was stand next to them felt his anger easing off by a lot. All these men deserved a thousand deaths, they deserved the cruelest torture in this world.

At the same time, Tian Yishan was once again shocked by Jiang Chen's approach. This man was really a peerless genius that couldn't be found once even in a thousand years. Not only did he possess mighty combat strength, he also knew how to attack with poison.

“Ahh!! Young man, if you dare kill me, young master Yang Shuo won't let you go for sure! You can't even dream about walking out of this stronghold alive!”

The man with two red eyes shouted towards Jiang Chen. His voice was extremely loud, and he shouted using his Yuan energy. With this, the men outside the secret chamber would be able to hear his voice.

Obviously, the man wasn't trying to threaten Jiang Chen, he was actually signaling for help.

“I'm sorry, but I'm not leaving this stronghold today, because I'm going to occupy it. None of your friends will be able to leave here alive, all of them will die. Same goes for that Yang Shuo. Compared to you, his death will be much more miserable. Don't worry, your turn will soon come up. With your cultivation level, I'm sure you'll be able to withstand the poison for a longer time

than the others, and you will be able to taste pain for a much longer time.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face, the smile of a devil.

Guan Yiyun’s miserable condition had made him furious. He had decided to kill that young master Yang Shuo today. Besides, since he had just arrived at Inferno City, he needed to establish his dignity and status here.

Ahh!!

The last Heavenly Core warrior let out a frightening roar. He threw up a mouthful of blood, he had actually shattered all his internal organs with his own Yuan energy, he had committed suicide.

It took huge courage for someone to commit suicide, especially for a cultivator.

But when facing Jiang Chen’s horrifying approach, the man would rather kill himself than suffer. At least he would be able to die faster.

“You do have some guts.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. Then, he turned to the last Divine Core man and said, “I’ll give you a chance to kill yourself.”

“Devil, you’re a devil!”

The adult man felt like his heart was going to break into pieces, he had never been so close to death. This young man only seemed to be in his late teens, but his approach was much more ruthless than Yang Shuo. Killing a man like it was nothing, that was extremely brutal.

“What’s going on?”

Right at this moment, a loud shout sounded out from outside the secret chamber. After that, four men appeared at the entrance on the other side of the secret chamber. When these four men saw what was going on within the secret chamber, their expressions instantly changed.

“Quickly, save me!”

The adult man who was lying on the floor felt like he had grasped a life-saving straw, so he hastily screamed out for help.

“Who are you?”

The leading man asked as he stared at Jiang Chen. There was a long scar on his forehead, which might be a scar caused from a battle with some demon beasts. It made him look extremely ferocious.

Two of them were Early Divine Core warriors, and the other two were peak Heavenly Core warriors.

In Inferno Hell, the peak Heavenly Core realm was the weakest cultivation level, and they could only hope to survive in the outer perimeter of Inferno City. Entering Inferno Hell with an even lower cultivation level was simply the same as seeking death.

Jiang Chen didn't bother with these four men. He took out a sharp sword which emitted a cold light and pointed it at the man's chest.

Slash!

The tip of the sharp sword impaled the adult man's chest. Jiang Chen started cutting downwards, and he did it slowly on purpose, making sure that everybody in the room could hear the sound of the sword cutting through the man's flesh, and his blood leaking out bit by bit.

Ahh!!

The adult man let out a horrifying scream. He knew he was going to die, so a hopeless look emerged in his eyes.

“Stop it!”

One of the Early Divine Core warriors shouted out loudly. He immediately sprinted towards Jiang Chen with speed great as

lightning.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. He pulled the longsword out off the man's chest, and swung it back towards the Divine Core warrior who was rushing towards him.

Slash!

The razor sharp sword instantly sliced the Early Divine Core warrior in half, causing blood to splash all over the secret chamber. The two-part dead body was thrown not far away, and it was still struggling and moving after death.

# Chapter 209 – Slaughter

---

Roar!

Everyone had a change in their expression. When the three men who were in great rage and were getting ready to storm in saw the Early Divine Core warrior being chopped in half by Jiang Chen, they were immediately scared and stopped their movements.

“Enemy attack! Enemy attack!”

The three of them immediately turned around and alarmed the others as they fled towards the inner parts of the stronghold. They were scared they would get sliced in half if they ran too slowly, so none of them even bothered caring about the adult man’s safety.

Looking at this, the adult man who had his chest pierced by Jiang Chen’s sword had lost all hope. This young man in front of him was too terrifying, there was no way he would spare his life.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen waved his hand and unleashed a beam of green light into the adult man’s wounded chest. The poison broke into tiny threads of green light that looking like mini poisonous snakes.

Ahh!!

It was pain that even an iron man couldn't withstand. The horrifying screams of the adult man sounded out throughout the entire stronghold. He kept rolling and struggling like crazy on the floor. Due to his cultivation base being stronger than the others, his ability to withstand the poison was far greater than the previous men. And because of this, the pain he was suffering was far greater than that of the previous men.

“Enjoy the taste of pain and death.”

Jiang Chen said in an indifferent one. He turned around and looked at Tian Yishan and the few other men who were laying on the floor, including Guan Yiyun. All of them had suffered severe injuries. But luckily, the poison in their bodies had been completely absorbed by Jiang Chen, which saved them from instant death.

“Brother Jiang, what should we do now? I think this secret chamber has been surrounded by Yang Shuo's men right now.”

Tian Yishan asked. No doubt, Jiang Chen's performance was incredible, but he knew Yang Shuo very well. As a genius from the Myriad Sword Sect in the Jiang Province, Yang Shuo's cultivation level and tricks were far beyond ordinary men. Now, they had wreaked havoc in Yang Shuo's stronghold and killed his men. With his temper, he wouldn't let them get away with it.

“I said it before; blood will be shed, and there will be no survivors. I want to establish my authority in the outer perimeter of Inferno City and get revenge for Guan Yiyun. No one is allowed to harm my friends.”



Jiang Chen said with a calm voice. He wasn't worried about that Yang Shuo at all. If this was before he had gained 600 Dragon Marks, he might not have had such confidence. But now, Yang Shuo posed not threat to him.

Big Yellow's eyes lit up brightly. He knew Jiang Chen really well, his buddy had become really furious today. With this, blood would be shed everywhere in this stronghold.

“Keep Guan Yiyun and the rest of the men in this secret chamber, let's go meet that Yang Shuo.”

Jiang Chen tidied up his clothing, and with the sword in his hand, he started walking out from the secret chamber. He would show no mercy today. In inferno Hell, slaughtering was something perfectly normal, as lives were worthless in a place like this.

“You men inside, get he hell out and face your deaths!”

Within the stronghold, someone shouted out loudly into the secret chamber.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow walked out side by side, while Tian Yishan followed closely behind. They walked step by step out from the secret chamber, and arrived at an empty field in the manor.

Right as they exited the secret chamber, Jiang Chen immediately sensed numerous killing intents and ferocious energies, enough to

fill the skies above. There were even some demonic energies hovering around the place.

When the trio walked out from the secret chamber, over 20 men immediately rushed over and surrounded them. All of these men carried combat weapons, and there were even four powerful Divine Core demon beasts mixed in the group that looked brutal and ruthless.

Doesn't matter if it was the number of men or demon beasts, it all went to show Yang Shuo's incredible tricks. In this Inferno City, being able to make so many people follow him willingly, and can even make Divine Core demon beasts surrender to him; all of this was enough to show what amazing strength Yang Shuo possessed.

“That's him, he killed a few of our men!”

When one of the men saw Jiang Chen, he immediately shouted out loudly. Next to the man, there stood a Mid Divine Core old man. The man looked to be in his fifties, his body seemed full of power and grandeur, and he wore animal skin as clothing.

“Tian Yishan, so it's you! I never thought you would still be alive, and even managed to get help! It's too bad you don't know how to cherish your life and didn't escape while you had the chance!”

The old man said upon seeing Tian Yishan.

“Brother Jiang, this man is Liu Kui, he is a cruel guy, and a Mid Divine Core warriors. He was exiled to Inferno Hell by a big sect in the Jian Province, and he is now one of Yang Shuo’s followers. He’s not easy to deal with.”

Tian Yishan told Jiang Chen through his divine sense.

Jiang Chen had a grin on his face. He wasn’t afraid when surround by so many strong men. Jiang Chen turned to Liu Kui and spoke with a calm voice, “Where is Yang Shuo? Tell him to get here now.”

“Haha, do you really think that handling someone like you requires young master Yang Shuo to be here in person? Me alone is more than enough to handle all of your, there is no need to disturb young master Yang Shuo’s cultivation.”

Liu Kui burst into laughter. He was very confident in his own abilities, therefore he didn’t take Jiang Chen seriously.

“Is that so?”

After saying that, Jiang Chen swayed his body and swung his sword.

Ahh!!

Three screams sounded out, three men were slashed into half. Two of them were peak Heavenly Core warriors, and the last one

was an Early Divine Core warrior.

Due to Jiang Chen's sudden quick attack, none of them had time to react, and were killed instantly.

Roar!

The expressions of everyone here changed dramatically. No one had expected that in this situation, not only did Jiang Chen not beg for mercy, he actually had the courage to attack. This was outrageous.

What was even more frightening was Jiang Chen's ability. He could actually kill an Early Divine Core warrior so easily. This was extremely frightening, even Liu Kui had a change in expression.

"Damn it, attack! Kill them all!"

Liu Kui shouted his order out loudly. Immediately, everyone in the stronghold unleash all their energy and started attacking Jiang Chen's group. The three powerful Divine Core demon beasts let out brutal roars as well, and they threw their mountain like bodies towards Jiang Chen.

"Kill them all, leave no survivors."

Jiang Chen said with an extremely cruel voice.

Roar!

Big Yellow let out a loud roar. Golden colored symbols blinked on his head, and in an instant, he transformed into a trail of light and forcefully dashed forwards. At the same time, Tian Yishan drew out his combat weapon and started attacking with red eyes. His injuries weren't as bad as Guan Yiyun's, and after consuming the Revival Pill given to him by Jiang Chen, he was almost fully recovered. With his current combat strength, he had no problem dealing with ordinary Early Divine Core warriors.

Big Yellow was laughing out heartily. He really liked this kind of bloody and adventurous scene. Only problem was that he felt somewhat bored, as his innate abilities had yet to awaken, and he could only use his speed to dodge his opponents' attacks. He dodged the Divine Core warriors, and focused only on attacking the Heavenly Core warriors.

No Heavenly Core warrior could withstand a single blow from his metal like head. They all died miserable deaths.

Jiang Chen was attacking with the Soaring Heavens Sword, and nobody could withstand more than a single strike. Blood splashed all around, and men were slashed in half by Jiang Chen.

Ahh!!

Blood-curdling screeches filled the entire stronghold, and so did the angry roars of the demon beasts. They mixed into a beautiful melody of slaughter.

Blood splashed to the skies, the atmosphere was filled with an intense smell of blood. In just a mere minute, the group of 20 people was left with only 3 men. Besides Liu Kui, there were another two Early Divine Core warriors still alive.

Looking at the dead bodies on the floor, and the headless demon beast corpses, these three men felt it difficult to breathe. Even Liu Kui had a drastic change in expression.

Now, Liu Kui had lost his confidence. The young man in front of him was too frightening, no one could withstand a single strike from him. Even he himself couldn't do something like this.

Liu Kui sensed a dangerous feeling from Jiang Chen. He knew he was no match for this young man.

“Old Liu, what should we do now? The enemy is too strong, we have suffered great losses now.”

One of the men asked.

“We have no choice but to wake young master from his cultivation, only young master can kill this young man.”

Liu Kui told the man. At the same time, an invisible thread of divine sense shot out from his mind towards the inner area of the stronghold.

“You three have to die as well.”

Jiang Chen raised his sword and pointed it at the three men in front of him.

“Haha, young master will soon arrive! Young man, you have killed so many of our men, be prepared to bear the endless fury and torture of the young master!”

Liu Kui burst out into laughter. However, before the smile disappeared from his face, Jiang Chen had disappeared from his sight.

Ahh!

Immediately after Jiang Chen had disappeared, a painful scream sounded out next to Liu Kui. Another Early Divine Core warrior had been cut in half by Jiang Chen.

“Not good!”

The other man sensed the danger, so he dared not hesitate. He immediately flew high up into the skies, away from the danger.

“Wish to run? Stay behind!”

Jiang Chen raised the Soaring Heavens Sword and unleashed a ray of light which collided right into the man who just flew away.

Blood exploded from the man's body, and he was instantly killed.

“It's your turn now.”

Jiang Chen didn't stop, he immediately slashed his sword toward Liu Kui. The speed of his movement was extremely fast, and people could only see a blurry movement before the sword approached Liu Kui's face.

Ha!

Li Kui let out a loud shout as he raised his broadsword, blocking the attack.

Clang!

Two combat weapons collided and produced a huge amount of sparks. Liu Kui was knocked back by Jiang Chen's attack nearly 100 meters before he was able to regain control of his body. He was a Mid Divine Core warrior after all, he still had the abilities to fight Jiang Chen, even if it was just for a short amount of time.

“Everyone in this place will be killed today. Since you've harmed my friend, you will have to bear the consequences.

Jiang Chen's stern gaze locked onto Liu Kui. If he hadn't bumped into Tian Yishan today, he wouldn't have known about Guan Yiyun's whereabouts, and if he came here any later, he might have just found Guan Yiyun's dead body.



“Hmph! Who is the one shamelessly boasting? You’re simply seeking death by killing the men in my stronghold!”

Right at this moment, a loud shout sounded out from afar. A figure suddenly rushed out from the inner area of the stronghold and arrived next to Liu Kui. Then man had a handsome face, and he wore a long, blue gown. He looked about the same age as Tian Yishan.

But, the cruel and ferocious look in this man’s eyes told Jiang Chen that he was a brutal man.

“Young master!”

Liu Kui looked at Yang Shuo as if he had just found his savior. An extremely joyful expression emerged on his face. Liu Kui had witnessed Yang Shuo’s strength before, and he knew that no matter how strong the young man in front of him was, there was no way he would be a match for Yang Shuo.

Yang Shuo turned around and looked at the dead bodies scattered across the place. Blood was still leaking out from some of the bodies. In an instant, fury filled his eyes.

“You did all this?”

Yang Shuo stared angrily at Jiang Chen.

## Chapter 210 – Demon Taming Lock

---

Jiang Chen didn't answer Yang Shuo's question. The blood dripping from his longsword was the best answer to the question.

“So you are Yang Shuo?”

Jiang Chen asked as he threw an examining look onto Yang Shuo.

“Young master, this guy is really strong, and not easy to deal with. Even I am no match for him.”

Liu Kui said with a sigh. He had a frightened expression on his face, and he was unable to pull himself out from his panicked state. He had never seen a young Heavenly Core man who possessed so much combat strength. This had gone beyond his knowledge and imagination.

“Hmph! You're courting death by killing so many of my men. I don't care who you are, today I will torture and kill you.”

Yang Shuo let out a cold snort. It wasn't easy to cultivate a group of men in Inferno City. All these men had pledged loyalty to him and worked under his command. He would always send them to hunt for monsters in the depths of Inferno Hell, and he would be able to get a share of their harvest. Put it this way, as long as he had a group of men working for him, he would be able to enjoy good wealth and benefits without doing anything himself.

Now, all his men had been killed in such a short period of time. This was no different than destroying his only source of income. Of course, Yang Shuo had become extremely angry.

“Yang Shuo, a genius from the Jian Province’s Myriad Sword Sect, your strength is quite sold. But too bad, you’ve offended someone you shouldn’t have; you hurt my friend. Today, I’ll bring my friend justice, and that’s the reason why I want to kill everyone in this stronghold, including you. Yang Shuo, remember, my name is Jiang Chen. If you don’t remember it now, you won’t have the opportunity later on.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone. He felt extremely confident, as he possessed 600 Dragon Marks. So, he didn't really worry when facing a genius like Yang Shuo.

“Haha, I think you’re referring to Guan Yiyun and those other men. Since you’re here to get yourself killed, I’ll fulfill your wish; all of you are going to die today. Let me see how strong you, Tian Yishan’s help is.”

Yang Shuo burst into laughter.

“If that’s the case, attack now.”

Jiang Chen shrugged. He casually put away the longsword and remained standing in the same spot.

“There is no need for me to personally attack you. Shamanic Fire

Ape, come out now!”

Yang Shuo suddenly shouted out loudly. A round-shaped lock which glowed in a dark light appeared in his hand. There were numerous mystical symbols carved onto the lock itself, and if examined carefully, the symbols were actually patterns which resembled demon beasts.

Ding-ling!

The black colored lock dinged. Followed by the dinging sound, a ground-shaking roar suddenly sounded out from the depths of the stronghold. After that, a flaming figure suddenly appeared above the skies.

It was a powerful fire ape, and its entire body was emitting a flaming red light. The fire ape was over 10 meters tall, and it looked like a tall pagoda. When the fire ape saw Yang Shuo, an intense hatred emerged in its eyes. But when it saw the black lock in his hand, the intense hatred was turned into fear and meekness.

The fire ape let out an angry roar as it descended from the skies. It slammed into the ground with massive force, causing an explosion to sound out, the entire strong hold to shake, and countless cracks to appear on the ground. It unleashed a tremendous demonic energy combined with scorching flames, enough to send fear deep into one’s heart.

“Brother Jiang, be careful, this is a Shamanic Fire Ape, and it has reached the Mid Divine Core realm. I don’t know how Yang Shuo

managed to make this Shamanic Fire Ape obey his command. Also, all the other demon beasts, they are all controlled by Yang Shuo.”

Tian Yishan’s expression changed, and without any hesitation, he explained to Jiang Chen. Normally, demon beasts all had violent tempers, and considered humans their mortal enemies, even more so for demon beasts who had broken through to the Divine Core realm. All of them had their own prides and dignities, and they would rather die than be controlled by a human. This Shamanic Fire Ape had reached the Mid Divine Core realm, but it was still willing to be controlled by Yang Shuo, confusing other.

“It’s because of the black lock in that guy’s hand. It actually has an energy that can make all demons submit to its command. Even I feel uncomfortable when facing it.”

Big Yellow said. He looked at the black lock which was held in Yang Shuo’s hand, although he didn’t fear it as much as the Shamanic Fire Ape did, he still felt hatred towards the thing.

“That’s the Demon Taming Lock, it’s an item that’s really difficult to me. I never thought this Yang Shuo would actually own one. No wonder why he’s able to make those demon beasts obey his command. Obviously, this Shamanic Fire Ape is controlled by the Demon Taming Lock and are unable to reject Yang Shuo’s command.”

Jiang Chen said. His eyes lit up as he looked at the Demon Taming Lock, this kind of item was extremely rare and precious. If he was able to obtain this Demon Taming Lock, the advantages he would gain would be huge.

“Brother Jiang, what should we do now?”

Tian Yishan looked extremely worried.

“Hmph! Don’t worry, I’ll just killed this Shamanic Fire Ape and get its demon soul, after that, I’ll kill Yang Shuo and get his Demon Taming Lock.”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. A grin appeared on his face, because in his mind, Yang Shuo was just a small obstacle in his path towards the ultimate goal. Everything Yang Shuo had done and obtained, it would all belong to Jiang Chen in the end.

“What a boaster. Jiang Chen, you’re just a Heavenly Core warrior, and you’re not even close to approaching the Divine Core realm. I really want to see what you have in order to deal with a Mid Divine Core Shamanic Fire Ape.”

Yang Shuo was extremely aggressive. He raised the Demon Taming Lock in his hand and waved it towards the Shamanic Fire Ape, then he gave out an order, “Shamanic Fire Ape, kill this man for me.”

Yang Shuo pointed at Jiang Chen.

Roar!

The Shamanic Fire Ape was furious, and flames were shooting out from its eyes. As a Divine Core demon beast, it had its own pride and dignity, that's why it felt extremely enraged upon being controlled by a young human man. However, because of the Demon Taming Lock, it was forced to obey Yang Shuo's command. The appearance of Jiang Chen had given it a target to release its anger on. It wanted to channel all its anger and killing intent toward Jiang Chen.

Bang!

The Shamanic Fire Ape punched a huge hole in the ground, then it jumped about 30 meters into the air, forcefully throwing its majestic body which was covered in scorching flames toward Jiang Chen.

Tian Yishan's expression changed dramatically. With his cultivation level, he could only handle ordinary Mid Divine Core warriors, but he was no match for the Shamanic Fire Ape. A brutal opponent like this was really frightening.

"You guys move aside, let me handle it."

Jiang Chen had a calm look in his eyes. The Shamanic Fire Ape was much more difficult to handle than the Double Headed Black Crow. However, Jiang Chen wasn't the same as he was when he dealt with those black crows either. 600 Dragon Marks were more than enough for him to handle this ape.

"Six Profound Solar Fingers!"

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly. He forcefully pointed his finger, like a sword. In an instant, five sky piercing fingers shot towards the Shamanic Fire Ape. Along the way, all five fingers merged into one, which gave it a tremendous increase in power.

“Die for me now!”

The Shamanic Fire Ape let out shrill cries, all of its fur was standing up, and countless golden colored light beams shot out from its body and flew towards the solar finger. There were even some explosive flames mixed in with the beams used to counter-attack.

Bang!

At this moment, the skies seemed to be falling, and the ground seemed to be breaking apart. The explosive flames and energy ripples swept across the place, and the entire stronghold was covered by the powerful explosion. But surprisingly, not even a single building in this stronghold had been damaged.

It was as if all the building in Inferno City were protected by an invisible force, so no one was able to cause even the slightest damage to them.

Such violent ripples could be sensed by half the population in Inferno City. However, the people were still calm. Here, combat and slaughter happened every single day, it was just too normal.



The brutal Shamanic Fire Ape was forced back nearly 4 meters by the impact. Its face carried a shocked expression; it had never expected that a Heavenly Core human could possess such tremendous combat strength, and be able to force it back with just a single strike. This was simply unimaginable.

But, there was only one thought in the furious Shamanic Fire Ape's mind, and that was killing this young man in front of it to release its anger. Therefore, it leapt at Jiang Chen once again.

"I still can't unleash the sixth solar finger. If I could, there would be no way for this Shamanic Fire Ape to withstand it at all."

Jiang Chen sighed. The Six Profound Solar Fingers came from the mighty Nine Celestial Solar Energies. He knew how powerful this skill could be, if he was able to unleash its sixth finger, there was no way this Shamanic Fire Ape would be his match.

"Buddy, this Shamanic Fire Ape is a brutal being, so why don't you fight brutality with brutality?"

Big Yellow said. He felt so anxious right now, if he was a Divine Core demon beast now, if he could get his powerful innate abilities to awaken, he would have already jumped into the fight.

"Fine, I'll confront brutality with brutality. Let's see how far this Shamanic Fire Ape can go."

Jiang Chen let out a loud shout, then the Firethorn Combat Armor appeared on his body. The armor glowed brightly in a golden color, and there were countless razor sharp thorns standing on the armor's surface, which looked devastating.

Jiang Chen forcefully stomped the ground, then he flew high up into the sky. Using the Firethorn Combat Armor as a weapon, he rammed into the Shamanic Fire Ape. This was a truly brutal way of attacking.

“What kind of combat skill is this? It actually combines offense and defense! Where did this guy come from, why is he so powerful?”

Witnessing Jiang Chen unleashed the Six Profound Solar Fingers, forcing the Shamanic Fire Ape back, and now even unleashing the mighty Firethorn Combat Armor, the arrogant Yang Shuo couldn't help but feel shocked. Although he thought of himself as a peerless genius, he was convinced that if he was at the same cultivation level as Jiang Chen, there was no way he would be able to match his combat strength. To be frank, if he was at the same cultivation level as Jiang Chen, Jiang Chen would be able to kill him in an instant.

“Brother Jiang has really shocked me. I left the Qi Province two years ago, but I had never expected that such a glorious, peerless genius would appear! His appearance is really good fortune for the Black Sect!”

The shocked expression on Tian Yishan's face was getting thicker and thicker. Jiang Chen's mightiness had completely stunned him.

Bang!

Under the few shocked gazes, Jiang Chen who was wearing the Firethorn Combat Armor crashed into the brutal Shamanic Fire Ape. The massive collision produced a large amount of sparks in the air.

# Chapter 211 – Bloodthirsty Sword

---

Bang!

This was the most primitive way of fighting, the most barbaric way. The Shamanic Fire Ape was covered in scorching flames, and that combined with its explosive strength, it still had no way to break Jiang Chen's Firethorn Combat Armor.

Comparing the Shamanic Fire Ape and the Firethorn Savage, they were on two completely different levels. Jiang Chen cultivated the Dragon Transformation skill, and that gave him an exceptional advantage. After having absorbed Firethorn Savage's bloodline, it simply meant that he had Firethorn Savage's bloodline in his body. In order towards, Jiang Chen who had unleashed the Firethorn Combat Armor was equal to a ferocious Firethorn Savage.

Aowuu..

The Shamanic Fire Ape let out a painful cry. It was unable to break Jiang Chen's Firethorn Combat Armor, and it was instead hurt by the armor. The sharp thorns on the armor had left a few wound on the Shamanic Fire Ape's body, causing its blood to splash around.

Besides this, the Shamanic Fire Ape had been knocked away by Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen had the strength of 600 Dragon Marks, which gave him a body that could be compared to an ancient barbaric beast. Although this Shamanic Fire Ape was pretty

powerful, it just couldn't withstand Jiang Chen in his current state.

“Haha...”

Jiang Chen let out a hearty laugh. He would never let go of any opportunity to defeat his enemy. In an instant, he turned into a trail of light and chased after the Shamanic Fire Ape who was backing off, then he slammed into its body with the Firethorn Combat Armor once again.

Bang!

The Shamanic Fire Ape couldn't resist the second attack, it was knocked down from the skies and fell onto the ground like a falling star, creating a huge crater as well. Although there was no way to destroy the buildings in Inferno City, the ground didn't seem that solid, and it wasn't protected by the invisible force.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen retracted the Firethorn Combat Armor and descended from the sky next to the Shamanic Fire Ape. The Soaring Heavens Sword once again appeared in Jiang Chen's hand. Without any hesitation, Jiang Chen swung the sword in his hand and chopped off the Shamanic Fire Ape's huge head. Blood immediately shot out like a fountain, it looked really beautiful.

Jiang Chen's sword was extremely fast, it broke open the

Shamanic Fire Ape's skull in an instant. Jiang Chen grabbed the golden demon soul, it was a Mid Divine Core demon soul, which could provide great benefits for Jiang Chen.

“So weak.”

A light smile appeared on Jiang Chen's face, he was filled with an ultimate overbearing manner and confidence, his current combat strength was equal to a middle tier Divine Core warrior, but because he was having many powerful tricks, that made even upper tier Divine Core warrior wasn't his match at all.

The combat skills and innate abilities Jiang Chen possessed were not something an ordinary man could compare with. For example, the Six Profound Solar Fingers was a high-ranked Earth combat skill, the Firethorn Combat Armor, Sonic Hawk Cry... All of them were demon beast innate abilities. Also, the True Dragon Palm and True Dragon Flames were even more terrifying, they were both mighty skills that originated from the Dragon Transformation skill. Besides all this, Jiang Chen was simply invincible against all sorts of poisons. With his combat strength and all these skills, could he not defy the heavens?

“Heavens!”

Tian Yishan was stunned. Although he had seen Jiang Chen kill an Early Divine Core warrior with ease, he hadn't thought that Jiang Chen had reached such a mighty level. Even the powerful Shamanic Fire Ape was no match for him, and was easily killed.

On the other side, Liu Kui stared with his mouth wide open. He now finally realized, if not for Yang Shuo arriving just in time, he would most likely have been killed by Jiang Chen before this Shamanic Fire Ape. A man like this was really scary.

Even Yang Shuo had a change in his expression. He stared at Jiang Chen with a razor sharp gaze, a serious look had emerged in his eyes, and the scornful attitude he had towards Jiang Chen was long gone.

“Good, Jiang Chen. I never expected such an incredible man would be here.”

Yang Shuo was really surprised.

“Your turn now. I’ll kill you today for sure.”

Jiang Chen looked at Yang Shuo and challenged him.

“Hmph! Jiang Chen, do you really think you have the ability to defeat me just because you killed the Shamanic Fire Ape? Looks like you truly know nothing about my abilities.”

Yang Shuo let out a cold snort and restored his arrogance. He was really confident in his own abilities, that’s why even after witnessing how incredible Jiang Chen was, he was still confident he could kill him.

“Just show me whatever tricks you got. When I, Jiang Chen

wants to kill someone, even the heavens won't be able to save that person.

Jiang Chen put away his longsword once again and unleashed powerful energy around his body. He wanted to try fighting this genius from the Jian Province.

“Be careful, brother Jiang! This Yang Shuo is very difficult to handle, and he has cultivated the Myriad Returning Swords to perfection!”

Tian Yishan warned.

“Understood.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head.

“Jiang Chen, I'll let you die in the most painful way.”

After saying, unrestrained energy stormed out from Yang Shuo's head and formed into a sky-piercing light beam. On the other side, Jiang Chen let out his majestic energy. A dragon formed from his qi and blood appeared above his head, and it looked extraordinary.

With such powerful energies and continuous combat ripples, it finally attracted the attention of some of the people. Many groups and alliances in the outer perimeter of Inferno City turned their gazes towards the fighting scene.



“That’s young master Yang Shuo’s stronghold. Look at those energies, I think one of them belongs to young master Yang Shuo... But who has the courage to wreak havoc in young master Yang Shuo’s stronghold? Isn’t that the same as seeking death?”

“Yang Shuo is indeed a frightening man, but the man who dared attack him isn’t someone ordinary either. Combat ripples have emerged for quite some time now, and I even smell blood. It looks like many men have been killed at that place. Just some minutes ago, even the Shamanic Fire Ape engaged in battle, and now, Yang Shuo has personally engaged in the battle. This shows that his opponent is really strong.”

“I wonder who it is? I haven’t sensed his energy before, and I don’t remember anyone like this amongst the outer perimeter of Inferno City. Yang Shuo is trying to rule the entire outer perimeter of Inferno City, and he just destroyed Tian Yishan’s group. I had never thought he would meet an opponent today. If he is defeated, there will be a new power in the outer perimeter.

“Impossible! Yang Shuo is a peerless genius from the Myriad Sword Sect, and his combat strength is incredibly high! His Myriad Returning Swords skill has reached the level of perfection, ordinary people are simply not his match! Besides that, I heard Yang Shuo has some other, even stronger skills, that no one have seen before.”

.....

Numerous people looked at the fighting scene, and countless discussions were going on. Yang Shuo had a fierce reputation in the outer perimeter of Inferno City, ordinary powers and alliances don't have the courage to fight him. It was really surprising that someone were brave enough to attack him today.

Clang!

Yang Shuo waved his arm, then a narrow longsword appeared in his hand. It was a transparent sword which looked like a crystal. With a narrow and thin blade, like a piece of paper, the sword was really sword. The energy the sword unintentionally emitted was extremely cold, and it could send a shiver down anyone's spine."

"What a good sword."

Jiang Chen nodded his head. The sword in Yang Shuo's hand was a really good sword, even if it was still just a high-ranked combat weapon, and not a Superior Weapon.

But this sword was definitely a top weapon amongst all high-ranked combat weapons. It was more powerful than the Soaring Heavens Sword. As for Superior Weapons, they were extremely rare, and only those powerful Combat Soul warriors might have one.

"Of course it's a good sword. But the key point here isn't about the quality of the sword, it is about the person who uses the sword. The sword is called the Bloodthirsty Sword, and it must taste blood once it is used, and it must kill someone every time I use it. You

should feel proud about being able to die by this Bloodthirsty Sword.”

Yang Shuo placed his palm on the Bloodthirsty Sword’s body and gave it a few stroke. He really put a lot of love into this sword, and treated it like it was his lover.

“Save your breath, let me see how powerful the Myriad Sword Sect’s sword skill is. I don’t think this sword needs to taste the blood of its enemy, it might just settle for the blood of its own master.”

Jiang Chen didn’t fear what he was facing. The stronger Yang Shuo was, the more he would be able to arouse Jiang Chen’s desire to fight and interest.

“Take this sword attack!”

Yang Shuo let out a cold shout. With a swing of the Bloodthirsty Sword, the sword produced a buzzing sound. In the next second, eighteen beams shot out from the sword towards Jiang Chen.

“True Dragon Palm!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly. He threw his hand forwards and unleashed a gigantic dragon claw which grabbed towards the 18 incoming sword beams. In an instant, all eighteen sword light were caught by the dragon claw.

Clang clang...

Combined with some cracking and explosion sounds, all 18 sword beams were shattered by the True Dragon Palm.

“So weak. This is a sword skill from the Myriad Sword Sect?”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent look on his face.

“Haha, Jiang Chen, you have some really strong abilities, even I have to admit that you are a peerless genius! If we were both at the same cultivation level, I’m sure I wouldn’t be your match. But too bad, the difference between our cultivation levels is too huge. Jiang Chen, we aren’t allowed to fly in Inferno City, and it’s forbidden for us to have a great fight. Do you dare fight me outside Inferno City?”

Yang Shuo let out a hearty laugh. Jiang Chen’s mighty combat strength had aroused his desire to fight. He had made up his mind, he would fight with everything he got and kill this peerless genius in front of him.

“Alright.”

Jiang Chen instantly agreed with Yang Shuo. This was the perfect opportunity for Jiang Chen to establish his authority today. Besides, it wasn’t easy for Jiang Chen to find someone who could fight him equally. Jiang Chen did desire to have a great fight.

Swoosh!

Yang Shuo immediately flew upwards and appeared in the skies outside Inferno City.

“Brother Tian, you and Big Yellow stay here and take care of Guan Yiyun and the rest of the men.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Alright.”

Tian Yishan nodded his head in agreement.

After that, Jiang Chen flew up into the skies as well. As he was leaving the place, he gazed at Liu Kui and said with a fierce voice, “If you dare move even a bit, I will immediately kill you.”

In fact, Jiang Chen didn’t even worry that this Liu Kui would do something to harm Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun while he was fighting Yang Shuo. Liu Kui had been wounded by Jiang Chen just now, and at the same time, Tian Yishan had almost fully recovered from his injuries. If Liu Kui really wanted to attack them, he might not even be able to defeat Tian Yishan.

However, Jiang Chen’s warning had frightened Liu Kui. He had already witnessed how brutal Jiang Chen was, therefore he dared not neglect Jiang Chen’s words. Right now, he only wished that Yang Shuo could kill Jiang Chen. If that happened, not only would

his life be spared, he would also have the chance to torture Tian Yishan and the other men.

“Look, Yang Shuo flew out from the city! Who is that young man in white clothes? It looks like they’re going to fight outside the city!”

“That young man is only in his mid-teens, but can actually fight Yang Shuo face to face! This is unbelievable!”

“A genius has strength that someone like us can imagine, but it is no easy task for this young man to fight Yang Shuo.”

.....

Everyone in the outer perimeter of Inferno City raised their heads and looked at the skies outside of Inferno City. All of them wanted to see how this young man who appeared out of nowhere was going to defend himself from Yang Shuo’s Bloodthirsty Sword.

# Chapter 212 – 108,000 Swords

---

The outer perimeter of Inferno City was shaken, everyone were paying attention to this fight. Yang Shuo had a ferocious reputation in the outer perimeter of Inferno City, many powers and alliances feared him and dared not provoke him. But now, there was actually someone who had the audacity to attack him, and had even forced Yang Shuo to attack him personally. This showed how incredibly the young man was, that's why Jiang Chen had immediately attracted countless gazes upon appearing.

Tian Yishan seemed extremely worried. Although Jiang Chen's mighty combat strength had gone beyond his expectations and imagination, Yang Shuo was not someone who was easy to deal with. Everybody knew that he had mastered the Myriad Returning Swords, and somebody even said that Yang Shuo had other skills which were even stronger than this, skills so powerful that even Late Divine Core warriors couldn't defeat him.

Jiang Chen was after all only a Heavenly Core warrior, there was a huge gap between his cultivation level and Yang Shuo's. This was not something one could easily compensate for.

“Don't worry, buddy has many skills and tricks. What you have seen is just a tiny portion of what he has.”

Big Yellow's tail was wagging as he expressed his extreme confidence in Jiang Chen.

On the other side, Liu Kui was standing in the exact same spot, and hadn't even moved a bit. He kept staring at the scene above the skies, where the fight was going to begin.

High above the skies, Yang Shuo stood firmly in the wind. He wore a long, blue gown, and he held a buzzing Bloodthirsty Sword. The thick black shone brightly, lighting up the surrounding.

“Jiang Chen, you have offended me, that's why I need to punish you. I need to kill you to establish my authority. If I don't, no one will show me respect. However, you are a peerless genius with great talent, I'm sure your future will be limitless, so killing you is a waste of talent. Therefore, I have decided to give you another chance; as long as you're willing to submit to me and become my slave, I believe that not long after this, we'll be able to fight our way into the middle area of Inferno City. At that point of time, countless benefits will be shared between us. Jiang Chen, I'll give you ten breaths of time to think about it. Life or death, you decide.”

Yang Shuo said with a loud voice. Jiang Chen had caused him a huge loss by killing so many of his men, but if he was able to make this young man surrender to him and become his slave, it would really be worth the lives of all his men.

“Because of your words just now, you deserve a hundred deaths!”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent expression. Just by asking the once greatest Saint in the world to become his slave, Yang Shuo had pushed himself into an abyss of certain death. This was an insult to Jiang Chen; the dignity of the greatest Saint in the



world cannot ever be challenged!

“If that is the case, I won’t show you any mercy. I’ll let you taste my Myriad Returning Swords today.”

Yang Shuo portrayed a domineering image and a sky-piercing killing intent. The buzzing sound coming from the Bloodthirsty Sword became even more violent.

“Strike now.”

Jiang Chen had an indifferent expression, he felt no fear.

Yang Shuo’s clothes were fluttering in the wind. The Bloodthirsty Sword flew far away from his hand, and started floating in front of his chest.

“108,000 swords, destroy everything!”

Yang Shuo let out a loud shout and sent the Bloodthirsty Sword forwards. In an instant, the entire sky was filled with countless swords. The swords weaved into a web of swords which looked like a huge curtain covering the skies. It caused the air to violently vibrate, and countless sword energies and killing intents to mix. These sword emitted bright lights which lit up every single part of the skies, causing anyone who saw it to have a difficult time breathing, even from afar.

“Heavens! This strike is called the 108,000 Swords, there really

are 108,000 swords in the skies now! Each sword carries a devastating force, this is terrifying!”

“This is an extremely horrifying sword skill from the Myriad Sword Sect, and Yang Shuo has actually mastered it! I’ve heard it can destroy everything that gets in its way, and each sword has its own will! Once they’ve locked onto a target, they will never give up until the target is killed!”

“108,00 Swords, each of them are devastating, and the person who is targeted by them will suffer endless sword attacks! There is no way to escape from it, I wonder how this young man is going to counter it.”

.....

Everyone were shocked by what they saw. Yang Shuo’s strike had shaken the skies as it filled the scene with shining sword and intense killing intents.

“Go!”

Yang Shuo shouted out lightly. All 108,000 Swords turned into trails of bright beams as they forcefully thrust towards Jiang Chen.

“Good sword skill, good! Only a fight like this can make me feel excited! Firethorn Combat Armor!”

Jiang Chen’s body swayed, and he unleashed the Firethorn

Combat Armor which covered his entire body. At the same time, a golden colored axe appeared in his hand. Jiang Chen's desire to fight was extremely high, a powerful opponent like this had made his blood start boiling.

“Witness how I destroy your 108,000 Swords!”

Jiang Chen unleashed his energy and circulated the Clap of Thunder skill to its maximum, then a bright energy shot out from the axe. With a tremendous amount of force, he chopped towards the middle of the ocean of swords. He was going to chop this sword ocean in half with this attack.

Clang clang clang...

The Thunder Axe crashed into the sword energies unleashed by the Bloodthirsty Sword, causing the skies to shake and produce a myriad of sparks. Jiang Chen's attack had chopped the ocean of sword in half, and destroyed thousands of energy swords.

“Ignorant, you really thought you could destroy my 108,000 Swords, you're really ignorant!”

Yang Shuo had a grin on his face.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh...

Sword lights flew all over the place, each of them seemed like they were being controlled by someone as they swiftly flew above

the skies and turned towards Jiang Chen. They pierced towards him in a seemingly unavoidable manner.

“My combat strength is like a vast ocean, I will destroy all your sword energies, but there is no way for your attack to break my Firethorn Combat Armor.”

Jiang Chen behaved like a powerful Firethorn Savage as he unleashed a bright golden light all over his body. Countless energy swords crashed into his body, but Jiang Chen didn't put in any effort to counter them. Each of these energy sword could merely leave a white trail on Jiang Chen's Firethorn Combat Armor, but none of them could break it. Only the real Bloodthirsty Sword had the possibility of breaking through the defense of the Firethorn Combat Armor.

Since Jiang Chen was cultivating the Great Soul Derivation skill, it had given him extremely sensitive senses. He could immediately sense the real Bloodthirsty Sword approaching him.

Clang clang clang...

Jiang Chen was fighting in a mighty manner. He kept striking out with the Thunder Axe in hand, unleashing all sorts of attacks, sweeping through the energy swords. Each of his strikes would destroy thousands of energy swords.

“Where did this abnormal monster come from? How can he be so strong? Even the 108,000 Swords couldn't hurt him!”

“His armor is frightening, it helped him block most of the attacks, allowing him to push his way into the ocean of swords like a fish in the water.”

“He has some really amazing abilities, no wonder he had the courage to fight Yang Shuo! However, this isn’t Yang Shuo’s most powerful skill, the 108,000 Swords skill is just one of the skills from the Myriad Returning Swords skill. The most powerful skill, the Myriad Returning Swords has yet to be unleashed.”

.....

Everyone were stunned by what they were seeing, only experts could tell what was going on. Jiang Chen’s abilities had shocked all those who were watching the fight, making them think that if they were in this ocean of swords, they would be ripped into thousands of pieces. There was no way they could withstand the ocean of swords for such a long time.

“Haha, break everything for me!”

Jiang Chen had shattered more than half the energy swords with his battle axe. After letting out a hearty laugh, he let out a fierce roar and unleashed bright golden beams from the thorns on the Firethorn Combat Armor. This attack was Firethorn Savage’s other innate ability, and it had used this attack previously when attacking the Green Sanctuary Sect.

Clang clang clang...

The golden lights were extremely powerful. They all collided with the energy swords unleashed by Yang Shuo's Bloodthirsty Sword, causing both attacks to vanish.

After a short moment, all the energy swords had completely disappeared. The mighty Jiang Chen had destroyed all energy swords, he had completely countered Yang Shuo's 108,000 Swords.

“Brother Jiang is really terrifying!”

A pleasantly surprised expression filled Tian Yishan's face.

“Damn it, where did this abnormal young man come from? How could he counter the 108,000 Swords so easily? He is truly amazing!”

“Unbelievable, this is really unbelievable! The thing is, I can sense that he is only at the peak Heavenly Core realm, he isn't even a Divine Core warrior! If he breaks through to the Divine Core realm, who would be his match?”

“I'm sure Yang Shuo has even more powerful attacks in store, I still don't think this young man is a match for Yang Shuo!”

.....

Everyone were shocked, no one knew the name of this young man in white, and no one had seen him before. But after this violent fight, if this young man in white didn't die, he would

surely become famous amongst Inferno City's outer perimeter.

Inferno City was huge, and all powers and alliances were classified into different categories. Inferno City was divided into three sections, the outer perimeter, the middle area, and the center. The strength of powers and alliances in the outer perimeter can't be compared to those in the middle area. And the ones in the middle area are no match for those in the center.

Yang Shuo waved his hand and grabbed the Bloodthirsty Sword. He too had a shocked expression on his face. He raised his head up and looked at Jiang Chen who was standing opposite of him, his killing intent was even higher now.

“Jiang Chen, you've really surprised me, but that's all. Although your armor has an incredible defense, there is no way you can withstand my last attack.”

With extreme arrogance and confidence, Yang Shuo told Jiang Chen.

“Really? I do want to witness the Myriad Returning Swords skill.”

Jiang Chen had the same indifferent expression. He was looking forward to Yang Shuo's strongest attack.

Hmph!

Yang Shuo let out a cold snort. Once again, the Bloodthirsty Sword transformed, and together with numerous clanging sounds, 108,000 Swords appeared in the skies once again, an ocean of swords. But this time, the ocean of swords didn't attack."

"Myriad Returning Swords!"

Yang Shuo let out a thunderous shout. In an instant, all energy swords merged together and formed into one gigantic sword.

Swoosh!

An earth-shaking cry came out from the Bloodthirsty Sword, it had become a gigantic sword hundreds of meters long. It floated in the skies, filled with tremendous energies. It caused the air to start violently trembling, it almost caused the air itself to rip apart.

The Myriad Returning Swords was a union of all 108,000 swords which formed into an invincible and devastating sword. This sword could destroy anything that got in its way.

Opposite of this gigantic sword, Jiang Chen's expression had finally changed slightly. The Myriad Sword Sect's sword skill was really incredible. If he was still at his peak, he wouldn't take a skill like this seriously. But for now, he needed to be extra careful.

Yang Shuo was a genius from the Myriad Sword Sect, he was not someone whom ordinary cultivators could compare with. The Myriad Returning Swords skill was a unique skill, and although



Jiang Chen possessed powerful combat strength, his cultivation was only at the Heavenly Core realm, and he would need to give it all he had in order to withstand this attack.

“This attack is really powerful, I don’t think the Firethorn Combat Armor can defend against it.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. Right at this moment, he did something that surprised everybody. Jiang Chen put away the combat axe and retracted his armor, then he slowly raised both his hands.

## Chapter 213 – Great Illusion Realm

---

This was an incomparable sword, the ultimate sword skill of the Myriad Sword Sect, and everyone feared its power. Yang Shuo was a cruel and brutal man, but he did possess strength that allowed him to be arrogant. This sword was more than enough for him to stand on top of many powerful men.

Everybody held their breaths, no one knew how this young man in white was going to defend himself from this Myriad Returning Swords attack.

Although he was able to withstand the 108,000 Swords, it didn't mean he could do the same with this attack, as it was simply too powerful. It carried momentum that could pierce a hole in the skies. Jiang Chen, however, retracted his Firethorn Combat Armor, then he stored the combat weapon into his storage ring. This decision made every single spectator puzzled.

“What is that young man doing? Why is he giving up on his own defense and weapon at this critical moment? Is he going to surrender because he thinks he's unable to defeat his opponent?”

“Impossible, that man is no idiot! He has incredible combat strength, and even if he can't defeat Yang Shuo, I don't think he would just give up and surrender!”

“I heard Yang Shuo call him Jiang Chen just now. I'm curious what power or alliance he came from? He's a genius who defies everything I thought I knew, but if he is killed by Yang Shuo, that

would be a real pity.”

.....

Many people couldn't understand what Jiang Chen was up to. If it was any ordinary man, they would definitely pour in all their strength, and combined their strongest attack and defense when facing the Myriad Returning Sword unleashed by Yang Shuo. But not only did Jiang Chen retracted his Firethorn Combat Armor, which gave him tremendous defense, he also stored away his high-ranked combat weapon. This was no different than seeking death in the eyes of these people.

Amongst all the people in Inferno City's outer perimeter, Big Yellow was the one who behaved the calmest. Although he didn't know what Jiang Chen was up to, he knew one thing; Jiang Chen was no idiot. He would never do something he wasn't completely confident about.

Hsss!

The Bloodthirsty Sword produced a thunderous hissing sound as it locked down on Jiang Chen's aura and started forcefully crashing down towards him.

Jiang Chen could feel the massive pressure coming from the Bloodthirsty Sword getting stronger and stronger. At the same time, the golden light glowing on his palms were also becoming brighter and brighter, and all his fingers kept moving swiftly like snakes.

“Six Profound Solar Fingers, Six Solar merge into one!”

Jiang Chen suddenly let out a loud shout, two shining lights shot out from his eyes and flashed across the skies as he looked at the approaching gigantic sword. Just a moment ago, he had utilized the pressure coming from the Myriad Returning Sword and forced himself to unleash the sixth finger of the Six Profound Solar Fingers.

Jiang Chen was only a Late Heavenly Core warrior, and he hadn't broken through to the Divine Core realm. Therefore, there was a limitation to the strength of his skills. No matter if it was the True Dragon Palm, or the Firethorn Combat Armor, even if he could block Yang Shuo's attack, he still had no way to cause any harm to Yang Shuo. However, if he was able to unleash the sixth finger of the Six Profound Solar Fingers, it would be a completely different story.

The Six Profound Solar Fingers was a high earth-ranked combat skill, and if fully utilized, it was much greater than the Myriad Returning Swords. When Jiang Chen cultivated the Six Profound Solar Fingers to perfection, all six fingers would merge into one, which gave it an unimaginable force.

Bang!

Jiang Chen held up all ten fingers and forcefully pointed them forwards. Six bright huge fingers instantly appeared and crashed forwards like six massive pillars. In the blink of an eye, these six

fingers merged together and become a single finger. The gigantic finger was about the same size as the approaching Bloodthirsty Sword, but the gigantic finger's aura was actually suppressing the Myriad Returning Sword.

“What is that combat skill? How could it be so powerful? I think it must be at least a high earth-ranked combat skill!”

Yang Shuo was completely stunned, Jiang Chen's performance was completely out of his expectations.

“What a powerful combat skill! What kind of abnormal monster is this Jiang Chen?”

“Don't speak yet, let's see if Jiang Chen's finger skill can really withstand Yang Shuo's Myriad Returning Sword!”

Everyone were shocked by what was happening. They all stared at the scene without even blinking their eyes, waiting for the collision between the gigantic golden finger and the Bloodthirsty Sword. With the speed of both attacks, it only took a fraction of a second for the impact to happen, but to all of these people, it felt like they had been waiting for a long time.

Bang!

Finally, the Six Profound Solar Fingers and Myriad Returning Sword crashed together. A massive explosion sounded out and swept across the entire skies. It filled the air with devastating

energy ripples. These energies were so powerful that it covered the entire skies and reflected colorful lights and bright sparks all over the place.

A lot of people had their faces turn pale. Even some Divine Core warriors were shaken by the collision. If it was them who stood in the center of the collision, perhaps they would have been shattered into a million pieces.

Tap tap tap...

Yang Shuo was forced back dozens of steps before he was able to regain control of his body. His face had become pale, and blood could be seen on lips. The Bloodthirsty Sword had returned to his hand, but it was trembling nonstop.

This was the true power of the Six Solar Fingers, even the Myriad Returning Swords was no match for it. Yang Shuo had used up a lot of his mental energy when he unleashed the Myriad Returning Sword right now, and therefore, he had suffered a huge recoil.

“He was defeated, Yang Shuo was really defeated, this is unbelievable!”

“Heavens, where did this abnormal monster really come from? If Yang Shuo is defeated, that mean the structure of all powers and alliances in the outer perimeter of Inferno City are going to reshuffle!”

“This Jiang Chen is really powerful, and he’s not even a Divine Core warrior yet! However, Yang Shuo is still standing firmly! I told you previously that he has other skills that are more powerful than the Myriad Returning Swords, he might be able to turn the tables!”

Everybody in the outer perimeter of Inferno City were immersed in extreme shock. Yang Shuo was an incredible man with incredible combat strength, but even after he had unleashed the Myriad Returning Sword, he had been defeated by this abnormal Heavenly Core youngster. If not for them witnessing it with their own eyes, they wouldn’t have believed it at all.

“Amazing! Brother Jiang has really opened up my eyes.”

Tian Yishan had a rapt expression. Jiang Chen kept showing him miracles through his actions. From killing the Shamanic Fire Ape to the 108,000 Swords, and then the Myriad Returning Sword, he had simply crashed all they way through. Even Yang Shuo wasn’t his match.

High above in the skies, Jiang Chen stood in the wild breeze. He looked like a real god of war as he stared at Yang Shuo who stood opposite of him with a face filled with shock.

“Yang Shuo, what other tricks do you have? If you have now, then you will now die.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Haha, Jiang Chen, you have truly opened my eyes! However, do you really think that this is all I got? Today, I’ll let you witness my real skills.”

Yang Shuo suddenly let out a loud laugh. Although his Myriad Returning Swords had been defeated, and he had suffered minor injuries, he was still tremendously confident that Jiang Chen would be killed by him.

“Your real skills? Show me what you got.”

Jiang Chen had a light smile on his face. It was a really pleasant and enjoyable fight. Because of Yang Shuo, Jiang Chen had managed to regain control of the Six Solar Fingers’ sixth finger earlier than he was supposed to. In theory, he should have only been able to unleash the sixth finger after breaking through to the Divine Core realm, but now, with only his mere Heavenly Core cultivation base, he was able to unleash it, and the credit for that goes to Yang Shuo.

Hmph!

Yang Shuo let out a cold snort. He slowly put away his Bloodthirsty Sword, and after that, he slightly shut his eyes. He clasped his palms in front of his chest, and soon after, waves of energy began tumbling around him, causing his clothes to flutter back and forth.

Yang Shuo was reciting some unknown words. Numerous symbols began blinking and swimming all over his palms, and



slowly, a dreamy energy began leaking out from Yang Shuo's body.

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. With his experience, he was actually unable to tell what kind of skill Yang Shuo was trying to unleash.

“The Illusion Heart Sutra, Great Illusion Realm, come forth now!”

Yang Shuo suddenly opened both eyes and let out a thunderous shout. He forcefully threw both palms forwards and unleashed a rainbow colored light curtain, towards Jiang Chen.

The light curtain did not produce any noise or energy ripples, it looked like didn't carry any attacking force, however, there were complicated patterns kept blinking on it, in an instant, it had arrived in front of Jiang Chen.

“Hmph! Let me see what this skill of yours can do!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. He had the experience as the once greatest Saint in the world, he had seen all sorts of skills. Therefore, he had no fear towards Yang Shuo's skill. Jiang Chen took a step forwards and entered the light curtain.

Swoosh!

Right as Jiang Chen entered the light curtain, the scene in front of him completely changed. What Jiang Chen saw was a colorful

world that stretched as far as his eyes could see. It looked like a dream; there was no earth below his feet, and no skies above his head, it was only a variegated, beautiful world where everything seemed so illusory.

“It’s an illusionary realm; I didn’t think this Yang Shuo had the ability to unleash a skill like this. Too bad, with my eyes, no ordinary illusionary realms can affect me.”

A grin appeared on Jiang Chen’s face.

“Haha, Jiang Chen, you’ll be doomed upon entering my Great Illusion Realm, you’ll be killed without me actually fighting you!”

Yang Shuo was standing outside the illusionary realm, laughing in great joy.

“What kind of skill is that? Why is Jiang Chen just standing still after entering the light curtain?”

“It’s an illusionary realm! Yang Shuo really did have skills that were even more powerful! He could really create an illusionary realm which can confuse the mind of his opponent!”

“Illusionary skills are really horrifying! I’ve heard about them before, but never seen one, because this kind of skill is extremely rare. Besides, it’s extremely difficult to master!”

Once again, everyone watching were shocked by Yang Shuo’s

skill. This was Yang Shuo's true strength. He was waiting for Jiang Chen to lose his mind in the Great Illusion Realm. After that, he would unleash the Myriad Returning Swords and kill Jiang Chen with a single strike.

Within the Great Illusion Realm, Jiang Chen had a calm expression, as he wasn't bothered by the colorful world at all. Suddenly, the scene in front of him changed dramatically.

On the peak of a broken cliff that touched the clouds, white fog was everywhere and the wind was extremely cold. A man with a majestic body carried a mighty sword in his hand, looking up towards the heavens. Right at this moment, dark clouds filled the heavens above. Thunder and lightning continuously struck down as if it was the end of the world.

The man with the handsome face looked to be in his thirties. He had black hair that fluttered in the wild wind. The calm expression on his face portrayed an image of solemnity, and his aura alone was majestic enough to rule the entire world.

The man clenched the longsword in his hand tightly. Complicated patterns could be seen on the sword's body. The sword was emitting violent energies that tore apart the surrounding space and caused cracks to appear in the dimensions. Shivering dark wind blew out from these cracks.

Seeing this man, the previously calm Jiang Chen instantly had a change in expression. Both his eyes instantly became red, and even breathing became difficult for him.

The Saint Cliff! That's right, this place was the Saint Cliff! The scene in front of him was the exact same scene as the one that played out 100 years ago. This man was the greatest Saint in the entire world; he was Jiang Chen. The sword in his hand was the Heavenly Saint Sword, a name given by Jiang Chen. The sword had followed Jiang Chen his entire life.

Jiang Chen was breathing rapidly, as if he was experiencing the scene himself. It was like a rerun of what happened 100 years ago. He knew what was going to happen, it was the proudest moment of his life, and yet, it was something he never wished to experience once again. He would never forget about this experience.

The sound of thunder wreaked havoc, the dark clouds above the skies became thicker and thicker. Jiang Chen who was standing on the Saint Cliff had a serious expression. His majestic energy swept across the entire place. Slowly, he raised the Heavenly Saint Sword in his hand, and pointed it towards heavens.

## Chapter 214 – Establishing Power

---

Above the Saint Cliff, Jiang Chen looked like an unrivaled king of all who gazed down upon the entire world. The Heavenly Saint Sword kept buzzing, as if it was alive.

Jiang Chen had eyebrows slanting upwards and outwards, and a pair of solemn eyes that could stare into any illusion. He raised his head towards the thunder and lightning filled skies, a furious energy began flowing out from his body, like a tsunami.

The cold winds soughed, and the mighty will of the heavens swept down from the skies, covering the entire Saint Cliff. Finally, it locked down on Jiang Chen who was standing on the cliff.

“Not even the heavens can get in my way! If no path exists in front of me, then I, the greatest Saint will break open a new path!”

With a majestic aura that soared the heavens, Jiang Chen portrayed an unrestrained domineering image of one who ruled everything underneath the heavens. With the Heavenly Saint Sword in hand, he suddenly leapt forward, piercing himself into the heavens above.

Hsss!

The Heavenly Saint Sword produced a world-shaking hissing sound; the sword's energy covered the heavens. A lightning bolt resembling a dragon descended from the intense dark clouds, and fell right onto the Heavenly Saint Sword.

The Heavenly Saint Sword started trembling even more rapidly, and the sword's energy became more and more violent. Its momentum however, was still seemingly unstoppable.

“Break open for me!”

Jiang Chen let out an explosive roar. The roar was like a thunder strike that could shake the entire world, it sounded out across half the Divine Continent. The Heavenly Saint Sword in his hand was pointed at the heavens above.

Jiang Chen who was watching all of this in the Great Illusion Realm held his breath, and both his eyes had become red. He could still remember; at this moment, the entire Divine Continent had been shaken, countless Saints had their eyes fixed upon this scene, the greatest Saint underneath the heavens had become the center of all attention at this moment.

The Heavenly Saint Sword transformed into a massive dragon and flew up into the skies. Its body stretched as far as the eye could see, and at the same time, Jiang Chen's body had become extremely tall as well.

This was a sword strike so powerful that all of heavens and earth shook. A sword strike that caused the heavens and earth to tremble, a sword strike that even the lightning and will of the heavens couldn't stop. It had broken through countless layers of dark clouds, and reached the end of the heavens.

Crack!

Cracking sounds could be heard from the end of the heavens, vast rainbow colored lights fell down from the end of the heavens, it covered the skies above, and at the same time, it covered Jiang Chen's eyes.

Vast rainbow colored lights fell down and covered Jiang Chen from head to toe. Then, a huge amount of blood dripped down from the rainbow colored lights; it was a Saint's blood; it was Jiang Chen's blood.

When the rainbow colored lights disappeared, Jiang Chen had too disappeared. It was as if he had vanished from the mortal realm. His Heavenly Saint Sword was gone as well. However, light from the Realm of Immortals was falling down from the heavens.

“GRAAAA!!”

Within the Great Illusion Realm, Jiang Chen let out a furious roar towards the heavens. In an instant, he threw up a mouthful of blood. Fury and unreconciled feelings filled his heart; what happened on the Saint Cliff seemed just like it had happened yesterday, causing Jiang Chen to sink into a train of thoughts, unable to free himself.

I split open the path leading to the Realm of Immortals, but I died on the Saint Cliff.

I created a new path for all the Saints in the Saint Origin realm, but I myself had no luck with entering the Realm of Immortals.

I was the first one to see the lights coming from the Realm of Immortals, but that was all I could see.

.....

Jiang Chen's emotions were deeply troubled by what happened in his previous life, and he couldn't escape from this train of thoughts. He had supported the future of the entire Saint Origin realm with his Saint body, but he was unreconciled with the ending. Why did he have to be the one to sacrifice himself?

Luckily, another door had opened up for him. In his current life, he would definitely enter the Realm of Immortals, fulfilling his hundred year old dream.

“Look, Jiang Chen is throwing up blood! His body is swaying back and forth, and it looks like he's in pain!”

“Yang Shuo's illusionary realm is simply too frightening, it even caused brother Jiang to be engulfed in his own painful memories. With this, even if Yang Shuo doesn't attack him, Jiang Chen will still be killed.”

“This is horrifying, if Yang Shuo strikes now, Jiang Chen will surely be killed!”



.....

Everyone were shocked. No one had any idea what Jiang Chen was seeing, and no one knew what was going on within the illusion realm. Jiang Chen was stuck in his own fantasy.

The Illusion Heart Sutra, Great Illusion Realm, anyone who had a dream in their heart would be seriously affected by it. This includes Jiang Chen.

“Doesn’t look like brother Jiang’s condition is good.”

The exalted expression on Tian Yishan’s face turned into one of worry at once. Yang Shuo’s Great Illusion Realm was simply too terrifying. Jiang Chen was engulfed in his own painful memory, and is unable to pull himself out.

“Haha, Jiang Chen, you’re finished!”

Yang Shuo burst into laughter. He too had no idea what was going on inside Jiang Chen’s mind, but he had accomplished his goal. The Bloodthirsty Sword once again appeared in his hand, then he started sprinting towards the Great Illusion Realm while piercing his sword with an intense killing intent towards Jiang Chen.

A hideous joyful expression emerged on Yang Shuo’s face, as if he had seen an image of himself killing Jiang Chen.

“Die, this is the consequences of offending me! Being able to die under my Illusion Heart Sutra, you should feel proud!”

Yang Shuo was very happy. The Bloodthirsty Sword approached Jiang Chen from behind, like a poisonous snake.

Seeing this, everybody cried out in alarm. They could see that Jiang Chen was still immersed in an illusion, and had no way to escape from it. Under such conditions, Yang Shuo could easily kill him with his sword.

Jiang Chen was indeed immersed in the scene of what happened 100 years ago, and couldn't escape. His entire heart was filled with unreconciled emotions, and fury.

However, Jiang Chen wasn't in the state those outsiders thought he was; he wasn't completely trapped in his own fantasy with no way off escaping. He was in a strange condition right now, as if he was merging together with the version of him from one hundred years ago.

Just as the Bloodthirsty Sword was about to hit Jiang Chen, his body moved nearly 30 meters backwards, dodging the attack.

“Impossible, how could he avoid my attack when he was trapped in his own fantasy?”

Yang Shuo's expression changed dramatically.

Swoosh!

At this moment, Jiang Chen suddenly turned around and stared at Yang Shuo with his red eyes. With just a single gaze from him, Yang Shuo couldn't help but take a few steps back. His face instantly became pale.

What kind of gaze was that? Yang Shuo felt as if his heart had been emptied by it. It was like a gaze of judgment, a gaze that could sentence him with just one look.

He felt a massive amount of pressure coming from Jiang Chen. At this moment, he had a feeling that he was facing a giant, not a young man in his mid-teens.

When Jiang Chen was trapped in his own fantasy, he had somewhat merged with his previous life. Although he was still just a Late Heavenly Core warrior, the aura that was emitting from his body was coming from the greatest Saint. His gaze could see through any illusions.

Under such mighty pressure, Yang Shuo had temporarily lost his mind, and fear had filled his mind, causing him to lose control. The Great Illusion Realm shattered in an instant.

Right as the Great Illusion Realm shattered, both Jiang Chen and Yang Shuo had finally awakened from their previous states.

Jiang Chen's red eyes returned to normal, and he had regained

consciousness. He felt lucky in his mind, as he had almost been trapped by Yang Shuo. If not for him entering that strange state of mind in that critical moment, perhaps he would have been killed by Yang Shuo by now.

However, Yang Shuo was even more shocked than anybody.

“What happened just now? Why did I suddenly stop attacking? Why did I retract the Great Illusion Realm? That gaze just now, it was really frightening!”

Yang Shuo was extremely shocked. Even if he had awakened and returned to his normal state of mind, he still couldn't forget the eyes he saw just now.

Puh!

In the next moment, Yang Shuo threw up a mouthful of blood. In fact, it wasn't Yang Shuo who had retracted the Great Illusion Realm, it had been broken by Jiang Chen's gaze.

The Great Illusion Realm had been broken by Jiang Chen, and Yang Shuo received an even greater backlash than when Jiang Chen had broken the Myriad Returning Sword. It had caused him serious injury.

“Yang Shuo, although your illusion realm is really powerful, it still couldn't affect me. Now, it's my turn to attack. True Dragon Palm!”

Jiang Chen still carried an unparalleled momentum. His combat strength was still at peak, and in an instant, he unleashed the True Dragon Palm. The gigantic blood red dragon claw descended from the skies and covered Yang Shuo like a gigantic blood red hill.

“Break away for me!”

In consternation, Yang Shuo counter-attacked with all his strength. However, with his current condition, he couldn't even unleash half of his combat strength. There was no way he could destroy the mighty dragon claw. Therefore, he was directly grabbed by the True Dragon Palm.

Crack crack...

Ahh!!

Under the massive pressure of the True Dragon Palm, cracking seemed to sound out endlessly from Yang Shuo's bones. The intense pain made him scream out so loudly that his screams could be heard from afar.

“Yang Shuo, I told you that I would kill you today no matter what. Also, I won't let you die easily. I'll burn you slowly with my True Dragon Flames.”

Jiang Chen let out a loud shout, then the True Dragon Flames began shooting out from within the dragon claw. In an instant,

Yang Shuo was covered by a sea of flames.

“Ahh!! Jiang Chen... if you dare kill me... the Myriad Sword Sect won't let you go!”

Yang Shuo was screaming out in terrible pain, but at the same time, he didn't forget to give a warning.

“Hmph! This is Inferno Hell, and you're threatening me with the Myriad Sword Sect... What an idiot.”

Jiang Chen cared nothing about the warning. He controlled the temperature of the flames and kept burning Yang Shuo. Jiang Chen wanted Yang Shuo to experience the pain and torture that Guan Yiyun suffered, he didn't want to let Yang Shuo die so easily.

“Heavens, how did this happen?”

“Jiang Chen was almost killed by Yang Shuo, but the illusion realm suddenly disappeared... how did Jiang Chen break it?”

“Jiang Chen is simply too frightening! He actually turned the tables at the last moment. Looks like Yang Shuo is going to be killed by Jiang Chen today.”

“This young man is a fierce and ferocious man with a brutal approach. But, the strong prey on the weak in Inferno Hell, there are no other rules or orders to talk about here.”

.....

Everyone were stunned by how things hard turned out. All of them had seen how Yang Shuo had almost killed Jiang Chen with his Bloodthirsty Sword, and no one had expected such a huge turnaround to happen.

“Awesome, brother Jiang really can kill that Yang Shuo! He has my complete admiration! From now on, in Inferno Hell, I, Tian Yishan will followed brother Jiang and obey all his orders!”

Tian Yishan was super excited. Watching Yang Shuo being destroyed by Jiang Chen had helped him rid the sulky feelings in his mind. He was oppressed by the cruel Yang Shuo, and not only had he almost been killed, all his brothers had suffered miserably as well. Now, revenge had been carried out, and of course he felt great satisfaction.

“How did this happen? How did young master Yang Shuo get defeated? This is impossible!”

Liu Kui was about to go nuts. The last hope in his mind was completely gone, and he knew very clearly, once Yang Shuo was dead, Jiang Chen would definitely not let him go.

“Old man, let this master dog point you towards a path of survival. What do you think?”

Big Yellow said while wagging his head.

“Path towards survival?”

Liu Kui's eyes lit up. This dog had come together with Jiang Chen. He looked at all the dead bodies scattered around the stronghold, and since Yang Shuo was soon going to die, he would be the last one alive in the stronghold, and he would surely be killed by Jiang Chen.

No one wanted to die, and that applied to Liu Kui as well. He knew how hard it was to survive in Inferno Hell. In order to survive, many people had to bow their heads, and that was the reason why he had pledged loyalty to Yang Shuo before this.

“Simple, as long as you agree to become this master dog's human pet, and obey all of master dog's orders, this master dog will ensure your survival.”

Big Yellow said with a huge smile on his face.



# Chapter 215 – Unsuccessful Human Pet Adoption

---

What? Human pet?

Liu Kui was startled, then he immediately let out a loud roar, “What? You’re just a dog, and you want me to become your human pet, enslaved by you? Fat chance! Daddy would rather die than become a dog’s slave!”

Liu Kui almost threw up his blood. He felt his dignity being cruelly stepped on. If he became a dog’s slave... damn it, how was he going to live that kind of life?

“Haha, Liu Kui, this is the only path that can ensure your survival! Hurry up, come forth and pay respect to your new master!”

Tian Yishan burst into laughter. His hatred for Liu Kui went deep, that’s why he felt extremely happy when he saw Liu Kui’s current condition. If Liu Kui really became a dog’s slave, it would be much more miserable than death. He wouldn’t even be able to raise his head in the future.

“Bastard, you’re insulting me!”

Liu Kui was flustered and exasperated.

“Damn you! The opportunity to become this master dog’s human pet is the virtues accumulated by your ancestors! Old fool, you should be feeling so happy that you’ll be unable to sleep for ten days and ten nights, and you should be thanking your ancestors for this! But not only are you not doing so, you actually refused my offer? This is ridiculous!”

Big Yellow’s saliva dripped all over the place. He expressed regret when Liu Kui didn’t live up to his expectations.

Ahh!!

Yang Shuo’s blood curdling screeches became even more plaintive, and it send shivers down the spines of the ones listening. He was trapped by the scorching flame, and underneath the True Dragon Palm’s pressure, he couldn’t even move a tiny bit, let alone struggle. All he could do was quietly wait for the flames to burn him to death.

The feeling of walking step by step towards death was not something an ordinary man could understand. The current Yang Shuo was in a situation where he was unable to choose whether or not he would live or die.

“Extremely fierce! This Jiang Chen is much fiercer than Yang Shuo, he’s even able to kill without blinking his eyes!”

“Although there are no rules in Inferno Hell, ordinary people still avoid offending geniuses from big sects. That is unless they do not want to leave Inferno Hell for the rest of their lives. If they offend

a genius, and do leave, they would suffer the fury of those big sects. Yang Shuo is a rare genius from the Myriad Sword Sect, and now this Jiang Chen is killing him in front of so many people. News about this will definitely spread to the outside world, and the Myriad Sword Sect will definitely seek out Jiang Chen for revenge.”

“I don’t agree with your argument. In Inferno Hell, nothing is more important than surviving. The number one priority here is to survive. This is a place where the strong prey on the weak, so no matter what status you have in the outside world, it’s useless in here. If Jiang Chen doesn’t kill Yang Shuo, Yang Shuo would definitely kill him. Don’t tell me that because he is a genius from the Myriad Sword Sect; Jiang Chen should just sit back and wait for death?”

.....

Everyone knew that Yang Shuo was doomed today, they had already witnessed Jiang Chen’s cruelty. This was man even more ruthless than Yang Shuo. Of course, only a man like this could survive the harsh environment in Inferno Hell, and he would be able to live a better life than anyone else.

“Old man, look at that, you know what that is? That is your last hope, disappearing! Do you think Jiang Chen will let you go? He said this not long ago; today, he will kill every single man in this stronghold, and leave no survivors.”

Big Yellow kept rocking his head as he conducted a psychological attack towards Liu Kui.

Liu Kui gnashed his teeth in anger. But since death was approaching, true fear would slowly creep up from the bottom of his heart, and the dead bodies all over the place had also ignited his urge to survive.

“If there are no more options, I’ll agree to this damn dog’s request first and save my life, then I’ll find a way to get revenge in the future. One day, I will definitely rip this damn dog’s skin off!”

A cunning look emerged in Liu Kui’s eyes, he had made up his mind.

Ahh!!

Yang Shuo let out his last shrill scream. After that, he was completely burned into ashes by the True Dragon Flames. An instant after he had died, Jiang Chen extended his hand and grabbed the Bloodthirsty Sword and the storage ring. Both of these items were extremely valuable; the Bloodthirsty Sword was high-ranked combat weapon, but what made Jiang Chen feel happy was the storage ring. It contained all of Yang Shuo’s belongings, and it wasn’t difficult to imagine how big of a harvest this was.

Jiang Chen stored the storage ring, and while holding onto the Bloodthirsty Sword, he descended from the sky and landed on the stronghold’s ground, next to Liu Kui. The Bloodthirsty Sword was emitting a cold aura, sending chills down Liu Kui’s spine.

“I agree to become your human pet!”

Liu Kui immediately said to Big Yellow.

“Kaka, good, perfect! This dog master finally got himself a human pet!”

Big Yellow let out a happy laugh. However, his laugh didn't last for too long, and his face instantly darkened. This happened because Jiang Chen had slashed Liu Kui in half.

Liu Kui really died in an unjust manner. With his Mid Divine Core cultivation level, even if he couldn't defeat Jiang Chen, there was no way he would be killed so easily. He thought his life would be spared once he agreed to Big Yellow, and he didn't expect Jiang Chen would kill him with a single sword strike once he became relaxed.

Ruff ruff ruff...

Big Yellow became extremely angry. Without any hesitation, he dashed forwards with his mouth widen open and bit towards Jiang Chen's butt.

“What the fuck?! Damn dog, what are you doing?!”

Jiang Chen cursed.

“Damn you, damn you! Master dog just adopted a human pet, but

you killed him! I don't care, you have to pay me back!!”

Big Yellow didn't want to let Jiang Chen off, he kept biting towards Jiang Chen's butt with his big mouth.

“You stupid master dog, that old fool was obviously pretending to submit to you! He had bad intentions, daddy killed him in order to save you! If I hadn't done so, you would still be in the dark one day when someone cooks you for a big feast! Not only are you not showing any gratitude, you're actually trying to bite me! I can forgive you for biting me, but why do you keep biting my butt every time? If you don't stop now, don't blame daddy for being cruel!”

Jiang Chen was really pissed off. This dog was ridiculous! Liu Kui was not a good man! Jiang Chen cultivated the Great Soul Derivation skill, and therefore, he had super sensitive senses. He could accurately judge anyone's characters, that's why he knew what kind of person Liu Kui was.

“Fuck you! If that old fool really had the audacity to try and harm me, this master dog has countless methods that can make him surrender! I don't care, you have to pay me back with another human pet!”

Big Yellow was furious! He had finally gotten himself a human pet, but before he could show off with his new human pet, his pet had died. This was ridiculous!

“Even so, we still couldn't spare this man's life! I said it before, I

would kill every single person in this stronghold! Damn dog, get the hell out of here!”

Jiang Chen almost threw up some blood because of his anger.

Uhh...

Tian Yishan who was standing next to them was completely baffled. He was stunned by the relationship between this man and dog. They were friends, but all of a sudden, they were fighting each other.

What’s more important was that Tian Yishan thought that Big Yellow was a pet beast who had surrendered to Jiang Chen, but judging from what was happening right now, their relationship was not like he had imagined.

Bang bang bang...

The duo engaged in a head-to-head fight. The turmoil lasted for a few minutes before coming to a complete stop.

“Damn you, this master dog is going to enter secluded cultivation! I want to break through to the Divine Core realm!”

Black circles surrounded both of Big Yellow’s eyes, and his yellow fur had become messy after the intense fight. On his opposite side, Jiang Chen had a pleasant expression. He seemed calm and relaxed.

“Hehe, Big Yellow, you need more practice, you’re simply no match for me!”

Jiang Chen felt endlessly pleased with himself. Being able to teach this dog a lesson brought him enjoyment.

“Wait until this master dog breaks through to the Divine Core realm! Once my mighty innate abilities awakens, I’ll tear your butt into pieces!”

Big Yellow gnashed his teeth and warned Jiang Chen.

“Good, I’ll be waiting!”

Jiang Chen shrugged his shoulders. If this dog could break through to the Divine Core realm, his combat strength would definitely reach an incredible level. Once a Dragon Horse’s innate abilities awakened, he would become someone whom no ordinary beasts could match. Therefore, Jiang Chen was really looking forward to Big Yellow breaking through. The more powerful this dog became, the greater help he would be able to provide Jiang Chen.

Tian Yishan shook his head with a smile on his face. He finally understood the relationship between Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. The duos relationship wasn’t like master and slave, it was like they were brothers, fighting and quarreling amongst each other without affecting the strong bond between them.



“Brother Jiang is truly amazing, even Yang Shuo was killed by you! You have my total admiration! From now on, brother Jiang is the new master of this stronghold, and I, Tian Yishan will obey every single one of brother Jiang’s orders!”

Tian Yishan cupped his fist towards Jiang Chen. He felt really grateful towards Jiang Chen. Not only had Jiang Chen saved his life, he had also saved Guan Yiyun and the other men, seized back the stronghold, killed all the enemies, and helped him settle a deep-rooted hatred. There was no way Tian Yishan could forget this huge deed.

Besides, Tian Yishan was not an idiot. With his judgment, he could easily see Jiang Chen’s massive potential. A genius like him would definitely have a limitless future.

“Don’t mention it, brother Tian. We are all from the Black Sect, and that’s the reason why I couldn’t just walk away from this and pretend nothing had happened. Besides, I’ve just arrived in Inferno Hell, there’s plenty of things I need brother Tian to help me with.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face.

“Brother Jiang, what are we going to do with these dead bodies?”

Tian Yishan asked.

Bang!

Right after he asked, he immediately saw Big Yellow spit flames out from his mouth onto the dead bodies. One at a time, they were all burnt into ashes. Jiang Chen and Tian Yishan looked at each other, smiles emerging on both faces at the same time. This dog was releasing his anger.

“Buddy, our harvest today is huge, let’s see what we got here.”

When mentioning this, Big Yellow immediately became excited. Jiang Chen had killed so many people today, and snatched all their storage rings, including Yang Shuo. There must be a massive amount of wealth in those rings.

“I’m sure our harvest today will be great! But what’s more important right now is the conditions of Guan Yiyun and the others. Brother Tian, please bring Guan Yiyun and the other men to a better environment, I’ll check out their conditions.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Alright.”

Tian Yishan nodded his face with a serious expression. Guan Yiyun and the others had suffered serious injuries, and they needed to be healed as quickly as possible. If they didn’t get the necessary treatment in time, their lives might be lost.

The battle today had helped spread Jiang Chen’s name across all

powers and alliances in the outer perimeter of Inferno City. Many of them had witnessed Jiang Chen kill Yang Shuo; it had simply shaken their minds.

Many powers and alliances felt a sense of crisis, some of them had even started preparing to meet up with Jiang Chen to express their friendliness; they couldn't afford to offend a ruthless man like this.

There were many rooms within Jiang Chen's stronghold, Tian Yishan placed Guan Yiyun and the others in one of the big rooms. As for the two men who had died, Tian Yishan placed their bodies in his storage rings. He would wait until the doorway that led to the outside opens once again, so he could bring them out and give them proper burials.

Guan Yiyun and the others had suffered severely. First, they had to suffer brutal beatings, then after that, they were poisoned by the King Serpent. If not for Jiang Chen absorbing the poison in their bodies in time, all of them would be dead by now.

“Brother Jiang, you know how we can heal their injuries?”

Tian Yishan looked at Jiang Chen with a hint of anticipation.

# Chapter 216 – Nine Leaf Resurrection Grass

---

Jiang Chen's eyes were blazing like torches as he carefully examined all six men, including Guan Yiyun. The result made him furrow his brows.

“Brother Jiang, can they be saved?”

Tian Yishan worriedly asked.

“As long as they aren't dead, there is no one in this world whom I cannot save.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone, “However, Guan Yiyun and the others had their sources seriously injured, it'll be extremely difficult for them to recover, and the Revival Pill won't help them much. If we can mix Six Solar Holy Water with the Revival Pill, the healing effect will be much greater. If we can mix it with the Nine Leaf Resurrection Grass, the Revival Pill will turn into a Resurrection Pill, a pill that can quickly restore their sources. In just three days, they will be able to fully recover to their peak form.”

“Nine Leaf Resurrection Grass, although it's a priceless herb, it still exists in Inferno Hell. I have one with me now.”

Tian Yishan flipped his palm and retrieved green grass with nine leafs from his storage ring. Although it was only as big as an adult palm, it looked lively, and its smell made anyone who smelled it feel refreshed, and their souls would become extremely

comfortable.

“That’s right, this is the Nine Leaf Resurrection Grass. Unfortunately, there’s only one, so I can only concoct one Resurrection Pill. There are six men here, so we need another five Nine Leaf Resurrection Grasses.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What should we do then? The Nine Leaf Resurrection Grass is rare, and I only got one by accident. There is no way for me to find another five of them.”

Tian Yishan furrowed his brows.

“You don’t have it, but that doesn’t mean that no one else does.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face.

“Who?”

Tian Yishan’s eyes lit up.

“You’re truly slow-witted. It’s obviously Yang Shuo. He had such a big group, and your wealth can’t be compared with his. Hurry up and open his storage ring, I’m sure there are a lot of treasures within. You shouldn’t have any trouble finding the Nine Leaf Resurrection Grass within.”

Big Yellow Dog kept thinking about those storage rings in Jiang Chen's hand, he long wanted to know what kind of treasures were containing in them.

“Big Yellow's words are correct, we need to go through their inventories before concocting the pills.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He flipped his palm and retrieved over 20 storage rings, each of them producing endless buzzing sounds.

“Damn, I'm sure there is a massive amount of wealth in these storage rings!”

Tian Yishan couldn't remain calm any longer. He knew very well how big Yang Shuo's group was. This guy had been in Inferno Hell for a long time, so Tian Yishan refused to believe that he didn't have any precious treasures.

With a thought from Jiang Chen's mind, all items in these storage rings fell out, instantly filling up the room with all kinds of colorful lights.

Mortal Restoration Pills, Earth Restoration Pills, demon souls, devils souls, crystal cores, combat weapons, combat skill manuals, all kinds of herbs and natural essences... All kinds of items were piling up like a small hill.

“Wow, we're rich!”

Big Yellow's eyes started glowing brightly. He immediately dashed into the pile of items, opened up his mouth, and devoured a huge chunk of natural essence.

“Damn dog...”

Jiang Chen was speechless.

“Buddy, all of this unexpected wealth... Since you kill this master dog's human pet, if you do not let me eat until I'm satisfied, this master dog will fight you till the end!”

Big Yellow didn't even turn his head towards Jiang Chen, he just kept eating without any care for what kind of natural essence he was consuming. He even swallowed some of the Mortal Restoration Pills.

While eating, a faded golden light began glowing on Big Yellow's body. This really surprised Jiang Chen.

“This is a sign that Big Yellow is going to break through! I think he'll need a massive amount of energy in order to break through to the Divine Core realm.”

Jiang Chen was extremely happy. As long as Big Yellow could break through to a new realm, Jiang Chen wouldn't feel any pain no matter how much Big Yellow ate.

The Mortal Restoration Pills were still pouring out from the storage rings. There were so many of them that the entire room was almost fully packed. Jiang Chen immediately stored them away.

“There are still many Mortal Restoration Pills stored in these rings. If combined together, there are at least a few million of them in total. Also, there’s quite a number of Earth Restoration Pills as well. Such a massive amount of wealth... brother Tian, here’s 500,000 Mortal Restoration Pills, take them and use them for your cultivation.”

Jiang Chen casually tossed a storage ring to Tian Yishan. He had put 500,000 Mortal Restoration Pills within. Many of these storage rings belonged to Divine Core warriors, and the hidden wealth of a Divine Core warrior was truly massive.

Tian Yishan retrieved the storage ring, overwhelmed by the unexpected amount of loot. 500,000 Mortal Restoration Pills, it was a huge amount of wealth, even for someone like him.

“Brother Jiang, all of this belongs to you. You saved my life, and I am really grateful, so I cannot accept these Mortal Restoration Pills.”

Tian Yishan said.

“Just take it. You’re a man, so no need to behave like that.”



Jiang Chen said in a carefree manner. He wasn't a stingy man, and if not for him having a huge demand for Mortal Restoration Pills, he would have given Tian Yishan even more.

“Alright, if that's the case, I'll take them.”

Tian Yishan didn't hesitate, he took the storage ring. On the other side, Big Yellow was still happy eating all he could.

“Wait, there are two Nine Leaf Resurrection Grasses!”

Tian Yishan's eyes lit up when he saw two Nine Leaf Resurrection Grasses amongst all three items. Without any hesitation, he immediately pulled them out. So far, they had gotten a total of three Nine Leaf Resurrection Grasses, they only needed three more.

“We haven't examined Yang Shuo's storage ring yet.”

Jiang Chen took out the last storage ring, which belonged to Yang Shuo. The wealth contained within was far beyond the wealth in the other rings.

Jiang Chen scanned the ring with his divine sense. When he glanced at all of Yang Shuo's wealth, Jiang Chen couldn't help but feel astonished.

Within the huge space, Jiang Chen could see pills everywhere. There were at least 3,000,000 Mortal Restoration Pills within, and

nearly 100 Earth Restoration Pills. An Earth Restoration Pill was equal to 10,000 Mortal Restoration Pills.

Next to the massive amount of pills, there were a lot of herbs and natural essences piled up everywhere. With just a single glance, Jiang Chen could see 6 Nine Leaf Resurrection Grasses within.

“Haha, this Yang Shuo was a really rich man! The wealth contained within his storage ring is simply amazing! There are 6 Nine Leaf Resurrection Grasses! We finally got what we needed!”

Jiang Chen flipped his palm and retrieved the Nine Leaf Resurrection Grasses.

“This is perfect! Junior disciple Guan and all the other men are saved!”

Tian Yishan was pleasantly surprised.

“Let’s delay no more, I’ll concoct the Resurrection Pills right now and help them recover. Brother Tian, please make sure I’m not disturbed while concocting the pills.”

There were still other treasures in Yang Shuo’s storage ring, but Jiang Chen didn’t spend his time checking them out one by one. His priority now was to save these men.

“Will do.”

Tian Yishan replied.

Big Yellow had eaten all the herbs Jiang Chen had taken out from the storage rings. Not only that, he had also devoured 200,000 Mortal Restoration Pills. After a satisfying feast, Big Yellow let out a pleasant burp, then he happily laid down on the floor and began sleeping.

Tian Yishan was startled upon seeing him go straight to sleep after the big meal. How was he a dog? Big Yellow should actually be a pig!

“This is Big Yellow’s unique method of breaking through to next levels. You’ll get used to it.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. He felt really happy, as he knew Big Yellow was going to break through to the Divine Core realm. When he awakens from his slumber, he would experience an enormous transformation.

Soon after, Jiang Chen took out all the herbs needed, as well as the Six Solar Holy Water that he had previously prepared for this moment. After that, he began concocting the Resurrection Pills.

Concocting pills was extremely easy for Jiang Chen; concocting 6 Resurrection Pills at the same time was just a piece of cake for him. In just an hour, he had successfully concocted six Resurrection Pills.

“Brother Tian, please feed Guan Yiyun and the other men these pills. They will wake up in about half an hour, and it’ll take them at most three days before fully recovering. Besides this, after absorbing the medicine properties contained within the Resurrection Pills, their cultivation levels will improve as well.”

“I’m sure all of them will be grateful to brother Jiang!”

Tian Yishan cupped his fist toward Jiang Chen. He felt that his meeting with Jiang Chen was the luckiest thing that had ever happened in his entire life. If not for Jiang Chen, he would be dead by now, Guan Yiyun and the others as well.

“After my intense fight with Yang Shuo, I’ve learned something new, and need to enter secluded cultivation. I’ll let you handle everything in this stronghold. I don’t believe there will be any ignorant guys who will come attack us now.”

Jiang Chen said.

“That’s for sure! Brother Jiang has shown everyone how mighty you are today, even Yang Shuo was killed by you! Therefore, who would have the guts to come here to wreak havoc? Isn’t that equal to seeking death?”

Tian Yishan said with a smile. The violent fight between Jiang Chen and Yang Shuo had shaken all powers and alliances in the outer perimeter of Inferno City. The death of Yang Shuo had stunned every single one of them. Before Yang Shuo was killed,

none of the powers and alliances had dared challenge him, so it was only obvious that none of them would want to challenge Jiang Chen, who was even more ruthless.

Jiang Chen carried the sleeping Big Yellow and carried him to a quieter room. As for Jiang Chen, he chose a room next to Big Yellow's room and begun cultivating.

Jiang Chen sat down on the floor with both legs crossed. He had actually suffered some injuries during his fight with Yang Shuo. The Great Illusion Realm had affected his mind, and forced him to throw up a mouthful of blood. It had even caused his source to tremble. If not for the Great Soul Derivation skill, his injuries would have been more severe.

“Yang Shuo was truly strong, if it wasn't for me cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill and having all kinds of powerful skills, I wouldn't be his match at all. That Great Illusion Realm was also pretty terrifying.”

At a critical moment while he was still within the Great Illusion Realm, if not for him experiencing a violent change in emotions and merging with the aura of his previous self, there was no way he could have pressured Yang Shuo with his eyes, much less stun him with his gaze alone.

“But, the fight with Yang Shuo did help me reap some benefits. An intense fight like that made my cultivation level more solid, and once my foundation is stabilized, I'll be able to continue absorbing demon souls and forming new Dragon Marks, allowing my cultivation base to further improve.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. He completely understood that in Inferno Hell, strength was the capital for survival. Six hundred Dragon Marks had indeed given him enough combat strength, but it was only enough for him to establish his authority in the outer perimeter of Inferno City. He was still far from being able to plant his roots in the middle area and center of Inferno City.

However, his harvest was massive this time, he had obtained quite a number of Divine Core demon souls. There were around 6 Mid Divine Core demon souls in Yang Shuo's storage ring, and three Mid Divine Core crystal cores. The crystal cores were the things Jiang Chen desired the most. If he wanted to absorb the demon souls and increase his cultivation level, he would need help from the crystal cores. With the crystal cores, he could ensure that his foundation wouldn't be affected by absorbing the demon souls.

But there was a flaw in this apparently perfect scenario. Although Jiang Chen had found a large amount of demon and devil souls, he had only found a small amount of crystal cores in these storage rings. The Nine Life Crystal Beast was extremely difficult to kill, and most cultivators would use the crystal cores for their own cultivation upon obtaining one.

## Chapter 217 – Guan Yiyun's Shock

---

Even in Inferno Hell, crystal cores were the most valuable items. Every single warrior who came to Inferno Hell in order to cultivate was longing to bump into Nine Life Crystal Beasts, but at the same time, they were also scared of bumping into Nine Life Crystal Beasts.

The Nine Life Crystal Beast had nine lives, and it was extremely difficult to kill. Without being in a group, it was almost impossible for an ordinary man to kill a Nine Life Crystal Beast at the same level as himself.

After all, only a few people were abnormally strong like Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, not everyone had the abilities to deal with a Nine Life Crystal Beast. Usually, most warriors would become exhausted after fighting just one.

Also, after a warrior obtains a crystal core, he would usually just absorb it to increase his cultivation level as quickly as possible. To survive in Inferno Hell, strength was always the number one priority.

Jiang Chen calculated the total number of crystal cores he had. There were over 50 of them, but out of these 50 crystal cores, only 10 of them were Divine Core crystal cores, and most of them came from Yang Shuo's storage ring. It was extremely difficult to obtain a crystal core, and aside from using it to cultivate, people usually wouldn't keep one for long. Only a powerful chief like Yang Shuo could have such a large amount of crystal cores.

The Heavenly Core crystal cores were not much help for Jiang Chen.

Then there were 6 Mid Divine Core demon and devil souls in Yang Shuo's storage ring. This combined with all other demon and devil souls found, there were over 200 Souls altogether. But, just like the crystal cores, most of them were Heavenly Core souls. This was because all Divine Core demons and devils were incredibly powerful, making them extremely difficult to kill. All demons and devils were much more ferocious compared to the ones in the outside world, and without extraordinary combat strength, they were really difficult to handle.

Including the Shamanic Fire Ape and the other three Early Divine Core demon beasts Jiang Chen previously killed, he had a total of 7 Mid Divine Core souls, and nearly twenty Early Divine Core souls.

“The more I cultivate the Dragon Transformation skill, the more energies I will require to form new Dragon Marks. But, the energy contained within these demon souls is huge, if I can absorb them all together with these crystal cores, I'll be able to break through to the peak Heavenly Core realm. There is no problem with me having 750 Dragon Marks, but I can't just use this method to further improve my cultivation. If I just keep pushing towards a higher level, it will eventually affect my foundation. Once I absorb all these demon and devil souls, I'll have to stop for absorbing souls for a while and break through to the Divine Core realm with my own effort. Only with this will my cultivation be able to settle down.”



Jiang Chen thought to himself. He knew the Dragon Transformation skill was not a skill that could continuously go at full speed. If he kept leveling up quickly with this method, he wouldn't be able to achieve great results in the future. Therefore, those who cultivated the Dragon Transformation skill needed great willpower, he would need to withstand the temptation of quick gains.

Looking back how Jiang Chen had advanced with his cultivation, he had mostly been using this method. However, since he had the cultivation experience of a Saint, he knew what to do in order to not damage his foundation, and that's the advantage he possessed.

“Since I have these crystal cores, I'll absorb all these souls and increase my combat strength once again.”

Jiang Chen picked up a devil soul and covered it with his True Dragon Flames, purifying it. Then, he began absorbing it while circulating the Dragon Transformation skill.

This time, the speed in which Jiang Chen absorbed it became slower. He wanted to tidy up his yuan energy while absorbing the demon and devil souls, causing his cultivation base to become even more solid.

At this moment, the effectiveness of the crystal cores became obvious. They strengthened his foundation, so while absorbing it together with the demon and devil souls, Jiang Chen's foundation wouldn't suffer and risk becoming damaged.

If Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun watched how Jiang Chen was cultivating, they would definitely be frightened and kneel down in front of him. They didn't know that demon and devil souls could be absorbed directly with this method, it was simply astonishing.

On the other side, half an hour after having consumed the Resurrection Pills, Guan Yiyun and the other five men awakened. They opened their eyes, and although they felt pain all over their bodies, they had completely regained their consciousness.

“So comfortable, I can feel my soul being nourished... what kind of pill is this?”

“I thought I would die, I never thought I'd wake up again! There is a powerful medication in my body; I can feel my injuries quickly healing!”

“This feeling, it's like good rain after a long drought, so refreshing! Who was it, who saved us?”

The few men, struggling, sat up on their beds. They felt shocked upon sensing their bodies were flooded with medicines. They knew how badly wounded they were, and they were prepared for death. They had never thought they would wake up again.

“You guys were fed with Resurrection Pills, personally concocted by brother Jiang! In just three days, you will be able to recover to your full form! Also, you will experience an improvement in your cultivation levels.”

Tian Yishan said.

“Chief Tian, you saved us all? This is great, I knew Chief Tian wouldn’t leave us behind! Wait, we’re still in the same stronghold?”

Someone said with a surprised expression.

“It was Jiang Chen who saved you all. After I escaped from the stronghold, Yang Shuo sent his men to hunt me down, but I bumped into Jiang Chen while running for my life. It was he who arrived here in time and save you all. Also, he concocted Resurrection Pills for all of you. From now on, I’m not your chief anymore, Jiang Chen is the new chief.”

Tian Yishan said.

“Senior disciple Tian, where is junior disciple Jiang right now? Oh right, where is that Yang Shuo? Why did he let us go?”

Guan Yiyun asked. The arrival of Jiang Chen had really surprised him. Back in the Black Sect, he really liked this little junior disciple of his.

“Yang Shuo is dead, and everyone from his group has been killed. It was boss Jiang who got revenge for us.”

Tian Yishan told them, and he had changed the way he addressed Jiang Chen. He said it just now, from now on, Jiang Chen had

become their boss.

“What?!”

Guan Yiyun exclaimed, he felt an extreme shock in his mind, “Impossible! When I left the Black Sect, junior disciple Jiang hadn’t even reached the Heavenly Core realm, and that was only two months ago! No matter how fast his growth is, there is no way he could be a match for Yang Shuo!”

“Chief Tian, don’t tell me that your words are true? That Yang Shuo is dead?”

“That’s right, chief Tian, tell us quickly, how did Jiang Chen save us all, and how did he kill Yang Shuo?”

These few men’s injuries were recovering extremely quickly. While they were talking, their conditions had become much better than when they had just awakened. When Jiang Chen attacked, all of them had entered comas due to severe injuries, that’s why none of them knew what happened afterwards. Only Guan Yiyun saw Jiang Chen before he passed out.

Therefore, all of them had great interest towards their savior, Jiang Chen. No matter what, he was the one who saved their lives.

“Alright, let me explain to you all what had happened...”

Tian Yishan had an excited expression on his face as he told these

men how he had met Jiang Chen, how Jiang Chen had saved his life, how Jiang Chen had come to Inferno City and saved their lives. As they listened to the story, grateful expressions could be seen on their faces, especially Guan Yiyun. Aside from feeling grateful, Guan Yiyun also felt gratified. He knew Jiang Chen had done all this because of him.

After that, Tian Yishan told them how Jiang Chen had slaughtered all his opponents, and how he fought Yang Shuo, with all details. Their blood was boiling, and they felt regretful that they couldn't witness this heart-pumping battle.

“This is awesome, chief Jiang is really a peerless genius! With only his Late Heavenly Core cultivation level, he actually killed Yang Shuo! If chief Tian hadn't told me personally, I wouldn't have believed it at all!”

“He's not only a peerless genius, he is an abnormal monster! Damn it, Yang Shuo and his men deserved a thousand deaths, too bad I didn't have the chance to witness their deaths, what a waste!”

“Chief Jiang is our savior! From now on, my, Yang Meng's life belongs to chief Jiang!”

“That's right, I didn't think chief Jiang would be from the Black Sect as well! I'm sure that one day, the Black Sect will reach great heights with the help of chief Jiang!”

.....

Guan Yiyun was sitting on the bed with mixed emotions. Jiang Chen had changed tremendously, and the speed of his growth was simply incredible. It was so fast that he couldn't even imagine it.

“I don't even think peerless abnormal monster is enough to describe him, there is something that perhaps none of you know about.”

Guan Yiyun said, then he took a deep breath.

“What is it?”

Tian Yishan asked, the other men looked at Guan Yiyun as well.

“Junior disciple Jiang only joined the Black Sect two months ago, but that isn't the point... the thing is, when he joined the Black Sect, he was only an Early Mortal Core warrior.”

Guan Yiyun said.

“WHAT?!”

Guan Yiyun's words caused storms to appear in these peoples' minds. Even Tian Yishan was so shocked that his eyes widened to their limits. As a core disciple of the Black Sect, an ultimate genius, he had more pride than anyone else. But, after listening to Guan Yiyun's words, he didn't even feel worthy enough to be called a

genius in front of Jiang Chen.

In just two months, Jiang Chen had broken through from the Early Mortal Core realm to the Late Heavenly Core realm. This was a huge leap that could make anyone speechless. Not only was his growth speed insane, he also had incredible combat strength. He was able to kill a Mid Divine Core genius with only his mere Late Heavenly Core cultivation base! Is he really a human?

Even the peerless geniuses from the Martial Palace weren't this monstrous! The appearance of Jiang Chen had put countless geniuses all over the world to shame!

"I told you, junior disciple Jiang is a rare genius that can't be found even through thousands of years, his name is destined to be heard for many generations to come. I'm sure his future achievements will be limitless. I have never judged a person wrongly, and right now, junior disciple Jiang even saved my life. This kindness is too huge."

Guan Yiyun still had mixed emotions. He recalled the scene where he stood out and helped Jiang Chen back in the Whirling Sun Square. Jiang Chen was only a Mortal Core warrior back then, and he was being bullied by Nan Bei Chao. However, in just two months, their roles had completely switch, it was now Jiang Chen who stood out and saved his life.

"Don't think too much about it. Junior disciple Guan, all of you, take a good rest. In just three day, you'll be fully recovered. Boss Jiang is in secluded cultivation right now, let's not disturb him and wait until he finish his cultivation. You'll be able to meet each

other once he finishes.”

Tian Yishan said.

On the other side, Big Yellow was sleeping like there was no tomorrow. A golden barrier appeared outside his body, covering him like a cocoon.



# Chapter 218 – The Dog Emperor

---

Big Yellow had actually been approaching a breakthrough before this. After he had eaten a huge amount of natural essences, his body had been filled with enormous amounts of energies. Therefore, a true transformation was going on while he was sleeping.

The golden cocoon covering Big Yellow's body was becoming bigger and bigger. For him, breaking through to the Divine Core realm was extremely important, because as long as he broke through to the Divine Core realm, one of his powerful innate abilities would awaken. An innate ability that would give him incredible attacking power.

Currently, Big Yellow's only good ability was his treasure hunting ability. As far as combat went, his best quality there was his head. However, it would all change after breaking through to the Divine Core realm.

Within Jiang Chen's room, energy ripples had filled up every single inch of the room. Jiang Chen circulated the Dragon Transformation skill to its maximum speed, and followed by the reduction of demon souls, devil's soul and crystal cores, his aura was becoming stronger and stronger, and new Dragon Marks were continuously forming in his Qi Sea.

Jiang Chen wasn't constrained by time, because this time, he was prepared to spend three days to absorb all souls and crystal cores. He needed to completely stabilize his cultivation, and he wasn't going to rush anything.

The entire stronghold became very quiet. Two alliances had come to show their friendliness, but they were sent away by Tian Yishan. Now, Jiang Chen was the actual commanders, so they would have to wait until Jiang Chen finished cultivating before they could come show their friendliness.

After the mighty battle between Jiang Chen and Yang Shuo, Jiang Chen's name had gained quite a bit of reputation. Not a single person in the outer perimeter of Inferno City didn't know his name. It wouldn't take long before his name was heard by someone in the middle area of Inferno City.

After one day, Guan Yiyun and the others were able to come down from their beds. More than 40% of their sounds had recovered, and their cultivation bases had slowly returned to normal.

After two days, Guan Yiyun had almost fully recovered, and all the other men were brimming with energy as well.

“The Resurrection Pills concocted by chief Jiang really has a resurrection effect, this is simply amazing! In just two days, although we suffered severe injuries, we have already fully recovered from them!”

“Not only that, the experience of surviving such a situation has enlightened me, so with the help of the Resurrection Pill concocted by chief Jiang, I'll be able to break through to the Divine Core realm! Currently, I am the only Heavenly Core warrior here, but I

won't be a burden for everyone any longer!"

"With chief Jiang's support, we won't have to worry about being bullied by anyone in Inferno City, there is no need for us to live our days in constant anxiety any longer!"

.....

The gloomy and depressed emotions these men felt a few days ago was now gone, it had instead been replaced by excitement.

"Chief Jiang reaped big benefits after his fight with Yang Shuo, that's why he's in secluded cultivation right now. I'm sure he will become even stronger after he finishes his cultivation!"

Tian Yishan said with a smile. He had thrown himself down at Jiang Chen's feet with admiration.

Bang!

Right at this moment, a massive amount of energy ripples swept across the place like a tsunami. In an instant, the entire skies above the stronghold were covered by energy ripples.

"What an enormous amount of energies! It carries a pressure that can suffocate anyone!"

Guan Yiyun was shocked.

“The energy level is still increasing! This is a sign of someone breaking through to the Divine Core realm! I can also feel a sense of divinity in this aura! It isn’t Jiang Chen’s aura, it’s Big Yellow’s aura! He’s breaking through to the Divine Core realm!”

A shocked expression emerged on Tian Yishan’s face. He knew that Big Yellow had entered secluded cultivation two days ago, but he had never thought that Big Yellow would break through to the Divine Core realm in such a short amount of time.

When thinking about the method Big Yellow used to improve his cultivation level, Tian Yishan almost threw up a mouthful of blood. Breaking through to a new realm while sleeping, this was simply a slap in everyone’s faces.

Roar!

Suddenly, a deep and subtle roar sounded out from Big Yellow’s room. The roar sounded like a dragon’s cry; it wasn’t really loud, but it was extremely penetrative.

Tian Yishan and all the other men’s minds trembled, and in an instant, they felt dizzy. Even their souls were trembling. They had nearly lost their minds because of the roar.

All of them looked at each other, they could see the shock in each other’s eyes. With just a roar alone, their souls had trembled; and this was only because of the ripples of the roar itself. If the roar had an actual target, the target’s soul might have been shattered by

now.

“Frightening! Chief Tian, is this the dog you told us about? How could he be so powerful?!”

Some asked with a shocked expression.

“There really is a miraculous big yellow dog who follows junior disciple Jiang. This dog is not an ordinary dog, it’s a rare beast who possess unique innate abilities. Judging from that roar just now, I think Big Yellow’s innate ability just awakened.”

Guan Yiyun explained.

“I have witnessed a few sound wave skills, but I have never seen anything like what Big Yellow just unleashed. Although it wasn’t loud, it could actually shake our souls!”

Tian Yishan said after taking a deep breath. It wasn’t difficult to imagine how strong Big Yellow had become after breaking through to the Divine Core realm.

Swoosh!

Big Yellow transformed into a golden trail of light and dashed out from the room. His body was glowing brightly, and it had become even more majestic than before. He was twice as big as before, and he looked really mighty.

“Kaka, master dog has finally broken through to the Divine Core realm! Little Chen, come out and face your death! Master dog wants revenge! Wait... the fellow is in secluded cultivation...”

Big Yellow was laughing out loudly, and was getting ready to fight Jiang Chen once again. Jiang Chen gave him two black circles around his eyes two days ago, and he hadn't forgotten about it.

“But soon after, when Big Yellow sensed that Jiang Chen was in secluded cultivation, he immediately shut his mouth.

“Buddy is in secluded cultivation again, don't tell me his cultivation level is going to increase again? If that's the case, how is daddy going to find the opportunity to get revenge?”

Big Yellow said with a slight hint of depression.

“But, since master dog has broken through to the Divine Core realm, I must show my mightiness no matter what! Since buddy isn't free at the moment, master dog will just find someone else!”

After saying that, Big Yellow started walking towards Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun while wagging his tail.

Seeing Big Yellow approaching them, Tian Yishan and the other men took a few steps and welcomed him. No one dared neglect this dog's existence.

“Big Yellow, it’s been quite some time since we last met.”

Guan Yiyun greeted him with a smile on his face.

“Guan Yiyun, not bad, you still remember this master dog. Looks like you’ve all almost fully recovered... let’s go, follow this master dog, we’re going to do something big!”

Big Yellow said with his head held up high.

“May I know what master dog is going to do?”

A man in his thirties asking in a flattering manner. His name was Wang Heng, the only Heavenly Core warrior here, aside from Jiang Chen. But soon, he would break through to the Divine Core realm. He was a smart man who could quickly adapt to any situation, and if it wasn’t for that, with his cultivation level, there would be no way for him to survive for such a long period of time in Inferno Hell. When he learned about the relationship between Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, and when he saw Big Yellow’s cultivation level, he immediately flattered Big Yellow.

The flatter was perfectly timed! Perhaps others wouldn’t accept it, but Big Yellow surely would!

“Kaka, not bad! Kid, what’s your name? The master dog will protect you from now on!”

Big Yellow was laughing out loudly. This was the first time

somebody had addressed him as master dog; it instantly gave him a majestic feeling.

“My name is Wang Heng, I hope master dog can show my some guidance in the future!”

Wang Heng cupped his fist toward Big Yellow.

“Damn it, Wang Heng, that’s enough!”

A strong man gave Wang Heng a forceful kick on his butt, and everyone burst out into laughter. One could easily tell from this how close these men were.

Obviously, all of them were used to Wang Heng’s behavior, even Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun were laughing. This guy was really good at flattering, and he had actually brought them a lot of joy. Besides, all of them knew Wang Heng really well; although he looked like a sly fellow, he was actually a man who cherished friendship.

“Big Yellow, just now, you said you wanted to do something big... What do you want to do?”

Guan Yiyun asked.

“All of you followed me, we’re going to attack every single stronghold; we are going to take control of the entire outer perimeter! I want everyone to surrender to the master dog!”



Bright beams shot out from Big Yellow's eyes.

What? Rule the entire outer perimeter? Was this a joke? Since the establishment of Inferno City, not a single alliance had managed to rule the entire outer perimeter. Everyone had their own territories, and even someone with wild ambitions like Yang Shuo was unable to rule the entire outer perimeter.

“Big Yellow... this... shouldn't we wait for chief Jiang to finish his cultivation?”

Tian Yishan asked.

“Nonsense, master dog has up his mind! All of you just lead the way, lead me to every single stronghold! Master dog wants to see who dares disobey his commands, I'll kill him!”

Big Yellow had just broken through to the Divine Core realm, that's why he was so confident and couldn't wait to show off his mightiness. This was the best time for him to be in the limelight. If he waited until Jiang Chen finished his cultivation, Jiang Chen would end up being the one in the limelight instead of Big Yellow.

“Chief Tian, I agree with Big Yellow's words. No one has ever ruled the entire outer perimeter, but that doesn't mean we can't do it! Chief Jiang even killed Yang Shuo, so no one in the outer perimeter will object his commands! We need to create this record!”

Yang Meng said.

“That’s right, we have to make chief Jiang the chief of the entire outer perimeter! In the future, we also need to make him the chief of the entire middle area as well! Let’s follow Big Yellow and conquer all the strongholds, then we’ll tell Jiang Chen about the surprise after he finishes his cultivation!”

Another man said. All these men had been living their days at the brim of death, that’s why they weren’t afraid of wreaking havoc.

Everyone reached an agreement. Under Big Yellow’s lead, they began walking towards one of the nearest strongholds.

Along the way, Wang Heng and another Early Divine Core warrior carried a big rattan chair. Big Yellow was comfortably sitting on the chair while rocking his head back and forth. He seemed to be enjoying himself, as if he was an emperor on an inspection tour.

People always used to say dog emperor, but this was a true dog emperor. [1](#)

Wang Heng was walking along happily, while the other Early Divine Core warrior had some black lines on his forehead. Damn it, he was after all a Divine Core warrior, but in the end, he had become a chair-bearer for a dog.

“Wang Heng, I love your idea, this truly portrays the elegant status of this master dog! You really deserve my praise!”

Big Yellow said in a dignified manner.

“As long as master dog feels comfortable!”

Wang Heng had a flattering expression, he didn't care about the killing gaze thrown at him from the other Divine Core warrior.

“Kaka, the heavens are second in chief, the master dog is the master chief! Today, I'll conquer all the strongholds! No one will dare disobey my commands!”

Big Yellow was laughing out heartily while bouncing around in the rattan chair.

Soon, the group arrived at the nearest stronghold. It was a stronghold which looked similar to Jiang Chen's stronghold.

“There is a Mid Divine Core warrior residing in this stronghold, and the alliance is considered a pretty strong alliance amongst the outer perimeter.”

Tian Yishan explained.

“Perfect, let's target them first! Let's go!”

Big Yellow became extremely excited.

---

Footnotes:

[1\]](#) In ancient times, those who weren't satisfied with an emperor would call the emperor 'dog emperor'

## Chapter 219 – Soul Crunching Tune

---

Big Yellow behaved like he was going to do something huge. By just bringing a few men with him, he wanted to conquer all the strongholds. He was really courageous!

When hearing that Big Yellow wanted to do it without any hesitation, Guan Yiyun and the other men became excited.

“I’ll go up to the door.”

Yang Meng said.

“Don’t bother doing that, let’s just fly in directly.”

Just as Big Yellow’s words left his mouth, Wang Heng flew up while carrying the rattan chair. The Divine Core warriors who also carried the rattan chair had no choice but to follow as well. Flying into the stronghold, Tian Yishan and the rest of the men were following closely behind. In an aggressive manner, they landed inside the stronghold.

“Who?!”

In front of them, two warriors sat around a stone table, drinking wine. When they saw someone flying into their stronghold, they immediately shouted out in alert.

“You two, come forth now and greet the master dog!”

Wang Heng behaved arrogantly, as he had Big Yellow behind him. He pointed his finger at the two men and spoke loudly.

Hearing this, both men immediately became enraged, and almost threw up some blood. Greet the master dog? Damn you!

However, just what was this dog? Why did it act so haughty, and how could two warriors carry it around? The way it showed off was too much! They had never seen such an arrogant dog before, today was an eye opener for them.

When both of the men were getting ready to scold, they saw Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun. Although they didn't know who Big Yellow was, they did know who Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun were. The incident of Yang Shuo seizing Tian Yishan's stronghold had previously caused a huge disturbance. Therefore, many people knew who Tian Yishan was.

But today's Tian Yishan was different from the one from before. Everyone knew he got a new person backing him right now, and his name was Jiang Chen; the one who killed Yang Shuo. No one really wanted to offend Jiang Chen.

“Tian Yishan, what are your intentions by intruding our stronghold?”

One of the men said with a frown on his face. He didn't really

take Big Yellow seriously.

“Damn you, don’t you see master dog sitting right here? How dare you ignore me, this is ridiculous!”

Big Yellow instantly became mad. These two men didn’t talk to him, and instead, they turned around and asked Tian Yishan. This was a huge amount of disrespect toward Big Yellow, there was no way he could tolerate this.

“Damn it, where did this dog come from? Get the hell out of here!”

One of the men couldn’t bear it any longer. If not for him being scared of Jiang Chen, he would have attacked by now.

“You’re seeking death!”

Big Yellow was furious! With a sway of his body, he dashed forwards with extreme speed. In the blink of an eye, he arrived in front of the man. The man was shocked by this sudden change, and didn’t even have the time to react. When he was finally able to respond, it was already too late.

Crack!

Big Yellow forcefully bit down with his razor sharp teeth. With no hesitation, he bit off the man’s head, causing blood to shoot out like a fountain.

Everyone where shocked by what the just saw, including Tian Yishan and the other men. Everyone had their mouths wide open, and couldn't believe what they had just seen. They knew Big Yellow had become incredibly strong after breaking through to the Divine Core realm, but they had never thought he would be this strong. The man he just killed was an Early Divine Core warrior! His head was bitten off by Big Yellow before he even had the chance to counter-attack. Could Big Yellow be another abnormal monster?

Of course, none of them knew that Big Yellow actually possessed the complete Dragon Horse bloodline, he was a real Divine Beast who was blessed with tremendous luck! After he had broken through to the Divine Core realm, not only had he awakened a powerful innate ability, his overall abilities had increased as well; speed, the strength of his body, and his overall strength, it was much more powerful than it was before.

Any human in the same stage and realm as Big Yellow; none of them would be able to withstand a single blow from him.

“Go get your chief.”

Big Yellow went back and sat down on the rattan chair while giving an order to the last man, as if he was a true emperor.

“Mighty master dog!”

Stars almost burst out from Wang Heng's eyes! Big Yellow's



aggressiveness had turned his mind upside down! The Early Divine Core warrior who also carried the chair had stopped complaining, and all the other men had become tempted to address Big Yellow as master dog, just like Wang Heng did.

The man standing opposite of them was stunned. His partner was actually an Early Divine Core warrior, but in just the blink of an eye he had been killed; the dog had killed him in an instant! He immediately started wondering if he was dreaming or not.

The man raised his head and whistled out loudly. Immediately, dozens of strong auras emerged all over the strongholds, and men started storming towards the scene shortly after. The leading man looked to be in his fifties, his name was Zhang Han, and he was a Mid Divine Core warrior.

When these men saw the headless dead body on the floor, furious expressions immediately emerged on their faces.

“Who did this?!”

Zhang Han shouted out loudly.

“It was them.”

The man who whistled pointed towards Big Yellow and the group.

“Zhang Han, I think you know who we are. The reason we’re

here today is to ask you to surrender to Jiang Chen! From now on, you will obey all of Jiang Chen's orders."

Tian Yishan said.

Hearing Jiang Chen's name, everyone including Zhang Han had a change in their expression. Right now, everyone in the outer perimeter of Inferno City knew that name. All of these men had witnessed the intense fight between Jiang Chen and Yang Shuo.

"There is nothing wrong between Jiang Chen and me! We will walk our paths separately, I do not see the necessity to trouble each other! But you killed one of our men today, don't you think you are a bit too domineering?"

Zhang Han was really mad. If not for him being scared off Jiang Chen, he would have already attacked the men in front of him.

"Too domineering? I'll show you domineering! Submit yourself to master dog at once, if not, I'll bite you all to death in just a second!"

Big Yellow was extremely aggressive. There was no point in being polite to these men in Inferno Hell, the strong prey on the weak here! The one with the bigger fist would be the king!

"Damn it, where did this dog come from? Why is it so arrogant?"

Someone cursed.

“Shut up, don’t you dare be rude to master dog!”

Wang Heng was extremely aggressive, he behaved as if Big Yellow was his own father.

“Tian Yishan, why did Jiang Chen pick me?”

Zhang Han asked.

“It’s not just you, Zhang Han. All the strongholds in the outer perimeter will have to submit to Jiang Chen.”

Guan Yiyun said.

“What?! You are going to break the rules of Inferno City? This is a complicated environment with a chaotic relationship between the powers and alliances, no one has ever dared try to rule the entire place!”

Someone said with great shock.

“That was before, just because no one has ruled the place before doesn’t mean there is a rule forbidding us from doing so! And if there is, we will break it! Chief Jiang wants to do this for the sake of a peaceful outer perimeter, and as long as you all submit to Jiang Chen, we’ll ensure your safety in the future.”

Tian Yishan said with a smile on his face.

“What an individual, his appetite is even bigger than Yang Shuo’s!”

Zhang Han’s face darkened.

“Zhang Han, don’t tell me you actually think you’re stronger than Yang Shuo? Even Yang Shuo was killed by chief Jiang, so what do you have in order to fight us?”

Guan Yiyun let out a cold snort.

“Tian Yishan, Guan Yiyun, even if you want me to submit to Jiang Chen, there is no need to bring a dog here, this is an insult to me! If you really want me, Zhang Han to submit, ask Jiang Chen to come here personally!”

Zhang Han gazed at Big Yellow without hiding his anger. In his opinion, they were here to insult him. There was no way he would submit to a dog, much less consider the dog his master.

Hearing this, Tian Yishan and a few others had a slight change in expression. They knew that Big Yellow was most likely pissed off now. In fact, they truly had no intention of insulting Zhang Han.

“Damn it, you old fool, how dare you look down on master dog?! The master dog is a noble existence, the mightiest existence in this world! If I don’t teach you a lesson today, you will still be in the

dark about what master dog is capable of achieving!”

Indeed, Big Yellow had become really furious. He stood up on the rattan chair and shouted at Zhang Han.

“Hmph! You’re merely a dog, who gave you the audacity to shout at me in my stronghold? Wait till I kill this dog, then I’ll consider submitting to Jiang Chen.”

Zhang Han let out a cold snort. He knew he was no match for Jiang Chen, and it was almost guaranteed that he would have to submit to him. But, there was no way to compare the feeling of submitting to someone else and being his own chief. The feeling was really nasty, that’s why Zhang Han was trying to release his anger on this dog.

Swoosh!

Zhang Han sprinted forwards, preparing to attack Big Yellow. He threw out one of his hands and tried grabbing onto Big Yellow. As a Mid Divine Core warrior, his combat strength was incredibly great. Of course, he wouldn’t take a dog seriously.

“Fine, you will be master dog’s first prey, I will kill you to establish my authority! Taste the freshly awakened innate ability of master dog!”

Big Yellow had a strong killing intent. In order for him to conquer all the strongholds, he would have to use force to establish

his authority, he would have to kill someone. Those who dared not to obey his command would be killed.

Just before Zhang Han's attack reached Big Yellow's body, Big Yellow let out a loud shout, "Soul Crunching Tune!"

Immediately after, followed by a buzzing sound, layers of golden colored sound waves shot out from Big Yellow's mouth. The sound waves turned into ripples that crashed toward Zhang Han in a formidable manner.

Hearing the roar, Tian Yishan and the other's expressions changed dramatically. All of them felt their souls trembling, and it wasn't hard to imagine how Zhang Han felt, as he was the primary target of the attack.

The Soul Crunching Tune collided onto Zhang Han's body and penetrated into him without any delay. Suffering from the attack, the sprinting Zhang Han immediately stopped.

Puh!

Zhang Han instantly threw up a mouthful of blood. After that, both his eyes turned red, causing him to look frightening.

Ahh!!

Zhang Han let out a shrill cry. He held his head with both hands and continuously rolled and struggled on the floor. In just a few

breaths time, his life force was completely gone. He had died on the spot.

Waa!

What happened caused a storm to emerge in everyone's minds. Their eyes were widened to the limit as they stared at Zhang Han who was lying motionlessly on the floor. They couldn't believe what they had just seen! The scene became completely silent, and everyone felt it difficult to breath properly.

Terrifying, this was simply insane!

Even Tian Yishan and his group couldn't help but be shocked. They knew very well how strong Zhang Han was! A Mid Divine Core warrior was not someone who could be killed so easily, but the sound-wave attack unleashed by Big Yellow was simply too terrifying. It had just crushed a man's soul, nobody could survive this kind of attack! Besides, a sound-wave attack was extremely difficult to avoid, especially when facing it without any preparation. It was almost impossible to dodge this kind of attack, this skill was almost a sure-kill skill, it was deadly!

Everyone were still shocked, and no one noticed that Big Yellow was in an abnormal condition right now; he looked weak.

“Damn it, this Soul Crunching Tune consumes a huge amount of energy! Looks like it'll take at least half a month before I can use it again. I better be careful next time... but, it's awesome!”

Big Yellow thought to himself.



## Chapter 220 – Chaos Is Coming

---

All innate abilities consume a huge amount of energy. The stronger an innate ability is, the more energy it would consume. The Soul Crunching Tune unleashed by Big Yellow is a terrifying attack, it is an invisible attack that could catch anyone by surprise. But at the same time, it uses a huge amount of Big Yellow's energy. Judging from the amount of energy it used, Big Yellow could only unleash it once every two weeks. If he used it twice within two weeks, he would receive a backlash he's not capable of withstanding.

All of Zhang Han's men were stunned. Their chief, the powerful Mid Divine Core warrior, had just been killed by a dog's roar. This dog was actually the leader of the ground, a truly formidable existence.

“All of you bastards, are you going to submit now?”

Big Yellow asked as he raised his head.

Submit or not? What a joke, could they actually choose not to submit? Even Zhang Han was killed. Looking at how the dog was behaving, perhaps just saying 'no' would be enough to get killed.

“Submitting to us is your best option. Besides, there's nothing bad about submitting to us. Chief Jiang Chen and master dog will ensure your safety in Inferno City!”

Wang Heng said while bloated with pride. Ever since he had

come to Inferno Hell, this is the first time he had been so cocky.

“We’re willing to submit.”

All of the men bowed down in front of Big Yellow. To them, it didn’t matter which chief they followed. After all, they had to give up parts of the treasures they found to their chief. Switching from Zhang Han to Jiang Jiang Chen brought them nothing bad. In fact, Jiang Chen was much stronger compared to Zhang Han, which made him an even better chief.

“Master dog, where is our next target?”

Wang Heng asked in a flattering manner.

“Bring Zhang Han’s body to all the powers and alliances in the outer perimeter, let them know what the consequences are of not submitting to us . Tell them to come greet this master dog at our stronghold.”

Big Yellow was feeling majestic. After killing Zhang Han, he wanted to be even more domineering. He was too lazy to visit those strongholds one by one, therefore he wanted all of them to come greet him. He was addicted to the feeling of being an emperor.

“Perfect, with master dog’s noble status, this is how it should be!”

Wang Heng was really good at flattering, Big Yellow felt

pleasantly enjoyed upon hearing his words.

“Tell them; those who haven’t come and submitted to us by tomorrow, master dog will mercilessly kill!”

Big Yellow portrayed a majestic and solemn image, it was like he was floating on a cloud right now.

The same day, Tian Yishan brought Zhang Han’s dead body and went to all the alliances in the outer perimeter. There were about thirty alliances in the outer perimeter, each of them equal to one another with Mid Divine Core warriors as their leaders. There were no Late Divine Core warriors in these strongholds, as all of them had gone to the middle area and center of Inferno City.

The death of Zhang Han had caused turmoil to appear in many alliances, and it also made many people hear Big Yellow’s name. In just a short period of time, he had become someone everyone knew about. It wasn’t until now that these people realized there was a formidable dog that followed Jiang Chen.

“Damn it, I didn’t expect this Jiang Chen to be even more ambitious than Yang Shuo! He actually want to rule the entire outer perimeter!”

“If the entire outer perimeter ends up in Jiang Chen’s hands, we’ll have to surrender parts of our treasures found in every trip. Although it’s just a small amount, but with so many alliances together, he will get a huge amount in the end! That means that Jiang Chen can just sit back and relax while enjoying the harvest of

our hard effort! He is becoming the real king of the outer perimeter.”

“Sigh... we don’t have the ability to resist, even the powerful Zhang Han has been killed. If we don’t follow their orders, I’m afraid we’ll have to face the same consequences.”

.....

For a moment, the entire outer perimeter had entered a state of turmoil. The death of Zhang Han had impacted all the alliances. If they refused to submit, they might be the next ones to face death.

Within a stronghold located at the Far East side of the outer perimeter, a few men were sitting within a hall. The atmosphere seemed pretty depressing. The six men were all Mid Divine Core warriors; they were the chiefs of different alliances.

“The dog has given his warning, if we don’t submit by tomorrow, he’ll come to kill us.”

Someone said.

“Hmph! This is ridiculous! Even Yang Shuo who had wild ambitions didn’t dare try to rule the entire outer perimeter! Inferno City has existed for a long time, and the people here either die or leave, it has always been like that! Not once has it been united before, and Jiang Chen is trying to change that!”

“Fuck! Daddy isn’t going to submit to them! It has already been very tough for us to survive in Inferno Hell, and the only reason why they want us to submit to them is because of the crystal cores! Killing a Nine Life Crystal Beast is extremely difficult, and the crystal cores we get for our own consumption already isn’t enough! If they want us to give a portion of our crystal cores to them, I don’t think we’ll be able to survive any longer! I am not going to follow their orders!”

A strong man with a scar on his face said in an angry manner. Actually, all of them misunderstood the actual reason. Jiang Chen didn’t even know what was happening, it was all Big Yellow’s idea! As for why Big Yellow wanted to do it? It was because he wanted to show off his mightiness, it had nothing to do with crystal cores. Big Yellow hadn’t even thought about the crystal cores.

Of course, wanting to rule the entire outer perimeter just to show off his mightiness, this reason would just make anyone become speechless.

“Brother Zhuge, say something please, amongst all thirty alliances, you are the strongest man, you have reached the peak Mid Divine Core realm! Although there are always conflicts between the alliances, none of us are willing to be ruled by one person.”

An old man in his fifties said. The rest of the men looked at the adult man who was sitting at the upper end of the table.

The man had pale skin, and he looked refined and cultured. He was waving a folding fan in his hand, while portraying a calm

image. However, his eyes were blinking with a cold light. This proved that he was not someone who could easily be messed with. None of the men who could survive in the harsh environment of Inferno Hell were good and honest people.

“If he could stay peacefully with us, of course we would show him the respect he deserves. After all, none of us have the ability to defeat him. But, if this Jiang Chen really wants to rule the entire outer perimeter, then I, Zhuge Yun will be the first one to stand up against him! Besides, it isn’t Jiang Chen who personally stands out in this matter, but that dog. If we really submit to a dog, our dignities will be washed down in the drain! Therefore, we have to fight back!”

Zhuge Yun said as he narrowed his eyes.

“Brother Zhuge, with our strength, do you really think we are a match for Jiang Chen?”

Someone asked with a frown on his face.

“That Jiang Chen is truly powerful, even Yang Shuo wasn’t his match. However, although he has incredible talent, he isn’t even a Divine Core warrior yet! If we can gather the strength of all of us, if we can gather all the Divine Core warriors in the outer perimeter and attack him, with the strength of everyone combined, even if Jiang Chen and that dog has three heads and six armor, I don’t believe they’ll be able to withstand our attacks!”

Zhuge Yun said with a grin on his face.

“There are at least 50 Mid Divine Core warriors in the outer perimeter, and together with all the Early Divine Core warriors, there will be nearly 300 of us! This is a force that can surely set the world on fire! No matter how talented that Jiang Chen is, there is no way he can fight so many people! I’m sure he won’t even be able to defend himself if all of us attack at the same time!”

Someone agreed with the idea.

“The thing is, how are we going to combine all the alliances?”

A man asked as he furrowed his brows.

“This matter concerns everyone’s future benefits, I believe that none of the chiefs from the alliances are willing to be controlled by someone. Now, all of you secretly proceed to the strongholds and invite them over here. I believe they won’t have any objections. This time, we need to form the greatest alliance for the first time in history, we need to kill Jiang Chen! We can’t allow the situation in the outer perimeter be changed just because of a newcomer.”

Zhuge Yun stood up from his seat, a sinister look emerged on his face.

“Alright, we’ll go right now. That Jiang Chen has obtained a lot of great stuff after killing Yang Shuo, so once we kill him, we’ll divide it all equally.”

Someone said, and all the other men began laughing out loudly. In their minds, Jiang Chen was already a dead man, and they were just waiting to divide all his belongings.

Right at this moment, all the chiefs of every single alliance were clueless about what to do next. They were all cruel and merciless men, and were used to being chiefs of themselves. None of them were willing to be controlled by someone else. Besides, once they submit to Jiang Chen, they would have to surrender a portion of all treasures found. This was something that none of them could do anything about.

But, they didn't have the strength to fight their opponent. They had witnessed how strong Jiang Chen was, and now there was even a big yellow dog. Even Zhang Han was killed by the big yellow dog. If they really stood out and fought back, what awaited them would be the same tragic ending that Zhang Han met.

Therefore, Zhuge Yun's invitation had made them feel really excited. All these chiefs had similar thoughts, even the two chiefs who went to show their friendliness to Jiang Chen before this were the same; they just wanted to live in peace alongside Jiang Chen, they didn't want to be ruled by him.

To no one's surprise, all the alliance gathered together.

"Alright, it looks like all of us have the same thoughts. Although that Jiang Chen and that big yellow dog are really strong, with so many of us working together, I'm sure we'll be able to kill them both. I, Zhuge Yun promise, once we kill Jiang Chen, we'll equally divide all his belongings."



Zhuge Yun said.

“Alright, let’s kill that ignorant kid!”

“Good! He just arrived here, and he wants to rule the entire outer perimeter! He really has no idea who he is!”

.....

All the chiefs were filled with righteous indignation.

“Don’t get too excited, let’s come up with a strategy now. Tomorrow, we strike!”

Zhuge Yun said.

Big Yellow and his men had no idea that a secret meeting between the alliances was going on. Big Yellow was leisurely sitting on his rattan chair, waiting for all the alliances to submit and greet him.

“Big Yellow, in my opinion, I think it’s better if we send someone to check on those alliances. Someone ruling the entire outer perimeter has never happened before, so I fear those chiefs will do something behind our backs.”

Guan Yiyun said with a frown on his face.

“Yiyun, why are you so cowardly? The mightiness of this master dog has shone through the entire outer perimeter, even Zhang Han has been killed by me! They won’t have the courage to resist us!”

After Big Yellow had broken through to the Divine Core realm, he had started behaving domineeringly. However, he had no idea that because of him showing off, he was going to bring unprecedented chaos to the outer perimeter of Inferno City.

At the same time, Jiang Chen who was in secluded cultivation had finally absorbed all the Divine Core souls and crystal cores. He had formed another 150 Dragon Marks in his Qi Sea, and he currently had a total number of seven hundred and fifty Dragon Marks, just one more step and he would be able to break through to the Divine Core realm and his combat strength would advance to another terrifying level.

The more Jiang Chen’s Dragon Transformation skill’s cultivation advance, the more energy would be required to form new Dragon Marks, and it got much tougher when he approached the boundaries of a brand new realm. If not for this, he would be able to form much more Dragon Marks with this amount of souls and crystal cores.

# Chapter 221 – Killing Eight Men With A Single Strike

---

Buzz...

Jiang Chen was sitting on the floor with his legs crossed. Massive energy ripples covered his entire body, continuously producing buzzing sounds.

“Perfect, 750 Dragon Marks, my cultivation has reached the peak Heavenly Core realm, and my combat strength has been increased once again. Now I won’t have to fear those ordinary Late Divine Core warriors.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes were glowing brightly, he was portraying an incredible confidence in himself, confidence that came from his powerful strength. With his qi and blood being as strong as that of a dragon, body as hard as solid metal, he could unleash an enormous amount of energy when the Dragon Marks vibrated. In this world, there were no other Heavenly Core warriors who could be so formidable. His combat strength represented the absolute limits of what a Heavenly Core warrior could ever achieve. It had reached a peak that no one else could ever come close to.

“As for the remaining 50 Dragon Marks, I’ll have to form them through meditation and comprehension, I don’t believe it’ll take long before I’ll be able to break through to the Divine Core realm. With the formidable Dragon Transformation skill, I’ll be able to kill ordinary Late Divine Core warriors with ease once I break through. Unless my opponent is a genius from a big sect, no Divine Core warrior will be my match.”

A smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face. Although it was really difficult to cultivate the Dragon Transformation skill, as it required a massive amount of energy, the energy it brought him was really frightening, and Jiang Chen had proved that with his combat history.

After the Dragon Marks had been formed, Jiang Chen didn't leave the room, but instead closed his eyes. He wanted to use the Dragon Transformation skill to sooth the newly formed Dragon Marks and settle down his cultivation base.

The next day!

Just when Big Yellow was getting impatient while waiting, the entire outer perimeter suddenly filled up with enormous killing intents. Countless figures suddenly descended from the skies and landed in the stronghold where Big Yellow was residing.

Over thirty alliances from the outer perimeter, a total of nearly 500 hundred men had arrived at the scene, and more than half of them were Divine Core warriors. This was a huge combined alliance, and its combat strength could suffocate anyone.

An alliance like this was more than enough to wreak complete havoc in the Qi Province and cause a huge disturbance to the people.

“Kaka, even if you all want to come and greet this master dog, there is no need to come in such a huge crowd.”

Big Yellow was laughing out loudly without thinking too much.

“Master dog, I don’t think they came here to submit to us.”

Wang Heng whispered. Tian Yishan and the few other men had a change in expression as well.

“Damn you, master dog is not an idiot, of course I can tell they aren’t here to submit to me. Fuck! This group of bastards, how dare they do this to master dog?!”

Big Yellow was cursing out loudly. It looked like the scene in his mind where everyone came to greet him wouldn’t happen. However, what he didn’t expect was, not only were these men not frightened by him, they actually initiated a counter-attack! This was outrageous!

In fact, Big Yellow’s approach to things in the outside world did not work at all in Inferno Hell. All men here lived on the edge of hell, they had seen lots of bloodshed, and this made them become even crueler and more merciless than devils and demon beasts. If they were pushed too hard, they would do anything in order to strike back. Besides, they had now grouped up, and had very powerful combined combat strength. This removed their fear of Jiang Chen.

“Are you all trying to revolt?”

Guan Yiyun asked with a loud voice.

“Revolt? I don’t think that is a suitable word, as we’re just defending our own benefits. Don’t you think it’s ridiculous to ask us to submit to a dog?”

Zhuge Yun kept waving the folding fan in his hand as he spoke with a grin on his face.

“What are you guys trying to do? I’m sure you know the strength of our chief Jiang. If you dare challenge his dignity... well, it’s an action equal to seeking death!”

Tian Yishan was shouting out loudly as well.

“Haha, Tian Yishan, don’t be so naïve! Look at how many of us are here, we could make Jiang Chen drown just by spitting on him! No matter what, we’re going to kill Jiang Chen today, and every single one of you as well! After that, all your belongings will be ours!”

A fat man with a round face arrogantly threatened. The rest of the men were in high spirits as well. There was a saying that many hands made light work; none of these men had the courage to fight Jiang Chen if it was a few of them, but now, with more than a few hundred people here, it was a completely different story. They had the confidence that they could wipe out the entire stronghold and kill every single living being here.

Hearing this, Tian Yishan and the other men had dramatic changes to their expressions. They knew very well what the people in Inferno City were like. They could kill without even blinking their eyes, and none of these men were willing to be controlled by Jiang Chen. Obviously, they had grouped together to come here and kill them all today.

“Master Dog, what should we do now?”

Wang Heng’s expression had changed seriously as well; a ferocious look could be seen in his eyes. He just fully recovered from his injuries and absorbed all the energy in the Resurrection Pill, and that had caused his urge to break through to the Divine Core realm become even stronger, eventually leading to him breaking through. Wang Heng was not someone scared of death, and if they really wanted to fight, he would welcome them with open arms.

But looking at the huge group in front of him, it seemed like there was no way they could really fight them. The gap between their strengths was simply too huge! The group comprised of all the warriors in the outer perimeter... Even if Jiang Chen were to personally attack, he probably wouldn’t be able to turn the tables.

“Damn it, since these bastards dare initiate an attack, master dog will go on a killing spree today! I will bite them all to death!”

Big Yellow was furious! He just showed his mightiness yesterday and killed Zhang Han with the Soul Crunching Tune, but not only did that not establish his authority, this group of bastards actually had the audacity to strike back, to try and kill him! This was really

outrageous!

Not only this, Zhuge Yun and the other men's words caused a serious impact onto Big Yellow's pride and self-esteem.

“Fuck them, let's fight! Our lives were given back to us by boss Jiang!”

In an imposing manner, Yang Meng shook his hand, causing a huge blade to instantly appear in his hand.

“You're just a cheap dog, asking us to submit to you is just a plain joke! Big yellow dog, I'll give you a chance, if you come forward and kneel down in front of me, I'll consider sparing your life and adopting you as my pet!”

Zhugue Yun told Big Yellow while waving the folding fan in his hand.

“Fuck you! If I don't tear you to pieces today, master dog will kill myself!”

Both of Big Yellow's eyes had become red, he had instantly become enraged. He, as the noble descendant of the Dragon Horse, who gave this guy the audacity to call him cheap? And he also asked him to kneel down in front of him, and he wanted adopt him? This was unbearable!

Swoosh!



Big Yellow's body swayed, and he turned into a golden light and dashed towards Zhuge Yun with extremely great speed.

“You're seeking death!”

Zhugue Yun's expression changed, but he dared not neglect Big Yellow's attack. After all, Big Yellow had just killed Zhang Han, who was a Mid Divine Core warrior, and that proved that Big Yellow had strong abilities.

Zhugue Yun spread out his folding fan and slapped it towards Big Yellow's head. Although the folding fan in his hand looked usual, it was actually a rare high-ranked combat weapon.

Bang!

When the folding fan hit Big Yellow's head, a huge amount of sparks ignited from the center of the collision. The intense collision had repelled Zhuge Yun, forcing him to take two steps back.

“What a strong dog!”

Zhugue Yun's expression instantly changed. He was a peak Mid Divine Core warrior, not someone whom Zhang Han could compare with. Also, he used a high-ranked combat weapon just now, and even with all this, he was forced back by Big Yellow. He began wondering just how hard Big Yellow's head was.

“Kaka, how dare you bastards insult this master dog? You really don’t know what death is!”

Big Yellow let out a loud laughter. He didn’t feel any fear, even when facing a group of hundreds of people. With his abilities, he would be able to run to the other side of the stronghold and back, unharmed. There was no way these men could kill Big Yellow, even if they had formed an alliance.

But, not everyone were Big Yellow. If these few hundred men struck at the same time, Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun would certainly be killed. There was no chance for them to survive the attack.

“Brother Zhuge, let’s strike together and kill them all!”

Someone said in a cruel manner.

“Fine. Everyone listen up, kill every single person in this place. All Mid Divine Core warriors, pay close attention to Jiang Chen and this big yellow dog. When Jiang Chen comes out, we’ll strike at the same time and kill him in an instant.”

Zhugue Yun shouted out loudly. Over 50 Mid Divine Core warriors working together to attack a dog and a young Heavenly Core warrior, this was something unbelievable. To these Mid Divine Core warriors, this was an act that really put them to shame. But for now, they couldn’t be bothered about it.

Bang!

Just as Zhuge Yun finished his words, a few hundred strong energies shot up from the crowd. Dozens of men sprint forwards and started unleashing attacks towards Tian Yishan and the other men.

“Damn it, what should we do now?”

Wang Heng cursed.

“Brothers, let’s fight, killing one man is breaking even; killing two men is considered a win for us! Since these men want to kill us, we’ll make them pay a heavy price!”

Tian Yishan and the others’ valiant spirits had been ignited. These men had seen too much slaughter, and because of the situation where they knew they were going to die, they became merciless.

But a battle like this was a one-sided fight. With just one round of attack, at least half of the men in Tian Yishan’s group would be killed, and the rest would suffer from serious injuries.

Hmph!

Right at this moment, a cold snort sounded out from somewhere

not far away in the stronghold. After that, a ground shaking explosive sound was heard. In an instant, everybody could see a huge blood red dragon claw descending from the skies, descending towards a dozen of men who were dashing forwards.

Bang!

Ahh!!

The ground was shaking together with the horrible screams of the men. At least eight men were unable to escape, and were slapped onto the ground by the dragon claw, squeezed into meat paste with their blood splashed all over the place.

Those lucky men who escaped from the attacking were also throwing up blood. The dragon claw attack was simply invincible, there was no way for them to defend themselves with their strength.

“So powerful, it’s boss Jiang.”

“Finally, chief Jiang has finally finished cultivating! Haha, he killed eight Early Divine Core warriors with a single strike, and wounded dozens of men! Combat strength like that is really frightening!”

Wang Heng and the other men who had lost their hope immediately had a look of surprise on their faces.

“Did all you come here to get yourselves killed?”

Jiang Chen’s voice was so cold that it could send shivers down anyone’s spine. He stood in the middle of the air, his white clothes fluttering in the wind, and his body covered by bright golden lights.

“Heavens, boss Jiang looks really young!”

“His presence alone is so overbearing! No wonder why Yang Shuo was defeated by him, the strike just now instantly killed a few Early Divine Core warriors! Frightening!”

“I’ve finally met boss Jiang personally, he is much younger than I had imagined! A man like him is definitely a peerless genius, even those incredible geniuses from the Martial Saint Dynasty’s Martial Palace can’t compare with boss Jiang’s potential!”

## Chapter 222 – Rivers of Blood

---

Jiang Chen just stood there without doing anything, but the pressure he emitted onto these men was huge. It was as if there was a mountain pushing down on the hearts of these people. The few hundred men became completely silent, none of them dared to talk right now.

A man's reputation could scare people, and Jiang Chen's name was living proof of that. Besides, he just killed eight Early Divine Core warriors with just a single strike! Such an aggressive approach just made everyone fear him even more.

“Junior disciple Jiang, these men are here to kill us all.”

Guan Yiyun said with a smile on his face. Nobody knew why, but the pressure from facing the hundreds of men had become light after Jiang Chen had appeared. The desperate and frightening emotions were completely gone! It was as if Jiang Chen alone could resist an army of thousands of soldiers, this was their complete trust in Jiang Chen. Ever since Guan Yiyun had come to know Jiang Chen, there hadn't been a single instance where Jiang Chen was defeated.

At the same time, Guan Yiyun explained what happened to Jiang Chen through his divine sense. Learning about what was going on, Jiang Chen almost threw up a mouthful of blood. In an instant, he fiercely began glaring at Big Yellow.

These people were all cruel and merciless men, were they really

that easy to rule? Even if they really submitted to Big Yellow, there wouldn't be more than a few of them who would do so willingly, and that made them impossible to manage. This was the reason why nobody has ever tried to rule the entire city, and Big Yellow was just asking for trouble by doing this. However, Jiang Chen knew this dog very well. This dog had just broken through to the Divine Core realm and couldn't wait to show off his mightiness. In simpler words, the reason why Big Yellow wanted to conquer all strongholds was to show off.

Jiang Chen's primary target for his trip to Inferno Hell was the Earth Devil. After he had finished his cultivation, he had decided to proceed to the depths of Inferno Hell to find out more about the Earth Devil. Therefore, he had no interest in ruling these alliances.

But, although Jiang Chen didn't want to see trouble, he would never be afraid when trouble came to him. Big Yellow was his own brother, and even if he poked a hole in the heavens, Jiang Chen would still back him up.

"Little Chen, this group of bastards said they want to crush and kill you!"

Big Yellow said.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. With the increase of his strength, his aura had become even more violent.

“So you want to crush and kill me, then what are you waiting for?”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone. An intense killing intent could be seen in his eyes, he never showed any mercy to those who wanted to kill him. He didn't really care about the reason behind this matter, just the behavior of these men was enough to motivate Jiang Chen to kill them all and turn the place into a river of blood.

Those men who were shouting that they wanted to kill Jiang Chen just now had become completely silent. It was easy to boast about killing someone, as it was easier said than done; but when Jiang Chen finally stood in front of them, these men had immediately become cowards.

With just a single gaze from Jiang Chen, fear begun growing in these men's minds. No matter how many strong warriors stood beside them, they just had a feeling that they were facing Jiang Chen alone. It was like if Jiang Chen decided to kill any one of them, that man would certainly die. The feeling was really uncomfortable.

“Hmph! Jiang Chen, you're a man with wild ambitions! But, we will not submit to you! Today, by combining over thirty alliances together, we've come here to kill you!”

Zhuge Yun said with a loud voice. Right at this moment, he had to stand out and say something. If no one stood out, the spirits of these few hundred people would be destroyed by Jiang Chen's gaze, as well as the strike just now.



“Initially, I didn’t even have the slightest interest in ruling you all, but since you’ve come to my doorstep, I won’t go easy on you guys. Now, I’ll give you a chance to survive; submit to my brother, Big Yellow! From now on, you’ll have to do everything he says and obey all his commands! If not, don’t even think about leaving alive.”

Jiang Chen said without showing any emotion on his face. Since Big Yellow wanted to show off his mightiness, Jiang Chen could help him fulfill his dream.

“Kaka, good, perfect! Little Chen, you’re such a good friend! You bastards, if you can serve me splendidly later on, once master dog becomes happy, I’ll reward you with limitless benefits!”

Big Yellow was laughing out heartily while bouncing up and down.

Ha!

Zhuge Yun let out a cold shout. The anger on his face was becoming more and more apparent, “Jiang Chen, how dare you insult us with a dog?!”

Jiang Chen’s words made everyone feel extremely angry. If Jiang Chen said he was the one who wanted to rule them all, at least that meant he somewhat respected these people. But now, Jiang Chen actually wanted them to submit to a dog. Asking so many Divine Core warriors to serve a dog, he was a fucking bully! This was an

outrageous insult to them!

“Haha, so what if I am insulting you? I, Jiang Chen will do whatever I want to do! All of you formed an alliance and intruded my stronghold, determined to kill me! And yet, you won’t allow daddy to insult you all? Let me tell you this, if you guys can’t accept this, don’t ever think about leaving this place alive. As long as I am happy, I won’t even frown if I slaughter all living beings in Inferno Hell, let alone you few hundred people.

Jiang Chen let out a loud laugh, he was portraying a peerless domineering aura from all over his body. When the greatest Saint I the world wanted to kill someone, he wouldn’t need any reason to do it, and he would never show any mercy to those who wanted to kill him.

“Damn, chief Jiang is extremely overbearing, daddy’s blood is boiling now!”

“Awesome, this is what a man should be like; look down on the entire world, disregard everything, kill all who gets in the way! Daddy’s blood is boiling!”

“Damn it, let’s kill them all!”

Yang Meng and the other men’s blood had started boiling because of Jiang Chen’s domineering behavior; they were ignited by just a few of Jiang Chen’s words. All of them were brave men, and Jiang Chen seemed unstoppable as he looked down upon the entire world.

Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun also couldn't restrain themselves, they looked at Jiang Chen with admiration. Jiang Chen's dominance had no comparison; a man like this would certainly become someone great in the future.

“Brothers, you heard it for yourselves, this Jiang Chen clearly state that he won't spare our lives! Today, either he dies, or we die! All Mid Divine Core warriors, attack together! I don't believe Jiang Chen alone can handle so many men!”

Zhuge Yun folded his folding fan as he shouted toward the crowd.

“Kill, let's slaughter this Jiang Chen!”

“That's right, there are so many of us here, we can crush Jiang Chen into meat paste with ease!”

“He's just a Heavenly Core warrior, he can't be strong than us! Let's strike together!”

All the chiefs from the different alliances started shouting. Their expressions became ferocious ones, and they were eager to strike. However, none of them dared strike first, because they all knew Jiang Chen was no tame sheep, but a fierce tiger. The first person to strike would most likely be the first one to die.

“哈哈.....”

“Haha...”

Looking at the situation, Jiang Chen let out a laugh filled with ridicule, “Since none of you have the guts to strike first, I’ll be the first one to strike!”

After his words left his mouth, Jiang Chen immediately unleashed the True Dragon Palm, he grabbed towards the man who stood closest to him.

Jiang Chen was too fast, the man didn’t even have a chance to react before the True Dragon Palm completely covered him.

“Die!”

Jiang Chen had powerful killing intent. The dragon claw forcefully clenched, and in the next instant, a popping sound could be heard mixed in with a horrifying scream. The Mid Divine Core warrior’s body exploded and turned into a blood mist. He was killed by the True Dragon Palm without any ability to resist.

A storm swept across the scene, everyone had a dramatic change in expression. This was terrifying! A Mid Divine Core warrior was just killed with a single strike, this was not something a Heavenly Core warrior would ever be able to achieve! In their minds, their opponent was not a human, he was simply an ancient barbaric beast!

“Brother Jiang has become even stronger!”

Only Tian Yishan's mind shook; only he himself knew how big of a shock this was! He could clearly feel that Jiang Chen had become much stronger compared to three days ago when he fought Yang Shuo. After just three days, anyone who faced this peerless monster would feel a massive pressure coming from him.

"Damn it, buddy has become stronger! Looks like my dream of getting revenge is gone once again..."

Big Yellow's lips twitched, and he felt somewhat depressed. He had been thinking about fighting Jiang Chen and defeating him ever since he had broken through to the Divine Core realm, but he hadn't thought that Jiang Chen would have a surge in combat strength once again.

Ahh!

While the men were still stunned by what they had just seen, a longsword resembling a poisonous snake suddenly appeared in Jiang Chen's hand. Without any effort, he impaled the chest of a Mid Divine Core chief. It was Yang Shuo's Bloodthirsty Sword.

"Can't even withstand a single blow."

With a kick, Jiang Chen send the man's dead body away, retrieving his storage ring at the same time. All these men were chiefs from different strongholds, they were men with vast resources. Obviously, Jiang Chen wouldn't let their storage rings slip from underneath his nose. There were no moral principles in

Inferno Hell, everyone here were thieves, and it was normal to kill someone and rob that person of everything he has.

Besides, Jiang Chen wouldn't even furrow his brows when killing these men. All of them were expelled to Inferno Hell because they were vicious and wicked men in the outside world. He wouldn't feel guilty about killing any of them.

“Attack now!”

Zhuge Yun roared out. In an instant, countless golden beams were unleashed from his folding fan, heading toward Jiang Chen. At the same time, the rest of the men dared not hesitate any longer. In just a blink of an eye, two men had been killed by Jiang Chen. If they kept delaying, no one would know how many men would be killed. This Jiang Chen was really formidable.

“Do you believe you can kill me all by yourselves?”

Jiang Chen seemed incomparably glorious, 750 Dragon Marks had given him a gigantic surge in combat strength, and it was incredibly powerful right now, allowing him to even fight a Late Divine Core warrior.

Bang!

At this moment, energy attacks were coming from all directions, dozens of Mid Divine Core warriors were attacking together, creating a gigantic combined attack. Colorful energy ripples could

be seen everywhere, instantly swarming towards Jiang Chen.

At the same time, all the other men began swarming in and attacking Big Yellow, Tian Yishan and the others.

“Kaka, let’s kill them all!”

Big Yellow let out a hearty laugh. With his body covered in a golden light, he dashed forwards and jumped into the crowd, then he began violently dashing into the people in the crowd.

Ahh!!

The Early Divine Core Big Yellow was simply invincible! Wherever his gigantic body passed, men would fall to the ground and tumble around. With a head as hard as a diamond, he killed anyone who got in his way.

At his moment, blood mists were hovering around all over the scene, broken limbs were flying everywhere, blood splashed and flowed on the floor; blood was smeared across the entire stronghold’s ground!

“Brothers, let’s kill!”

Tian Yishan waved the sword in his hand, he became the first one to strike forwards.

Haha...

Guan Yiyun, Yang Meng, and the rest of the men were laughing out loudly as well. Fighting a few hundred men with just a few men, a battle like this, perhaps they would only experience it once in their life. It was a battle where they were all in high spirits; their fighting spirits had been ignited by Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.



# Chapter 223 – You’re Not Allowed To Surrender

---

Bang bang bang...

Big Yellow was extremely formidable. Blood and flesh could be seen flying everywhere Big Yellow passed. His dog head was simply an invincible weapon. All the Mid Divine Core warriors were grouped together, attacking Jiang Chen. Therefore, Big Yellow, who had recently broken through to the Divine Core realm was like a tiger amidst a flock of tame sheep. No matter how many of them attacked, it was useless. In just the blink of an eye, Big Yellow had caused the stronghold to look like a hideous mess.

“We are outnumbered, let’s group up!”

Tian Yishan shouted. He and Guan Yiyun led their men and stormed into center of the enemy group.

Yuan energies were rocking the place, combat skills were being unleashed everywhere, and combat weapons were shining brightly. In just an instant, the stronghold had become a blood-filled battlefield. All the ones fighting were cruel and merciless men, each and every single one of them had hands stained with blood, and when it came to fighting, they were all brutal.

Ahh!!

Tragic cries could be heard all over the place. Big Yellow was

simply invincible. Besides him, Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun were both extraordinary powerful men. Unless a Mid Divine Core warrior attacked them, no one here would be able to deal with them. Especially Tian Yishan! His strength was more than enough to fight any Mid Divine Core warrior.

Slash!

A sword beam slashed through Wang Heng's arm, causing blood to gush out from his wound.

“Damn it!”

Wang Heng cursed. There were simply too many men at the scene, it was almost impossible to effectively defend himself. He had just broken through to the Divine Core realm, and wasn't strong enough compared to the other men. That's why he was immediately wounded after jumping into the fight.

“Lao Wang, can you do it or not? If not, just back off!”

While fighting some men, Yang Meng turned towards Wang Heng and shouted.

“Fuck, of course I can, I'm a man too!”

Wang Heng said while gnashing his teeth. A battle like this could easily ignite the bravery of a man, this was a true battlefield.

“Everyone, be careful, we’re outnumbered by the enemies! Don’t get separated, that will be too dangerous!”

Guan Yiyun reminded everyone in a serious manner. The seven of them had grouped together and formed a solid line of defense. If they were split up by the enemy, the consequences would be devastating. There were so many enemies all over the place, if they were split up and forced to face the enemy alone, it would be life-threatening situation.

Right at this moment, Jiang Chen was fighting dozens of Mid Divine Core warriors all alone, Big Yellow was ramming and slamming into the enemies, causing a tremendous pressure to weigh down on the enemies. Neither of them were able to help Tian Yishan and the other men, so the men had to rely on themselves.

Big Yellow’s body was full of power and grandeur. He spat out his tongue as he ran around crazily amidst the middle of the enemy group, without even caring about the oncoming attacks. Because, even if the combat weapons collided with him, they couldn’t even cause any damage to his skin and fur.

“Fuck the hammer, what’s this dog’s head made off? It’s so hard! Ahh!! Daddy is going to die!”

Big Yellow was too brutal, he made these people feel as if he was invincible. And because he was so extremely fast, if any of these men didn’t pay enough attention, they would be rammed by Big

Yellow and die on the spot.

Ahh!!

On the others side, shrill screams also sounded out without stop. Jiang Chen was showing his mightiness! The Bloodthirsty Sword had transformed into a flexible poisonous snake, and in just a short moment, he had killed eight men with his sword. Although he was facing a group of dozens of strong warriors, his speed was simply too amazing, causing the enemies to have a difficult time even reaching him.

Jiang Chen's sword was extremely fast and cruel. When he used the Heavenly Saint Sword and ventured across the world, he had spread his frightening name across the land. Jiang Chen didn't know any miraculous sword skills, and his sword could only be described as fast, extremely fast, and accurate. There was nothing that couldn't be destroyed by his sword; this was his unique sword skill, there no name, just no mercy.

“Everyone, don't be thrown into confusion, unleash your combat weapons and attack from all directions!”

Zhuge Yun shouted. Many people started panicking because of Jiang Chen's sword, their arrogance and confidence was long gone. Jiang Chen's existence caused death to hover around them at all times.

Clang clang...

Combat weapons could be seen everywhere, killing intents leaked out everywhere, violent energy ripples were hovering in the skies above the stronghold, blood mist was floating in every single inch of the air. The floor underneath their feet was covered in fresh and hot blood, broken limbs and dead bodies were everywhere.

“Let me see how you’re going to regroup and secure your position. Nine Phantom Wolves!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly. Immediately, nine identical Jiang Chens appeared in the middle of the battlefield. The warriors who were getting ready to strike together and kill Jiang Chen became stunned, the nine identical Jiang Chens confused them, and no one knew which Jiang Chen they had to attack.

The enemy was stunned, and Jiang Chen didn’t waste any time. The real Jiang Chen resolutely attacked, cutting off three heads at the same time, in an extremely ruthless manner.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh...

Jiang Chen maintained the Nine Phantom Wolves. There were still nine identical Jiang Chens at the scene, and the frightened enemies were completely confused by this. What they could do now was attack every single Jiang Chen they saw... But too bad, after all the phantoms had been destroyed, Jiang Chen had once again killed another two men.

“Damn it, I can’t do this anymore, this is too abnormal!”

Someone couldn't bear it any longer. Fighting with someone like this was incredibly painful.

“Hmph! Since you guys came here seeking death, I'll let you die pleasant deaths. Firethorn Combat Armor!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly once again. He put away the Bloodthirsty Sword as the Firethorn Combat Armor covered his entire body, then he rammed towards the frightened warriors in a formidable manner.

Swoosh swoosh...

Not only did the Firethorn Combat Armor have incredible defense, it could also unleash powerful attacks. Countless golden beams shot out from the sharp thorns on the armor, landing on the enemies in a messy way.

Clang clang clang...

All these chiefs were scared by Jiang Chen's attacks. When they saw that Jiang Chen had switched to another, stronger attack, they immediately raised the combat weapons in their hands to block the attacks. But, after they had completely blocked all the golden beams, Jiang Chen had arrived in front of them.

Bang!

The Firethorn Combat Armor was simply too powerful! It was

almost guaranteed death if a person was rammed into by it, even if he was a Mid Divine Core warrior.

Bang bang bang...

At this moment, both Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were crashing and slamming around in the separate groups in a similar manner, killing their enemies and causing them to wet their pants in terror.

“I quit, daddy doesn’t want to attack anymore!”

One of the Mid Divine Core chiefs who had a broken arm shouted out loudly. There was no way he could continue fighting, their opponent was simply not a human at all, and he was just like a ferocious beast. The situation on the battlefield was completely different from what they had expected. Initially, they thought that no matter how strong Jiang Chen was, he wouldn’t be able to withstand such a massive combined attack from nearly 50 Mid Divine Core warriors, but no one could foresee Jiang Chen being this formidable.

“Do you truly believe you can quit at any time? Die now!”

With a massive killing intent, Jiang Chen unleashed the True Dragon Palm and slammed into the man, causing him to become a meat paste.

Ahh!!

Blood-curdling screeches didn't seem to stop sounding out. An unprecedented cruel slaughter was going on in the outer perimeter of Inferno City, and this battle would definitely be recorded in the history of Inferno Hell. After the battle, it would take a long time for the alliances in the outer perimeter to recover.

Both Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were extremely formidable, and none of these few hundred men could resist their attacks. Tian Yishan and the other men were wounded all over their bodies, but these were just some minor injuries. Their killing intents were soaring, and they kept striking with the combat weapons while all their eyes were completely bloodshot.

“The Unrivalled Iron Fan!”

Zhuge Yun finally unleashed an explosive attack. The folding fan in his hand begun spinning rapidly, and with a push from his yuan energy, the folding fan transformed into a fan as huge as a mountain. It shone brightly as it flew towards Jiang Chen.

Zhuge Yun was a peak Mid Divine Core warrior, he was the strongest man in the crowd. If it was a few days ago, Jiang Chen might need to exert a lot of effort in order to kill him, but now, with the combat strength brought from 750 Dragon Marks, Zhuge Yun was nothing but a mere low dog in front of him.

“Since you are the leader, I'll kill you first.”

Jiang Chen leapt forwards, he pointed his finger out like a sword and unleashed the Six Profound Solar Fingers in an instant. Six



gigantic and bright fingers merged into one and pierced towards the gigantic iron fan.

Bang!

A ground-shaking explosion sounded out, the air around the collision exploded because of the attack, and Zhuge Yun's iron was easily pushed away by Jiang Chen's attack. After Jiang Chen had become able to unleash the sixth solar finger, the power of the Six Profound Solar Fingers reached an incredible stage. Even Yang Shuo's Myriad Returning Sword was no match for him, let alone Zhuge Yun's iron fan.

Puh!

A mouthful of blood was forced out from Zhuge Yun's mouth, his body trembled in midair, and with a pale faced and shocked expression; he finally experienced how terrifying Jiang Chen was. Jiang Chen was not someone he could deal with at all, and if he knew this, he wouldn't be here today.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen didn't let them off easily. He moved in a ghostly manner, and in an instant, he arrived in front of Zhuge Yun. After arriving in front of Zhuge Yun, he forcefully slapped his face.

The slap sent Zhuge Yun flying down from the skies, causing him to be forcefully thrown on the ground, making him dizzy.

Jiang Chen quickly descended from the skies, killing another man along the way.

“Go to hell!”

Jiang Chen ruthlessly attacked without showing any mercy. He forcefully stomped his foot onto Zhuge Yun’s head, crushing it and causing blood to splash out like a fountain. Zhuge Yun had finally been killed, in a tragic way.

“Who dares resist, I will kill without mercy!”

Jiang Chen looked like a formidable overlord. He retracted the Firethorn Combat Armor and once again retrieved the Bloodthirsty Sword. He slashed out with his sword, cutting another Mid Divine Core warrior in half. His loud warning had stunned all the enemies, and at this point of time, more than half of the Mid Divine Core warriors had been killed by him. Every time he killed someone, Jiang Chen would snatch their storage rings, giving him a big amount of wealth.

“Zhuge Yun is dead! I quit, I want to surrender; I’m willing to submit!

Someone shouted out loudly. A battle like this was really frightening, and none of these men had experienced anything remotely similar before.

“We’re quitting too, surrender, we’re willing to surrender, please spare our lives!”

“We surrender, please spare our lives!”

The will to surrender could be contagious, especially when once faced a hopeless slaughter. All of the men were cruel and ferocious, they had experienced all sorts of dangerous fights, but for a meaningless fight like this, surrendering was their best option.

This was not a fight, this was a one-sided slaughter; there was just no meaning for them to continue. When a man lost the ability to fight for his life, it was useless to continue fighting.

Zhuge Yun was dead, and they believed that if they continued to fight, they would all be killed by Jiang Chen; no one doubted that. They had witnessed Jiang Chen’s ruthlessness, he wouldn’t even furrow his brows after killing every single man here.

All the chiefs had surrendered, and those men who were seriously injured by Big Yellow felt long ago felt scared. Therefore, they followed their chiefs’ decision to surrender immediately.

“You’re not allowed to surrender, master dog still hasn’t killed enough!”

Big Yellow roared out, ‘you’re not allowed to surrender’, scaring everyone and causing them to start crawling on the ground.

## Chapter 224 – Master Dog, I’m Sorry

---

Big Yellow was bouncing around while spitting fire from his mouth. His killing intent had reached a new peak, and therefore, he didn’t allow these men to surrender freely.

Zhuge Yun was dead, and so was more than half the Mid Divine Core warriors. The remaining men were all scared, and had lost their will to fight. Over 500 men came here, but now there were less than 300. Dead bodies were piled up everywhere, hot and fresh blood was flowing around like a river. These men were in the middle of a fight just now, so they didn’t pay much attention to the scene, but since the fighting had come to a complete stop, the survivors immediately gasped upon seeing the carnage. It wasn’t difficult for them to imagine what would happen if they kept fighting, they would most likely become one of the bodies on the ground.

The entire sky above the stronghold was filled with blood red mist, the pungent smell of blood rushed into everyone’s noses. This was not the same peaceful stronghold anymore; it had turned into a tragic hell.

“We don’t want to fight anymore, we’re willing to surrender! Chief Jiang, from now on, we will obey your every command!”

Someone couldn’t hold himself any longer, he spoke on the verge of tears.

“Master dog, I surrender, I’m willing to serve the master dog!”

“Me too! What happened today was not our intention, it was Zhuge Yun who kept provoking us, we sincerely wanted to submit to chief Jiang and master dog, but that Zhuge Yun provoked us and said he would kill us if we didn’t do as he said!”

“That’s right, we were forced to do this! Chief Jiang is such a mighty man, and we are just some small character who aren’t even qualified to be your match! Zhuge Yun was a fool to try and fight you, he brought disgrace upon his own head! It served him right to die!”

“He deserved to die, I’ve long ago grown tired of him! If not because of his stupid idea, I would have come here to submit to chief Jiang yesterday!”

.....

All the men kept expressing their regret, scared that Jiang Chen and Big Yellow wouldn’t even give them a chance to surrender.

Fuck!

Even Jiang Chen couldn’t help but curse. Tian Yishan and the other were also rolling their eyes. Finally, they had witnessed how shameless a man could be. This group of people had committed every hideous crime and unpardonable wicked deed possible. When they came to Inferno Hell, they too had done anything they could to ensure their survival. They were a bunch of shameless bastards! After Zhuge Yun had died, they had actually blamed

everything on him! If Zhuge Yun was still alive right now, he might just die instantly after hearing their words.

“Shut your fucking mouths!”

Guan Yiyun shouted out furiously, sending these men into complete silence without daring to say another word. Now, they had become flesh for the fishes for the sacrificial vessels, and in order to ensure their survival, they had to do whatever their opponent said.

All the Mid Divine Core warriors stared at Jiang Chen in a pathetic manner, waiting for him to say something. Jiang Chen's ruthlessness had cast an eternal shadow in their minds.

“Although you want to submit to me, I have no intentions of having you as my subordinates. I can spare your lives, but since you have done something wrong, you must be punished.”

Jiang Chen slowly put away the Bloodthirsty Sword as he spoke. Hearing that Jiang Chen wasn't going to kill them, the men immediately let out sighs of relief. But, they were wondering what kind of punishment Jiang Chen would bestow upon them.

“Hand over everything in your storage ring, pills, demon souls, devil souls, crystal cores, herbs, natural essences, combat weapons, everything! Those who dare keep a single item... the sword in my hand will show what it means to have no mercy.”

Jiang Chen said with a grin on his face. This was a daylight robbery!

“What?”

Everyone exclaimed upon hearing Jiang Chen’s words. They had a feeling that someone was slicing and cutting away their flesh, bit by bit.

“Haha, chief Jiang is really mean, this is worse than killing them!”

Wang Heng who was covered in wounds had burst out into laughter.

“That’s right, chief Jiang is going to strip you of everything you got! He won’t even let them keep their Mortal Restoration Pills! It’ll be extremely difficult for them to survive in Inferno Hell, no one can absorb natural yuan energy from the outside world here in Inferno Hell, and in order to cultivate, everyone needs Mortal Restoration Pills and crystal cores! Without natural resources to cultivate, it will be incredibly tough for them to progress in here.”

“If that’s the case, their best option would be to try and hunt for Nine Life Crystal Beasts... but since chief Jiang also wants their combat weapons, they will only have a slim chance of surviving upon meeting a Nine Life Crystal Beast. Also, those demon beasts and devils aren’t easy to deal with either.”

“Serves them right! They should be thankful that chief Jiang decided to spare their lives! If we were the ones defeated by them today, we wouldn’t have a chance at survival!”

.....

Tian Yishan and the others felt incredibly happy right now. Jiang Chen was killing them without actually doing it himself. More importantly, the majority of warriors in the outer perimeter was gathered here, a huge amount of wealth would be gained by confiscating all their belongings. Even without counting the pills, natural essences, demon souls and crystal cores, there would be more than a few hundred combat weapons, all different ranks.

Damn it! This was such an enormous amount of wealth, this was unbelievable!

“I’ll count to three, hand over everything in your storage rings. After that, I’ll begin killing those who haven’t handed everything over. Don’t think I’m joking, I only joke with my friends.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

“Chief Jiang, we will give you all our treasures, but can you at least spare our combat weapons?”

Someone asked. As long as they still had their combat weapons, the chances for them to survive would be greater.



Swoosh!

Right as the man's words left his mouth, Jiang Chen unleashed a beam from his sword, instantly chopping off the man's head.

“Nope.”

A light smile could be seen on Jiang Chen's face. However, in the eyes of these men, it was the smile of the devil! He was simply too ruthless, too brutal!

“You do have one more option... death.”

Jiang Chen never showed his enemies any mercy. Sparing their lives was the biggest act of mercy Jiang Chen could show.

Now, no one dared hesitate any longer. All of them immediately took out everything they had in their storage rings. Now, the entire stronghold was emitting all sorts of colorful shines. The auras from the varieties of the natural essences dispersed the pungent smell of blood at once.

With a thought in his mind, Jiang Chen stored all the treasures into his storage ring. He had killed quite a number of men, and he had snatched a lot of storage rings. Once a ring was full, he could still use another ring. And in the end, he could still store all rings into just a single storage ring. Besides, Yang Shuo and Zhuge Yun's storage rings were pretty spacious as well, he had no worries about running out of space to store all the treasures.

Witnessing Jiang Chen taking all their treasures, many of these men silently started crying. Some of them who were seriously injured even threw up some of their blood.

This was cruel! This action was an indirect way of killing most of them!

At this moment, all the survivors couldn't help but inwardly curse at Zhuge Yun. Their expressions made it seem like they were going to tear his dead body into millions of pieces. The outcome today was directly related to Zhuge Yun! If not his decision, although these men didn't want to submit to Jiang Chen, they would still have no other alternative than to submit. Now, not only had many of them died, the survivors had even been robbed by Jiang Chen. How were they going to survive in Inferno Hell?

“Kaka, so satisfying, what an enjoyable moment!”

Wang Heng burst into laughter. After having come to Inferno Hell, he had never been as happy as he was today. Never had he experienced such an enjoyable moment! Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun were laughing out loudly as well. As Jiang Chen's fellow disciples, they couldn't feel more proud than this.

The way these men looked at Jiang Chen was filled with admiration. This man in front of them had always shone in a unique glow and a manly charisma.

All kinds of treasures flowed into Jiang Chen's storage ring like

water, including all the storage rings from those who Jiang Chen had previously killed. Jiang Chen had actually cleanly swept the entire outer perimeter of Inferno City, and if there was a ranking for the ability to rob, Jiang Chen would certainly be number one.

Soon, all the treasures had been taken away by Jiang Chen. Those who had lost their treasures had an expression more awful than one that would appear if their mother died. But, no matter what, they were still alive. If they hadn't handed over their treasures, they would be dead, and the treasures would end up with Jiang Chen regardless.

“Chief Jiang, can we leave now?”

One of the Mid Divine Core chiefs asked, on the verge of tears.

“Get lost.”

Jiang Chen casually waved his hand. Today's loot was enormous, and he had probably become the wealthiest man in Inferno City right now. His current wealth was more enormous than the entire Black Sect's wealth.

Hearing that Jiang Chen pardoned them, no one dared hesitate any longer. Everyone immediately turned around and began walking.

“Stop right there!”

But at this moment, Big Yellow suddenly asked them to stop, causing these people to instantly stop moving.

Damn it! Not finished yet?!

All the men's faces darkened. They knew that this dog was not easy to deal with.

“Did master dog let you go?”

Big Yellow said while holding his head up high. All men immediately turned to Jiang Chen, but Jiang Chen just turned around, almost as if he hadn't heard what Big Yellow said.

“Bastards, you have insult this master dog with your words just now, you really deserve to be killed! According to master dog's temper, I should bite you all to death on the spot!”

Big Yellow's words made these men become panicked once again. It looked like there was still doubts about whether or not their lives would be spared today. They had all witnessed how ruthless this dog was, Big Yellow would really bite them to death!

“But, since Little Chen has spared your lives, this master dog will spare you the same kindness. However, since I can't bite you to death, master dog's anger won't be appeased. Master dog also has to punish you!”

Big Yellow stood up on his two back legs and placed his two front

legs behind his back. The way he behaved looked really funny.

Punished again? The men's faces darkened once again.

“Punished again? We don't even have anything with us now!”

Someone picked up his courage and spoke.

“Damn it! Who wants anything from you? Each of you, come forth and bow down to the master dog! After that you must say; master dog, I'm sorry!”

Big Yellow said in a serious manner.

Fuck!

Jiang Chen, Guan Yiyun and the other men almost tripped on their own feet and fell onto the ground. Damn it, you're just a dog, do you really want to be so arrogant?

“Hurry up, we start with you.”

Big Yellow pointed at one of the nearest men.

Black lines filled up the man's forehead. Bowing to a dog and apologizing? How was he going to face people in the future?

The man let out a silent sigh and gave up all thoughts of resisting. It was still doubtful whether or not he could survive in the harsh environment in Inferno Hell, but he still had to ensure his survival right now, he had no other choice but to do as told. He walked up to Big Yellow, bowed down and said, “Master dog, I’m sorry.”

“You’re not sincere enough, say it again loudly! If I still can’t feel your sincerity, master dog will bite you to death on the spot!”

Big Yellow once again showed off his emperor’s arrogance and manners.

# Chapter 225 – Illusion Heart Sutra

---

Plop!

The man thought he was going to be forgiven, but when he heard Big Yellow's words, he immediately fell onto the ground. Fuck, these were the most difficult words he had ever had to speak. Never in his wildest dreams had he thought that he would have to bow down in front of a dog and call him master dog. Also, the first time wasn't enough, he had to do it again, and if he wasn't sincere enough, he would be killed.

“Hahaha...”

Wang Heng and the others couldn't help but burst out into laughter.

“Big Yellow is really a genius that can't be seen in 10,000 years!”

Guan Yiyun as well was laughing out loudly with his mouth wide open. This dog was too funny, he could actually kill someone with this kind of torture.

The man stood up from the ground. With his face having turned red, he shouted out loudly without even raising his head, “MASTER DOG, I'M SORRY!!”

Who could have known that this guy's heart just broke into two pieces after repeating himself to Big Yellow?

“Fine, this dog master is satisfied with your apology, now get lost. The rest of you, you have to be like him, the louder your voice is, the more respect you show to master dog. Quickly, line up, come forth one at a time, and do not rush.”

Big Yellow raised his paw and waved in front of him.

Tian Yishan and the others felt like they were soon going to faint. Do not rush? Who would rush to do such a shameful thing?

“Daddy can’t take it any longer.”

Jiang Chen covered his face with his hand and walked away; he couldn’t watch this any longer.

But Guan Yiyun and the other men were enjoying this moment. What happened was something they couldn’t forget for the rest of their lives, it was an incredibly rare miracle!

After that, all the men who had had been robbed by Jiang Chen lined up and shouted with all their strength towards Big Yellow, “MASTER DOG, I’M SORRY!!”

Who knew if anyone went back and committed suicide because of depression?

Big Yellow felt as if he was in paradise. Never once had he felt so



pleasantly enjoyed before! His tail was happily wagging. Over 200 men, Big Yellow had paid his full attention to these men as they bowed and apologized to him, asking those he was unsatisfied with to repeat with more sincerity, and only let those he was satisfied with go.

All the men left the place in dejection, and finally, peace had returned to the noisy stronghold. Those who walked out from the stronghold kept shouting towards the skies. What happened today had become the biggest shame of their lives. Many of them were cursing at Zhuge Yun, and someone even pointed at the survivors who attacked together with Zhuge Yun. The ending of those men were even more tragic; not only had they been robbed by Jiang Chen and insulted by a dog, just when they were grateful that their lives had been spared, all the other men started beating them and crippling them on the spot. It was a tragic ending.

Within the stronghold, blood and dead bodies could be seen everywhere. The place had turned into a foul hell. Tian Yishan and the other men were frowning as they looked at the scene.

“Chief Tian, we have to get rid of these bodies.”

Yang Meng said.

“Just burn them all.”

The majestic Big Yellow flew into the sky and hovered above the dead bodies, then he spat out some flames, then, all the bodies were burned into ashes. The flame even burnt away the blood on

the ground. After that, Guan Yiyun waved his hand and unleashed a storm of yuan energy, dispersing all the ashes. Finally, the stronghold had returned to its original state. Only the faded pungent smell of blood, and cracks on the floor remained after the violent battle.

Right at this moment, Jiang Chen returned to the scene. When Tian Yishan and the other men saw Jiang Chen, a respectful look immediately emerged in their eyes. Although it was the first time Wang Heng and the other men had met up with Jiang Chen, they were filled with admiration towards Jiang Chen's ultimate ruthlessness.

“Chief Jiang, thank you for saving our lives!”

Yang Meng yang.

“We're brothers, don't mention it. I and brother Tian, as well as senior disciple Guan are from the same sect. From today onwards, you are all one of us, so just spare the formalities. Here are some crystal cores and Mortal Resurrection Pills, take them and divide it amongst yourselves.”

Jiang Chen casually waved his hand and threw out a few storage rings towards these men. There were at least a few hundred thousand Mortal Restoration Pills contained within these storage rings, and there were even quite a number of crystal cores at different stages and realms. This amount of wealth was nothing to Jiang Chen, as he had already accumulated a large amount of wealth. Although Jiang Chen had yet to check out his harvest, he could imagine the vast amount of treasures he had now; he almost

had the combined wealth of every single person in the outer perimeter of Inferno City.

“Chief Jiang, you saved our lives, we’d feel too ashamed to take these Mortal Restoration Pills and crystal cores from you.”

Someone who felt embarrassed said.

“Just take whatever junior disciple Jiang wants to give us. Although junior disciple Jiang is cruel and merciless toward his enemies, he isn’t stingy with his own brothers.”

Guan Yiyun said.

“If that’s the case, thank you, chief Jiang!”

Yang Meng said while cupping his fist toward Jiang Chen. Everyone here were older than Jiang Chen, but in a universe where strength meant everything, they didn’t feel embarrassed about addressing Jiang Chen as chief. Of course, if they really wanted to take age into consideration, all of them would have to address Jiang Chen as ancestor. The age of Jiang Chen’s mind was definitely the same as an ancient demon.

“Buddy, what an exciting fight today! The entire outer perimeter is going to see big destruction!”

Big Yellow had a victorious expression on his face. He had fulfilled his goal to show off his mightiness, he felt really satisfied.

“That’s right, such a violent fight has never happened in the outer perimeter of Inferno City before! Chief Jiang has robbed every single person in the outer perimeter, he is definitely the number one robber in Inferno Hell!”

Wang Heng said with a smile on his face.

Kapow!

Just as his words left his mouth, he was lightly slapped on top of his head. Wang Heng turned around and saw Tian Yishan staring into his eyes, “What did you say? What do you mean by robber?”

“Hehe, what I mean is that it was their fortune to be robbed by chief Jiang.”

Wang Heng was laughing out heartily.

“Junior disciple Jiang, no one in the outer perimeter of Inferno City dares challenge us anymore. All the alliances in the outer perimeter have collapsed, and for them to survive, they will definitely venture into the depths of Inferno Hell, or try to rob other people. Inferno Hell will become even more chaotic in the future, and there are three more months until the doorway to the outside world opens up. What should we do next?”

Guan Yiyun asked.

“I don’t believe junior disciple Guan is aware of this, but the reason why brother Jiang came to Inferno Hell is to look for the Earth Devil. Since all the conflicts in the outer perimeter have come to a conclusion, I think brother Jiang is going to venture into the deepest parts of Inferno Hell in search for the Earth Devil?”

Tian Yishan said.

“What?! Earth Devil?!”

Guan Yiyun and the few other men exclaimed at the same time. All of them had heard about the Earth Devil before, it was the king of Inferno Hell, and Jiang Chen was actually eyeing it. His courage simply knew no limits.

“Junior disciple Jiang, you really have to think twice about this! Also, why do you want to hunt for the Earth Devil?”

Guan Yiyun asked in a puzzled tone.

“To save Han Yan.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What happened to Han Yan?”

Guan Yiyun was startled.

Jiang Chen explained what happened in the Black Sect after Guan Yiyun left, focusing on the incident where Fan Kun had assaulted Yan Chenyu and Han Yan.

“Han Yan was seriously injured, and he could die at any time. I need the Earth Devil’s demon soul in order to save his life, that’s why I came to Inferno Hell to look for the Earth Devil. I know that with my current strength, there is no way I can be its match, but I can’t just sit here and do nothing. At least, I can find out some details about this Earth Devil.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Damn it! That bastard Fan Kun, he must have thought that no one from the inner circle could stop him after I left, that’s why he behaved so arrogantly and did all that! But, it was his misfortune to offend you!”

Guan Yiyun couldn’t help but curse out. When he was still in the Black Sect, although Fan Kun was backed by his grandfather, Guan Yiyun could actually suppress him. Fan Kun still behaved nicely back then. When Guan Yiyun left, Fan Kun began behaving arrogantly.

“We must save Brother Yan, but it’s extremely dangerous to kill the Earth Devil.”

Guan Yiyun frowned.

“Never mind, I know you all suffered injuries, let’s rest for now. I’ll proceed to the depths of Inferno Hell tomorrow. Putting aside the Earth Devil, I really want to check out this place.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Alright, we’ll follow chief Jiang and venture into the deeper areas, we can also kill some Nine Life Crystal Beasts along the way.”

Everyone were nodding their heads. Now, they had made Jiang Chen their ultimate leader. No matter what decision Jiang Chen made, they would just follow without any objections.

After that, the men returned to their individual rooms within the stronghold to rest. They had suffered some minor injuries in the violent battle just now, but nothing too serious. With their cultivation level, it would only take them a day to fully recover.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow entered the same room.

“Hehe, buddy, hurry up and check on our loot today!”

Big Yellow couldn’t wait any longer.

“No need to check it out, we’ve gotten a huge amount of loot this time. Quite a few storage rings are actually filled. I think there are more than 100,000,000 Mortal Restoration Pills, 8,000 Earth Restoration Pills, piles of demon souls and devil souls, over 500

combat weapons, 300 of them mid-ranked combat weapons, and the rest are high-ranked combat weapons.”

Jiang Chen said with a big smile.

“Fuck! Buddy, you instantly became a millionaire! This is a huge amount of wealth!”

Big Yellow was excitedly bouncing up and down. After robbing so many warriors, of course there would be a lot of wealth.

Suddenly, while Jiang Chen was scanning the storage rings with his divine sense, he found a thick book hidden within one of the storage rings.

“This is Yang Shuo’s storage ring, he actually hid something within... Don’t tell me it’s some rare treasure?”

With a thought in his mind, the golden colored book immediately appeared in Jiang Chen’s hand. Then, he saw three big words on the cover: Illusion Heart Sutra.

“What is this?”

Big Yellow asked.

“This is the powerful combat skill Yang Shuo used, he used an illusion realm to trap me that day when we fought, and he almost



killed me. This is the skill he used.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. An illusion realm that could even confused Jiang Chen was certainly something extraordinary. Yang Shuo must have obtained the Illusion Heart Sutra through luck and accident. Jiang Chen knew how terrifying the Great Illusion Realm was, as he had experienced it himself.

Jiang Chen eagerly flipped over to the first page. The book only had a few pages, but it clearly stated how one could unleash the Great Illusion Realm. When Big Yellow extended his dog head and finished reading the book, he too couldn’t help but feel surprised.

“Damn! This Heart Sutra is really terrifying, the illusions created by it can actually change according to different people!”

Big Yellow said.

“That’s right, the Illusion Heart Sutra focused on fantasy and heart. As long as a man has a fantasy in his mind, he will be affected by the Great Illusion Realm. His heart will be immersed in his own fantasy, and he will have a difficult time pulling himself out.”

Jiang Chen sighed. Everyone had fantasies, and the fantasy existed within their hearts.

## Chapter 226 – Inferno Hell Slaughter

---

If it was just some ordinary combat skill, Jiang Chen would definitely not pay any attention to it, but this Illusion Heart Sutra was something Jiang Chen's soul craved for. He had been focused on cultivating the Nine Celestial Solar Energies in his previous life, so not once had he tried to learn anything regarding illusion. It was also partly because this kind of skill was incredibly rare.

But more importantly, there was a great risk when unleash an illusion realm. Not everyone would be affected by an illusion realm, and once the illusion didn't work as it is supposed to, the person who unleashed it would suffer a massive backlash, and if the illusion realm was forcefully broken by someone, the backlash would be even greater, just like what happened to Yang Shuo.

But this Illusion Heart Sutra was different from ordinary illusion skills, because everyone had some sort of fantasy, and the fantasy exists within their heart. Once a person was trapped in the Great Illusion Realm, he would be trapped in his own fantasy without being able to pull himself out.

It happened to Jiang Chen. What happened on the Saint Cliff 100 years ago had cast an unforgettable shadow in Jiang Chen's heart. The Realm of Immortals was a fantasy he couldn't forget, even in his second life. The scene on the Saint Cliff was a nightmare that he would never be able to forget. Therefore, even Jiang Chen was almost killed by Yang Shuo, as he was trapped in the illusion, and couldn't pull himself out. If it was just some ordinary illusion, Jiang Chen would easily be able to get out.

This was the terrifying part of the Illusion Heart Sutra. Therefore, Jiang Chen prepared to spend some time cultivating it. It might be put to good use during a critical moment.

“Buddy, this Illusion Heart Sutra is really awesome! Why don’t you cultivate it?”

Big Yellow said.

“It’s a really good skill, it would be a waste not cultivating it. I’ve never cultivated any illusion skills before, but since I have the Great Soul Derivation skill as my foundation, I think it’ll be a piece of cake for me to cultivate the Illusion Heart Sutra.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up, and a confident look emerged on his face. Cultivating an illusion skill was a test to the person’s mind and soul. Jiang Chen had the Great Soul Derivation skill as his foundation; which gave him a unique advantage when it came to cultivating the Illusion Heart Sutra.

“Big Yellow, go find another place to sleep, I’ll start cultivating this Illusion Heart Sutra. Once I’m done, we’ll proceed to the depths of Inferno Hell to find out more about the Earth Devil.”

Jiang Chen said.

After Big Yellow Dog left, Jiang Chen had immersed himself totally in the cultivation of Heart Sutra of Fantasy, the most important aspect in cultivating it was the ability of sense, using it

together with the scripts written in the Heart Sutra and unleashed the Realm of Great Illusion.

At the same time, in an unknown place near the border of Inferno Hell, a human figure suddenly descended from above. It was a young man with a long, fiery red robe. He had a pair of sharp eyes, and flames were emitting from all over his body.

“Jiang Chen, I, Huo Yuner have been quenching my body using magma, and I have gone through miserable pain. Finally, I’ve mastered my flame skill and broken through to the peak Mid Divine Core realm. Just you wait, I’ll kill you in this hellhole and get revenge for you insulting me that day!”

The young man in the fiery red robe was none other than Huo Yuner from the Green Sanctuary Sect. Back in the day, Jiang Chen killed Yun Can at the Black Sect, and insulted Huo Yuner with his words, leaving behind an unforgettable shadow in his heart. Since then, Huo Yuner had sworn that he would definitely fight Jiang Chen one day. Even if he would get himself killed, he still wanted to fight.

After he had returned from the Black Sect, Huo Yuner had gone back into the Karst Cave and began quenching himself with magma, allowing him to master his flame skill in a very short period of time and experience a surge in his cultivation level. But, rushing for a quick result was inadvisable, as it would hinder Huo Yuner’s future development. But, he didn’t care so much about that. He wanted to get rid of the shadow that Jiang Chen had left in his heart, because if he didn’t, he would be able to have any development in his cultivation in the future.

After having a surge in his cultivation level, Huo Yun'er had become extremely confident. With his cultivation at the peak Mid Divine Core realm, he believed that he would easily be able to kill Jiang Chen, so he rushed to Inferno Hell at once. The goal for this trip was simple; kill Jiang Chen.

One day later...

Jiang Chen who had been cultivating for an entire day finally opened his eyes. Two bright beams shot out from his eyes, causing the air in front of him to vibrate. Streams of energy swam around Jiang Chen's body, and light waves could be seen around him.

A light smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face. With a thought in his mind, the light waves went back into his body.

"The Great Illusion Realm is truly amazing."

Jiang Chen said with a smile. In just one day, he had completely mastered the Illusion Heart Sutra and was able to unleash the Great Illusion Realm. If Yang Shuo was still alive and learned how quickly Jiang Chen mastered the skill, his jaw would definitely drop.

Jiang Chen pushed open the door, then he immediately saw Tian Yishan and the other men, waiting outside his room. All of them were brimming with energy, and their injuries were fully recovered. Also, Wang Heng's cultivation base at the Early Divine Core realm had completely stabilized.

“Chief Jiang, are we leaving now?”

Wang Heng asked.

“Yes, I’m going to enter the depths of Inferno Hell now. First, I’ll have to find out where the Earth Devil is. Second, I want to experience how strong the demons and devils in Inferno Hell area, tempering my own cultivation. If you guys feel that this will be a dangerous trip, or don’t feel confident enough to follow, you can stay here.”

Jiang Chen said.

“The fuck with danger, no place in Inferno Hell is safe! All of us enters the depths of Inferno Hell from time to time, there are a lot of natural essences there, and if we’re lucky, we might be able to find some. Bringing it to the outside world means a lot of money!”

Yang Meng said.

“Alright, brother Tian and senior disciple Guan are both using high-ranked combat weapons, but it seems you few are still using mid-ranked combat weapons. I have plenty of high-ranked combat weapons with me, each of you can pick one that suits you.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen immediately took out some high-ranked combat weapons. Blades, sword, spears, pikes, halberds... all sorts of weapons.

Yang Meng and all the men's eyes lit up when they saw the weapons. They knew what kind of man Jiang Chen was, so they didn't reject it. They all picked up a high-ranked combat weapon that suited them. Inferno Hell was a place filled with dangers, and if they had a high-ranked combat weapon, it would be a great help to their combat strength.

“Let's go.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen immediately started flying out of Inferno City, Big Yellow and the rest following closely behind. The group began their journey towards the depths of Inferno Hell.

Inferno Hell was constantly covered in a vast amount of fog. The group of men were flying extremely quickly across numerous mountain ranges and wastelands, bumping into man human warriors along their way. These warriors were either rushing back to Inferno City from the depths of Inferno Hell, or they were going towards the depths of Inferno Hell.

Those who just came back from the depths of Inferno Hell were mostly in groups of few warriors. It was rare to see a lone ranger here. Also, most of them were injured and in different conditions. From this, one could easily tell how dangerous the depths of Inferno Hell was.

When most of these warriors saw Jiang Chen's group, they immediately showed their hostility and avoided bumping into his group. In Inferno Hell, robbing and being robbed was perfectly

normal, it happened almost every single day; that's why no one dared be careless here.

Put it this way, everything around a warrior was his enemy within Inferno Hell. Demons, devils, Nine Life Crystal Beasts, and humans. The relationship between them had always been hostile.

“Why haven't we encountered any monsters yet?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Because of some unknown reason, no demons or devils can be found within 2,000 miles of Inferno City. Beyond this 2,000 mile radius, the amount of demons and devils will become greater.”

Tian Yishan answered.

Soon after, Jiang Chen and the group passed the 2,000 mile line. An ancient mountain range that stretched as far as the eye could see appeared in front of them. Countless mountain peaks could be seen everywhere on the massive mountain range. All kinds of flowers, plants and trees with cold characteristics were growing everywhere, and the skies above the mountain range was covered in greyish fog, giving the entire mountain an indescribable creepiness.

Under such an environment, anyone would feel gloomy, and their emotions would tense up.



“Let’s go.”

Jiang Chen was the first one to descend and begin walking into the mountain range. Big Yellow had an excited expression, and he went 3-4 meters forwards with each jump he took. He eventually surpassed Jiang Chen.

Roar!

An angry roar sounded out from not far. A nearly 10 meter tall figure covered in a steaming devilish aura suddenly emerged and got in Big Yellow’s way. The creature had a ferocious look, and devilish flames emerged from its body. It was an Evil Devil.

“An Early Divine Core Evil Devil! We just arrived here, and we actually bumped into an Early Divine Core Evil Devil... so unlucky...”

Guan Yiyun said with a smile. Although they were unlucky, none of them panicked. For them, an Early Divine Core Evil Devil couldn’t pose any threat to them.

Swoosh!

Right after Guan Yiyun’s words left his mouth, Big Yellow had already started moving. With extreme speed, he slammed his diamond grade head into the Evil Devil’s head.

Bang!

A deep yet subtle banging sound was heard. The Evil Devil didn't even have the chance to let out a cry as its head had already been crushed into pieces. Jiang Chen threw his hand out and grabbed the devil soul.

All the devil souls and demon souls were treasures for Jiang Chen. Although he didn't want to use them right now, he could still save them for later use, just like how he was saving Mortal Restoration Pills and Earth Restoration Pills. He would need to form 108,000 Dragon Marks before it could be considered that he had mastered the Dragon Transformation skill, and currently, he only had 750 Dragon Marks. It was still a long way to go. He had no idea how much energy he would actually need in order to reach that level, so therefore, the more souls he saved up, the better.

“Master dog's head is really formidable, it shines so brightly it almost blinded my eyes!”

Wang Heng's words wasn't really flattery, as everyone here had the same thought. They never knew that a dog's head could be so strong! It was a Divine Core Evil Devil, and if any of them had bumped into one, it would take them a tremendous amount of effort to kill it. But, Big Yellow, he just killed it in an instant, it didn't even have the time to react.

“Let's carry on, I'm sure this journey will be full of slaughter. Everyone, be extra careful.”

Jiang Chen reminded.

All the men nodded their heads. In fact, they didn't really need to be reminded by Jiang Chen. All of them had stayed in Inferno Hell much longer than Jiang Chen had, and it wasn't their first time coming to the depths of Inferno Hell. They even knew which places they could go, and which places to avoid.

An hour later, the group of men arrived at the depths of some woods. The conditions of these men was different from before. Tian Yishan and the other men were tightly gripping their combat weapons, and there was blood dripping down from the combat weapons.

These men had fought and slaughtered continuously along their way, they had killed dozens of powerful demons and devils, including one Nine Life Crystal Beast. A ruthless aura could easily be felt coming from these men. At the same time, they seemed excited. Fighting alongside Jiang Chen and Big Yellow brought them great satisfaction.

Suddenly, a few glowing figures could be seen not far in front of them, and the glowing figures were actually moving towards their direction.

"It's the aura of a Nine Life Crystal Beast, and there are more than one!"

Wang Heng exclaimed. His expression immediately became serious, as the Nine Life Crystal Beast was the toughest creature to kill.

## Chapter 227 – Natural Formation

---

In Inferno Hell, it was very easy to recognize the aura of a Nine Life Crystal Beast, as they had the purest essence aura that no other monster could compare with. Their auras also caused all the fog to disappear wherever they went.

The few glowing figures in front of them were Nine Life Crystal Beasts, and that's why Wang Heng and the others had suddenly become so serious. Actually, all those who came to Inferno Hell hoped to bump into a Nine Life Crystal Beast, but at the same time, everyone were scared of doing so. A crystal core was truly an excellent treasure which provided endless benefits to warriors, but Nine Life Crystal Beast had nine lives, which made it extremely difficult to kill. Also, it had incredible combat strength that few demons or devils could compare with.

“Judging from the auras, I think there are at least 8 Nine Life Crystal Beasts. Looks like our luck today is really bad.”

Yang Meng said. For any human warrior, it was extremely bad luck to bump into a group of Nine Life Crystal Beasts. Each crystal beast had nine lives, and no one could fight a group of 8 crystal beasts. Even if an alliance's group had more than ten men, they would still run away upon seeing such a big group of crystal beasts.

“This isn't bad luck, you should say that we have good luck today!”

Guan Yiyun said with a smile on his face.

“That’s right! If there only were a few of us here, the only option left for us after bumping into so many Divine Core crystal beasts would be to run. However, we have Big Yellow and brother Jiang with us today, and that means that these crystal beasts are here to give us their crystal cores.”

Tian Yishan shrugged his shoulders and spoke with a casual expression.

Roar!

The creatures continuously let out roars. In just the blink of an eye, a total of 8 crystal beasts arrived in front of Jiang Chen’s group. Out of these 8 crystal beasts, 6 of them were Divine Core monsters, and the remaining two were Heavenly Core monsters. The strongest crystal beast was a Mid Divine Core monster. With its formidable combat strength and unique nine lives, even a Late Divine Core warrior would have to be extra careful when dealing with it.

The Nine Life Crystal Beast had no mouth, but the sound it made was unusually deep, and it also carried a slight shrill tone, causing anyone who heard it to feel extremely uncomfortable. Because of the crystal beast’s unique characteristics, they would usually hunt for demons and devils, and eat their souls, transforming it into the purest energy for themselves. At the same time, they were also able to eat the Divine Cores in human bodies. It was considered a great supplement for them.

The eight crystal beasts had locked down on Jiang Chen and his group. It wasn't hard to hear excitement in their roars just now, it was as if they had just found the most delicious food.

“The Divine Core crystal cores are very useful to me, especially those Mid Divine Core crystal cores. Brothers, let's kill them all, I'll keep those Mid Divine Core crystal cores, the rest belongs to you.”

A light smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face. Then, the Bloodthirsty Sword appeared in his hand. He slightly moved his body, turning himself in a beam of light as he dashed towards the Mid Divine Core crystal beast.

Kaka...

Big Yellow loved fighting, it was a natural instinct for all Divine Beasts. When Jiang Chen had started moving, Big Yellow had also started ramming towards one of the crystal beasts while rocking his head back and forth.

Bang!

Big Yellow was extremely fast. With just a single head-butt, he had crushed the Early Divine Core crystal beast into pieces. As expected, in the next second, the crystal beast was revived, and its energy was completely identical to its previous state.

“Brothers, let us kill! The crystal cores will belong to the person

who kills it!”

Tian Yishan strengthened his spirit and dashed forwards. There were seven of them in the group, and all of them were Divine Core warriors. Also, Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun were both super strong men from the younger generation, and it wasn't really difficult for them to deal with ordinary Nine Life Crystal Beasts. All it took was killing them nine times.

Bang!

At this moment, killing intents filled the scene, countless energy ripples were wreaking havoc within the woods, and all flowers, herbs and trees were destroyed in an instant.

When the Mid Divine Core crystal beast saw Jiang Chen coming towards it, it immediately let out a wild roar. Then, it raised its seemingly indestructible palm and slapped towards Jiang Chen. If the palm hit its target, Jiang Chen would be turned into meat paste.

“Hmph! Die for me now!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. The longsword in his hand continuously let out a buzzing sound, then he covered the entire Bloodthirsty Sword with his golden colored yuan energy. With all his strength, Jiang Chen slashed the sword towards his target.

Slash!

Followed by a slashing sound, the crystal beast's palm was cut in half. The sword didn't stop there, it continued and cut the crystal beast's body in half as well.

Jiang Chen had 750 Dragon Marks right now, which gave him incredible combat strength. No ordinary Mid Divine Core warriors would be his match, and the same went for the strong crystal beasts. Just one day ago, the combined forces of over 50 Mid Divine Core warriors was easily defeated by Jiang Chen.

Click click!

After killing it with a single strike, the Nine Life Crystal Beast revived to its original state, then it once again initiated an attack towards Jiang Chen.

“The ending will be the same even if you have 900 lives, let alone 9 lives.

Jiang Chen seemed incomparably majestic, and the longsword in his hand seemed like the most powerful weapon in the world. He attacked once again, and even though the powerful crystal beast tried its best to defend itself, it still couldn't survive Jiang Chen's sword attack. It was killed once again.

Only a Late Divine Core crystal beast might be a match for Jiang Chen right now.



Roar!

The eight crystal bears let out furious and once again engaged in a cruel fight with Jiang Chen and his group.

Big Yellow was the fastest amongst all the people here, and his head was like a perfect diamond that could crush anytime. In just a few breaths time, he had completely killed the Early Divine Core crystal beast. He didn't even allow it the chance to escape.

“The energy contained within this crystal core seems nice, and the taste isn't bad either. This master dog likes it.”

Big Yellow put the crystal core into his mouth, and using his dog teeth, he crunched the crystal core into pieces, giving it a taste before completely swallowing it.

“Big Yellow; it's such a waste for you to eat the crystal core. A reckless waste of treasure.”

When Jiang Chen who had killed his opponent six times saw Big Yellow eat the crystal core, he couldn't help but comment.

“Get lost! Why is it a waste when daddy eats them? A treasure like this is useful for the master dog as well! If I obtain any more crystal cores in the future, don't try and take them from me!”

Big Yellow said.

Jiang Chen shook his head and didn't bother about the dog anymore. He kept waving and striking with the longsword in his hand, and in just a short moment, he had killed his opponent 8 times. When the crystal beast revived for the last time, fear finally emerged in its single eye, and without any hesitation, it turned around and started running.

The powerful crystal beast did have some intelligence. Under normal circumstances, when they fought an opponent who was much stronger than them, after being killed a few times, they would evaluate how much energy their opponent had consumed. If the opponent was still brimming with energy, and didn't look tired at all, they would choose to flee.

“Trying to run?”

A grin emerged on Jiang Chen's face. He wouldn't give this crystal Beast any chances to escape; there was no way he would mess up with a sure thing.

Bang!

The energy carried by the sword was simply massive! The Bloodthirsty Sword descended from the skies in an invincible manner, and for the last time, it slashed the crystal beast in half. The shattered body finally began transforming into bits of bright lights which merged to become a transparent crystal core. Without hesitation, Jiang Chen took the crystal core and stored it in his storage ring.

Bang bang bang...

Energies splashed all over the place, Guan Yiyun and the others were still fighting. Obviously, there was no way their speed could be compared to Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. The battle between Wang Heng and the two Heavenly Core crystal beasts had almost come to an end.

“These guys are too slow. This master dog will help them finish.”

Big Yellow said in an impatient manner.

“Don’t do it, Big Yellow. Just let them finish the fight themselves.”

Jiang Chen stopped Big Yellow from interfering. He had told these men that those crystal cores belongs to him, and therefore, he would let them obtain it by themselves. All these men were fierce and brutal people, and since they had been able to survive in Inferno Hell for such a long time, they surely had their own strong skills.

Soon, with the joint forces of these few men, the battle had come to an end, and the few men began dividing the obtained crystal cores.

“Satisfying, what a joyful satisfaction!”

One of the men said. After the battle, not only did he not show any fatigue, he actually looked more energetic.

“It’s a pleasant experience to fight together with chief Jiang!”

Wang Heng said with an excited tone.

“Let’s go, we’ll move deeper into the area.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Junior disciple Jiang, the dangers will become greater the deeper we venture. We need to be extra careful.”

Guan Yiyun reminded.

“That’s right, there is a high possibility of us bumping into some Late Divine Core demons and devils in the depths of Inferno Hell, or perhaps even the mighty Combat Soul beings. Besides that, I’ve also heard that there are some natural formations and defense mechanisms within the depths of Inferno Hell, which is really powerful as well.”

Tian Yishan too reminded everyone.

“Alright, everyone, be extra careful as we venture deeper into this area.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head, then he led the group and continue their journey towards the depths of Inferno Hell.

After nearly four miles of walking, the road within the mountain range became extremely rough. It was very inconvenient to walk on it, but for all these Divine Core warriors, this was nothing.

Ahh!

Suddenly, everyone heard a loud shout. When they turned around, they immediately found out that Wang Heng had disappeared.

“Wang Heng disappeared, it was him who let out that shout just now!”

Yang Meng was shocked.

“What happened?”

Guan Yiyun furrowed his brows. Everyone were tense as they looked around, but they found nothing.

“There is nothing around here, no signs of monsters either. It’s impossible for Wang Heng to randomly disappear...”

Tian Yishan furrowed his brows as well.

Right at this moment, Jiang Chen's gaze stopped between the two black trees not far away from them; it was the exact location where Wang Heng had disappeared.

“Guys, look at that spot.”

Jiang Chen said.

Everyone turned around and looked at the spot Jiang Chen pointed at. However, they could only see two ordinary trees, and they didn't find anything unusual.

“Junior disciple Jiang, that spot looks normal, there is nothing special about it.”

Guan Yiyun said.

“How could it be normal? Just now, it was you who reminded me, you told me there are natural defense mechanisms and formations in the depths of Inferno Hell. Here, there is natural formation, and Wang Hen disappeared into this formation.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Good catch, Little Chen! You can even see natural formations!”

Big Yellow praised. He had a certain level of understanding towards defense mechanisms and formation, most likely because

of his innate treasure hunting ability. Therefore, Big Yellow could immediately tell there was a natural formation after it was pointed out.

“What? You’re saying there is a natural formation between these two trees?”

Guan Yiyun was shocked.

“That’s right. A natural formation is very different from those made by humans. A natural formation is naturally formed by nature after gathering natural yuan energies; it’s a miraculous process, and humans know very little about it. Anyone can easily be trapped by it if they don’t pay enough attention.

Jiang Chen explained.

## Chapter 228 – Devil's Cave

---

Obviously, Wang Heng had accidentally stepped into a natural formation and disappeared.

“Chief Jiang, what should we do now? Is Wang Heng in any danger?”

Yang Meng worriedly asked.

“Under normal circumstances, the person who stepped into a formation would be trapped, and he would definitely not disappear. Therefore, the invisible formation here should be similar to an illusion realm. I suppose the real scene behind these two trees are as simple as what we are looking at right now, perhaps there is something unusual here, but it's covered by this formation, like a camouflage that's trying to distract us. Therefore, I assume that Wang Heng disappeared because he entered the scene behind this formation. Wang Heng's life isn't at risk, currently.”

Said Jiang Chen said.

“That's right, this formation carries an illusionary characteristic, but it won't hurt anyone. Therefore, Wang Heng won't get killed by this formation. But, we can't eliminate the possibility that there is danger on the other side of the formation, as none of us know what's on the other side.”

Big Yellow commented with what he knew as well.



Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun looked at each other, both could see shock in each other's eye. What shocked them wasn't the formation, but Jiang Chen's understand towards formation. He explained it all like he was a grandmaster when it came to formations.

A young man in his teens, it was hard to imagine why he seemed to know everything. He had unique innate abilities and formidable combat strength, and he was also able to concoct all sorts of pills with 100% effectiveness with ease. And now, he showed them his vast knowledge in formations and defense mechanism. They wouldn't believe that an abnormal monster like this actually existed if they didn't personally know him.

“What should we do now?”

Guan Yiyun asked.

“I also want to know what's behind this formation, I have decided to enter the formation and check it out for myself, while saving Wang Heng at the same time. All of you just wait here for me, there is no need to take the risk together.”

When Jiang Chen passed the two trees on the road side just now, even with his extraordinary senses, he couldn't sense that there was a formation there. This proved that this formation was amazing. He had now arrived at the depths of Inferno Hell, and his goal was to search for the Earth Devil. But if he kept walking around like this, he would most likely not be able to find anything.

Therefore, he wanted to try his luck by entering the formation.

“I’ll go with you.”

Guan Yiyun said.

“Let’s go in together, we can help of help if anything happens in there. Also, I too want to check out what’s happening behind the formation.”

Tian Yishan said. No one had any objections to his decision, it was safest for them to follow Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. If Jiang Chen and the rest all went into the formation, the danger would be just the same as if they had decided to stay here.

“If that’s the case, let’s enter the formation together. Everyone, be extra cautious.”

Jiang Chen reminded.

After saying that, Jiang Chen became the first person to walk towards the center of the two trees. Big Yellow followed closely behind, and he was followed by Guan Yiyun, Tian Yishan and the rest of the men.

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. He kept staring at the spot behind the two trees. He was cultivating the Great Soul Derivation skill, and that gave him incredibly sensitive senses. He had finally sensed the aura of the invisible natural formation.

Jiang Chen stepped between the two trees, and when his body touched the invisible formation, he immediately felt a powerful suction force invisibly working on him. Jiang Chen's didn't resist this force, and in an instant, he too disappeared, just like Wang Heng.

Big Yellow was even wilder, he just bashed into the center of both trees; and then he disappeared.

Behind them, Tian Yishan, Guan Yiyun and the rest of the men stared at each other. Without hesitating, they immediately followed the footsteps of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, disappearing into the other side of the formation.

Indeed, on the other side of the formation, there was a completely different scene. Jiang Chen and the group were standing chill, and when sensing the chilling breeze blowing from all directions, their expressions became unnatural.

Underneath their feet there was a small hill. There was a dusky airflow all over the place, and chilling breeze kept blowing in their faces. When these men turned around, they couldn't find the same two trees. There was nothing, and it was as if they just entered another dimension.

But they could actually feel that the atmosphere in this place was similar to Inferno Hell. Therefore, this place should still be within Inferno Hell, but the formation had isolated the area.

Not far from them, a man dressed in black clothes was looking around with a panicked expression. When he saw Jiang Chen, a joyful expression emerged on his face.

“Chief Jiang, you guys came here too?”

The man in black clothes was none other than Wang Heng who had accidentally stepped into the formation.

“Wang Heng, why are you careless that you stepped into the invisible natural formation?”

Yang Meng blamed Wang Heng. Actually, his expression became much more relaxed when he found out Wang Heng was alright.

“It was an accident. What is this place, actually? A boundless stretch of desolated mountains, and the ominous feeling I get from this place is much heavier than outside.”

Wang Heng said.

“The devil auras here are really strong.”

Tian Yishan said with a frown on his face.

“You’re right, intense devil auras fill every single inch of this place. I think there are a lot of Evil Devils in this place.

Guan Yiyun said.

“Not only that, aside from the intense devilish energy here, demonic energy is extremely sparse here. Looks like we have entered a devil cave. Be cautious, everyone, this place might be the colony of the Evil Devils.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What? A colony for Evil Devils? That means we just jumped into a huge crowd of devils? How are we going to leave this place?”

Wang Heng exclaimed. All of these men knew how powerful Evil Devils were, and in Inferno Hell, they were the second most powerful creatures, after the Nine Life Crystal Beast. With just the few of them here, it wasn't difficult to imagine how dangerous it was for them to walk into a devil cave that was filled with Evil Devils.

“This place is a part of Inferno Hell, not a separate dimension. Because of the formation, I'm afraid we're very far away from the place we were just now, and all we can do now is keep walking forwards. As long as we can leave this devil cave, we'll be able to return to where we came from.”

Jiang Chen said.

Everyone were inwardly sighing. They couldn't help but take a deep breath. It looked like it was going to be a tough path in front

of them.

Roar!

Angry roars began sounding out throughout the place. It was the furious roars of the Evil Devils. Figures of powerful Evil Devils came into sight far in front of them. Obviously, these Evil Devils were coming towards them.

Looking at this, the group felt their nerves tensing up. No one had any idea how many Evil Devils were out there.

Jiang Chen on the other side, he had a relaxed expression. These Evil Devils were terrifying and frightening for other people, but for Jiang Chen, they were merely tonics in his eyes. The True Dragon Flames was a natural predator for these Evil Devils, and as long as he didn't bump into some extra powerful Evil Devils, he would be able to kill them all with his flames.

Soon, the Evil Devils began spring towards them. There were a total of five Evil Devils. For Jiang Chen and his group, these five Evil Devils were nothing, because there was only one Evil Devil in the Divine Core realm, and the rest were all Heavenly Core monsters. Their combined strength meant nothing in front of these men.

“Kill them, quickly!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. Big Yellow became the first one to

dash forwards, and in an instant, he killed the Early Divine Core Evil Devil with his head. At the same time, Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun attacked at the same time, killing the other four Heavenly Core Evil Devils in the blink of an eye.

Roar roar...

Even though they had finished the fight in a split second, the energy ripples and auras of human warriors still alerted the Evil Devils in the inner area of this place. Angry roars upon roars could be heard from all directions, and figures of powerful Evil Devils began appearing around the place. There were at least a couple dozens of them. At the moment, the entire place was filled with massive amounts of devilish auras, enough to send shivers down anyone's spine.

“Damn it, how come there are so many Evil Devils here?”

Yang Meng couldn't help but start cursing.

Jiang Chen didn't show any emotion on his face, but his eyes were actually lighting up. For him, these Evil Devils were merely a pile of tonics, a great wealth. And the more there were, the better. Since he had come to Inferno Hell, he couldn't leave the place with both hands empty; he had to obtain sufficient benefits, and save a huge amount of resources for his future breakthroughs. He had to kill these Evil Devils and take their devil souls to prepare for his future cultivation.

Swoosh!

This time, Jiang Chen was the one who initiated the attack. He turned into a beam of light and rammed into the group of Evil Devils. Big Yellow leapt in the crowd as well. When it came to fighting, he was happier than anyone else.

“Kill!”

Guan Yiyun let out a cold snort. All men in the group jumped into the fight at the same time. At the moment, intense killing intents filled the atmosphere, and the air itself was vibrating due to their attacks.

Bang!

Jiang Chen waved his hand and unleashed a flame sea. The True Dragon Flame, which carried the purest yang energy, instantly covered a few Evil Devils.

Roar...

The Evil Devils let out shrill cries. They had an incredible fear towards the flames, as if they had just seen their natural predator. The Heavenly Core Evil Devils couldn't resist it at all, and were killed on the spot.

Even those Early Divine Core Evil Devils couldn't resist the scorching heat from the True Dragon Flames. Although they wouldn't be killed instantly, they would still roll and struggle



within the flame sea, furiously roaring.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort once again. Underneath his control, the True Dragon Flames transformed into countless fire arrows. These arrows were injected with yuan energy, and they swept across the Evil Devils.

In just a short moment, many Evil Devils had their bodies impaled by these fire arrows, and were killed by the True Dragon Flames. Numerous black colored devil souls were purified by the flames and fell into Jiang Chen's storage ring.

“Haha, all of you, die!”

Jiang Chen was laughing out loudly. He expanded the coverage of the flame sea, covering more than half of the Evil Devils within. The strongest Evil Devils in this new batch were only Early Divine Core monsters, and they simply had no ability to resist Jiang Chen's attack.

Roar roar...

The roars seemed to sound out endlessly. Many Evil Devils were burnt into ashes by the scorching True Dragon Flame, and none of the Evil Devils could unleash their evil energy underneath the True Dragon Flame's pressure. This flame was truly their bane.

In just the blink of an eye, more than half of the Evil Devils had died. It all happened before Tian Yishan and the other men could even strike. They were stunned on the spot as they stared at Jiang Chen who was bravely slaughtering.

“Heavens, what kind of flame is that? It’s giving frightening feeling.”

“I can sense an aura of a king from the flame itself, it’s a flame with the purest yang energy, which is also the perfect rival for these Evil Devils. Look at those Evil Devils, they are scared off Jiang Chen’s flames, it’s a natural rival for them.”

“Chief Jiang is definitely the bravest man I have ever met, no one can compare with him! No wonder he didn’t show any worry on his face, even after finding out we are in the devil’s cave, it’s because he has the ultimate weapon that can defeat these Evil Devils!”

.....

Everyone were shocked by what they witnessed. It seemed like there was no need for them to attack, just Jiang Chen alone would be able to defeat thousands upon thousands of these creatures. This wasn’t a battle, it was one-sided slaughter where no suspense existed.

# Chapter 229 – Violent Bloodthirsty Devil

---

Whoosh...

The flames were dancing around, and the strong wind was blowing through the scene. Jiang Chen looked like a Fire God that had just descended from the heavens as he fought dozens of powerful Evil Devils all by himself, burning these creatures and making them let out miserable roars. Not long after that, all of the Evil Devils were burning to death, and their purified devil souls were stored within Jiang Chen's storage ring at once.

Roar...

But, just as the battle ended, more furious roars sounded out from many different Evil Devils. Countless devilish energies shot up into the skies, and devil flames could be seen from where the roars sounded out. Once again, countless Evil Devils had appeared in the men's sight. But this time, there were more than a hundred of them, and even more were coming from behind.

“Heavens! Why are there so many Evil Devils here? This really is a devil cave!”

Tian Yishan opened his mouth wide in shock, all the other men's faces turned pale as well. There were so many Evil Devils in front of them, and once the battle begun, Jiang Chen would for sure not have any time to pay attention to them. Without Jiang Chen's flame, they wouldn't have an effective weapon that could defeat these Evil Devils, and once they were surrounded by them, it

would mean an endless fight for them. Even if they survived the attack, they would die from depleting their own yuan energy.

“What should we do?”

Wang Heng’s expression became awful.

“The number of Evil Devils will definitely become greater and greater, this place is their colony. Senior disciple Guan, let’s split up right now, you and the rest of the men walk along the outer perimeter of this place, I’m sure you’ll be able to leave the devil cave that way. Big Yellow and I will walk in a straight line and cross this land. Not only can we help attract more attention from these Evil Devils, I can also run through this place and find out about the whereabouts of the Earth Devil. The danger will be greater if you guys keep following us, and I won’t be able to take care of you all later.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What? Junior disciple Jiang, you’re going to cross the devil cave? This is too dangerous! I’m sure there are some mighty Evil Devils residing in this colony, it will be extremely difficult for you to deal with them!”

Guan Yiyun worriedly said.

“I’ve made up my mind. Besides, we need to have someone stay back to attract the attention of these Evil Devils, only then can the

rest of us have a chance at escaping. If we run in a group, we will all become targeted by these Evil Devils.”

Jiang Chen left no room for objection.

“Fine, if that’s the case, just be extra cautious. Junior disciple Jiang, I’ll meet you back in Inferno City.”

Guan Yiyun said as he patted Jiang Chen’s shoulder. Jiang Chen’s words were correct, the battle just now had alerted and attracted the colony of Evil Devils. If they chose to run around in one group, there was no way they could escape from the Devil Cave. Someone needed to stay back and fight these Evil Devils, only then could the rest of the men take the opportunity to run away. But more important, Jiang Chen was in the search for the Earth Devil. The Earth Devil and the Evil Devil were both devils, and he might be able to find out about the whereabouts of the Earth Devil in this colony of Evil Devils.

The formidable Evil Devils were approaching quickly like a tsunami, it was a dreadful scene, and any ordinary man would be scared to death by just the scene alone.

Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan brought the rest of the men and backed off from the scene. They were going to walking along the outer perimeter of this land and leave the place. As for Jiang Chen, none of them had any worries about him. It was useless for them to worry about him. Jiang Chen was going to search for the Earth Devil in the deeper area of Inferno Hell, and all of them would just become a burden for him.

After the group left, Jiang Chen finally had no more worries. In an instant, his momentum became like a raging wave. The golden battle axe appeared in his hand, then he unleashed some True Dragon Flames, covering the entire golden battle axe with flames.

The golden battle axe had turned into a flaming battle axe, and it kept producing cracking sounds.

“Big Yellow! Let’s kill to our heart’s content today!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly.

“Kaka, good, this master dog likes it!”

Big Yellow was extremely excited. A layer of golden flames emerged on the surface of his skin; it was his innate ability, one he have had since the moment he was born. Although its strength couldn’t compare with the True Dragon Flame, it was still a powerful flame. Besides that, the strength of this flame would keep increasing together with his cultivation level.

Roar!

The Evil Devils kept letting out wild roars. The devilish energy unleashed by the hundreds of Evil Devils had flooded the place. Each of these Evil Devils were over 3 meters tall, and the momentum of this specie was simply too brutal.

“Haha, all of you, die!”

Jiang Chen burst out into laughter as he raised the battle axe in his hand high up into the air and forcefully chopped down in front of him, unleashing a razor sharp axe energy that carried the True Dragon Flames. The axe energy landed in the center of the approaching Evil Devils.

Bang!

The ground was shaking, and the air was burning. Jiang Chen's attack had instantly killed five Evil Devils. Three of them were chopped in half, and the other two were killed by the tremendous force.

Bang bang bang...

On the other side, Big Yellow behaved savagely as a tiger. Using his head, he rammed around within the crowd of Evil Devils, causing blood and broken limbs to splash everywhere. These Evil Devils were actually really strong, many of them had broken through to the Divine Core realm, and some of them were even Mid Divine Core monsters. If any ordinary warriors faced them, their ending would only be tragic.

But too bad, their opponents were Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. Both of them were extraordinary existences. Once they unleashed their full strength, they simply didn't care how many enemies were in front of them. More importantly, Jiang Chen's True Dragon Flame was really efficient in dealing with these Evil Devils

and give them huge pressures. Under such pressure, none of these Evil Devils could unleash their true combat strength.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh...

Jiang Chen was extremely aggressive, he had turned into an ultimate Evil Devil killer as he kept chopping and slashing with the battle axe in hand, and burning everything with his intense flames.

Every time Jiang Chen waved his axe, an Evil Devil would die. Under the powerful attacks from Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, the overbearing Evil Devils had transformed into tame sheep just waiting to be slaughtered.

“Kaka, awesome!”

Big Yellow kept laughing out loudly as he rammed into the Evil Devils, he really enjoyed this kind of excitement; he loved the pleasant feeling brought to him by slaughtering.

The Evil Devils’ roars seemed endless. They were the cruelest and most ruthless existence, all of their eyes turned red, and without any fear of death, they kept dashing towards Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, like moths flying into the fire.

Roar...

The battle seemed eternal, and each roar was actually the Evil Devils calling for more reinforcements. More and more Evil Devils



were flying out from the inner area of this place, and storming towards the battlefield with great speed.

“Damn it, there are so many Evil Devils here! Buddy, we can’t just keep slaughtering like this, they just won’t stop coming!”

Big Yellow said.

“I’ll kill every single one of them. Their devils souls is like tonics for me, and I need to maximize my gains in this trip to Inferno Hell.”

There was no fear on Jiang Chen’s face. He knew better than anyone else the difficulty in cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill. It was a process that consumed an enormous amount of energy. He needed a massive amount of energy. And therefore, all these Evil Devils in front of him were actually the energy that Jiang Chen needed. It would be really difficult for Jiang Chen to encounter a rare opportunity like this in the outside world, that’s why he wanted to kill as much as he possibly could.

With the True Dragon Flames, Jiang Chen could completely suppress these Evil Devils. Even if there was a powerful Late Divine Core Evil Devil here, Jiang Chen wouldn’t feel scared at all.

“Fine, then let’s kill all we can!”

Big Yellow’s brutish nature was completely ignited. He kept letting out ferocious roars as he rammed in Evil Devils in all

directions with his majestic body. A pure yang aura was emitting from his body, together with flames that covered his entire body. He too was an Evil Devil killer.

“Big Yellow, we have to push forward while slaughtering. The Earth Devil is the first devil specie to come into existence, and the devilish energy here is incredibly strong. I believe the Earth Devil isn’t far from this place, we have to cross this place and go further.”

Jiang Chen kept waving the battle axe in his hand, killing a large amount of Evil Devils, and harvesting a huge amount of devil souls. An Earth Devil was the most supreme existence amongst all devils, so the place where the Earth Devil they were hunting lived would be filled with vast amounts of devilish energies. But, with the pride of the Earth Devil, it wouldn’t be living together with these Evil Devils, and therefore, Jiang Chen would need to venture deeper into the Devil Cave.

Flesh and blood were flying in all directions, and scorching flames soared into the skies. This was truly a hellish battlefield. The cruel aura of slaughter spread all over the place, and soaked into all the living beings who stood on the edge of life and death.

Roar!

Right at this moment, a vigorous roar sounded from far. In the next second, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow saw a nearly 10 meter tall gigantic devil running towards them.

The gigantic devil seemed different from the other Evil Devils. Not only did its body seem more majestic, its skill was fully covered with blood red patterns, and it had a much more violent devilish energy compared to the Evil Devils.

“Damn it, I knew there was a terrifying existence here! This big guy has reached the Late Divine Core realm, he isn’t easy to handle.”

Big Yellow suddenly trembled.

“This is a Violent Bloodthirsty Devil, a king among the devils. I never expected I would see one here.”

Jiang Chen was shocked by it as well.

“Violent Bloodthirsty Devil, it sounds ferocious.”

Big Yellow kept staring at the approaching gigantic devil.

“This Violent Bloodthirsty Devil, just like its name implies, always thirsts for blood. It only knows how to kill, and it will even drink the blood of Evil Devils once it becomes mad. This Violent Bloodthirsty Devil has reached the Late Divine Core realm, and it won’t be easy to deal with.”

A serious look emerged in Jiang Chen’s eyes.

“Damn it! Buddy, can you deal with it or not? If not, let’s hurry up and run away!”

Big Yellow said.

“Unless I can break through to the Divine Core realm, I won’t be a match for this Violent Bloodthirsty Devil. But, since my True Dragon Flames is the ultimate weapon against all devils, it will also pose a great threat to this Violent Bloodthirsty Devil. I’ll try using my flame to fight it, and if I can kill it, the benefits will be huge. The Violent Bloodthirsty Devil’s Late Divine Core devil soul is worth more than all the devil souls of these Evil Devils.”

Jiang Chen’s fighting spirit was extremely high. He didn’t feel any fear, even when facing such a formidable opponent. There was nothing that could stop him from moving further.

When the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil started running towards them, all the Evil Devils immediately backed off and made way for it.

Roar!

The Violent Bloodthirsty Devil extended its gigantic hand and unleashed a black beam towards Jiang Chen. It was an attack formed entirely from chilly devil energy, and its power was so tremendous that no ordinary warriors could resist it.

Ha!

Jiang Chen let out a loud shout. In an instant, he unleashed the True Dragon Flames without any restrictions, then it turned into a 6 meter long fiery red flame dragon. Jiang Chen grabbed the flame dragon's tail and slammed it into the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil's attack.

Bang!

The dragon flame collided with the dark beam, producing a huge amount of sparks that splashed all over the place. The True Dragon Flames burned the dark beam and made it vanish in an instant!

# Chapter 230 – Fighting Knowledge

---

The entire place was shaking, and the massive amount of force caused a mountain underneath the center of collision to collapse. Devilish energies and flames could be seen all over the place. The True Dragon Flames has proved to be the natural predator for all devils; the devilish energies immediately weakened upon meeting the flame, then it vanished just a short moment after.

The Violent Bloodthirsty Devil's eyes were twitching. When it saw Jiang Chen's True Dragon Flames, an obvious surprised look could be seen in its eyes, together with a slight hint of fear.

However, the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil only feared Jiang Chen's True Dragon Flames, not Jiang Chen himself. Besides, its combat strength was mighty, so even if Jiang Chen could attack with the True Dragon Flames, it still didn't take him seriously.

“Heae kaea yae dea!”

The Violent Bloodthirsty Devil was speaking in the devil language, which Jiang Chen was unable to understand. The devilish flames hovering around its body began rocking back and forth violently, it had finally released the full power of its Late Divine Core strength, which was truly terrifying. All the Evil Devils had begun backing off from the scene; the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil was going to attack alone, and no one dared challenge the devilish dignity of the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil.

“Damn it! Buddy, this big guy looks really strong, can you defeat

it or not?”

Big Yellow stood next to Jiang Chen and said.

“I have to do it no matter what. With my current combat strength, I can easily kill any Mid Divine Core warrior, and I can also fight the ordinary Late Divine Core warriors. However, this Violent Bloodthirsty Devil has the royal devil bloodline, which gives it incredibly strong combat strength that allows it to be compared to any Late Divine Core warrior. I can kill it alone if I break through to the Divine Core realm... But, my True Dragon Flames puts a huge restraint on it, and under such restraints, the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil’s combat strength will be greatly reduced. This is my advantage, and therefore, I might be able to kill it if I use all my strength.

Jiang Chen’s eyes were glowing brightly, he was flooded with a powerful desire to fight. In Jiang Chen’s mind, unless he met an existence that completely overpowered him, he wouldn’t easily back off from a fight.

Jiang Chen dared not show any neglect when facing the grim Violent Bloodthirsty Devil. In an instant, he drew out his golden battle axe and covered it with his True Dragon Flames. He let out a loud shout, then he unleashed the Clap of Thunder. The attack dashed forwards with an incredible speed, and it arrived in front of the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil in a split second.

Right at this moment, a powerful devil weapon emerged in the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil’s hand. It looked extremely eerie, and it was a 3 meter long gigantic devilish blade. On the back of the

blade, there were some extremely sharp and pointy thorns.

When the devilish blade appeared, the surround air started violently shaking.

Roar!

The Violent Bloodthirsty Devil let out a furious roar. With a massive amount of devilish energy and an enormous force, it waved the devilish blade towards Jiang Chen's battle axe without any hesitation.

This was an extreme contest between pure strength. The Violent Bloodthirsty Devil was the devil specie with the mightiest raw strength amongst all devils. As for Jiang Chen, he was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, which made his body as hard as steel, and gave him tremendous strength. This, combined with the True Dragon Flame's restraining effects on devilish energy gave him the abilities to fight the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil.

Clang!

The battle axe collided with the devilish weapon. Vast energy ripples swept across the scene, the entire place lit up because of the flame, and devastating energies shattered all mountains underneath and leveled the land.

Jiang Chen was force back a dozen steps before he could regain control of his body. On his opposite side, the Violent Bloodthirsty



Devil wasn't in a good condition either, it too was forced back by the impact.

“Hmph! Although my combat strength can't match this Violent Bloodthirsty Devil, but because of the True Dragon Flame's restraining effect, it simply can't fight with its full strength. Since this is the case, I'll kill this Violent Bloodthirsty Devil and take its devil soul.”

Jiang Chen inwardly let out a cold snort. The collision had allowed him to find out about the gap between him and the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil. Because of the True Dragon Flames, the gap had become even, and it was now a competition of who had the better abilities.

GRAAA!

Being forced back by a young human had seriously challenged the dignity of this Violent Bloodthirsty Devil, causing it to let out a ground-shaking roar. The devilish blade produced a violent buzzing sound, and suddenly, the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil extended its gigantic claw and unleashed a dark cloud.

The dark cloud was fully covered with blood red patterns and eerie devilish energies. With an absolutely powerful attack force, it flew towards Jiang Chen like a gigantic mountain.

“True Dragon Palm!”

Jiang Chen shouted out loudly in an explosive manner. He had the purest yang aura leaking out from all over his body, and he had no fear towards these devilish energies.

The gigantic blood red dragon claw was immediately covered by the True Dragon Flames upon appearing, then it grabbed towards the dark cloud in a formidable way.

Bang!

It was another brutal collision. Suppressed by the True Dragon Flames, the vast devilish energies were pressed down by the force, as if they were meeting their natural predator.

Bang bang bang...

The air surrounding their fight was burnt because of the intense fight. Jiang Chen and the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil were engaged in the most brutal fight. Both human and devil were using all sorts of approaches to fight each other. The Violent Bloodthirsty Devil had an advantage in cultivation, and on the other side, Jiang Chen had an advantage because of the True Dragon Flame. At the moment, the human and the devil were violently fighting a battle where it was difficult to have a clear winner.

“Little Chen has become stronger, I’m sure the divine skill he is cultivating is a mighty divine skill inherited from the ancient era, if not, he wouldn’t be as powerful as he is now. He is only a peak Heavenly Core warrior... if he breaks through to the Divine Core realm, doesn’t that mean he will really be able to kill this Violent

Bloodthirsty Devil in an instant? When that time comes, even if he's only an Early Divine Core warrior, he won't be able to find any opponents in the Divine Core realm."

Big Yellow was really amazed. He had always been curious about what sort of skill Jiang Chen was cultivating. He had followed Jiang Chen for quite a long period of time, and Jiang Chen had never hidden anything from him during his cultivation. This had led to Big Yellow being able to make speculations.

Obviously, the divine skill Jiang Chen was cultivating was really powerful, but it was extremely difficult for him to cultivate it as well, as it would require an enormous amount of energies, and he also needed to form Dragon Marks in his body.

Roar!!

The Violent Bloodthirsty Devil became angrier and angrier with each passing moment. Fighting with the human in front of him was something really depressing. It wasn't its opponent's powerful combat strength that made it depressed, it was the True Dragon Flame's restraining effect. The feeling of being naturally suppressed was really upsetting the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil, and it was aching to tear this human into pieces and devouring him. But, no matter how hard it tried, it still couldn't defeat him.

"Perfect, the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil has gone berserk and is going to lose its senses soon, this is my chance; Nine Phantom Wolves!"

Jiang Chen let out a cold shout, then he took a step forwards in the skies. In an instant, nine identical Jiang Chens appeared in the sky. The sudden change had baffled the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil.

A movement skill like the Nine Phantom Wolves was most frightening when used in a fight, it would create an unexpected scenario during a critical moment. No matter how strong the opponent was, it would still confuse them for a moment. This was without any doubts a fact, as after Jiang Chen had inherited the skill, he had used it to surprise his opponents many times.

Swoosh!

In the blink of an eye, nine identical Jiang Chens surrounded the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil. All eight phantoms moved exactly like the real Jiang Chen did. They all raised their flaming battle axes high up into the air and chopped down forcefully at the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil.

The Violent Bloodthirsty Devil let out a furious roar. It felt helpless, as it couldn't tell which of the nine Jiang Chens the real one was. Therefore, it could only divide its strength into nine portions and attack all nine Jiang Chens at the same time.

The Violent Bloodthirsty Devil was restrained by the True Dragon Flames, and because of that, it couldn't fight at its strongest, and became Jiang Chen's equal match. If it divided its strength into nine portions, it wouldn't be Jiang Chen's match.

Bang!

The Violent Bloodthirsty Devil's attack shattered all eight phantoms, but being in its weakened state, it couldn't stop the real Jiang Chen, allowing him to hit it with his battle axe. In an instant, the gigantic Violent Bloodthirsty Devil's body was hit by the attack, and it was forcefully slammed onto the ground, creating a huge crater. A horrible wound could be seen on its body.

Roar!

The Violent Bloodthirsty Devil was severely wounded, and that made it become even more berserk. Without any hesitation, it leapt up into the sky, striking toward Jiang Chen once again.

A grin appeared on Jiang Chen's face. In such a state, the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil was doomed. Jiang Chen's fighting experience was simply incredible, he knew very well that a devil king such as this Violent Bloodthirsty Devil existed just for fighting and slaughtering, and they had extremely sensitive senses during battle, and that's the reason why Jiang Chen didn't unleash the Nine Phantom Wolves when the fight began.

The Nine Phantom Wolves was a secret killing skill, and he had to wait until the perfect moment before he could unleash it. If he used it immediately when the fight started, the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil would most likely find out which the real one was. Therefore, Jiang Chen just kept fighting and provoking the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil until it had gone completely mad. Then, he suddenly unleashed the Nine Phantom Wolves, and the furious Violent Bloodthirsty Devil had no way of finding out which Jiang Chen was the real one.

Swoosh!

Looking at the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil who attacked once again, nine identical Jiang Chens appeared once again. After being seriously injured, the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil became even more confused, and had simply no way of telling which one the real Jiang Chen was.

Ha!

Nine identical Jiang Chens shouted out loudly at the same time, then they all forcefully chopped the battle axe down from above. The Violent Bloodthirsty Devil let out many wild roars. With the bad experience just now, it didn't divide its strength into nine portions this time, it instead focused all its into one attack towards one of the Jiang Chens.

It was worth mentioning that the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil was indeed the most brutal existence amongst all devils. It was actually putting its life at risk by doing this, it was gambling everything it had on this strike, hoping it would strike the real Jiang Chen with a winning ratio of one to nine.

If its guess was correction, the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil would be able to find out the secret trick behind the movement skill, and then it would strike with everything it gotten, never allowing Jiang Chen the opportunity to counter.

But too bad, today was just not the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil's

lucky day. The attack that contained its full strength only shattered one of the phantoms.

When the phantom was destroyed, the real Jiang Chen's attack had fallen onto it at the same time.

“Die!”

With a grin on his face, Jiang Chen's razor sharp battle axe hit the center of the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil's head. From top to bottom, the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil was slice in half and killed on the spot.

With a quick and swift motion, Jiang Chen without hesitation grabbed the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil's devil soul with his hand.

“Buddy is really smart when it comes to fighting.”

Big Yellow couldn't help but praise Jiang Chen. A man who could always remain calm was really frightening, especially during a fight.

Aowu...

After killing the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil, all the other Evil Devils immediately let out wild roars. The roars had called more and more Evil Devils toward the scene, and countless Evil Devils began storming toward their direction. A vast amount of devilish energy covered the entire sky above. Jiang Chen saw at least 5 Late

Divine Core Evil Devil dashing towards him and Big Yellow.

“Buddy, we can’t fight them this time!”

Big Yellow said.

“Run!”

Without hesitation, Jiang Chen immediately sprinted towards his left. Big Yellow didn’t dare slow down, and he instantly followed.



# Chapter 231 – Combat Soul Realm Evil Devil

---

Even the strongest tiger can't stand up to a large pack of wolves. For Jiang Chen, those Evil Devils at the Mid Divine Core realm and below were like sheep, he had no fear no matter how many of them there were. But, those Late Divine Core Evil Devils were actually true wolves, and once they grouped up and attacked in numbers, even if Jiang Chen was as fierce as a right, he couldn't deal with them.

After all, Jiang Chen was only a peak Heavenly Core warrior, he hadn't broken through to the Divine Core realm yet, it wasn't easy for him to defeat Late Divine Core beings. He had already used everything he had to kill the Violent Bloodthirsty Devil just now, and now, with so many Late Divine Core Evil Devils storming the place, he wouldn't be able to defeat them.

More importantly, Jiang Chen had no idea how many Evil Devils there were in this colony. The battle had just begun not long ago, and now, a lot of Late Divine Core Evil Devils have emerged. If he kept fighting, he might attract an Evil Devil at the Combat Soul realm, and that would be a huge problem.

In Inferno Hell, it was possible to find all sorts of powerful demons and devils. If a mighty Combat Soul devil existed here, it would be likely that another Combat Soul monster existed as well. This place was the colony of the Evil Devils, and Jiang Chen wouldn't be surprised if a Combat Soul Evil Devil appeared.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were fleeing in the opposite direction of where Guan Yiyun and the group fled. With an extreme amount

of speed, they just wanted to cross this devil cave.

Aowu!!

The furious roars didn't seem to stop sounding out, the entire place was echoing with the wild cries of the Evil Devils. Devilish energies were soaring high behind the duo, and a couple of Late Divine Core Evil Devils were chasing behind Jiang Chen and Big Yellow while letting out angry roars.

The huge disturbance had alerted all the Evil Devils in the devil cave, and in just a short moment, countless Evil Devils appeared from all directions, storming toward Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, trying to stop and kill them.

Dozens of powerful Evil Devils appeared in front of them as well, baring their teeth and brandishing their claws while aggressively unleashing their devilish energy. Looking at how they were behaving, it was likely that they wouldn't give up until Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were eaten by them.

“Damn it! Did we fall in a trap, why are there so many Evil Devils around?”

Big Yellow felt like throwing up blood.

“These Evil Devils are nothing.”

Jiang Chen said. In his previous life, he had once entered the

Land of Devils, and there were all kinds of devils there, and all of them were in incredible numbers; it was a land that this tiny devil cave couldn't compare with.

Unleashing his energy, Jiang Chen drew out the golden battle axe and the Bloodthirsty Sword, one in each hand. He covered both combat weapons with his True Dragon Flames, and before the Evil Devils in front of them could come near, he forcefully attacked with both combat weapons.

Bang!

Energy ripples swept across the place, and flames locked up the entire space in front of them. The bright sword energy and the axe energy cut forwards in a seemingly invincible manner, killing 5-6 Evil Devils in an instant. After that, as if their devils souls were summoned by Jiang Chen, without any delay, they were already in Jiang Chen's storage ring.

Big Yellow too was extremely aggressive. He sent flesh and blood flying all over the place with his diamond hard head.

Aowuu...

The Evil Devils behind them kept increasing their speed as they chased, and more Evil Devils appeared in front of them. Right at this moment, every single inch of this place had been filled by Evil Devils, and their devilish energy covered the entire sky above them. This made it hard for Jiang Chen and Big Yellow to find out which way to go.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were completely surrounded, it looked like they could only fight their way out.

“Buddy, the situation doesn’t look good.”

Although Big Yellow said that, his eyes were actually glowing brightly, and he seemed excited. He was actually in a pretty good mood! The more dangerous a situation was, the more excited Big Yellow would become.

“Let’s go, we’ll slaughter our way into the inner area of this devil cave. Just kill anything that gets in our way!”

Jiang Chen made up a savage decision in his mind, and a cold light could be seen in his eyes. His entire body was filled with killing intent, enough to reach the skies. The sword and axe in his hands were continuously vibrating.

“Kaka, perfect, this master dog loves it!”

Big Yellow was laughing out loudly. He too was in high spirits, and the yuan energy in his body shot out like a vast ocean. Wings of light appeared on his back, and mystical symbols could be seen blinking on his forehead, causing him to brim with an aura of divinity.

Bang!

The entire area was shaking, the auras that filled the land had been messed up, and mountains upon mountains shattered. Vast amounts of devilish energies covered the sky above, wild flames kept burning all over the place, lighting everything up, and causing the place to look like a battlefield from hell.

Far from the scene, Tian Yishan and the group turned around and stared at the battle ripples within the devil cave, all of them had awful expressions.

“Is it right for us just leave them behind like this?”

Wang Heng asked. The terrifying battle ripples and never ending furious roars from the Evil Devils had clearly shown them how intense the fight was, as well as how many Evil Devils there were.

“This is really terrifying! If we go back now, I’m afraid we’ll be flooded by those Evil Devils, we’ll be torn into pieces at once!”

Yang Meng said with a shocked expression.

“With our strength, we won’t be able to provide much help, and we’ll even become burdens for junior disciple Jiang. I believe in junior disciple Jiang, he never does some he isn’t confident about. Besides, he’s here to find the Earth Devil, and he won’t back off until he gets hold of something.”

Guan Yiyun said. He knew Jiang Chen quite well, and this young man was someone who truly cherished friendship. Searching for

the Earth Devil was something that could end up with himself getting killed, but after Guan Yiyun learned about what happened to Han Yan, he didn't try stopping Jiang Chen from doing what he wanted to do anymore.

“Let's go, we have to hurry up and leave this place. Now, brother Jiang has attracted the attention of all these Evil Devils, we'll just let him down if we don't leave this place.”

Tian Yishan said. It wasn't that they didn't want to help Jiang Chen, but the situation was different. Under such circumstances, it would be certain death if they returned to help, and they would only become burdens for Jiang Chen. Thus, leaving Jiang Chen behind and letting him fight without the need to worry about anything else was their best option.

The fight was getting much more intense. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were pushing through the crowd of Evil Devils like two sharp blades. With Big Yellow's strength, as long as he didn't bump into any Late Divine Core monsters, he would be safe. If there really was a Late Divine Core Evil Devil approaching them, Jiang Chen would force it back with his sword, and they would be able to continue pushing forwards.

Aowuu...

The furious roars were getting louder and louder, all the Late Divine Core Evil Devils were furious, and they finally surrounded Jiang Chen and Big Yellow from all directions.

“Break open for me!”

Jiang Chen let out a wild shout. This shout of his was unleashed with the Sonic Hawk Cry. The sound waves immediately stunned a huge amount of Evil Devils in front of him, and at the same time, Jiang Chen pushed his way through with the battle axe and Bloodthirsty Sword, killing countless Evil Devils and sending flesh and blood all over the place.

When the attacks from the Late Divine Core Evil Devils arrive at where Jiang Chen stood, he and Big Yellow had already escaped from their trap.

The Evil Devils just wouldn't give up, they kept crazily chasing behind.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were both fleeing with extreme speed. A ferocious look could be seen in Jiang Chen's eyes. Once again, more Evil Devils appeared in front of them, and they were trapped from all directions once again.

“All of you shall die!”

Jiang Chen let out a shrill roar. His eyes had become red, and even Big Yellow had a cruel expression on his face. The duo had become incredibly savage after killing so much, they were like a suicide squad, and no hordes of enemies could make them feel afraid.

If all roads ahead were closed, he would slaughter until a road opened. In his past life, Jiang Chen had attacked the heavens with sword in hand to pave a path out from this realm, and he was in a similar situation now. If he wanted to find a way out from this devil cave, there was nothing that could stop him.

Rumble...

The entire devil cave had entered a state of turmoil. Jiang Chen's dark hair was wildly fluttering in the wild wind; he had transformed into an existence much more terrifying than those Evil Devils as he slaughtered like there was no tomorrow.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were quickly moving towards the center of the devil cave, causing flesh and blood to splash all over the place, and a river of blood to flow stream along their way. Now, there were more than 15 strong Late Divine Core Evil Devils who had joined the chase, but because Jiang Chen and Big Yellow showed no mercy when killing, combined with their fast and bizarre movements, and the fact that they didn't allow themselves to face the attacks of the Late Divine Core Evil Devils, they didn't fall into the traps laid out by the Evil Devils.

The violent slaughtering seemed endless. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were pushing through the crowd of Evil Devils, and they had been slaughtering nonstop for more than 15 minutes. Finally, they arrived in the center of the place.

In front of them, there was a black colored palace. A huge amount of devilish energies shot up into the sky outside the palace.



Aowu!

Suddenly, an incredibly loud roar sounded out from the palace and swept across the entire devil cave. It echoed nonstop while carrying a mighty devilish power.

Hearing the roar, all the other Evil Devils immediately shut up. An expression that carried both respect and fear emerged on their faces. When Jiang Chen and Big Yellow heard the roar, their expressions dramatically changed.

“Fuck! A Combat Soul Evil Devil!”

Big Yellow almost jumped up from where he stood.

“Run!”

Jiang Chen immediately grabbed Big Yellow’s tail, and without any hesitation, he turned into a trail of light and flew past the black palace in the blink of an eye. He never expected to meet a Combat Soul Evil Devil here, and it would be certain death if they fought a Combat Soul Evil Devil right now. No matter how many brilliant methods they had, the gap between their cultivation levels was simply too huge.

Bang!

Just as Jiang Chen and Big Yellow flew past the palace, a gigantic black hand dashed out from the Devil Palace towards them like a collapsing sky.

“Fuck!”

Big Yellow cursed.

“Dimensional Shift!”

Jiang Chen violently shouted out. A pair of blood red wings instantly emerged on his back, and he crazily unleashed the Dimensional Shift, dodging the black hand in a split second.

Bang!

The gigantic devil hand slapped right onto the ground, causing the entire devil cave to shake with a massive force and a gigantic black crater to appear.

“Qhia Ka!”

An ear-splitting shout spoken in devil language sounded out from the Devil Palace. After that, a being over 30 meters tall shot out from the Devil Palace, chasing after Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

Swoosh!

The Combat Soul Evil Devil's speed was incredibly fast. Like an arrow leaving its bow, it shot towards Jiang Chen and Big Yellow with incredible speed.

“Damn it, this Combat Soul Evil Devil's speed is too fast, there is no way we can escape from its chase!”

Big Yellow wanted to throw up some blood. What an unlucky day for both of them, they had actually entered a cave of devils that had such a strong enemy.

Jiang Chen had an awful expression as well. Even a Combat Soul Evil Devil had such horrifying strength. Did this mean that the Earth Devil who possessed the ultimate bloodline amongst all devils was going to be near invincible?

“Save your breath, let's run faster!”

Jiang Chen kept unleashing the Nine Phantom Wolves and Dimension Shift, and while disturbing the focus of the chasing Evil Devil, he kept flying crazily with the help of the blood wings. Even with so much effort, the distance between them was constantly shortening.

“There is a valley in front of us, let's fly in that direction! I can sense a natural defense mechanism within that valley!”

Big Yellow quickly said. He was born with sensitive senses toward all defense mechanisms and formations. Because of that, he

had just found a natural defense mechanism within the valley in front of them.

# Chapter 232 – The Old Man In The Poisonous Miasma Space

---

“Natural defense mechanism?”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up, as if he had just seen a light carrying hope. There were many invisible natural defense mechanisms and formations existing within the depths of Inferno Hell, and they came to this devil cave because of a natural formation. If they could find another natural formation, they would have a chance at escaping the Combat Soul Evil Devil.

“Let’s go!”

Jiang Chen didn’t dare show any neglect. The gigantic creature chasing them was extremely brutal, and it would be devastating if it caught up.

Swoosh!

Both Jiang Chen and Big Yellow immediately increased their speed to their maximum, running crazily toward the valley. Big Yellow’s wings of light made him incredibly fast, and Jiang Chen had a pair of wings inherited from the Blood Winged Hawk. That combined with the Dimensional Shift and Nine Phantom Wolves, he was too good at escaping.

Bang!

Behind them, the Combat Soul Evil Devil kept unleashing attacks, almost hitting and wounding Jiang Chen a few times. The massive energy ripples had shaken his qi and blood, causing him to feel really uncomfortable. If they still maintained the same speed, sooner or later, the Combat Soul Evil Devil would catch up.

But luckily, the valley wasn't far away from them. Soon, it appeared in both Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's eyes.

The aura of the natural defense mechanism in this valley was pretty obvious, even Jiang Chen could sense it as they approached. Its aura was much clearer compared to the invisible formation located between the two big trees.

Without hesitation, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow hastily sprinted into the valley, following the aura of the natural defense mechanism. Then, they came to a worn-out cave.

“The defense mechanism is at the entrance of the cave.”

Big Yellow said.

Roar!

Behind them, the Combat Soul Evil Devil kept chasing crazily while unleashing massive amounts of devilish energies along its way, causing whirlwinds that threw dust and stone in all directions to appear.

“Let’s enter!”

Jiang Chen gritted his teeth. There was no time for them to evaluate and speculate about what exists behind the defense mechanism in this cave. If they entered it, they would have a chance to survive, and if they didn’t, they would certainly be killed by the Combat Soul Evil Devil.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow dashed into the cave, causing ripple to appear in the air. In an instant, the duo had disappeared.

Seeing this, the Combat Soul Evil Devil behind them immediately stopped its gigantic body. It circled around the entrance of the cave twice, then it showed a smile of pride on its face before turning around and leaving. It wasn’t reckless, so it didn’t chase after them.

Swoosh!

When Jiang Chen and Big Yellow went past the defense mechanism, the scene in front of them changed dramatically once again. It was a plain gray world in front of them. The eerie and chilly energies within were so much stronger compared to the outside.

A stinking smell filled up the air within the place, extremely unpleasant and pungent. Besides this, black whirlwinds appeared all over the place, and the air blowing across the place was cutting them to the marrow. It also carried a strong corrosive characteristic.

“Damn it! What a disgusting environment!”

Big Yellow couldn't help but curse.

“Be careful, there is poisonous miasma all over the place. The stinking poisonous gas merged with the freezing miasma, causing this poisonous miasma to be formed. It's a deadly thing that can kill any cultivator.”

Jiang Chen reminded.

“These poisonous miasmas can't do anything to me.”

Big Yellow was walking in a poisonous miasma, and nothing really happened to him. Watching this, Jiang Chen immediately gave him a thumbs up. He recalled the scene where he first met Big Yellow, he had used the Green Hellish Python's deadly poison on Big Yellow, but no harm was done at all. This proved that Big Yellow could resist most poison. As for the poisonous miasma here, Big Yellow had the unique bloodline of the Divine Beast, Dragon Horse. He was actually the natural enemy of all poisons, this was one of his unique advantages.

As for Jiang Chen, he also had a high resistance towards poison. Besides that, Jiang Chen also unleashed a red barrier of flame, covering his body. It was a barrier formed by True Dragon Flame; the purest yang flame, which also repelled all poison.



Jiang Chen and Big Yellow kept throwing examining looks around. What they found was a place covered with gray fog and nothing else. There were no mountains, no plants, and no trees.

“Look, the defense mechanism is still here.”

Big Yellow turned around and found out the defense mechanism was still behind them, it hadn't disappeared like the natural formation they had found earlier. It was just that they couldn't look through it and see what was outside.

“Since the defense mechanism is still here, the devil cave must still be on the other side. Let's move forward and find a new way out.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Why didn't that Combat Soul Evil Devil chase after us?”

Big Yellow was puzzled.

“I think that Evil Devil knows something about this place, it might think that we will certainly be killed in this place. Thus, it didn't chase us in here.”

Jiang Chen said. The environment here was really bad, and it would be certain death if any ordinary man was here.

“This place should be an isolated space, and it doesn’t look big. We just need to find another exit, then we’ll be able to leave this place.”

Jiang Chen said. He had already found out that this place was actually a natural unique space, fully filled with poisonous miasma, and could be considered a natural land of death. It would be really bad luck if anyone ordinary accidentally came to this space.

Jiang Chen was covered by a fire barrier, while Big Yellow just walked next to him like it was nothing. The duo began slowly walking forward. Since the poisonous miasma here was too strong, there were no demons or devils anywhere nearby.

The entire space was extremely quiet, and nothing could be heard except for the tornadoes’ swishing sounds. It gave the space an eerie feeling, as if they had actually come to the real hell.

Crack!

Suddenly, a cracking sound could be heard from underneath Big Yellow’s foot. It sounded really loud when in this quiet environment.

“Damn it, what was that? This master do was spooked!”

Big Yellow jumped up from where he stood and moved aside. He and Jiang Chen both lowered their heads and looked at the

ground. Then, they saw an entire skeleton lying where Big Yellow had just stepped. His foot he caused a hole to appear on the skeleton's chest.

“This is a skeleton of a Divine Core warrior, he must have been dead for a long time. Look, all the bone has become porous, you've shattered it.”

Jiang Chen had eagle eyes. Although the skeleton was badly corroded by the poisonous miasma and had turned completely black, Jiang Chen still knew that this was a Divine Core warrior's skeleton.

“Even a Divine Core warrior died here. Looks like it'll be tough to find an exit here.”

Big Yellow said. A Divine Core warrior could still survive for quite some time in this poisonous miasma space, and the only explanation for his death would be that he depleted all his yuan energy in order to resist the poisonous miasma. He was killed by the poisonous miasma once he couldn't repel the deadly poison any longer.

“There is an exit to this place, but the terrifying devil cave is on the other side. In order to survive, there is no way he would have just stayed here, waiting for death to arrive. The reason why he died was because he couldn't open the defense mechanism and leave this place.”

Jiang Chen's expression suddenly changed badly.

“What you mean is, the defense mechanism only allows us to enter, but not leave this place?”

Big Yellow’s expression became a serious one as well.

“I do hope it isn’t like that, but I can’t really find another reason as to why this Divine Core warrior died in this place.”

Jiang Chen smiled. With a determined look in his eyes, he said, “Let’s go; just keep moving forward.”

The following journey had completely disappointed Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. They kept bumping into new skeleton along their way, and all these skeletons were once Divine Core warriors.

That meant that none of the warriors who accidentally came to this space had survived, all of them had eventually died. This was a land of death.

“Fuck! A land of death, no wonder that Evil Devil didn’t chase after us! It seems like it really knew about the dangers of this place.”

Big Yellow cursed, “Everyone who came to this place died in the end. Luckily, we’re not afraid of the poisonous miasma here. If not, we’d end up like these people.”

“Still, we have to find a way to leave this place. Being trapped in this place forever is no different than waiting for the inevitable death.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. He kept walking forward with big steps. Now, it was almost certain that there would be any powerful monsters in here. Therefore, they didn't have to worry about being attacked.

The duo had walked for nearly an hour, and they kept bumping into skeletons. The place seemed really desolate.

“Look, there is light blinking in front!”

Big Yellow suddenly said.

“That's a defense mechanism, it's the exit! Let's go check it out!”

Jiang Chen saw the light as well. Although the rainbow color light seemed faded, it couldn't escape their eyes. The duo immediately dashed forward, and soon, they arrived at the source of the light.

“There is a man.”

Big Yellow's eyes lit up. A man with disheveled hair was sitting with both legs crossed, not moving at all, which made him look like a stone statue. But, the weak aura emitting from his body showed that this old man was still alive.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow slowly approached the old man. As if he had heard something, the old man finally raised his head up, slowly. With cloudy eyes, he looked at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

An old man, a really old man who was long past his prime. The robe covering his body was really loose, he had wrinkled skin on his face, and an extremely thin body. He looked just like a skeleton who had nothing but skin. Pretty horrifying.

The old man's aura was really weak, as if he was going to die at any time. And yet, he was still alive.

“Sigh... someone is here again... someone is going to die soon... sigh.”

The old man let out two sighs. His voice was shrill, making it unpleasant to listen to. It looked like he had gotten used to the deaths happening here.

“A Combat Soul warrior.”

Jiang Chen threw an examining look at the old man. He immediately found out the cultivation level of the old man. But, because the vital signs of the old man were really weak, and there was no yuan energy that could be sensed in his body, as it had been completely depleted, Jiang Chen couldn't determine which Combat Soul stage this old man was.

But since all Combat Soul warriors had transformed the Divine Core in their bodies into a Combat Soul, Jiang Chen could easily tell that this old man was a Combat Soul warrior.

“Oh?”

The old man was surprised. Obviously, he didn't expect a young man to actually figure out his cultivation with just a single look.

“Not bad, young man. Too bad you've come to this land of death.”

The old man let out another sigh, then he turned around and stared at the glowing defense mechanism in front of him, “It's been ten years, all who have come have left ahead of me. Now, I'm soon going to leave as well. But, having someone to talk with at this point of time, the heavens are treating me better now.”

The old man carried a smile on his face. The despair and anger he had when he first arrived at this place was long gone; he had seen through life and death.

## Chapter 233 – Wu Jiu \*

---

The old man seemed calm, no signs of grievance could be found on his face. However, from his pair of cloudy eyes, one could still tell that he did feel some sorrow.

“If he’s able to leave this place alive, his cultivation will certainly see another breakthrough.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. The old man had reached a state where he could see through life and death, just this comprehension alone could help him gain incredibly much.

“What? Ten years? You’ve actually stayed here for ten years? A desolate land like this? If this master dog stayed here for ten years, I would certainly be bored to death!”

Big Yellow’s emotions were riled up.

“Being able to stay alive in this harsh environment, you need a cultivation base at the Late Combat Soul realm, at least. There aren’t many of these great warriors in the entire Eastern Continent.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

Hearing this, the old man’s cloudy eyes suddenly light up. He stared at Jiang Chen with a look of disbelief. He couldn’t help but start examining the young man in front of him.



Being able to discover he was a Combat Soul warrior with a single look, and also judging his real cultivation level just from knowing how long he had been here... this was not someone anyone could do, that's why this old man couldn't help being shocked.

“What an extraordinary young man... but, too bad...”

The old man kept shaking his head, his eyes filled with deep regret. He could easily tell that Jiang Chen was extraordinary and had innate potential, a genius like this was supposed to become a well-known guy in the world. But now, he had to die in this shit place. What a pity.

“Ten years ago, I travelled alone to Inferno Hell. With my cultivation level, I tried walking through every inch of it, checking and finding out the secrets of Inferno Hell. But, I accidentally came to this Poisonous Miasma Space, and it has been ten years since then.”

The old man said in a self-mocking manner. He didn't look at Jiang Chen, as if he was just talking to himself. But at the same time, it seemed he rather enjoyed the feeling of talking. It seemed like he hadn't talked to anyone for quite a long time.

“By estimations, my death will arrive tomorrow. But, I don't want to be like all the other people who died here, having my body corroded by the poison miasma, that's too tragic. Young man, once I die tomorrow, I hope you can burn my body into ashes.”

The old man looked at Jiang Chen, focusing on the flames

dancing around Jiang Chen's body.

This was the last request from an old man who had gone past his prime.

Jiang Chen inwardly sighed. The man didn't ask Jiang Chen to help him accomplish any weird unfulfilled desire at the last moment of his life, and neither did he have any special orders for Jiang Chen. He only requested that Jiang Chen burned his body and allowed him to have a proper death.

“Old man, your estimation is really accurate. If I didn't come, you'd be dead by tomorrow. But, since I'm here, death will have to wait.”

Jiang Chen walked toward the old man, then he waved his hand and unleashed a flame. The dancing flame looked like a living dragon, it transformed into a flame barrier and covered the old man within. In an instant, all the surrounding poisonous miasma was pushed away, as if it had just met its natural enemy.

Jiang Chen had decided to save this old man, not for any specific reason, but because this old man had been persistently staying alive in this place for ten years. Jiang Chen really respected his endurance. Besides, the old man showed an easy going attitude from his words, and that really gave Jiang Chen a good impression.

“What a violent flame, it actually carries a divine aura. Even the poisonous miasma doesn't dare try to corrode it.”

The surprised expression the old man's face became stronger. Shocked, he looked at Jiang Chen.

“This flame is the True Dragon Flame, the king of all flames. Obviously, the poisonous miasma won't be able to get close to it.”

Big Yellow walked up to the old man with his tail wagging and said.

Only now did the old man pay more attention to the big yellow dog. When he saw that Big Yellow could walk in the poisonous miasma without being affected by it, the shock in his mind was like the raging seas.

This man and dog were both truly amazing beings.

After the short shocking moment, the old man returned to his calm state. He looked at the fire barrier covering his body, and with a smile on his face he said, “Young man, put away this flame barrier, it will only consume your energy and focus; you can't hold it for a long time. The poisonous miasma has already invaded all my internal organs, I'm a dying person; it isn't necessary for you to waste any energy on me.”

“I said I wouldn't let you die here, and I will prove my words. Open up your mind and release your defense; let me help you get rid of all the poisonous miasma in your body.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen placed his palm on the old man's

chest.

The old man's body swayed a little. He stared at Jiang Chen's palm with no idea what Jiang Chen was going to do next. He knew very well about his current condition, and it was impossible to get rid of the poisonous miasma that had invaded his body.

“You are a dying person, what are you afraid of? Put away your defense completely, open up your mind.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

The old man replied with a smile, “You're right, I am a dying person, there is nothing I should be afraid of.”

The old man who had been tense for the last ten years had finally loosened up completely at this moment. He saw the confidence in Jiang Chen's eyes, and it made him feel calm, as well as hope.

Jiang Chen unleashed the Dragon Transformation skill, sending a Dragon Mark from his palm into the old man's body. Letting someone else's energy enter one's body was extremely dangerous, the old man had put away all his defense, and if Jiang Chen was up to something bad, the consequences would be devastating. Trust was the most important aspect in this situation.

But this old man had no fear, because with his current condition, there was nothing that could scare him. After all, he was soon going to die. Besides, if Jiang Chen really was up to something bad,

he could just kill the old man with a palm strike, there was no need to go through so much hassle.

The blood red Dragon Mark circulated an entire round within the old man's body. After that, it returned to Jiang Chen's body. It only took Jiang Chen three breath times before he had completed the healing process. Finally, he removed his palm from the old man's chest.

Puh!

The old man violently trembled, and in an instant, he threw up a mouthful of black blood and begun violently coughing.

The old man coughed for some time before he returned to normal. Then, he immediately raised his head and looked at Jiang Chen who was squatting in front of him. An extreme look of astonishment could be seen in his eyes.

The old man checked his body's condition, and he instantly found out that all the poisonous miasma that had been piling up in his body for the last ten years had disappeared. His internal organs that had completely lost their vital signs were actually pumping with an extreme active force now.

More importantly, since all the poisonous miasma was gone, the old man felt extremely relaxed and comfortable, as if someone had just lifted a gigantic mountain that been weighing down on him for the last 10 years.

“Comfortable, what a pleasant feeling! For the last ten years, I have never felt such a pleasant joy before!”

The old man closed his eyes. He really enjoyed this moment, it was a feeling he hadn't felt for so many years.

Ten years, day by day, year by year, he had been suffering from constant pain. For ordinary people, suffering such severe pain for ten years would definitely make that person crazy.

The old man did go crazy before, but in the end, he had seen through life and death. Now, Jiang Chen had restored his hope of living.

The old man was immersed in the pleasant moment, and Jiang Chen didn't disturb him. He had absorbed all the poison in the old man's body into his own body.

After some time, the old man finally opened up his eyes. He looked at Jiang Chen and said, “Little brother, you actually absorbed all the accumulated poison in my body into yours, that's really dangerous! But, I can tell that it actually hasn't affected you... can you tell me how you did it?”

“Old man, I actually absorbed the Green Hellish Python's demon soul, and it gave me the ability to resist all poisons. The poisonous gas here can't harm me at all. As for the miasma, my flame can purify it.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile.

“What an amazing young man! Little brother, you’ve saved my life today, but I’m unable to repay your great kindness.”

The old man bowed toward Jiang Chen.

“The reason why I saved you is because I have a good impression of you. I, Jiang Chen will save the people I like. Those I have a good impression of and want to save, even if he’s just a low dog, will be saved. Those I don’t like, even if he is a king sitting up high, won’t receive the slightest help from me.”

Jiang Chen said in an imposing manner.

The old man felt shocked. He was surprised to see a young Heavenly Core warrior act like this. He had never met anyone like this in his life before, but the old man did like Jiang Chen’s words.

“Saving those you like, good! I, Wu Jiu too lived my life doing whatever I liked, I do things my own way, and not even the heavens can restrict daddy! Brother Jiang Chen, if you don’t mind, just address me as brother Jiu.”

Although the old man had no yuan energy, he could still act in a subduing manner. It was very easy to tell that he was not an ordinary man.

“Haha, being able to meet brother Jiu in this shitty place, fate

must have brought us together.”

Jiang Chen laughed out heartily. If those who knew Wu Jiu heard Jiang Chen, a young man, addressing Wu Jiu as brother, they would be extremely shocked. In the entire Martial Saint Dynasty, there were only a handful of people who could address him as brother Jiu. It would be a great honor if they could even address him as Lord Jiu.

With Jiang Chen’s age, he should supposedly address him as senior, but Jiang Chen is actually the reincarnation of a Saint. No one in the entire Saint Origin realm has the qualifications to be his senior. Addressing the old man as brother Jiu was because both of them were like-minded.

“Little brother, although you’ve helped me get rid of all the poison in brother’s body, there is still no way we can leave this place.”

Wu Jiu shook his head as he stared at the defense mechanism which was glowing dimly in front of him.

“What brother Jiu means is that we can’t break this defense mechanism?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

“That’s right. This is a natural defense mechanism, a remarkable and intact defense mechanism, and there is no way to find a single



breaking point on it. If I was a Combat King warrior, I'd be able to break this defense mechanism with the dimensional forces. But too bad, my limited cultivation has caused me to be trapped in here for ten years."

Wu Jiu felt helpless.

"Brother Jiu, here are some pills and crystal cores, you just use them to restore your cultivation. I'll check out this defense mechanism."

Jiang Chen casually threw a storage ring at Wu Jiu. There were quite a lot of Mortal Restoration Pills, natural essences, Earth Restoration Pills, and crystal cores within the ring.

Wu Jiu's current condition was really bad. His body was like a river that had been completely dried up, and he needed some urgent nourishment.

With these items, Wu Jiu would slowly be able to restore his cultivation.

Wu Jiu's eyes lit up. He took the storage ring and said, "Alright. Thank you for this."

Wu Jiu knew about his current condition really well, and therefore, he didn't reject Jiang Chen's offer. Jiang Chen's kindness would forever be in his heart.

---

Notes:

[1\]](#) Wu Jiu (武九), the character Wu (武) can be found in Martial Palace (武府) and Martial Saint Dynasty (圣武王朝)

# Chapter 234 – Spiraling Defense Mechanism

---

Leaving Wu Jiu behind, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow started walking toward the defense mechanism. Wu Jiu's condition had stabilized now, and although the poisonous miasma had caused serious damage to his body, since Jiang Chen had completely absorbed the poison, with Wu Jiu's peak Combat Soul cultivation base, he wouldn't have any issues slowly healing.

Besides, Wu Jiu was protected by the True Dragon Flame barrier, he was safe from the poisonous miasma's corrosion. Together with all the pills, crystal cores and natural essences that Jiang Chen had given him, what Wu Jiu needed to do now was slowly heal himself.

But, since Wu Jiu was trapped here for nearly ten years, all the vital forces in his body had almost been depleted. Even though the poisonous miasma was completely gone, it was no easy task to fully heal. At least not in a short period of time.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow stood in front of the defense mechanism, both with frowns on their faces. These two guys were experts in formations, and they could easily tell how horrifying the defense mechanism in front of them was.

“All formations are formed with layers of defense mechanisms, and as long as there is a formation, there will be a breaking point somewhere. As long as we can find the breaking point, breaking this formation won't really be difficult. But, in front of us, there is no formation, but an extremely intact natural defense mechanism, it is so intact that there simply is no breaking point.”

Big Yellow said with a frown on his face.

“You’re right. If it’s a formation, we’d still have a chance at breaking it, but this is literally a defense mechanism as a whole. Big Yellow, do you know anything that might break this defense mechanism?”

Jiang Chen said as he looked at Big Yellow.

“In order to break a defense mechanism, there are only two ways. First is to use force, but even that old man couldn’t break it, let alone both of us. The second method is to create a new defense mechanism. I know one type of defense mechanism that will repulse any other defense mechanism once it is created. With this, we might be able to use the repulsive force between the defense mechanisms and force the natural defense mechanism to focus its strength to one point, so that the other part of it will become weaker. Once that happens, we’ll attack the weak spot, and break the entire defense mechanism.”

Big Yellow said.

“Ordinary defense mechanisms are useless to break this natural defense mechanism, I have tried all sorts of methods for the past ten years.

Wu Jiu said.

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. In his previous life, he did have

some unique accomplishments in the field of defense mechanisms and formations, and he knew at least a few hundreds of them. But, none of them were like what Big Yellow had mentioned.

“All the defense mechanisms you guys know are too low level. In my memory, there is a book called the Heavenly Book of Source Formations, and there are all sorts of ancient defense mechanisms recorded within. There is a defense mechanism called the Spiraling Defense Mechanism, it possesses a spinning force, and once created, it will repel the natural defense mechanism. If we can create this Spiraling Defense Mechanism, we’ll be able to break this thing in front of us.”

Big Yellow explained.

“Heavenly Book of Source Formations?!”

Both Jiang Chen and Wu Jiu exclaimed, especially Jiang Chen. He had traveled everywhere in the Saint Origin realm, but he had never heard about this book before. Also, he didn’t know anything about this Spiraling Defense Mechanism.

But soon after, Jiang Chen felt at ease. The Saint Origin realm was just a lower realm, even if he was the once most powerful and greatest Saint in the realm, there were still many things he didn’t know. The Saint realm wasn’t the peak of cultivation, as there was still the Immortal realm beyond it.

Big Yellow was a Dragon Horse descendant, and he had the complete inheritance of the Divine Beast. He could obtain all sorts

of ancient and powerful treasures from his memory. This Heavenly Book of Source Formations was one of his awakened memories.

When Big Yellow was still in the Qi Hai realm, he was already able to break the defense mechanism at the Demon Prison Tower and release a few demon lords. It looked like his knowledge was from the Heavenly Book of Source Formations. Besides, Big Yellow's amazing treasure hunting ability might also have come from this book.

“Big Yellow, if that's the case, hurry up and create this Spiraling Defense Mechanism.”

Jiang Chen rushed Big Yellow.

“With my current cultivation level, it will take at least two and a half months to create the Spiraling Defense Mechanism.”

Big Yellow said.

“What?! Two and a half months?!”

Jiang Chen exclaimed. Wu Jiu could still remain calm at this point in time. He had after all been trapped in this place for ten years, so he didn't really mind waiting another two and a half months. But, Jiang Chen couldn't wait for so long, he had only been in Inferno Hell for five days, and the doorway to the outside world would be opened in three months. Now, if Big Yellow took

two and a half months to create the Spiraling Defense Mechanism, including some unforeseen elements, even if they could leave this place in two and a half months, they would only have ten days before the doorway to the outside world opened. And until now, he still had no news about the Earth Devil.

“The Spiraling Defense Mechanism is an ancient defense mechanism, even the Heavenly Book of Source Formations has classified it as a rare mechanism, and it is really difficult to create one. Two and a half months is the best I can do... Besides, even if I manage to create it, we’ll still be unable to leave this place.”

Big Yellow said.

“Why is that?”

Jiang Chen and Wu Jiu asked at the same time. Wu Jiu’s eyes were blinking, it had been ten years, and he finally saw the possibility to leave this place. Of course he would feel excited.

“Although the Spiraling Defense Mechanism can steal away most of this natural defense mechanism’s strength and cause a weak spot to appear, we still don’t have the strength to break it. Let’s put aside old man Wu Jiu, although he is a Combat Soul warrior, with his current condition, two and a half months won’t allow his cultivation to restore by much. Also, once I create the Spiraling Defense Mechanism, all my energy and spirit will be depleted, so we can only depend on Little Chen to break this natural defense mechanism. But, we need the strong of a Late Divine Core warrior to break it, at least. Therefore, only if Little Chen can break through to the Divine Core realm in two and a half months to

break it, we will have the opportunity to leave this place.”

Big Yellow explained. Because of the Heavenly Book of Source Formations, he had a complete understand of the natural defense mechanism, but in order to leave this place, relying on the Spiraling Defense Mechanism Alone would be impossible.

“Alright. I have absorbed a huge amount of demon souls, devil souls and crystal cores, and my cultivation has reached the Heavenly Core realm. I was actually ready to break through to the Divine Core realm. Since we are trapped in this poisonous miasma space, I can actually utilize the harsh environment to stimulate my potential and break through to the Divine Core realm.”

Jiang Chen strengthened his spirit. He was a man who could keep calm even in the most dangerous situations, and although he was left with only a few days after the two and a half months had passed, it was a fate he couldn't change.

Besides, he had to break through to the Divine Core realm no matter what. If not, even after Big Yellow created the Spiraling Defense Mechanism, they wouldn't be able to leave this place.

Jiang Chen was going to break through to the Divine Core realm, but he wasn't going to use any souls, he wanted to break through on his own. Using his own potential and relying on the Dragon Transformation skill's help to break through to the Divine Core realm, there shouldn't be any problems with doing this in about two and a half months. Besides, this method of breaking through would help his cultivation base settle down, and his foundation would be much stronger and more solid. Once he broke through to



the Divine Core realm, he would be able to continue absorbing souls to form new Dragon Marks.

Without hesitation, Jiang Chen walked and saw down not far from Wu Jiu, then he speedily adjusted himself to his best form. Then, he entered secluded cultivation.

On the other side, Big Yellow had started adjusting his aura as well. Creating a Spiraling Defense Mechanism wasn't easy, and he couldn't allow any accidents to happen during the entire process.

Swoosh!

After a short moment, Big Yellow raised up his front hoof and drew a link in midair. A bright trail of light appeared and stood still in the air.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh...

Big Yellow kept drawing and leaving trails of light in the air, which eventually weaved into a gigantic net in front of him.

On the other side, Wu Jiu and Jiang Chen had both entered secluded cultivation. Jiang Chen was going to break through to the Divine Core realm, and Wu Jiu was using pills and crystal cores to slowly restore his cultivation.

One day, two days, three days...

In the blink of an eye, ten days had flashed by. In these ten days, Big Yellow never stopped unleashing defense mechanisms, working hard in creating the Spiraling Defense Mechanism. Jiang Chen remained quiet in his own special state, sitting silently like a meditating monk, as stable as a mountain. Besides the fire barrier covering his body, no energy ripples could be sensed from him. It was as if he had completely entered a state of tranquility

Wu Jiu was the one who had the most change. In just ten days, his cultivation had been restored to the Early Heavenly Core realm, an incredible speed! Besides this, his outlook had changed tremendously as well.

More muscles could be seen on his once skinny body underneath the robe, and the wrinkles on his face had slowly disappeared. He looked much younger now, and he didn't look like an old man who was long past his prime.

## Burning Sky Pavilion!

The Burning Sky Pavilion was similar to the Black Sect, which was located within a massive mountain range. There was also an energy vein underneath the mountain range. Not only did it provide the entire sect with pure natural yuan energy, it also brought them strong fortune.

Right now, within the deepest area in the Burning Sky Pavilion, a young man was sitting on a cushion inside a grand palace. He had an eagle vision and a handsome face, and he portrayed a

domineering image from all over his body, as if he was the supreme being of this world.

Opposite of this young man, there sat an adult man who was in his forties. The adult man wore a fiery red long robe, and his aura was no weaker than Daoist Black's aura. This man was the chief of the Burning Sky Pavilion, Zhao Chongyang, the Qi Province's true overlord.

“Nanbei, your cultivation base is getting stronger and stronger! After you broke through to the Divine Core realm, your growth became even faster! Looks like it won't take long before you're able to break through to the Mid Divine Core realm!”

Zhao Chongyang looked at the young man in front of him and spoke with prideful expression.

This young man was none other than Nanbei Chao.

“I will enter secluded cultivation today to break through to the Mid Divine Core realm. After I break through, the Burning Sky Pavilion will immediately attacked the other three big sects. Before I proceed to the Martial Palace, I want to become the ruler of the entire Qi Province, make everyone submit to me! I, Nanbei Chao will build my own emperor, and become the sole emperor of the entire continent. No matter where I go, I want all people to submit to me!”

Nanbei Chao said word by word with a stern expression. It was an innate overbearing characteristic, a will to conquer everything.

The driving force behind Nanbei Chao's cultivation was to become the most powerful emperor in this world, he wanted every single person to submit to him.

“Alright. With your abilities, once you break through to the Mid Divine Core realm, even I won't be your match. At that point of time, no one will dare resist when we attack the other three big sects.”

Zhao Chongyang said. He had prepared everything, and once Nanbei Chao broke through to the Mid Divine Core realm, he would attack all three big sects at once, changing the entire structure of the Qi Province.

# Chapter 235 – Great Chaos In Inferno Hell

---

Nanbei Chao's entire body was glowing in a faded golden light. His blond hair whipped around his head despite the lack of wind, an expression of a might overlord filled his face, and he even wore a dazzling golden robe.

“I, Nanbei Chao am the favored child of the heavens, a supreme existence. My Imperious Ruler skill has reached a profound level, and once I break through to the Mid Divine Core realm, no one in the Divine Core realm will be my match. I am a born king, it is my destiny to rule the entire world and have every single person bow in front of me.”

A domineering and prideful expression emerged on Nanbei Chao's face.

“Nanbei, you're just like the shiniest star in the skies, you're going to have limitless achievements. I'm sure you will leave your own legacy in the Saint Origin realm in the future, just like that Saint who swung his sword and broke the heavens a hundred years ago.”

Zhao Chongyang praised.

“Hmph! That's nothing, I'm going to be the ultimate emperor of this world; I'll become the true overlord! All mortals will bow in front of me! The Qi Province is just my first stepping stone.”

Nanbei Chao let out a cold snort. Even the greatest Saint in the

world meant nothing to him.

“Oh right, the young man from the Black Sect who had a scheduled fight with you has been in the limelight recently, I heard he’s actually able to kill Divine Core warriors with his mere Heavenly Core cultivation base, even the core disciple of the Heavenly Sword Sect, Yun Can was killed by him. You might want to pay more attention to him.”

Zhao Chongyang suddenly thought about Jiang Chen who had recently caused quite a turmoil in the Qi Province.

“He’s just an ant to me, I’ve never put him in my mind. When the one-year scheduled fight arrives, I’ll step on his head myself, and let him know what a real genius is. With this, I’ll let everyone know what the consequences of offending me area. I don’t need to worry about him right now, just let him live a little longer, just consider it me being kind to him.”

Nanbei Chao always acted in the same aloof manner. He had always despised all those from the younger generation.

“That’s right, that young man simply doesn’t know his own strength, he’s just a dimmed light, and he still tries to fight for the limelight of the brilliant moon, that’s just an act of seeking death. Nanbei, how long will it take for you to break through to the Mid Divine Core realm?”

Zhao Chongyang asked.

“Around two months.”

Nanbei replied.

.....

Within the Poisonous Miasma Space, everything was the same as it was ten day ago. Jiang Chen had no idea about Nanbei Chao's big plan. Nanbei Chao would need around two months to break through to the Mid Divine Core realm, and that would be around the same time as the doorway to the outside world would open in Inferno Hell.

An isolated space like this easily caused people to lose their track of time. Besides, the two men and the dog were completely immersed in their own special states, they simply didn't feel the time passing.

Twenty days passed by, they had been trapped in here for one month. Buzzing sounds could be heard in the entire space, countless defense mechanisms filled up the area in front of Big Yellow. He had unleashed a large amount of defense mechanisms, some of them would disappear together with time, and only the stronger ones would remain.

Wu Jiu's condition was getting better and better, his cultivation had been restored to the peak Mid Heavenly Core realm. At this rate, he would certainly be able to return to the Divine Core realm by the time they left this place, then he would be able to lend a helping hand to Jiang Chen.

Buzz...

Occasionally, buzzing sounds could be heard from Jiang Chen's body. His bones, his blood, and his flesh were also producing clicking sounds. He was completely immersed in a mindless state, and the Dragon Transformation skill was circulating crazily. All the Dragon Marks were swimming around within his body like real dragons, stimulating Jiang Chen's potential, and strengthening his foundation.

This was a safe and steady method of levelling up. In just one month, Jiang Chen had formed 20 new Dragon Marks, giving him a total of 770 Dragon Marks. He would only need another 31 Dragon Marks to break through to the Divine Core realm, and he still had about 45 days' time. Jiang Chen was confident he could do it before he ran out of time.

During the time when Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were trapped in the Poisonous Miasma Space, the entire Inferno Hell had entered a state of turmoil. There were two different chaotic situations, the first was those hundreds of warriors who had been robbed clean by Jiang Chen. In order to survive, they were forced to rob everything that came in their way, and hunt demons and devils all over Inferno Hell.

Their actions had caused battles and fights to erupt everywhere. Many demons and devils had become furious, and some of the demon beast colonies had even emerged. There were wars everywhere.



But, the chaos caused by these men wasn't too serious. The second chaotic situation came from the middle area of Inferno City. The incident where Jiang Chen had robbed the entire outer perimeter clean had been heard by everyone, and a lot of strong warriors from the middle area, especially those Late Divine Core warriors, were saying they wanted to defend the natural state of Inferno City. They kept searching for Jiang Chen, they wanted Jiang Chen to pay the price for attacking the natural state of Inferno City.

But in fact, even an idiot knew that they wanting to 'defend the natural state of Inferno City', was just bullshit. Inferno Hell was a place where no rules applied, a typical land where the strong preys on the weak. The real motive behind those warriors from the middle area was all the treasures Jiang Chen had obtained.

Everyone knew how much Jiang Chen was worth right now, he was a true fat cat. He had all the treasures that could be found in the outer perimeter of Inferno City. Countless Mortal Restoration Pills, huge amounts of Earth Restoration Pills, numerous demon souls, devil souls, large amount of crystal cores, and limitless natural essences. Not to mention the few hundred combat weapons that were all in his possession now. This was an enormous amount of wealth which made these people envious.

Or, put it this way, Jiang Chen had done something that many people dreamt about doing, but lacked the courage to do. Now, as long as they could find and kill Jiang Chen, they would be able to obtain an inestimable wealth.

Therefore, none of the Divine Core warriors would let go of this

opportunity, they were all rushing around in search for Jiang Chen, scared someone else might find him first. It was as if they were in the hunt for an easy prey. With this, Inferno Hell had become even more chaotic.

Within a remote valley somewhere within Inferno Hell, Tian Yishan and a few other men who were suffering from some minor injuries were hiding. During the past month, they had no courage to return to Inferno City. After leaving the devil cave, they had been roaming Inferno Hell, passing time with constant slaughter.

“What a mess, Inferno Hell has become a complete mess! Damn it! Those men from the middle area of Inferno City are attacking, so we can’t even return to Inferno City!”

Wang Heng said with extreme anger.

“Fuck, those bastards are too much! They say they want to defend the natural state of Inferno City, but in actuality, they’re all just look for chief Jiang’s wealth, they just don’t feel shame!”

“We can’t go back right now, once we return, those strong warriors from the middle area will definitely find us, and because of our relationship with chief Jiang, they certainly won’t let us go.”

“The thing is, we have no idea where chief Jiang is right now. It has been one month, and there are still no news from him at all. I’m really worried about him.”

.....

All of them had worried expressions on their faces. Their lives had been saved by Jiang Chen once, and back in the devil cave, Jiang Chen was the one who attracted the Evil Devils' attention, giving them a chance to escape from danger. If not, with their strength, they wouldn't be able to leave the place even if they grouped together.

“Do you think chief Jiang was perhaps killed in the devil cave? If not, he should have escaped from there by now.”

Yang Meng carefully said.

“Get lost!”

Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan both forcefully slapped Yang Meng's head.

“What bullshit! Brother Jiang is an amazing man, he has the powerful flame that can restrain all Evil Devils; there is no way he could die in the devil cave. Even if he bumped into some extra powerful Evil Devils that he couldn't defeat, he would have no problem running away.”

Tian Yishan said.

“Junior disciple Jiang came here for the Earth Devil, and I'm sure he's in the middle of searching for it. There's less than two

months until the doorway to the outside world opens, and I'm sure junior disciple Jiang will definitely appear before that. For the time being, let's try our best not to bump into those men from Inferno City.

Said Guan Yiyun said.

Everyone nodded their heads in agreement. Before the doorway opens, Jiang Chen would definitely appear. Aside from those who had committed serious crimes in the outside world, those who came to cultivation in Inferno Hell wouldn't let go of the chance to leave, because once they missed it, they would have to wait for one more year.

Soon, another month passed by. Within the Poisonous Miasma Space, Big Yellow was sweating from all over his body. From his eyes, one could easily tell that he was pretty tired. In front of him, there was a spiraling disc that kept emitting rainbow colored lights, and buzzing sounds continuously sounded out from it.

Above the disc, layers of spiraling patterns could be seen. This was the Spiraling Defense Mechanism that Big Yellow had spent two months making.

Wu Jiu opened up his eyes, his cultivation had been restored to the Early Divine Core realm. Judging from his speed, he would be able to restore his cultivation back to the Mid Divine Core realm by the time they left this place. The speed could be considered incredible. But, since he had suffered severe injuries before this, it was no easy task for him to return to his peak form, it just got tougher and tougher to restore his cultivation back to his peak.

Wu Jiu seemed to be in his fifties now, and his beard had become black. A resolute expression filled his face, and an overbearing feeling could be sensed from his brows, causing anyone who stared into his eyes to feel a chill running down their backs. At the same time, he was unintentionally unleashing an aura of a supreme person.

He turned around and looked at the Spiraling Defense Mechanism in front of Big Yellow, and a look of shock appeared in his eyes.

“What a profound defense mechanism, it truly is something passed down from the ancient era. It’s so complicated that even I can’t understand it.”

Wu Jiu praised, “Big Yellow, how much more time do you need to complete this Spiraling Defense Mechanism?”

“Should be within half a month. I just don’t know if that guy can break through to the Divine Core realm in time or not.”

Big Yellow said. Both he and Wu Jiu turned to look at Jiang Chen at the same time.

At this moment, blood red Dragon Marks covered Jiang Chen’s entire body. A blood red dragon formed from his qi and blood was swimming around above his head, and his aura was getting stronger and stronger.

“Brother Jiang is truly an amazing man, a truly remarkable peerless genius. He isn’t even a Divine Core warrior, and he can still unleash such powerful vigor, qi, and blood. I wouldn’t be able to find anyone who comes close to him in the entire Martial Saint Dynasty.”

Wu Jiu couldn’t help but praise.

For Jiang Chen, he was now in the most crucial moment. There were 795 Dragon Marks in his body now, and he was just one step away from breaking through to the Divine Core realm, and he would just need to form another 5 Dragon Marks in the next two weeks. At that point in time, he would be able to break through to the Divine Core realm.

But, although 5 Dragon Marks seemed easy, it was in fact very tough. The more Jiang Chen’s cultivation level progressed, the more difficult it would be to form new Dragon Marks. The energy contained in each of the newly formed Dragon Marks couldn’t be compared with the previous Dragon Marks.

Jiang Chen was stimulating his potential right now, trying to break through to the Divine Core realm in one go. In his current condition, two weeks were more than enough.

# Chapter 236 – Final Juncture

---

The chaotic situation in Inferno Hell had gone on for two months, and it showed no signs of stopping. Jiang Chen, who was the most important person had disappeared, it was as if he had vanished in the mortal realm. Even with all the Late Divine Core warriors, none could find the slightest trace of Jiang Chen.

There was 25 days until the doorway to the outside world opened up, this period of time was the most chaotic during each year. But this year was the most chaotic year in history. Many warriors had left Inferno City, hoping to find the last pot of gold before they left Inferno Hell.

The furious roars of demons and devils sounded out throughout the entire Inferno Hell, and every single place within Inferno Hell resembled real burning hell. Battles broke out everywhere, and the entire sky above Inferno Hell was filled with the pungent smell of blood.

The more chaotic the situation in Inferno Hell became, the more dangerous it was. Therefore, many people just stayed within Inferno City, waiting for the opening of the doorway. As for those Late Divine Core warriors who were searching for Jiang Chen, some of them had actually stopped searching. They had come to the conclusion that if Jiang Chen was still alive, he would definitely appear before the doorway's opening. At that point of time, he would have to face death.

Of course, many of them still didn't want to give up, and they kept searching everywhere for a trace of Jiang Chen. They were

worried that someone else might have found Jiang Chen before them. Everyone knew that Jiang Chen was basically a moving treasure chest right now, and the first one to find Jiang Chen would be the same as the first one to find a massive treasure and obtain an enormous amount of wealth.

Within a deeper area of a desolated mountain, a few men were standing together. They all looked to be in bad shapes, and each of them were severely injured. Two months of chaos and slaughter had made Guan Yiyun and the rest of the men feel extremely tired in both body and soul.

Right now, Guan Yiyun and a few other men all had expressions mixed with grief and anger. On the ground in front of them, two men were lying with blood all over their bodies. Obviously, both these men had died.

“Ahh! I can’t stand it anymore!”

Wang Heng let out a loud shout. One of his arms was bleeding nonstop, and it was a pretty bad injury. The men lying on the ground were their brothers who had gone through life and death together with them, and for the last two months, they had been running for their lives together and fought countless battles. Those warriors who had all their belongings robbed by Jiang Chen had become like mad dogs, and they had extreme hatred toward this group of men. Since they knew that many Late Divine Core warriors from the middle area of Inferno City were going to attack Jiang Chen, they came to the conclusion that Jiang Chen was doomed. Therefore, they had no more fear towards Guan Yiyun and the rest.



During the last two months, Guan Yiyun and the other men had constantly been tense. Although they kept hiding in different places, fights were still unavoidable. Demons, devils, crystal beasts, all sorts of intense battles. Also, when they bumped into those warriors from the outer perimeter, they would have to fight them with their lives on the line.

In the end, they had come to this quiet desolate mountain, but two of their men were dead due to severe injuries.

“In Inferno Hell, our lives don’t belong to us anymore. Both of them has gone ahead of us, I have no idea how long we can last.”

Tian Yishan said with an indifferent tone. Their current situation was really bad, enemies were everywhere, human warriors were trying to kill them, demons and devils were trying to eat them, and it was actually a miracle that they had been able to survive until now. But, none of them had any idea what they should do next.

“This damn Inferno Hell, if I am able to leave this place alive, I will never come to this shithole again!”

Yang Meng said in anger, his face covered with blood.

“Senior disciple Tian, let’s burn their bodies.”

Guan Yiyun said. When someone died in Inferno Hell, the most

proper way of handling their bodies was to have someone burn it to ashes. If not, they might end up becoming food for demons and devils.

All these men had solemn expressions as they bowed toward the two dead bodies. Although they didn't know each other before they came to Inferno Hell, after having spent such a long period of time and encountering many life and death situations together, they had actually developed strong bonds.

Guan Yiyun set the bodies on fire. All of them stood solemnly until both bodies were burned into ashes.

“Chief Tian, what should we do next?”

Wang Heng asked.

“All of us have suffered pretty bad injuries, and this location we've found is very desolate and remote. Also, there aren't many monsters here either. For the time being, we'll hide at this place and heal ourselves. After that, we'll start paying attention to what's happening outside. The doorway to the outside world will soon open, and I believe brother Jiang is going to appear.”

Tian Yishan said.

“What senior disciple Tian said is correct. With our current situation, hiding in this secret place is the best option. All of us are wounded, and we need to heal ourselves back to normal as quickly

as possible.”

Guan Yiyun said.

“Fuck, this is so suffocating!”

Yang Meng felt really angry. All this time, they had been facing enemies no matter where they went.

.....

Within the Poisonous Miasma Space!

The trio were all busy with their own matters, and none of them had any idea about what was going on outside. They didn't know anything about the chaotic situation that was playing out right now. Time passed, day by day, both men and the dog had experienced huge transformations.

In the blink of an eye, two weeks had passed.

Ha!

All of a sudden, a loud shout could be heard from Wu Jiu. At the same time, a massive force was unleashed from his body, blasting all air aside. After two and a half months of restoration, Wu Jiu's cultivation had finally returned to Early Divine Core realm. Compared to his previous dispirited state, he had transformed

tremendously.

Wu Jiu stood up from where he said. His rugged body was full of pure yang energy, a pair of shining eyes made his rough face look extremely lively, and he was portraying a vigorous look and the aura of a supreme being. No one could relate the current him to the old man who looked to be way past his prime, he just looked extraordinary now.

“Although I’ve only restored my cultivation to the Divine Core realm, my vitality has been fully restored. I just need to leave this place, then it won’t take me long to fully restore my cultivation! Thank you heavens for sparing my, Lord Jiu’s life!”

Wu Jiu was laughing out heartily. He had the reason to be so happy, a man who had prepared to face death, but was then suddenly led out from despair and welcomed into a new life, he just couldn’t help but be excited.

Buzz...

Right at this moment, an ear-splitting buzzing sound could be heard. Wu Jiu turned around and looked at Big Yellow, and to his surprise, the disc shaped defense mechanism had been completely formed. It was spinning at high speed as well. After working relentlessly for two and a half months, Big Yellow had finally created the Spiraling Defense Mechanism. The buzzing sound was coming at the Spiraling Defense Mechanism that was spinning at high speed.

Plop!

Right after the Spiraling Defense Mechanism was completed, Big Yellow couldn't endure any longer and fell onto the ground. Sweat could be seen all over his face, and his dog tongue rolled out of his mouth as he rapidly panted. Both his eyes looked really tired.

“Damn it, with this master dog's current strength, creating this Spiraling Defense Mechanism by force is just the same as seeking death... this master dog is damn tired...”

Big Yellow murmured.

“Such an advanced and complicated defense mechanism! Big Yellow, you're truly amazing, you have my respect!”

Wu Jiu cupped his fist toward Big Yellow. He was amazed and filled with admiration. It was rare for Wu Jiu to admire someone, let alone a dog.

“Old man, your speed of recovery is pretty fast. With your current Early Divine Core strength, you can now contribute some help in breaking this natural defense mechanism. I just wonder if this guy can break through to the Divine Core realm in time.”

Big Yellow gazed at Jiang Chen who was still in secluded cultivation, then he said, “The Spiraling Defense Mechanism can only last for three hours. If this guy doesn't break through to the Divine Core realm in three hours, it will disappear by itself, and all

our hard effort will go to waste.”

“Three hours, I hope brother Jiang can break through soon.”

Wu Jiu turned around and looked at the natural defense mechanism, then he said, “Big Yellow, with the help of the Spiraling Defense Mechanism, can we break the natural defense mechanism with my current strength?”

“No way. Although you are a Combat Soul warrior, you only have the strength of an Early Divine Core warrior right now. Besides, your foundation hasn’t been completely restored, and that limits the maximum amount of force you can unleash. In order to break this natural defense mechanism, we need at least the strength of a Late Divine Core warrior.”

Big Yellow shook his head.

Wu Jiu furrowed his brows. With his current condition, it was true that he couldn’t unleash the energy of a Late Divine Core warrior.

“But, even if brother Jiang breaks through to the Divine Core realm, he’ll only be at the early stage. I don’t think he will be able to unleash the energy of a Late Divine Core warrior.”

Wu Jiu looked at Jiang Chen who was sitting on the ground.

“Don’t underestimate this guy, once he breaks through to the

Early Divine Core realm, perhaps even without your help, he alone will be able to break this natural defense mechanism.”

Big Yellow said. Wu Jiu didn't know Jiang Chen well, but Big Yellow knew that Jiang Chen was an abnormal monster.

Wu Jiu took a deep breath, he was skeptical about Big Yellow's words. No doubt, Jiang Chen was a genius, but without witnessing it himself, he still wouldn't believe it.

Click click...

Clicking sounds kept sounding out from Jiang Chen's bone and flesh, and the aura of the blood qi dragon above his head became stronger and stronger. At the same time, his energy became stronger and stronger with each passing second.

One hour, one and a half hours, two hours, two and a half hours.

Time just slipped away, but Jiang Chen still hadn't opened his eyes. However, the crystal clear clicking sound coming from his body was sounding out more rapidly.

“Damn it, we only have half an hour left, if this guy doesn't break through soon, all our efforts will have gone to waste.”

Big Yellow became worried. The Spiraling Defense Mechanism could only last for three hours, and now, there was only half an hour left. If Jiang Chen still couldn't break through in this half

hour, they would lose the chance to get out from this place, and all their hard efforts would go to waste. Once they missed this opportunity, they would have to wait another year before they had the chance to leave this place.

“We only have half an hour left, I don’t think he can make it, we have to try ourselves. Big Yellow, activate the Spiraling Defense Mechanism now; let me try to break the natural defense mechanism.”

Wu Jiu said.

“No.”

Big Yellow immediately rejected, “You can’t break the natural defense mechanism. I believe in Little Chen, he will definitely have a breakthrough in time.”

Big Yellow knew more about the natural defense mechanism and the Spiraling Defense Mechanism than Wu Jiu did. With Wu Jiu’s current strength, he wouldn’t be able to break the natural defense mechanism, even with the help of the Spiraling Defense Mechanism. Big Yellow had used up all his yuan energy and strength, so he couldn’t provide any help in break the natural defense mechanism.

Big Yellow knew that Jiang Chen would definitely break through to the Divine Core realm within this last half hour, because Jiang Chen wanted to leave this place more than anyone else. There were only ten days before the opening of the doorway, and they still had



no news about the Earth Devil. Jiang Chen still had many things to do, and although it looked like he was in secluded cultivation, he knew everything better than anyone else.

Bang!

Right as Big Yellow's words left his mouth, an enormous aura was unleashed from Jiang Chen's body like a raging tsunami.

## Chapter 237 – Delivered From Oppression

---

The aura was getting stronger and stronger, Jiang Chen was completely covered in a golden light, which made him shine like a brilliant sun, forcing people to take their eyes away from him. In the end, even Wu Jiu was shocked by him.

“Kaka, I told you this guy was going to make it!”

Big Yellow was laughing out loudly. The worry on his face had finally disappeared.

“He is only breaking through to the Divine Core realm, but he is unleashing such a powerful aura! I wouldn’t believe it if I hadn’t witnessed it myself! Brother Jiang is indeed an incredible peerless genius, his future achievements are going to be limitless!”

Wu Jiu had seen all kinds of geniuses, each and every single one of them were amazing, but when those amazing geniuses were compared to the young man in front of him, the gap between them was not small. Wu Jiu himself was also a peerless genius. If he wasn’t, then he wouldn’t have gotten so far. When he broke through to the Divine Core realm, his aura wasn’t even ten percent as strong as the aura Jiang Chen was unleashing right now.

“No wonder Big Yellow has such high confidence in brother Jiang, his current aura is more than enough to compare with those Late Divine Core warriors.”

Wu Jiu pressed down the excitement in his heart as he stared at

Jiang Chen.

At this moment, the Heavenly Core in Jiang Chen's Qi Sea had completely transformed. Numerous mystical patterns appeared on it, and it was covered by countless blood red Dragon Marks. It looked like a myriad of stars surrounding the moon.

Eight hundred Dragon Marks had been completely formed, Jiang Chen had broken through to the Divine Core realm, reaching a higher realm and altitude. Besides this, Jiang Chen's potential had once again been stimulated, and his foundation was much more solid and richer now. Therefore, Jiang Chen didn't exit his secluded cultivation, but instead began absorbing a huge amount of demon souls.

“What is he doing now?”

Wu Jiu was shocked.

“He is going for more powerful combat strength.”

Big Yellow said with a smile. With his experience, he could easily understand Jiang Chen's current condition. After breaking through to the Divine Core realm, 800 Dragon Marks could no longer satisfy Jiang Chen. At this moment, Jiang Chen was absorbing huge amounts of energies and forming new Dragon Marks, increasing his combat strength.

Jiang Chen had 800 Dragon Marks right now, and an Early

Divine Core. If he wanted to break through to the Mid Divine Core realm, he would need to double his amount of Dragon Marks, a total of 1600 Dragon Marks. Only then would he be able to break through to the Mid Divine Core realm.

Jiang Chen had a huge amount of demon souls and devil souls, as well as a lot of crystal cores. However, although the quantity was huge, Jiang Chen's demand was massive at the same time. Cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill required consumed enormous amounts of energies, and as Jiang Chen's cultivation advanced, the required energy to form new Dragon Marks would be more and more. Now, forming a new Dragon Mark would require ten times the energy compared to before.

“Let's not worry about that now. After all, my foundation is extremely strong and solid now, I can temporarily absorb a large amount of souls to form new dragon marks.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. After that, without hesitation, he began transforming all the demon souls, devil souls and crystal cores in the purest energy with the help of the Dragon Transformation skill and absorbing it.

In just 20 minutes, Jiang Chen had utilized the massive amount of energies and formed another 200 Dragon Marks, which gave him a total of 1000 Dragon Marks. But, these newly formed Dragon Marks had consumed a lot of energies, and he had used up nearly half of his demon and devil souls. The rest of them could at most give him another 200 Dragon Marks, and he would need a lot more in order to break through to the Mid Divine Core realm.

“The level of souls I have are too low, most of them are Early Divine Core souls and Heavenly Core souls, some of them are Mid Divine Core souls, and there are only 2 Late Divine Core souls. With my current condition, those Heavenly Core souls are worthless to me. Looks like I’ll need to find more mid and Late Divine Core souls. Although this method allows me to quickly increase my strength, I’ll have to be careful. Two hundred new Dragon Marks are actually quite a lot, and I’ll need to take some time to settle them down.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. This method of levelling up was extremely brutal, and even Jiang Chen himself dared not use it without restrictions. After breaking through, he definitely needed to take some time to digest the energy properly and stabilize his cultivation.

“Damn it, buddy, we only have ten minutes left, hurry up and finish your cultivation!”

Big Yellow kept pushing.

Swoosh!

Right after Big Yellow’s words left his mouth, Jiang Chen immediately opened up his eyes. His gaze was fierce, pretty terrifying.

“Perfect, Big Yellow, you’ve done great. Not only have I broken through to the Early Divine Core realm, my cultivation base has complete stabilized, not like those rookies after having just broken

through to the Divine Core realm. Let's delay no longer, activate the Spiraling Defense Mechanism and make it repel with the natural defense mechanism, I'll attack its weak spot."

Jiang Chen instantly stood up from where he stood, the combat strength of 1,000 Dragon Marks had separated him from those rookies who had just broken through to the Early Divine Core realm. With his current combat strength, not only Mid Divine Core warriors, he could even kill Late Divine Core warriors with a single strike. A peak Divine Core warrior like Daoist Black was no match for Jiang Chen at all.

"Alright."

Big Yellow's ears stood up. Using his head, he pushed the Spiraling Defense Mechanism and walked step by step toward the natural defense mechanism.

"Brother Jiang, you had such an incredible aura even though you were just breaking through to the Divine Core realm, astonishing! If I hadn't witnessed it myself, I wouldn't have believed it!"

Wu Jiu patted Jiang Chen's shoulder, he couldn't help but praise Jiang Chen.

"Brother Jiu, you seem much younger."

Jiang Chen said with a smile. Wu Jiu had become completely different compared to his previous dying state, he was brimming

with energy now, and was full of vigor.

“Cut the chitchat, the Spiraling Defense Mechanism can only attract the natural defense mechanism’s force temporarily. Buddy, you’ll have to carefully sense the weak spot of this natural defense mechanism, we only have one chance.”

Big Yellow seriously reminded. Both Jiang Chen and Wu Jiu’s expressions became tense, especially Wu Jiu’s. He was the most nervous person here. Being trapped here for ten years; he wanted to leave this shithole more than anyone else.

Buzz buzz...

Big Yellow pushed his head against the disc shaped Spiraling Defense Mechanism that was emitting rainbow colored lights. Slowly, he pushed it toward the center of the natural defense mechanism.

Bang!

Right as the Spiraling Defense Mechanism touched the natural defense mechanism, a massive repelling force was unleashed, and Big Yellow was pushed back by this massive force.”

“Damn it! This master dog is going to fucking...”

When Big Yellow was pushed back, he felt like he was the most miserable dog in the world. Why did he always have to meet with

all the unlucky matters?

In front of the natural defense mechanism, Jiang Chen was unleashing the Great Soul Derivation skill, raising his senses to the most sensitive level. The Spiraling Defense Mechanism had caused the natural defense mechanism to focus all its force on one point, and that was the massive force that had pushed Big Yellow away.

At this moment, Jiang Chen had sensed a weak spot below the natural defense mechanism with his senses. Without any hesitation, he punched the weak spot with all his strength. At the same time, Wu Jiu also punched the same time, helping Jiang Chen.

Bang!

A violent impact! A tsunami like repelling force pushed Jiang Chen and Wu Jiu back a couple of steps.

Crack!

Jiang Chen had smashed the weak spot on the natural defense mechanism, causing a huge crack on it to appear. Also, the Spiraling Defense Mechanism had disappeared.

“Big Yellow, hurry up, this natural defense mechanism can heal itself!”

Jiang Chen pulled Big Yellow’s ear, and with extremely fast



speed, he dashed into the crack on the natural defense mechanism. Wu Jiu followed closely behind.

Right after they had left the space, the crack on the defense mechanism had started slowly recovering.

“Fuck, we were almost trapped in there forever! Big Yellow, you’ve done a good job this time, beautifully done!”

Jiang Chen pressed on Big Yellow’s head with both hands. Using a different kind of method to praise Big Yellow for his excellent work.

“Get lost, daddy is feeling real tired in both body and soul, don’t touch me.”

Big Yellow struggled hard and pushed away Jiang Chen’s big hand as he gazed at Jiang Chen with a pair of angry eyes.

“HAHAHA, DADDY IS OUT! FINALLY!! DADDY HAS LEFT THAT SHITHOLE!!!”

Wu Jiu extended both his arms sideways and let out long cries toward the skies. He kept laughing out loud without stop, with tears in both eyes. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow stared at the hectic Wu Jiu, both of them had relieved expressions on their faces. They could really relate to Wu Jiu’s emotions right now. They had been trapped in the Poisonous Miasma Space for two and a half months, and they knew very well how terrifying the place was. But Wu Jiu,

he had been trapped there for ten years, and finally, he was able to see the outside world again. There was no way he wouldn't be happy.

After some time, Wu Jiu finally finished his laughing. With big steps, he walked in front of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. Without any hesitation, he bowed deeply toward both of them.

“Brother Jiang, Big Yellow, Wu Jiu wants to thank you for saving my life! This great kindness will exist in Wu Jiu's heart for all of eternity!”

Wu Jiu said with utmost sincerity. In the entire Martial Saint Dynasty, there were only a handful of people whom deserved a bow from Wu Jiu.

“Brother Jiu, we're brothers, cut those formalities, I don't like them.”

Jiang Chen said. Both men looked at each other and laughed.

“Alright, hurry up and check, where are we right now?”

Big Yellow reminded.

Only now did both men react. They found that they were in a wilderness, not the devil cave where they originally came from. Demon roars could be heard from far.

“This should be some place within Inferno Hell... There are only ten days until the doorway to the outside world opens up; I think we should go back to Inferno City.”

Wu Jiu said.

“Only ten days?”

Jiang Chen felt anxious. Ten days was too short, and up until now, he still had no idea where the Earth Devil was.

“Buddy, give me something to eat, I need to replenish my energy.”

Big Yellow said.

Without saying anything, Jiang Chen simply threw a storage ring fully filled with natural essences toward Big Yellow. Big Yellow had done an excellent job this time, and he had used up a huge amount of his energies. He deserved the reward.

Looking at the storage ring, Big Yellow instantly became happy. He took out all the natural essences and begun his big feast. All of this were great tonics for him, and it was exactly what he needed right now.

“Brother Jiu, do you know where can I find the Earth Devil?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Earth Devil? Why is brother Jiang looking for it?”

Wu Jiu looked at Jiang Chen and asked.

“Let me be frank, the reason I came to Inferno Hell was to look for the Earth Devil. One of my brothers is in a life endangering situation, and only the Earth Devil’s devil soul can save his life. I’m here to find the Earth Devil and kill it. I hadn’t expected that three months would flash by without me having any idea where to find it.”

Jiang Chen explained.

“I know where the Earth Devil is.”

Wu Jiu said

# Chapter 238 – The Qi Province’s Upheaval Begins

---

Hearing what Wu Jiu said, Jiang Chen’s eyes immediately lit up.

“Brother Jiu, where can I find that Earth Devil?”

Jiang Chen hurriedly asked.

“According to what I know, there is an Earth Devil Mountain in the center of Inferno Hell, and that’s where the Earth Devil resides. I heard about the Earth Devil many years ago, and I was planning on fighting it and turning it into my mount, but I never thought that before I could reach the Earth Devil Mountain, I would be trapped in the Poisonous Miasma Space for ten years.”

Wu Jiu said with a bitter and self-mocking expression.

“Earth Devil Mountain?”

Jiang Chen had mixed emotions in his heart. It was actually located in the deepest area of Inferno Hell, there was no doubts it would be a terrifying place.

“But, that Earth Devil was an Early Combat Soul monster ten years ago. Now, ten years have passed, and I’m sure it has definitely become stronger, perhaps it hasn’t reached the Mid Combat Soul realm yet, but it must have at least reached the peak

Early Combat Soul realm. If I was at my peak, I would have no problem defeating this Earth Devil, but now, there are only ten days until the doorway to the outside world opens up, and it seems unrealistic for brother Jiang to kill this Earth Devil.”

Wu Jiu said. With their current strength, the gap between them and the Earth Devil was not small, and it was tougher to kill it and take its devil soul than reaching the top of the heavens.

“I have to get the Earth Devil’s devil soul no matter what, this is the most important reason for why I came to Inferno Hell. Does brother Jiu know how we can get to the Earth Devil Mountain?”

Jiang Chen looked at Wu Jiu and asked.

“The Earth Devil is a supreme specie amongst all devil species, it will certainly stay in the place where the most devilish energy can be found. If my guess is correct, it should be connected to the devil cave. If we travel across the devil cave, we will be able to reach the Earth Devil Mountain. However, once we enter the devil cave, those Evil Devils will definitely storm at us. As long as we can kill all the Combat Soul Evil Devils in the devil cave, I believe that the Earth Devil will come to us.”

Wu Jiu said.

“Kill all Combat Soul Evil Devils...”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. This was something impossible

for him. Those Combat Soul existences had formed a Combat Soul in their bodies, which was equal to the Nascent Soul of a cultivator. As long as the Combat Soul wasn't destroyed; one would have the opportunity to be reincarnated.

There was a huge gap between the Divine Core realm and the Combat Soul realm, the gap between the strengths was simply incomparable. Therefore, although Jiang Chen had broken through to the Divine Core realm, had 1,000 Dragon Marks, and could fight any Late Divine Core warrior, he was still not a match for a Combat Soul warrior. With his current cultivation, he would still have to run away when facing a Combat Soul Evil Devil in the devil cave.

“We only have a little time left, and it's impossible for you to reach a level where you can kill that Earth Devil. As for me, I'll need at least a few months in order to restore my cultivation to the Combat Soul realm. Judging from the current situation, if brother Jiang insists in killing that Earth Devil, I'm afraid there is only one way left, and it's an uncertain method.”

Wu Jiu said.

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up, then he asked, “What method is that?”

“Does brother Jiang know why all those demons and devils doesn't dare attack Inferno City?”

Wu Jiu asked.



“I guess there’s something in Inferno City that those demons and devils are afraid of. If not, the entire city would have long ago been conquered by them.”

Jiang Chen said. Big Yellow had sensed that there was a treasure hidden somewhere within Inferno City when they arrived at the place. A treasure that could be sensed by Big Yellow must be something extraordinary, and the reason why those monsters didn’t dare attack Inferno City must have something to do with that treasure.

“You’re right, there is indeed a treasure that exists within Inferno City, and it is because of that treasure’s protection that Inferno City has become the safest place for humans to rest in Inferno Hell. No demons or devils can even come to disturb.”

Wu Jiu said. The first thing he did when he arrived in Inferno Hell many years ago was to find out about the secret of Inferno City.

“Does brother Jiu know what kind of treasure it is?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“I have no idea, I have never seen it before. I did try to search for it, but it was to no avail. But, I’m sure the treasure exists, and my guess is that it requires a great fate to be able to locate and obtain this treasure. My fate isn’t great enough, and that’s why I couldn’t find it. But, if brother Jiang is fortunate enough, you can try to enter the center of Inferno City and give it a try, you might be able

to find the treasure. With its restraining ability towards all demons and devils, we'll have a chance to kill the Combat Soul Evil Devils, and even the Earth Devil."

Wu Jiu said.

When mentioning treasure, Big Yellow was currently feasting next to them became high spirited.

"As long as we can enter the center of Inferno City, this master dog will be able to find that treasure."

Big Yellow said.

"He's right. In this world, there are no treasures Big Yellow can't find. If this is the case, let's leave this place and proceed to Inferno City."

Jiang Chen said in a hurry. Their time was tight right now, and he didn't want to delay any longer.

"Alright."

Wu Jiu nodded his head, then the trio started flying towards Inferno City.

.....

Qi Province, Burning Sky Pavilion. The entire sky was clear, and a rich energy filled the atmosphere.

Bang!

All of a sudden, a groundbreaking explosion sound could be heard from the palace located in the deepest area of the Burning Sky Pavilion. A golden light beam shot up into the sky with amazing force, and a strong king's aura could be sensed from the light beam, causing people to feel it came from a supreme person. They couldn't help but admire and worship it in their minds.

“What an amazing aura, it belongs to senior disciple Nanbei, he has broken through again.”

“This is terrifying, senior disciple Nanbei is indeed a peerless genius that can't be found even in a thousand years! His progress is simply astonishing! Besides, his Mid Divine Core aura is much stronger than the chief's aura.”

“I heard that senior disciple Nanbei was born from an Immortal Rock, I wonder if that's true.”

“Someone said that in the Divine Continent far away from here, there was an extraordinary Saint, and with his sword, he fought the heavens and cut open the gate to the Realm of Immortal a hundred years ago. At that point of time, an immortal light fell down from the Realm of Immortals and turned into an Immortal Rock, which then flew to an unknown location. Perhaps senior disciple Nanbei was born from that Immortal Rock? If that's true,

that means senior disciple Nanbei has an immortal body, and he isn't a mortal. This is terrifying!"

Many people were discussing with soft voices. In the Eastern Continent, the story about the greatest Saint cutting open the gate leading to the Realm of Immortals a hundred years ago was an urban legend, as no one could verify the authenticity of the legend. Rumors say that when the greatest Saint cut open the gate leading to the Realm of Immortals, and immortal light fell out from the Realm of Immortals and turned into an Immortal Rock, and after dozens of years of breeding, it gave birth to an immortal being. But, this was only an urban legend, and no one really knew the origin of Nanbei Chao.

"I heard that after senior disciple Nanbei finishes his secluded cultivation, he is going to attack the other three big sects and rule the entire Qi Province."

"Hahaha, the time for the Burning Sky Pavilion to rule the entire Qi Province is finally here, the structure of the Qi Province is going to completely change! That guy from the Black Sect, Jiang Chen, has challenged senior disciple's dignity, he has no idea what the consequences will be!"

"That's right, who gave that brat the audacity to challenge senior disciple Nanbei to a fight in one year? Sooner or later, senior disciple Nanbei will crush him under his foot, just like an ant!"

.....

In the Burning Sky Pavilion, Nanbei Chao had more supporters, and received more respect than the chief. Not only the ordinary disciples; even all the Sect Elders who sat in high positions showed Nanbei Chao respect.

Within the palace, Nanbei Chao who was wearing a golden robe was filled with powerful energy. After breaking through to the Mid Divine Core realm, his energy had reached an incredible level, and even Zhao Chongyang who was standing next to him was shocked.

“What powerful energy! Nanbei, you have successfully broken through!”

Zhao Chongyang said.

“That’s right, chief, I have broken through to the Mid Divine Core realm. Now is the time to strike the other three big sects. Let’s begin with the Heavenly Sword Sect.”

Nanbei Chao said.

“Fine, I’ll gather all the men and initiate an attack at the Heavenly Sword Sect.”

Zhao Chongyang unleashed his aura, he showed the utmost support in the decision of attacking the other three big sects. He had put in a lot of effort to do so, because he knew Nanbei Chao really well, Nanbei Chao was going after the entire world, and the little Qi Province was just his stepping stone. Once the Burning Sky

Pavilion rules the entire Qi Province, Nanbei Chao would leave the place and proceed to the Martial Palace, and at that point of time, the entire Qi Province would belong to Zhao Chongyang.

“You don’t have to, just send an order to the Heavenly Sword Sect, ask all the Divine Core realm warriors to come submit to me within three days, and the Heavenly Sword Sect will have to merge with the Burning Sky Pavilion, becoming our subordinates. If they don’t come here, once three days have passed, I’ll personally attack and destroy the entire Heavenly Sword Sect.”

Nanbei Chao said, word by word.

“With Duan Jianhong’s attitude, I’m sure he won’t easily surrender, and that means they will have three days to prepare.”

Zhao Chongyang said as he furrowed his brows.

“Just give them the time to prepare then. If that Duan Jianhong doesn’t want to surrender, I’ll kill him myself. I want to destroy all three big sects openly.”

Nanbei Chao was extremely prideful, his arrogance could even reach the heavens.

.....

Roar... roar... roar...

In Inferno Hell, wild roars and energy ripples from combat could be found everywhere.

“Why has Inferno Hell become so chaotic?”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

“Every time the doorway to the outside world is about to open, Inferno Hell will enter a chaotic state. But, the degree of chaos this time seems to be more serious in history, as if something big has happened.”

Wu Jiu said.

Aowuu!

All of a sudden, a gigantic Nine Life Crystal Beast appeared in front of the trio. This crystal beast was unleash pure and powerful energy from its body as it roared at the trio.

“A Late Divine Core crystal beast.”

Wu Jiu had a slight change in expression. If he was still at his peak, he could just kill this Nine Life Crystal Beast with a single breath, but now, he couldn't even defeat it.

“Perfect, time to test my combat strength.”

Jiang Chen took a step forwards, then he suddenly unleashed the True Dragon Palm, which struck toward the crystal beast.

Roar!

The crystal beast let out a furious roar. With its gigantic hand shining like pure crystal, it forcefully slapped at the True Dragon Palm.

Bang!

The earth quaked, and the mountains shook. The gigantic Nine Life Crystal Beast was sent flying away by the massive True Dragon Palm's force, and it broke quite a number of huge trees along its way before it was finally thrown onto the ground.

“Amazing!”

Wu Jiu praised. The way he looked at Jiang Chen had changed. With just his Early Divine Core cultivation base, Jiang Chen had actually just forced away a Late Divine Core crystal beast with just a single strike. Combat strength like this was simply astonishing.

“Aowuu!”

Being pushed away with just a single strike, the Nine Life Crystal Beast had become completely enraged. Once again, it crazily



dashed toward Jiang Chen.

“A Late Divine Core crystal beast’s crystal core, I can’t let it go to waste.”

Jiang Chen’s lip curved upwards, a grin filled his face.

# Chapter 239 – The Hunter Becomes The Hunted

---

Looking at the crystal beast dashing toward him, Jiang Chen's didn't hesitate to unleash another True Dragon Palm. The blood red dragon claw crashed into the crystal beast, once again sending it away.

“Buddy, don't waste time, this monster has nine lives. If you keep attacking it like this, when are you going to kill it?”

Big Yellow said.

Fine.”

Jiang Chen moved his body, transforming into an elusive figure that appeared right in front of the crystal beast within the next second. Before it could climb back up from the ground, Jiang Chen had immediately chopped it in half with his battle axe. Of course, the True Dragon Palm was very powerful, but since this Nine Life Crystal Beast had an extra stronger body, especially this one since it was a Late Divine Core monster, it would take a few strikes before Jiang Chen could kill it. But what Big Yellow said was correct, the Nine Life Crystal Beast was different from those ordinary demons and devils, it had nine lives, and the method he was using now was too slow.

The Nine Life Crystal Beast who was chopped in half was restored in an instant. Once again, it leapt towards Jiang Chen and tried to attack.

Jiang Chen knew this was going to happen, as he had dealt with a lot of crystal beasts before, therefore he showed no signs of panicking.

Haha...

Jiang Chen was acting in an incomparably imposing manner, and while laughing out loud, he kept attacking with both True Dragon Palm and the battle axe in his hand. In just two minutes, he had killed the Late Divine Core crystal beast. A crystal core that looked like a pure crystal jumped into Jiang Chen's hand.

“Good stuff, it would be nice if we could bump into more of these.”

Jiang Chen put away the crystal core while laughing.

“Brother Jiang, you've really widened my horizons! Ordinary Divine Core warriors, even the Late Divine Core ones, the scariest thing for them while travelling in Inferno Hell is bumping into Late Divine Core crystal beasts. But you, not only are not scared of them, but you're actually hoping to bump into more! Your combat strength is unbelievable!”

Wu Jiu caressed his beard while speaking. Although he had witnessed how extraordinary Jiang Chen was, the method Jiang Chen used to kill the crystal beast still made him feel shocked. Jiang Chen was only an Early Divine Core warrior, and if he broke through to the mid, or even the Late Divine Core realm, it would

be even more terrifying.

“Brother Jiu, let’s go, we need to reach Inferno City and find that hidden treasure as quickly as possible, so we can fight that Earth Devil.”

Jiang Chen said.

The trio flew at full speed within a mountain range, trying to reach Inferno City as quickly as possible.

Within the mountain range in front of them, a man was slowly walking around. The old man looked to be in his fifties, he had a fat body and a chubby face, and judging from the aura leaking from his body, he was obviously a Late Divine Core warrior.

The old fat man kept looking around, and he was unable to bear his boredom and said, “Damn it, after searching for so long, I haven’t even found a single trace of Jiang Chen. Don’t tell me that guy is dead, that would be too pitiful! He has such a massive wealth with him, it would be a big waste if he dies just like that.”

Just when the fat old man was feeling bored, three figures flew in from afar. When the fat old man looked into the direction, his eyes instantly lit up, as he saw young man in white clothes and a dog following him.

“Jiang Chen, wears white clothes, and is about 15-16 years old, and he has a handsome and delicate face. That guy matches the

description of those men in the outer perimeter exactly! Also, a majestic big yellow dog following him! Haha, he isn't death, I've struck gold; daddy is going to be rich!"

The fat old man excitedly burst into laughter, as if he had just seen the most precious treasure in this world. Just by looking at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, he had become extremely excited. Therefore, he didn't notice Wu Jiu who was flying next to Jiang Chen.

The description of Jiang Chen's look and clothing had been widespread these last few days, and the most iconic description was of the big yellow dog who was following him. Therefore, this old man could instantly determine that the man and dog were Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, who had disappeared for two and a half months.

"Stop right there!"

The fat old man let out a loud shout, and with a move of his body, he appeared in front of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

"Get lost, don't try to provoke me."

Jiang Chen said in a cruel manner. He could sense foul intentions from the old man, so he wasn't polite with him.

"Old man, move aside quickly, don't delay this master dog's journey."

Big Yellow said in a threatening manner.

“Haha, Jiang Chen, you’ve really made me suffer by looking for you! I’ve spent two months searching for your trace, and I thought you were dead! But, not only are you not dead, but you are now in front of me, this is perfect, this is a great fortune for me, Liu Peng! So many people are looking for you, but now, you’re in my grip!”

Liu Peng burst out into laughter. He completely considered Jiang Chen his prey, he was a hunter who had finally found the prey he had been hunting for.

“Oh? Why are you looking for me? Who else are searching for me?”

Jiang Chen asked with a frown on his face. His original intention was to just attack and get rid of this old man, but after hearing what the old man said, it looked like there were a lot of things that had happened during his disappearance. Many people were actually searching for him.

“Jiang Chen, don’t tell me you don’t know? The reason behind the chaotic state of Inferno Hell right now is all because of you! You robbed everyone in the outer perimeter of Inferno City, and those who lost all their belongings were forced to do anything they could in order to survive, and that caused a huge turmoil. Besides that, your behavior has attracted the attention of all powers and alliances in the middle area of Inferno City, many Late Divine Core warriors are looking for you, they want to kill you in order to

defend the natural state of Inferno City. Jiang Chen, you are now in my hands, and this can be considered your fortune. As long as you hand all your belongings over to me, I'll spare your life."

Liu Peng loudly said.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow looked at each other, both of them finally saw the light. It was them who had caused the chaotic situation in Inferno Hell to arise. As for why those Late Divine Core warriors from the middle area were hunting for him, the reason was pretty obvious, and this Liu Peng in front of them was a good example.

"Haha, defending the natural state of Inferno City? What a bullshit reason! Why don't you just say you're going after the wealth I got?"

Jiang Chen burst out into laughter. He had taken away all the wealth in the outer perimeter by force, there was no surprise that so many people were eyeing him right now.

"That's right, the real motive is the enormous wealth you possess. Jiang Chen, don't waste all your struggle so far, you are no match for me with your cultivation base, hurry up and hand over all your belongings, then I'll spare your life."

Liu Peng's expression became stern, and spoke in a threatening manner.

Hearing this boring and threatening speech, Jiang Chen almost burst out into laughter. But when he turned to Big Yellow and Wu Jiu, he immediately saw the two were actually laughing.

“What are you guys laughing about?!”

Liu Peng shouted.

“We are laughing at you, idiot! You’re going to die, but you’re still trying to act like an overbearing man. Does your family members even know that you are here?”

Big Yellow teased the old man while laughing, his saliva dripping all over the place.

“Old man, hand over all your belongings, then I’ll spare your life.”

Jiang Chen returned Liu Peng’s words back to him.

What? Is he robbing me?

Liu Peng was startled. He was here to rob Jiang Chen, but now his target had turned the tables, and was trying to rob him. Something must be wrong with their minds.

“I hope you can listen to what he said, hurry up and hand over all your belongings, perhaps you can still keep your life.”



Wu Jiu warned. He spoke with good intentions.

“Jiang Chen, I am rapidly losing my patience.”

Liu Peng became angry. Damn it! Who was the hunter, and who was being hunted?

“I’m losing my patience as well. I’ll count to three.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen began counting, “One, two, three.”

“You’re seeking death!”

Liu Peng was furious. He waved his hand and unleashed a rainbow colored energy attack, then he threw it toward Jiang Chen. He was a Late Divine Core warrior, and his initial plan was to scare his target and make him willingly hand over all his belongings. By doing this, he would be able to show off his mightiness as well. But, he never thought that the guy would actually turn the tables and try to rob him. This simply made him ashamed, and he couldn’t bear it any longer.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort, then he extended his hand towards the sky. In an instant, the True Dragon Palm started crashing down from the sky, easily destroy the energy attack

unleashed by Liu Peng.

Bang!

The gigantic dragon claw pressed down from the sky above like a huge mountain. It turned into a solid jail, trapping Liu Peng within.

“Break open for me!”

Liu Peng was shocked, and he struggle with all his strength. But too bad, his strength was far from enough to free him from the dragon claw, not to mention escaping from the attack.

“You’re just an old fool who has just broken through to the Late Divine Core realm, your combat strength can’t compare with those Nine Life Crystal Beasts. Trying to fight me is the same as seeking death.”

Jiang Chen said with an extremely cruel voice.

“Impossible, this can’t be happening, you’ve actually broken through to the Divine Core realm! But even if you really are a Divine Core warrior, there is now way you can be so strong! I am a Late Divine Core warrior, why am I not your match?”

Liu Peng was extreme terrified, this was a miserable outcome. He had spent two relentless months searching for Jiang Chen, but in the end, the hunter had become the hunted; the prey turned the

table and became the hunter. What a ridiculous moment.

“Old fool, hurry up and hand over all your belongings, including all the clothes you’re wearing. This master dog is going to rob you cleanly!”

Big Yellow arrived in front Liu Peng and started showing off his mightiness.

Hearing that, Liu Peng almost threw up some blood because of anger. If he was robbed clean, even losing all his clothes, how was he going to live in the future?

“Jiang Chen, there is no hatred between us. I apologize for what I did just now, and I hope you can forgive my wrongdoing and spare my life. I, Liu Peng, promise I won’t challenge you in the future.”

Liu Peng looked at Jiang Chen and said, slowly.

“What a load of crap.”

Jiang Chen sneered. In an instant, he made the True Dragon Palm squeeze with tremendous force, crushing and Liu Peng and causing him to explode into a blood mist. He was killed on the spot. Then, Jiang Chen extended his hand and grabbed Liu Peng’s storage ring.

“I do not attack unless I am attacked. Those who try to attack me, they will die!”

A cruel expression filled Jiang Chen's face. He had always used the most terrifying approaches when handling his enemy, never showing any mercy. Asking for forgiveness was useless, because Jiang Chen understood a fact; if he was weaker and was caught by his enemy, the outcome would be devastating.

“What a strong mind, killing someone without hesitation, this young man is going to be someone great in the future!”

Wu Jiu's eyes lit up, and he inwardly praised Jiang Chen.

“Little Chen, since so many people from the middle area are hunting for you, there will be a lot of trouble if we return now.”

Big Yellow said.

“Since they consider me their prey, I'll let them know who the real prey is. I have robbed the entire outer perimeter, and I don't mind doing the same to the middle area. If I make it, I'm sure my wealth is going to be even bigger.”

A smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face.

# Chapter 240 – No Mercy

---

Kaka...

After hearing what Jiang Chen said, Big Yellow immediately burst out into laughter. He was someone who was never afraid of causing chaos. In fact, if nothing was going on, Big Yellow would feel uncomfortable.

Right now, the powers and alliances in the middle ring of Inferno City considered Jiang Chen their prey. Liu Peng was the first one, and there would definitely be more to come. It wasn't difficult to foresee that Jiang Chen's return to Inferno City would cause a great uproar. Those human warriors would definitely use the excuse of defending the natural state of Inferno City to attack Jiang Chen.

There is nothing to be done about it. The outstanding person would have to bear the grunt of the attack. Besides, not only was Jiang Chen famous now, he also possessed a great wealth. Capturing Jiang Chen meant owning an enormous amount of wealth, and no one would easily let go of this rare opportunity.

But, Jiang Chen was not someone who could easily be messed with. Those who eyed him would definitely have to pay a painful price. Liu Peng was a good example of that. In the end, it was uncertain who the hunter was, and who was being hunted.

Big Yellow was really excited, because he knew Jiang Chen really well. Jiang Chen was going to do something big once again, he

always did something that all other people dreamt about doing, but lacked the courage to do. For example, robbing the entire outer perimeter of Inferno City, or do like he was going to do, rob the entire middle area of Inferno City. This was something that could only be done in the people's daydreams. However, Jiang Chen was a man who could really accomplish those things.

“Let's delay no more, we need to rush back as quickly as possible!”

Big Yellow was too impatient to wait.

“Let's go!”

Jiang Chen strengthened his spirit and started flying forward. Big Yellow and Wu Jiu followed on both sides.

“Brother Jiang, you really robbed everyone in the outer perimeter of Inferno City, I'm sure it was an enjoyable scene.”

An excited look could be seen in Wu Jiu's eyes. He really liked Jiang Chen, there was nothing this young man didn't dare do. Looking at Jiang Chen made him feel as if he was looking at himself when he was young.

“Brother Jiu, when someone tries to rob me, and even kill me, what do you think I should do?”

Jiang Chen looked at Wu Jiu and asked. With his experience, he

could easily tell that this Wu Jiu was an extraordinary man. The manner in which he acted unintentionally was nothing something ordinary men could compare with.

“Needless to say; just rob them back and kill them. Who dares rob daddy, daddy will turn around and rob. Who dares try to kill daddy, daddy will send to hell.”

Wu Jiu said in a casual manner, like it was something normal. The exposed his true character. Indeed, he and Jiang Chen were men of the same line.

“Old man, you’re pretty smart. From now, just follow this master dog! This master dog will guarantee a good life for you!”

Big Yellow looked at Wu Jiu while showing an expression of appreciation.

“Get lost!”

Wu Jiu felt he should keep distance from this dog.

.....

Somewhere else, a fierce fight was going on in the middle of a desolated mountain range.

Six blood covered men were surrounded by 15 Divine Core

warriors, and all of these six men were severely injured. Two of them were more injured than the rest, and they could barely stand up without help.

“Fuck! Looks like we’re going to die today.”

Wang Heng couldn’t help but curse out loudly. He was the one who had suffered the most serious injuries, and he needed Yang Meng’s support to stand. These six men were Tian Yishan and his group. Originally, there were eight, but two of them had died ever since Jiang Chen disappeared.

They were hiding in a desolate mountain, but in the end, they were still found by a group of men. Then, a fierce fight erupted.

“Leave us here, we’re already dying.”

One of the men said. Both he and Wang Heng didn’t look good, and they felt guilty, as they thought they were dragging the rest of the men down.

“Right, chief Tian, you guys just find a way and run away from here, the two of us are going to die regardless, and we’re nothing but burdens for you now.”

Wang Heng said.

“What are you talking about?”



Tian Yishan shouted at Wang Heng.

“Haha, so funny, just look at yourselves now, you’re still trying to run away from us? Fat chance! Tian Yishan, Jiang Chen robbed us of everything we had, and I will settle the score with you today! None of you will be leaving here alive today!”

One of the Mid Divine Core warriors was laughing out loudly. All these men had been robbed by Jiang Chen back in the stronghold. At first, they still feared Jiang Chen, and didn’t have the courage to attack Tian Yishan and his men, but since two and a half months had passed, and it seemed like Jiang Chen had completely disappeared, as well as all the strong warriors hunting for him, their fear of Jiang Chen had disappeared. Therefore, they turned their fingers at Tian Yishan and wanted to release their hatred on his group. And finally, they had found their target.

“Are you guys really not scared of chief Jiang’s revenge?”

Yang Meng said.

“Hmph! It’s still uncertain whether or not Jiang Chen is still alive. And even if he is still alive, there are so many alliances and powerful warriors from the middle area of Inferno City hunting for him. If he’s found, certain death awaits him. Killing you all is the only thing that can quench our anger, and we will take all your belongings to compensate for our losses.”

The leader let out a cold snort.

“Don’t waste more breath on them, they have lost all their ability to fight back. Let’s just kill them.”

Someone said.

“Fine, let’s kill them all, but don’t let them die so easily.”

After the leader finished his words, all the men in his group unleashed their powerful energy, mixed with intense killing intent. The massive force shook the skies.

Far from the scene, Jiang Chen who was flying at high speed suddenly sensed these killing intents. He immediately turned in the direction and threw his gaze at the scene.

“Ahh! Daddy will it out with all of you!”

A heartbreaking roar sounded out from where the ripples were sensed. Although the place was still far away, Jiang Chen could still hear it clearly.

“That’s Wang Heng’s voice! Tian Yishan and his men are in danger, let’s hurry up and check it out!”

Jiang Chen’s expression changed. He was familiar with the voice, it came from Wang Heng. After splitting up with Tian Yishan and the rest of the men two and a half months ago, he had been

trapped in the Poisonous Miasma Space, and now, he had just escaped from that shithole. Then, he coincidentally found Tian Yishan in danger.

Bang!

Within the depths of the desolate mountain, Tian Yishan, Guan Yiyun and the other men were still struggling with fighting back. After the first round of attack, all of them had been injured. There were 2 Mid Divine Core warriors on the opposite side, there was no way they could match them.

“Haha, Tian Yishan, Guan Yiyun, how does death creeping up on you feel? Are you guys scared right now? Too bad, fear won’t help, no matter how scared you are, you’re still going to die!”

The leader kept laughing out loudly. But, before he could finish his laughter, an extremely powerful aura suddenly descended from the sky. All of them men at the scene could feel it. Their raised their heads, and suddenly found a gigantic dragon claw crashing down toward them.

“Oh no!”

Someone exclaimed, then he turned and started fleeing without any hesitation.

Bang!

The blood red dragon claw forcefully slapped down, and even though all of these men reacted pretty quickly, there were still some who couldn't escape from the attack, and instantly became meat paste. Five out of the fifteen men died, and a few other suffered some injuries from the tremendous force.

Everyone were stunned. They felt like they had seen the dragon claw somewhere before, but they couldn't recall where. But soon after, they knew the answer.

Three figures descended from the skies and landed next to Tian Yishan and his men.

“Brother Jiang!”

“Junior disciple Jiang!”

“Chief Jiang!”

When Tian Yishan and his men saw the man's face, all of them exclaimed in disbelief, as if they had just seen the morning sunlight in the most desperate moment. Wang Heng instantly burst out in tears, there was nothing better than seeing Jiang Chen right now. They felt closer to him than their own fathers.

“Jiang Chen!”

All the attacking men shouted out in shock at the same time. The arrival of Jiang Chen caused their hearts to die a little. As men

who had witnessed how Jiang Chen treats his enemies, their fear towards Jiang Chen was not something anyone could understand and relate to.

“Are you guys alright? Where are the other two?”

Jiang Chen looked at Guan Yiyun and asked.

“They’re dead. If you had come a little later, all of us would be dead as well.”

Guan Yiyun had a bitter smile on his face. He felt sad when he thought about his two dead companions.

“Alright, I got it.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head, then he took out some pills from his storage ring and handed them over to these men. The pills he gave them were all excellent healing pills. They hadn’t been concocted by Jiang Chen, they were from those storage rings he had robbed.

After that, Jiang Chen threw his gaze at those men standing around the scene. He didn’t hide his killing intent at all.

“Looks like sparing your lives back then was a huge mistake.”

Jiang Chen stared at them with cold eyes, causing them to feel as if a blade was cutting their faces.

“Damn it, let’s bite and kill them all!”

Big Yellow bared his sharp teeth.

“Chief Jiang, we didn’t mean to attack them, please spare us this time, we’re willing to follow chief Jiang!”

The leader quickly begged for forgiveness, and all the other men were nodding their heads nonstop. They thought Jiang Chen was dead, and that’s why they had attacked Tian Yishan and his group. But, not only was Jiang Chen not dead, he was standing right in front of them. This was their fate.

“No need.”

While saying that, Jiang Chen had drawn out a cold longsword, a sword that was thirsty for blood.

After he finished his words, the longsword had cut through the throat of the leader. A head with an extremely frightened expression flew high up into the sky.

Right as Jiang Chen attacked, Big Yellow had dashed forwards and bitten off a man’s head. The scene was extremely brutal and bloody.

Ahh!!

After that, blood-curdling scream sounded out. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow moved like two tornadoes, they arrived in front of these men, ending their lives without any mercy, leaving no survivors.

“Life is beautiful, but too bad, someone can only understand that when they are dead.”

Jiang Chen slowly put away the Bloodthirsty Sword, then he spoke as he stared at the dead body lying in a pool of blood without any emotion.

Wu Jiu who was standing next to them didn't say anything. He didn't feel any discomfort when watching this blood scene. He threw his gaze at Jiang Chen, then he silently nodded his head. This attitude and approach shouldn't be found a young man who was only 15-16 years old.

“Junior disciple Jiang, you've broken through to the Divine Core realm?”

Guan Yiyun had sensed Jiang Chen's when he attacked, he felt really happy and tried to confirm it.

“Yes, that's right. Hurry up and eat the pills I gave you and heal your wounds. Brother Jiu, Big Yellow, please help me carry them, we'll have to rush back to Inferno City now.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Alright.”

Wu Jiu and Big Yellow nodded their heads. After that, both of them unleashed their yuan energy and lifted these men. Then, they followed Jiang Chen and flew toward Inferno City with great speed.



## Chapter 241 – Overbearing With No Limits

---

Jiang Chen eagerly wanted to return to Inferno City and find that treasure, therefore he was flying at high speed, and he didn't spend any time fighting monsters along their way.

“Look at those people!”

“That's Jiang Chen, and also Tian Yishan and the other men! Jiang Chen is alive, he actually reappeared after having gone missing for two and a half months! Look where they're going, they're going to Inferno City now!”

“Something big is going to happen, let's return to Inferno City as quickly as possible. Right now, all the alliances from the middle area are looking for Jiang Chen, and he will be killed when he returns! Haha, our revenge will be served then!”

“You're right! That Jiang Chen robbed us of everything we had, causing us to have a hard time surviving in Inferno Hell. Perhaps only half of the ones who survived that day are still alive right now.”

.....

Jiang Chen didn't hide his aura or anything, he just flew openly in the sky, that's why he had attracted the attention of very many people. Among these people, quite a lot of them had been robbed by Jiang Chen, and all of them were shocked to see Jiang Chen. They immediately turned toward Inferno City, because they knew

that Inferno City was going to become chaotic because of Jiang Chen's return.

Jiang Chen could sense the eyes laid upon him and the auras. He just smiled with a carefree expression.

“Junior disciple Jiang, where have you been for the last two and a half months? We thought you were trapped by those Evil Devils and couldn't leave the place.”

Guan Yiyun asked while healing himself.

“That's a long story, I'll tell you all when we have time in the future. I know where the Earth Devil is now, and my purpose of returning to Inferno City is to find the treasure that can restrain the Earth Devil.”

Jiang Chen said.

Hearing about the Earth Devil, all of these men had a change in expression. Jiang Chen had at last found the whereabouts of the Earth Devil, and he didn't give up his goal of hunting it. But, little did these men know, even though Jiang Chen had broken through to the Divine Core realm, even if he managed to find the treasure that could restrain the Earth Devil, how was he going to deal with the Combat Soul Earth Devil?

“Brother Jiang, who is he?”

Tian Yishan looked at Wu Jiu and asked.

“Since you’re all brother Jiang’s friends, you may address me as Lord Jiu.”

Wu Jiu gazed at Tian Yishan and the other men in a casual manner and spoke with an indifferent tone.

Ugh...

Everyone were stunned, they didn’t expect this old man to be so supercilious. Jiang Chen was addressing him as brother Jiu, and he wanted them to address him as Lord Jiu, this was weird.

These men just gave up on their curiosity and focused on healing up, they didn’t say anything else to Wu Jiu.

Soon after, Jiang Chen and the group had left the Inferno Hell area, and there was only a thousand miles left until they reached Inferno City. With their speed, they would arrive shortly.

Along their way, Jiang Chen’s appearance had attracted many curious eyes. All of these people just followed them back to Inferno City, they wanted to witness what was going to happen.

“Stop right there!”

Followed by a loud shout, a man appeared not far in front of

them. It was a middle aged man, and he wore linen clothes, and he carried a violent killing intent. His body was unleashing a brutal and cruel aura, which made him look like a serial killer.

Jiang Chen could easily tell that this man was similar to Liu Peng, and he was a Late Divine Core warrior. The reason why he got in their way was obvious.

“Jiang Chen, I didn’t think you were still alive, this is perfect! Hand over all your wealth and treasures, then I’ll spare your life.”

The man said out loud. What he said was also similar to what Liu Peng had said. It was as if they had discussed their speech together before.

Bang!

Just as the middle aged man finished his speech, a gigantic blood red claw instantly appeared above his head. With a tremendous amount of force, it crashed into the man from above.

Puh!

Under such tremendous pressure, the middle aged man threw up a stream of blood, and his face carried an extremely shocked expression.

“Trying to rob me? I’ll let you all know who the real prey is today! Not only will daddy rob you all, daddy will also kill you all!”

Jiang Chen said in a cruel manner, then he made the True Dragon Palm squeeze, killing the middle aged man. After that, he took the man's storage ring.

Killed a man in an instant, and he didn't even take a look at the body. He just continued his journey. Jiang Chen wouldn't blink his eyes when killing these vicious and wicked men, he wouldn't feel guilty even when killing hundreds of these men, let alone the man he just killed.

“Oh heavens! Chief Jiang is super strong!”

“So powerful, he killed a Late Divine Core warrior in an instant! Aiya, my eyes are going to go blind because of this glorious moment!”

“So overbearing, so brutal, so ruthless! Daddy loves this so much! There are so many people who want to kill chief Jiang, and I really want to know just how many of them are going to be killed by chief Jiang! Serves them right, since they're prepared to kill chief Jiang, they have to be prepared to get killed by chief Jiang!”

Wang Heng, Yang Meng and the other men were incredibly excited. They had long ago witnessed how mighty Jiang Chen was. But at this moment, when Jiang Chen killed a Late Divine Core warrior, it had once again caused a storm to erupt in their hearts.

When the bystanders saw what happens, they could stand there, stunned with their mouths wide open.

“Inferno City is going to see great change! Hurry up, let’s go back and witness it!”

Many people were extremely excited. For the past two and a half months, almost everyone in Inferno Hell had been searching for Jiang Chen. Since Jiang Chen had not appeared, those warriors who had spent so much time hunting for Jiang Chen would definitely not let him go with ease. But, it seemed like Jiang Chen had become stronger than before, he was actually able to instantly kill a Late Divine Core warrior. Therefore, Inferno City was going to see great change.

The middle area of Inferno City was a gathering place for all Divine Core warriors, and that was because there was a Combat Soul warrior residing right in the center of Inferno City, and no one was allowed to enter that place during normal days. Therefore, if Jiang Chen once again robbed the entire middle area, it meant that Jiang Chen would have robbed pretty much every single warrior in the entire Inferno City. This was unbelievable!

Right in front of the gate to Inferno City, a couple human warriors had just returned from the wilderness of Inferno Hell. All of them had bored expressions on their faces as they walked into Inferno City. The leader of these six men was a Late Divine Core warrior, and the rest were all Mid Divine Core warriors. They were the leader’s subordinates.

“Fuck, it seems like that Jiang Chen has just vanished from the mortal realm, it looks like he’s dead somewhere. Fuck! We wasted our time searching for him!”

“That’s right, chief. Many alliances from the middle area have already given up their search and have returned to Inferno City. We have wasted our time out there.”

“Fuck! If that Jiang Chen dares come back, daddy will definitely tear him apart! How could he let us waste so much time searching for him? This is outrageous!”

.....

All these men were really bored. They had talked together and decided that before leaving Inferno City, as long as they killed Jiang Chen, all of them would split his wealth equally. But, not only did they not find Jiang Chen, they had actually spent most of their time fighting the monsters in Inferno Hell.

“I, Jiang Chen am back!”

Right at this moment, a loud shout sounded out from afar. The voice carried a powerful sound-wave, and it rocked the entire place like a thunder strike, causing those who heard it to feel a constant buzzing sound in their ears.

The six bored men instantly turned around, then they saw a group of men flying toward Inferno City with great speed. The leading man was wearing white clothes, he had a handsome and delicate face, and a majestic big yellow dog following next to him. He was none other than Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen, he is alive!”

“Haha, perfect! What a small world!”

The leading old man let out a hearty laugh. The six of them immediately flew up into the sky and blocked Jiang Chen’s path.

“Jiang Chen, you really know how to hide.”

The leading old man said while laughing.

“Sorry to trouble you all.”

Jiang Chen said in a casual manner. After that, he turned around and said to Wu Jiu, “Brother Jiu, I’ll let you see how I handle things.”

“Don’t worry, brother. Your brother, I will witness your mightiness today. Just wreck the hell out of this place! If you really poke a hole in the skies, your brother will patch it up for you.”

Wu Jiu slammed his own chest and said. He too was someone who had no fear of any trouble.

“Big Yellow, you too just back off, let me do this myself.”



Jiang Chen patted Big Yellow's head. Although Big Yellow wasn't satisfied, he still backed off together with Wu Jiu. Big Yellow was at the Early Divine Core realm, but he just couldn't compare with Jiang Chen who was an abnormal monster. It was still quite difficult for him to deal with Late Divine Core warriors.

“Jiang Chen, hand over all your treasures now!”

One of the Mid Divine Core warriors took a step forward and said to Jiang Chen in an arrogant manner.

Swoosh!

Right after he finished speaking, a razor sharp sword energy appeared right above his head. The man could only feel a numbness on his head, and before he could let out any screams, Jiang Chen had slashed him in half.

“Big Yellow.”

Jiang Chen shouted. Big Yellow immediately understood what he meant, and with incredible speed, he dashed forward and arrived next to the dead body, then he snatched away the storage ring without any hesitation.

“Haha, all the people from the middle area, listen up! If you want to kill me, just come forward!”

Jiang Chen's voice swept across the place. The powerful sound

wave had an incredible penetrating force, causing everyone in the middle area of Inferno City to hear what he said.

“What?! Jiang Chen is back?! He still has the courage to come back!?”

“Hurry up, let’s go and kill Jiang Chen, don’t let other people kill him before us!”

“Faster, this Jiang Chen is a moving treasure chest! If we can get all the wealth he possesses, we’ll be living a good life in the future!”

At this moment, countless men flew out from the middle area of Inferno City like a rain of arrow, crazily rushing towards the outside of Inferno City.

Back to the scene. The leader and the few other men had finally reacted, all of them stared at Jiang Chen in shock. They never thought Jiang Chen would be so brutal, their friend had just said something threatening, and he was immediately killed.

“Jiang Chen, how dare you fight back!?”

The leader let out a furious shout. In an instant, a bright blade appeared in his hand.

“Those who wants to kill me, I will kill! Today, I will kill everyone single one who has wanted to kill me!”

Jiang Chen unleashed his killing intent. As the once greatest Saint in the world, the bones of those he had killed were enough to pile up to be a gigantic mountain. He had killed countless enemies along his way to the top.

If one was his enemy, he would be killed. This was Jiang Chen's principle. Jiang Chen understood a fact, if the tables were turned, if he was weaker than his enemy, they would definitely not spare his life. If that was the case, why should he want to show mercy?

Bang!

Jiang Chen raised the longsword in his hand high up into the air. The bright sword aura struck through the air, and with an ultimate momentum, it slashed toward the leading Divine Core warrior.

Ha!

The Late Divine Core warrior let out a violent shout. He covered his body with rocking yuan energies and rolling energies. The blade in his hand dazzled with light as it collided with Jiang Chen's sword in a formidable manner.

Clang! Ahh!

A violent sound of weapons clanging together with a horrifying scream was heard. There was no way the man could match Jiang

Chen's extremely powerful strike. He was thrown down from the sky by the attack, and the blade in his hand was repelled away. Along his way to the ground, blood kept burst out from his mouth. Then, he fell onto the ground, and was stunned by the tremendous force.

The man only felt all his bones dislocating, and he couldn't control his yuan energy any longer. Just as he struggled to stand up, he saw a hue dog looking at him while baring its teeth.

## Chapter 242 – Shangguan Wei

---

The leader was badly injured after just a single attack from Jiang Chen, and this had caused him to lose the ability to fight. Right now, when he saw Big Yellow coming towards, he was incredibly frightened. He had heard about this dog before; this dog was not someone who could easily be trifled with.

“Hehe! It’s your honor to be killed by this master dog’s teeth!”

Big Yellow opened his mouth, and without any hesitation, he bit onto the leader’s head.

“No...!”

The shrill scream came to a complete stop after a cracking sound could be heard; Big Yellow had bitten to man’s head off. At the same time, he didn’t forget to remove the guy’s storage ring from his finger. After having done all that, he just strolled back to where he was originally standing.

“What?!”

The remaining four Mid Divine Core warriors exclaimed. All of them were so scared that their faces had paled in an instant. They wanted to kill Jiang Chen, but little did they know, Jiang Chen had become so strong that even their chief was killed by him in a split second. Therefore, how were they going to be a match for Jiang Chen?

“Chief Jiang, please spare our lives, we were blind to challenge chief Jiang!”

“True, chief Jiang, please spare us, we won’t fight against chief Jiang anymore!”

.....

All these four men kept begging for forgiveness. If they didn’t do it now, they might lose the chance later.

“I can spare your lives, just hand over all your belongings, including your combat weapons. Oh, and, each of you cut off one of your arms

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

“What? Cut off one of our arms?”

One of the men had a change in expression. But, just as his words left his mouth, a deadly sword had appeared above his head.

Blood splashed around. The Mid Divine Core warrior was cut in half and died on the spot. His body fell down from the sky, and the waiting Big Yellow immediately dashed forwards to rob the poor fellow.

The remaining three men were all stunned. All of them were vicious men, but finally, they had met someone even more vicious than them. This young man in front of them was too cruel, he just killed without giving any warnings or chances.

“Where is Jiang Chen?”

“Catch that Jiang Chen and defend the natural state of Inferno City!”

.....

Right at this moment, numerous shouts were sounding out from within Inferno City. Then, countless strong men dashed out from the middle area of Inferno City.

The last three men were actually getting ready to cut off their arms, but when they saw the huge amount of people coming toward them, they felt like their life-saving straw had appeared. Immediately, they turned and started running. In their minds, with so many warriors swarming here, it would be more than enough to shock Jiang Chen. Facing the threat of so many strong warriors, Jiang Chen wouldn't have the time to kill them.

But too bad, these three men had overestimated the incoming men.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!

Just when these three men turned around, three deadly sword strikes descended upon their heads, slashing them all in half.

When the warriors who had just dashed out from the middle area of Inferno City saw what was happening, all of their expressions changed dramatically. They threw their eyes at both Jiang Chen and those dead bodies scattered around the place. They immediately knew what was going on.

“Jiang Chen, who gave you the audacity to violate the natural state of Inferno City? Who let you rob all the men here by force, and kill without mercy?”

One of the Late Divine Core warriors shouted at Jiang Chen.

The situation instantly became tense. There were over 60 men from the middle area here. More than 20 of them were Late Divine Core warriors, and the rest were all Mid Divine Core warriors.

These men represented the top combat strength of Inferno City. At this moment, many people had gathered around. Most of the spectators were those whom Jiang Chen had robbed in the outer perimeter, and some of them had just arrived at Inferno City in the last two and a half months, and didn't want any trouble. This group of people didn't want to join the battle; these were the men who would live the longest, they made the right choice by not joining the other people to attack Jiang Chen. Since they didn't try to challenge Jiang Chen, Jiang Chen wouldn't touch them either.

“Looks like all of you are the men who have been searching for



me in the last two and a half months.”

Jiang Chen’s gaze dashed from left to right on these men’s faces with a sneer on his face. He felt no fear, as these men weren’t qualified of making him feel scared.

As for the seemingly gracious reason where he had ‘disturbed the natural state of Inferno City’, Jiang Chen just considered that bullshit. There were no rules in Inferno Hell except for one, and that who had more strong would be the one to rule. Life was worthless here, and countless men died every day. Jiang Chen just wanted to kill those who tried to attack him.

“Guys, since we’re all here, Jiang Chen can’t just belong to one of us. In my opinion, we should kill him and split all his wealth equally, this will be Jiang Chen’s punishment, and a warning for those who are in Inferno City at the same time. Violating the natural state of Inferno City is unforgivable!”

An old man with a gray beard said. His name was Shangguan Wei, and he had a profound background. He was from the Jian Province’s Shangguan family, and the family was a massive power in the Jiang Province, no weaker than the Myriad Sword Sect. There had rarely been anyone who dared challenge them in the Jian Province.

“Alright, we’ll do as brother Shangguan said. Let’s kill Jiang Chen and split all his belongings, what do you guys think?”

Another man asked.

“Perfect, let’s do this! There are so many of us here, even if this Jiang Chen has three heads and six arms, he will die without any doubts!”

Someone agreed. All the other men nodded their heads as well. With killing intent rocketing to the sky, these men were completely treating Jiang Chen as their prey.

On the opposite side, Wu Jiu was caressing his beard while calmly watching the situation. He didn’t say anything, as he wanted to see how Jiang Chen was going to handle the attack of so many strong warriors.

But Guan Yiyun, Tian Yishan, and a few other men all had awful expressions. Of these 60 men, the weakest warrior was at the Mid Divine Core realm. This ridiculous overall combat strength is nothing that those groups in the outer perimeter could compare with.

“Damn it, this group of bastards are too shameless! Can chief Jiang handle them?”

Wang Heng looked worried.

“Don’t worry, can’t you see the confidence on junior disciple Jiang’s face? He never does anything without certainty of success.”

Guan Yiyun said. He had strong confidence in Jiang Chen.

“That’s right! Don’t forget brother Jiang’s approach back in our stronghold in the outer perimeter, he was only a Late Heavenly Core warrior then, but he has now broken through to the Divine Core realm; none of these men are a match for brother Jiang. They also don’t have any synergy, and that makes them more vulnerable to brother Jiang.”

Tian Yishan said.

Swoosh swoosh...

Dozens of Divine Core warriors moved, surrounding Jiang Chen in the middle. All of them carried wicked smiles on their faces.

“Initially, I just wanted to take all your belongings and spare your lives, but it looks like I won’t have to do that now.”

Jiang Chen said. The longsword in his hand was making a constant buzzing sound, and the light beam coming out from the tip of the sword caused ripples to appear that could be seen with the naked eye.

“Jiang Chen, don’t be stubborn, just put down your defense. Death awaits you today.”

Shangguan Wei said.

“Is that so? The, you be the one to attack first, let’s see if you really can kill me.”

Jiang Chen gazed at Shangguan Wei. This man had the strongest cultivation amongst all the other men here, and he was comparable to Daoist Black. A man like this should have a high position in the Shangguan family. And yet, Jiang Chen didn’t take him to heart.

“Hmph! What an ignorant young man, let me be the one to kill you!”

A robust man took a step forward. He was carrying a golden spear, and he was releasing all his terrifying Late Divine Core aura. With a wave of his arm, the spear produced a buzzing sound and started piercing toward Jiang Chen.

Too bad, the robust man hadn’t seen the scene where Jiang Chen had killed the Late Divine Core warrior. If he had, he wouldn’t be the first one to attack.

Jiang Chen shook his head, then he waved the Bloodthirsty Sword like a poisonous snake toward the robust man.

Clang!

The sword moved like a fierce dragon as it collided with the opponent’s spear, producing a lot of sparks. Jiang Chen’s combat strength was simply ferocious, his attack carried a tremendous

force, it was like a huge mountain being thrown at his enemy.

Ahh!

The robust man let out a shocking shout. He felt his arm had become completely numb, and he could barely hold the spear. He was also forced back three steps.

The robust man was extremely shocked. The level of Jiang Chen's mightiness had gone way beyond his imagination. Jiang Chen didn't give him any chance to react, right as the robust man had been forced back; he turned into a trail of light and instantly arrived in front of the man.

Puchi!

The robust man's body shook, as if he had just been struck by thunder. He lowered his head and looked at his chest, and he could only see the handle of the sword hanging on his chest. The shadow of death was hovering above his head.

Jiang Chen impaled his heart with the sword, and the razor sharp sword energy had shattered all his internal organs, giving him a tragic death.

Bang!

Jiang Chen pulled the sword out from the man's chest, and then he kicked the dead body far away. He had just killed another Late

Divine Core warrior with ease, and on his face, there was only a cruel expression.

“What?!”

Everyone exclaimed at the same time. All of them knew very well how strong the robust man was, but he had actually been killed by Jiang Chen with ease. Jiang Chen’s formidable strength had changed their expressions.

“This guy is really strong, let’s attack together!”

Shangguan Wei shouted out loudly. All the other men began taking Jiang Chen more seriously in their minds. Dozens of powerful auras turned into visible energy beams that shot high up into the sky, causing the sky to reflect with colorful lights. All of them drew their combat weapons, then they dashed forwards and unleashed their attacks.

“Haha, since you’re not afraid of death, just show me what you got!”

Jiang Chen’s dark hair was dancing around as he laughed out loudly, causing him to look like a mighty god of war. With a sway of his body, nine identical Jiang Chens suddenly appeared in the center of the battlefield, distracting all his enemies.

“What an amazing movement skill! I never thought I’d see such a peerless genius in the Eastern Continent!”

Wu Jiu's eyes lit up. He looked at Jiang Chen as if he was looking at a rare treasure.

Puchi puchi...

Jiang Chen was simply too fast, he moved amongst these strong warriors like a dragon swimming through the heavens, and he kept unleashing attacks. No one could take a single strike from him, especially those Mid Divine Core warriors. Jiang Chen killed them like he was chopping vegetables, and dead bodies fell onto the ground everywhere. Big Yellow just stood underneath the battlefield, waiting for the falling dead bodies to hit the ground, so he could leap forwards and take their belongings.

Ahh!!

Blood-curdling screeches filled the scene, and it was just like Tian Yishan had said. Although these men were very strong, they didn't have any synergy. Even though they had now grouped together to attack, they still couldn't unleash their full strength. Jiang Chen was moving around the battlefield with his amazing movement skill, and these men just couldn't find the chance to attack him.

“Earth Shattering Palm!”

Shangguan Wei suddenly shouted out loudly, then he unleashed the Shangguan family's most devastating combat skill toward Jiang Chen.

A great golden palm appeared in front of Jiang Chen, and it carried a devastating aura, as if it could crack anything in its path. However, Jiang Chen had no fear, he immediately countered with his True Dragon Palm.



# Chapter 243 – Supreme Killing Realm

---

Rumble...

The violent collision had shaken the air and raised the temperature. The Shangguan family's Earth Shattering Palm was indeed terrifying, especially when it was unleashed by a strong warrior like Shangguan Wei. It was simply devastating.

But too bad, Shangguan Wei's opponent was Jiang Chen, an abnormal monster. No matter how powerful the Earth Shattering Palm was, it just couldn't compare with the inherited True Dragon Palm. With the combat strength brought from 1,000 Dragon Marks, it was very difficult for Jiang Chen to find a match in the Divine Core realm.

Tap tap tap!

The Earth Shattering Palm was destroyed by the True Dragon Palm, and Shangguan Wei was forced back a couple of steps before he could regain control of his body. While it didn't seem so serious, the exchange just now had caused his qi and blood to become a complete mess, giving him an extremely uncomfortable feeling. Absolute shock filled his mind, he was actually a peak Divine Core warrior, and even in the Shangguan family, he was an existence who was almost guaranteed to break through to the Combat Soul realm. It was really unbelievable that his Earth Shattering Palm was destroyed by a young man, and he was even pushed back by the force. But, what was even more frightening was that this young man was only an Early Divine Core warrior.

Forcing Shangguan Wei back with just a single strike, Jiang Chen's momentum was getting even stronger. He moved in a ghostly manner and kept striking the sword in his hand. Each time he swung his sword, blood would be shed, and blood-curdling screeches would be heard.

“Fuck! What kind of monster is this young man? Why is he so strong?!”

Finally, someone couldn't restrain their fear any longer. The battle had begun not long ago, and with combined attack from so many of them, not only could they not hurt Jiang Chen, they had lost nearly 20 men, including 3 Late Divine Core warriors. Jiang Chen was like a ferocious tiger, and in front of Jiang Chen, these men could only be considered some stronger sheep. There was no way they could defeat him.

Big Yellow kept jumping up and down, running back and forth. Whenever he saw a body fall down from the sky, he would dash forward and take all the wealth it possessed. If the man wasn't dead yet, he would bite him and kill the man.

“All Mid Divine Core warriors, fall back! All Late Divine Core warriors, let's attack at the same time, we'll combine all our strength! I don't believe we can't kill this Jiang Chen!”

Shangguan Wei strengthened his spirit and shouted out loudly.

Hearing this, all Mid Divine Core warriors who had been frightened by Jiang Chen's slaughter immediately fell back. All of

them were extremely terrified, and they all lost their previous imposing manners. Jiang Chen's strength had made them understand one thing; with their cultivation, attacking him was the same as seeking death.

Rumble...

Under Shangguan Wei's lead, tens of Late Divine Core warriors unleashed all their energies. All of them carried intense killing intents, and they were getting ready to unleash deadly blow towards Jiang Chen.

"Hmph! I'll let you taste the power of the Great Illusion Realm."

A grin emerged on Jiang Chen's face. He moved quickly and swiftly, and escaped from the surrounding warriors in an instant, then he flew high up into the sky.

"Illusion Heart Sutra, Great Illusion Realm!"

Jiang Chen shout out with a great voice. Immediately, an energy wave carrying dreamy colors burst out from his body like a tsunami, covering towards the warriors who were dashing towards Jiang Chen, and trapping them in the Great Illusion Realm.

Jiang Chen had cultivated and mastered the Illusion Heart Sutra. An illusion skill like this was useless against warriors who had a much greater cultivation than him, as it was tough to affect their minds. But against these men in front of him, the skill was really

effective.

This was the first time Jiang Chen had used the Great Illusion Realm; these men had become his experiment.

“What an amazing skill!”

Wu Jiu’s eyes lit up once again, Jiang Chen had just given him another big surprise. With his experience, he could of course tell how extraordinary this illusion realm was.

“Isn’t this the illusion skill that Yang Shuo used? Chief Jiang actually learned how to use it!”

“Junior disciple Jiang killed Yang Shuo and obtained all his belongings. Surely, this illusion skill is one of the treasures he possess. With junior disciple Jiang’s talent, learning a new combat skill is just a piece of cake.”

Guan Yiyun said.

Under the shocked gazes of many people, after all those violent Late Divine Core warriors were trapped in the Great Illusion Realm, their movements came to a complete stop, and they kept looking around with confused expressions on their faces.

Huala!

Jiang Chen extended his hand and unleashed beams of light into the Great Illusion Realm. Looking at it from the outside, the energy waves within the illusion realm began wiggling, and all the men who were trapped inside, their bodies followed the wiggling. Jiang Chen had divided the Great Illusion Realm into a few areas, and only two men were contained within the same area.

At this moment, all the Late Divine Core warriors who were trapped let out loud shouts. The men who were trapped in the same area began fighting each other, they all engaged in violent battles.

Rumble...

Powerful energy ripples came emerged from the Great Illusion Realm, and everyone outside could clearly see what was happening inside. What they saw was all the men who had attacked Jiang Chen had engaged in intense fights with each other. All of them were gritting their teeth, and their eyes had turned red. They were behaving like they were fighting their biggest enemy.

“What’s happening? What kind of skill is this? It’s actually making them fight each other, this is frightening!”

“Oh heavens, what’s actually happening in that real? Why are those people fighting each other?”

“This skill is incredible! If this carries on, Jiang Chen will be able to kill them all without even personally striking!”

Everyone were absolutely shocked. The men from the same groups were fighting each other as if they were life or death enemies. What was actually happening in that illusion realm?

Nobody could understand why this was happening. Those Mid Divine Core warriors who had followed the Late Divine Core warriors to attack Jiang Chen now stood there with eyes wide open. They stared at what was happening within the illusion realm with looks of disbelief. What they could see was the malicious look on the faces of the Late Divine Core warriors as they tried their best to kill each other. Many of them seemed like they were talking to each other, but no one could hear what they were saying.

“Damn, this method is amazing!”

Big Yellow was incredibly excited.

“Those men has been trapped by chief Jiang’s illusion realm, but why are they killing each other?”

The puzzled Wang Heng asked. Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun were confused as well.

“What a terrifying illusion realm! This illusion realm can dig out the most hidden secrets in one’s heart, and once a person is trapped, that scene will appear in the minds. Let me tell you why they are killing each other; it’s because they want to kill their opponent and rob all their belongings!”

Wu Jiu said as he squinted his eyes, “In Inferno Hell, there are few people who are true friends. Most people here are vicious and wicked, and this group of men aren’t friends with each other, their alliances was just a temporary measure. They all gathered together because of Jiang Chen. Now, Jiang Chen has put two men into the same illusion realm, and what they had in their minds has been dug out. In the deepest area of their minds, the others in the temporary alliance are also their prey, and they will attack each other if there is an opportunity. If my guess is correct, brother Jiang made them see an opportunity to kill their opponent, causing them to feel that this is the best time to get rid of their opponent and take all their belongings. That’s the reason why they’re fighting each other right now.”

Wu Jiu had vast experience and knowledge, he had discovered the true spirit of this Great Illusion Realm. Also, because of this, he felt even more surprised by Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen’s method was simply terrifying! If this continue, Jiang Chen would be able to kill all his enemies without doing anything himself.

“This is incredible!”

Guan Yiyun and the other men opened up their mouths widely in shock. They now understood that this illusion realm could stimulate the biggest fantasies in one’s heart. If a person didn’t know anything about this illusion realm, and didn’t possess a strong mind; he would immediately be affected by it once trapped.

Jiang Chen stood in the air and kept unleashing beams of light. Having such precise control over the Great Illusion Realm, he could only do so because of the Great Soul Derivation skill. If it was

Yang Shuo, there would be no way for him to trap so many strong warriors at the same time, as this was something that would consume a lot of energy.

Bang!

Within the Great Illusion Realm, Shangguan Wei was the strongest warrior. He had killed his opponent with his bared hands and taken over his storage ring and combat weapon. The dead body fell out from the Great Illusion Realm while Shangguan Wei laughed out loudly.

In the other areas, the fights had come to their wildest levels. All these men kept attacking with their respective combat skills, trying to kill their opponent with their deadliest attacks. Soon after, it had become a fight where both men were attacking without defending themselves, causing each of them to suffer severe injuries.

Bang, bang!

Two men in the same area killed each other at the same time and fell out from the Great Illusion Realm. Both died miserable deaths.

“Heavens! I don’t think terrifying is enough to describe this illusion realm!”

“Fierce! Jiang’s method is incredibly fierce! Without having to personally attack, all these men will eventually die from fighting



themselves, and Jiang Chen will be able to benefit from this without doing much!”

“Look, someone else died!”

.....

All the spectators were shocked. None of them had seen this kind of method used to kill before, even Wu Jiu was stunned. He kept praising Jiang Chen inwardly; this was a peerless genius who would definitely surpass the ancestors and dazzle the contemporaries! Not only did he have strong skills, he had a brilliant mind as well! The Great Illusion Realm could only trap the enemy, but Jiang Chen was using it to make his enemies kill each other, yielding the maximum result.

Jiang Chen unleashed yet another bright beam, then the scene within the Great Illusion Realm changed. A man who had paid a heavy price to kill his opponent and take his belongings had now been moved into the same area as Shangguan Wei.

Both men exchanged a glance, then a fight instantly erupted. It was just like what Wu Jiu had said, not only did their opponent in the illusion realm, they had also found themselves in a most favorable situation, and that’s why they were attacking without hesitation.

For example, the seriously wounded man and Shangguan Wei found themselves in a desolate mountain range, and there were no one else there except the two of them. Shangguan Wei saw that his

opponent was severely wounded, close to death, and it would only take him a single strike to kill this man. At the same time, the seriously injured man saw the same situation as he looked at Shangguan Wei.

Ten minutes later, more than half of the men had died in the Great Illusion Realm, and there were only eight men left. Aside from Shangguan Wei who was still in a good condition, all the other men were seriously injured and on the brink of death. As Shangguan Wei was the strongest man amongst them, he had already killed three men.

“Kaka, brilliant, perfect! Little Chen, let them keep fighting! This method of killing enemies is really exciting, it’s the first time this master dog has seen anything like it!”

Big Yellow kept shouting, he couldn’t wait to see all these men dead.

Slash!

Jiang Chen drew his hand, and the scene within the Great Illusion Realm changed once again.

## Chapter 244 – Wu Jiu's Identity

---

All the spectators were breathing rapidly, they had never seen such a frightening killing method before. It could really be considered the supreme method of killing enemies.

Also, Jiang Chen's approach had made them all understand a fact; the consequences of challenging him were devastating!

Over 20 Late Divine Core warriors, this was a massive force of combined combat strength, enough to sweep through the entire Inferno Hell. But now, there were only eight men left after having been slaughtered by Jiang Chen, and none of the surviving men were in good conditions, all of them were on the brink of death, with the exception of Shangguan Wei.

Crash...

A sound similar to liquids flowing could be heard from the scene. Followed by a wave of Jiang Chen's hand, the scene within the Great Illusion Realm changed once again. The surviving eight men were divided into four areas, each containing two men.

To no one surprise, just like what had happened previously, fierce fights immediately erupted between two men upon being put in the same area. Even those men who were on the brink of death fought like crazy.

Puchi!

In one of the areas, two men had impale their opponent's chest with their sword at the same time. Once again, two dead bodies fell out from the Great Illusion Realm.

As for the rest of them, their situation wasn't any better. Some of them were killed instantly, and those who weren't killed... they weren't far from death.

Putong putong!

Bodies kept falling down from the sky, and Big Yellow just kept waiting underneath. If the man was dead, he would take all his belongings; if the man was alive, he would kill him with his fierce teeth, and then take all his belongings.

“Haha...”

Jiang Chen started laughing. He flicked his wide sleeve and retracted the Great Illusion Realm. Within the illusion realm, Shangguan Wei tripped on his feet and almost fell down from the sky, but he ended up stabilizing his body. Then, he raised his head and stared at Jiang Chen.

Shangguan Wei's expression changed, it seemed like he had just recalled what happened just now. He turned his head down, and he immediately saw all the dead bodies covered with blood. There were no men around him, he was the last one, and he was in bad shape.

“Jiang Chen, you.... How despicable you are!”

Shangguan Wei pointed his finger at Jiang Chen. Finally, he realized what had happened. All of them had been trapped in Jiang Chen’s illusion realm, and had been tricked into killing each other. Obviously, all the other men had been trapped, just like him, and started killing each other.

“Despicable? You think that’s despicable?”

Jiang Chen faintly smiled.

“What a despicable method, it was too vicious!”

Shangguan Wei’s heart was beating like drums, and he was extremely furious. Never once before had he seen such a cruel approach. Although there were so many strong warriors, all of them had fallen into Jiang Chen’s trap.

“Despicable! All of you were killing each other, what does this have to do with me? Shangguan Wei, don’t tell me you aren’t vicious? I’m sure you know much better than I do how many people you’ve killed.”

Jiang Chen glared at Shangguan Wei. He knew that Shangguan Wei was on the brink of collapsing.

“You... That’s all because of your illusion realm! If not for that, I would have killed my own friends! They’re all dead because of you!”

Shangguan Wei shouted out loudly.

“The illusion realm can reveal a person’s true nature. If you really considered them your friend, then you wouldn’t have attacked them in the first place. It was a desire hidden within the depths of your heart. None of you really considered each other as friends. In your heart, all humans and monsters in Inferno Hell are your prey! You’re all greedy, you were all wicked by nature, and I just provided you an environment and an opportunity. You are the vicious killer that killed your own friends, not I.”

Jiang Chen said, word by word. Each word was like a sharp blade poking at Shangguan Wei’s heart.

“He’s right, all humans are selfish by nature. In this Inferno Hell, no one will consider each other true friends, especially those Late Divine Core warriors. They are too prideful when it comes to their own profound cultivations, and they consider all humans their prey. This is human nature.”

“Jiang Chen used a method to bring out the desires hidden in the depths of their own hearts, killing them with their own deepest desires. This method of killing is truly cruel and frightening.”

“I have finally witnessed the supreme killing realm today!”

.....

Who could have thought that a massive battle could have ended like this? Shangguan Wei's destiny was easily predicted; even though he was from the Shangguan family, but with Jiang Chen's character, he wouldn't let Shangguan Wei go easily.

In mid-air, Jiang Chen place one hand behind his back, then he walked step by step toward Shangguan Wei. With each step he took, Shangguan Wei would take a step back. This young man in front of him had allowed him to feel true terror.

“Jiang Chen, you've killed so many people, and robbed so much wealth, just stop it right there. I'm from the Shangguan family, you can't kill me.”

Shangguan Wei had no choice but to bet on his background, he wanted to make Jiang Chen feel afraid, and then let him go.

“Shangguan family.”

Jiang Chen still smiled faintly. He didn't slow down, he just kept walking firmly toward Shangguan Wei, as if he was an emperor going to sentence a criminal.

“Do you guys think Jiang Chen will really kill Shangguan Wei? He is an elder from the Shangguan family, and the family is a massive power in the Jian Province, an existence that even the Martial Saint Dynasty has to take seriously. I know they have quite

a number of Combat Soul warriors.”

“Although this Shangguan Wei isn’t someone important in the Shangguan family, but if he is killed by some outsider, I’m sure the Shangguan family will be provoked. This had something to do with their dignity, and they won’t allow any outsider to challenge it. My guess is, Jiang Chen won’t kill him.”

“It’s hard to tell, Jiang Chen has already killed so many men, and all of them were from different powers in the Eastern Continent. It could be said that he has provoked countless powers, both big and small. This man is extremely brutal and ruthless, he never shows his enemies any mercy. And don’t forget, he also killed Yang Shuo from the Myriad Sword Sect.”

.....

Everyone viewed the scene with anticipation, they really wanted to know whether or not Jiang Chen would kill Shangguan Wei. Since Shangguan Wei wasn’t an outsider, killing him was equal to challenging the dignity of the Shangguan family. If he was killed by an outsider, the family would definitely find out how and why he died.

Jiang Chen showed all the spectators his decision with his action. He waved his hand and unleashed the True Dragon Palm, and in an instant, the blood red dragon claw completely covered Shangguan Wei.

Although Shangguan Wei was a peak Divine Core warrior, since



he was seriously injured, there was no way he could resist Jiang Chen's attack. He was trapped by the True Dragon Palm, and he couldn't move at all.

“Jiang Chen, you really want to kill me?”

Shangguan Wei could feel the cold killing intent, and he immediately let out a loud scream.

“You were determined to kill me and take over all my wealth, that's why I can't let you go. It's better for your family not to challenge me, because if they do, it will be the Shangguan family's greatest misfortune. Now, die.”

Like an angel of death, Jiang Chen squeezed the dragon claw with a tremendous amount of force, causing bone cracking sounds to come from Shangguan Wei's body, and blood to burst out from his mouth.

“Oh heavens! He really is going to kill Shangguan Wei!”

“Is he really not afraid of the Shangguan family taking revenge?”

Many people were instantly shocked. Jiang Chen was like a mighty demon lord, and there was nothing that could cause him to feel fear.

“Stop right there!”

Right at this moment, a loud shout sounded out from within Inferno City. After that, a ghostly figure suddenly appeared in the sky. It was a man who looked to be in his forties, and he wore a bronze colored robe. From his expression, one could tell he was an overbearing man. He had a pair of bright eyes, like an eagle, causing anyone who looked into his eyes to feel fear from the bottom of their heart.

The middle-aged man had his gray hair tied up in a bun, and he moved in a ruthless manner. He was actually a Combat Soul warrior.

“He is the Combat Soul warrior in the center of Inferno City, I’ve always heard about him, and he is finally here.”

“So that’s him. I heard he has been staying in Inferno City for many years, but I have never seen him shown himself.”

The arrival of the Combat Soul warrior caused the situation to become even tenser. When the depressed Shangguan Wei saw the arrival of this Combat Soul warrior, he immediately shouted for help, “Senior, please save me!”

Jiang Chen’s face darkened. The once thing he didn’t wish for to happen after returning to Inferno City was developing an offensive relationship with this Combat Soul warrior. Because, in order to hunt for the treasure in the center of Inferno City, he needed to maintain a good relationship with this man.

But Jiang Chen really hates it when someone tries to threaten him, and this Shangguan Wei was someone he must kill.

“I asked you to stop, can’t you hear me?”

The middle-aged man sounded angry. He had unleashed his aura, and he was getting ready to pressure Jiang Chen.

“Xuan Ye.”

Right at this moment, a deep voice sounded out from the scene. Hearing someone calling his name, the middle-aged man had a change in expression, and he immediately turned toward the source. When he saw Wu Jiu, his mouth opened widely with shock, and in the next second, an extreme joyful expression emerged on his face.

Swoosh!

The middle-aged man moved and arrived in front of Wu Jiu in an instant. He didn’t even care about Shangguan Wei and Jiang Chen anymore.

“Jiu... Lord Jiu!”

When Xuan Ye shouted out the first word, he saw Wu Jiu signaling him with his eyes. He immediately changed the way he was going to address Wu Jiu.

“Xuan Ye, I never thought I’d see you here.”

Wu Jiu said with a smile, he too felt happy when seeing the middle aged man. This was his most loyal servant, and it had been ten years since they last saw each other. Of course he would feel joyful when seeing a familiar man.

“Lord Jiu, it has been ten years! Finally, I’ve found you! Xuan Ye came to Inferno Hell seven years ago, and I’ve traveled all over the place, but I just couldn’t find any traces of Lord Jiu!”

Xuan Ye bowed deeply toward Wu Jiu. His eyes turned red, and he was almost in tears. It had been seven years, and the main reason why he came to Inferno Hell was to find Wu Jiu. Just as he had almost given up, he had finally found Wu Jiu.

“Oh heavens, who is that old man? Even a Combat Soul warrior has to bow to him!”

“Where did he come from? I think he’s with Jiang Chen... Now, no one can save Shangguan Wei anymore.”

Everyone were shocked. They were all trying to guess who this Wu Jiu was, and why a Combat Soul warriors was bowing to him.

Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan’s mouths were wide open with shock, and their faces carried expressions of disbelief. It looked like Wu Jiu letting them address him as Lord Jiu was actually a

great honor, as even a Combat Soul warrior had to address him as Lord Jiu, let alone other people.

Jiang Chen felt relaxed now. He had long ago guessed that Wu Jiu came from an extraordinary background, but now it seemed more incredible than what he had expected. It looks like his decision to save Wu Jiu was spot on. Without Wu Jiu, he wouldn't be able to find the Earth Devil's location, and he would have to fight this Combat Soul warrior.

Shangguan Wei had completely lost all hope. He thought his savior was here, and he could finally keep his life. But now, his savior had switched side and become his enemy.

## Chapter 245 – Duan Jianhong’s Stratagem

---

“Lord Jiu, what happened to your cultivation?”

When Xuan Ye sensed Wu Jiu’s cultivation, his expression immediately changed.

“Don’t worry, my cultivation will recover in time. I was trapped in an isolated space for ten years, and when I was about to die, brother Jiang Chen saved my life. Without him, I would now be a dead body.”

Wu Jiu said.

“I see. Luckily, Lord Jiu is alright. I really have to thank brother Jiang!”

Hearing what Wu Jiu said, Xuan Ye’s attitude toward Jiang Chen immediately changed. Since Jiang Chen was Wu Jiu’s savior, that man he was also Xuan Ye’s savoir. Because in Xuan Ye’s mind, Wu Jiu’s life was hundreds of times more precious than his own.

Now, Shangguan Wei had offended Jiang Chen. If Jiang Chen didn’t kill him, Xuan Ye would kill Shangguan Wei instead.

“Senior, please save me!”

Shangguan Wei’s face had become red, and he kept shouting at

Xuan Ye with a shrill voice. His voice had become hoarse become of the screaming. The gigantic dragon claw was crushing him like a gigantic mountain, and it was coming from all directions.

“Shangguan Wei, since you have made a mistake, you’ll have to bear the consequences yourself. It’s up to brother Jiang to decide what to do with you, I’m not involved in this matter.”

Xuan Ye said in a stiff manner. However, his words were like a death sentence for Shangguan Wei.

Ahh!!

Just as Xuan Ye finished his words, Shangguan Wei immediately let out a mournful blood-curdling screech. He had been killed by the True Dragon Palm in a miserable way. At this point of time, over 20 Late Divine Core warriors had died, and the entire scene was filled with pungent smell of blood. Broken limbs and dead bodies were scattered all over the place; it was a bloody and cruel scene.

What happened today would definitely be remembered by everyone at the scene. Jiang Chen’s ferocious reputation would also be heard by generation to come. Compared to those wild demons and devils, Jiang Chen was the true bloodthirsty demon lord.

The death of all these Late Divine Core warriors didn’t mean the end of this battle. After Jiang Chen killed Shangguan Wei, he turned his sight to the nearly 20 remaining Mid Divine Core

warriors.

The expressions of these men changed dramatically; their faces paled in an instant, and some were even trembling because of fear. Just a look from Jiang Chen had caused them to see the gates leading to hell.

“Lord Jiu, he has killed a lot of men, and if we let him continue, more than half the warriors in Inferno City will have been killed by him.”

Xuan Ye whispered to Wu Jiu. He had stayed in Inferno City for seven years, and although there were constant conflicts and fights, making it seem like human lives were worthless in this place; slaughtering so many people along, like Jiang Chen did, it was the first time something like this had ever happened in Inferno City.

“So what? They deserve it.”

Wu Jiu stared blankly at Xuan Ye.

“Understood.”

Xuan Ye immediately bowed toward Wu Jiu; he dared not neglect Wu Jiu’s words. In the entire Martial Saint Dynasty, there weren’t really anyone who dared neglect Wu Jiu’s words.

“Chief Jiang, please spare my life, I’m willing to hand over all my belongings!”



“Me too! I was blind to offend chief Jiang, I hope chief Jiang can forgive me and let me go! I’ll give you all my belongings!”

“Right, we will hand over everything we got, we won’t even leave behind a single pill, it will all belong to chief Jiang!”

.....

There were few who truly didn’t fear death. The more fiendish a man was, the more scared of death he was. When the shadow of death was cast above the head, whatever wealth a man possessed become worthless, and the most important thing was to keep living. There was always an opportunity to find more wealth, but a man only lived once, and once life ended, it was completely gone.

“Hand over all your belongings, then each of you cut off one arm.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

“What?! Cut off my arm?”

Someone exclaimed. But, his ending was similar to that of the previous man. Right as his words left his mouth, he was slashed in half by a single sword strike.

“I do not show mercy upon those who have tried to kill me.

Asking for one arm is the lightest punishment I can bestow upon you. I'll count to three, those who are not willing to do it, die. Don't think I'm joking, none of you are qualified for my jokes."

Jiang Chen gazed at all the men from left to right. His gaze was like razor sharp edge scratching their faces, causing the fear in their minds to increase.

"Damn it, I'll do it, it's just one arm; it is worth less than my life!"

Many men made up their minds. With combat weapon in hand, they cut off one of their arms while gritting their teeth. No one thought Jiang Chen was joking, he was not someone who joked a lot. So many Late Divine Core warriors were killed by him, even Shangguan Wei was killed by him. If Jiang Chen wanted to kill them, it wouldn't take him too much effort.

Before Jiang Chen started counting, all the men sliced off their own arm. After that, they handed all their belongings over to Jiang Chen in a respectful manner, including the combat weapon in their hands.

For these Mid Divine Core warriors, losing an arm wasn't really a serious injury. If they could obtain good treatment in time, although they still wouldn't be able to get their arms back; losing an arm wouldn't really affect their cultivation.

Jiang Chen took all the storage rings and combat weapons, then he stored it all in his storage ring. At the same time, Big Yellow

came up to Jiang Chen while bouncing around excitedly, then he handed all his harvest over to Jiang Chen.

“Kaka, buddy, we’re rich now! The wealth we obtained in the outer perimeter can’t compare with what these men possessed! Buddy, you’re an enormous treasure vault right now, in the future, when daddy wants to eat natural essences, you’ll have to give me!”

Big Yellow said as his tail wagged back and forth.

“No problem.”

Jiang Chen patted the dog’s head. As long as he had it, he would give Big Yellow anything he wanted without hesitation.

After that, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow turned around and went to Wu Jiu.

“Chief Jiang, you’re such a mighty man!”

Wang Heng stared at Jiang Chen while blinking his eyes; he absolutely worshipped Jiang Chen. Even Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan worshiped him. The gap between them and Jiang Chen was not small. As haughty men, if they could accomplish what Jiang Chen had, that would be enough glory for a lifetime to them.

“Brother Jiang, thank you for saving Lord Jiu’s life! Please accept my gratitude.”

Xuan Ye cupped his fist toward Jiang Chen and bowed deeply.

Looking at this, Jiang Chen immediately extended his hand and stopped Xuan Ye from bowing, “Brother Xuan, no need to be so polite. I felt like I was meeting an old friend when I first saw brother Jiu, of course I would save my old friend.”

Jiang Chen was being polite while talking to Xuan Ye. Firstly, Xuan Ye was Wu Jiu’s friend, and that also meant he was one of them. Secondly, Xuan Ye had stayed in Inferno City for seven years, he was surely familiar with everything here, and he might be able to provide great help with hunting for the treasure. He could perhaps even help later on when fighting the Earth Devil. Xuan Ye was after all a Combat Soul warrior.

“Brother Jiang, let me introduce, Xuan Ye is my friend. All these years, he has willingly stayed in the harsh Inferno Hell, just because he was searching for me.”

Wu Jiu said as he patted Xuan Ye’s shoulder. He felt glad because of Xuan Ye’s loyalty.

“It is really good for brother Jiu to have such a good friend.”

Jiang Chen praised. A man willing to stay in this harsh environment just because he wanted to searching for his friend, just the determination and purpose alone was enough to deserve respect from everyone.

“Alright, brother Jiang, we should continue our business.”

Wu Jiu said.

“Lord Jiu, what business do you have?”

Xuan Ye asked.

“Let’s go, we’ll talk in the center of Inferno City.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Fine, please follow me.”

Xuan Ye turned around and started flying toward Inferno City. Jiang Chen, Wu Jiu and the rest of them followed closely behind. It had been seven years, and Xuan Ye could basically be considered the master of Inferno City. He would walk around in the city like it was his own backyard.

.....

Qi Province, Heavenly Sword Sect!

Within a grand palace located in the heart of the Heavenly Sword Sect, a couple of men were sitting on both sides of a hall, and a

middle-aged man was sitting in a grand chair right in front of everyone. The man was quite fat, and he had a greasy face, giving everyone an impression that he was on a hefty diet. But, he had a pair of bright eyes that caused anyone who stared into them to lose themselves, as well as a natural dignity and a face that portrayed great power.

This man was the Heavenly Sword Sect's Sect Chief, Duan Jianhong. Right now, a gloomy and heavy hearted expression could be seen on his face. All these men were the Divine Core Sect Elders of the Heavenly Sword Sect, and they too had worried expressions.

“Hmph! This is going too far, who does that Nanbei Chao think he is? Who gave him the audacity to ask us to submit to him in three days; what a joke!”

One of the Sect Elders let out a cold snort.

“That Nanbei Chao has merely broken through to the Mid Divine Core realm, but it has caused him to become so presumptuous, this is ridiculous!”

“You’re right! No matter how much of a genius he is, he’s still only a Mid Divine Core warrior, he’s no match for Sect Chief!”

All Sect Elders were burning with rage. No matter what, the Heavenly Sword Sect was one of the biggest sects in the Qi Province, and now, someone had placed a knife on their throat. Of course they wouldn’t accept it.

“Sect Chief, what should we do?”

Everyone looked at Duan Jianhong.

“Don’t underestimate Nanbei Chao, he is a man with great talent, and he’s a peerless genius. Since he has the courage to make such an arrogant statement, I’m sure he has some powerful approaches.”

Duan Jianhong squinted his eyes and said indifferently. A look of intelligence could be seen in his eyes.

“So, what does Sect Chief want us to do?”

Someone asked.

“What I want is simple, we’ll surrender to Nanbei Chao.”

Duan Jianhong said.

“What? Surrender? Sect Chief, Nanbei Chao is merely a Mid Divine Core warrior who has just broken through, I don’t think he’s that strong, so why should we surrender?”

“I agree! No matter what, the Heavenly Sword Sect is one of the biggest sects in the Qi Province, we can’t surrender just like that.”

None of the Sect Elders agreed with the decision. Surrendering even before the fighting began? This was just hopelessly stupid!

“You guys know nothing; a little impatience spoils great plans. Do you think I am a man who is willing to surrender? Can’t you guys just use your brains?”

Duan Jianhong gazed at all the Sect Elders.

“Does Sect Chief have a strategy?”

Someone asked.

“Of course! Nanbei Chao and Zhao Chongyang are trying to rule the entire Qi Province. I, Duan Jianhong want to rule the entire Qi Province as well. Amongst all four big sects, with the exception of the Valley of Happiness, all of us have the same dream, but we haven’t had the opportunity to accomplish this. Now, a perfect opportunity has presented itself to us, the Heavenly Sword Sect is going to rule the entire Qi Province!”

A grin emerged on Duan Jianhong’s face.

“Sect Chief, please enlighten us.”

A Sect Elder said.



“I told you before; since Nanbei Chao has the courage to ask us to submit to him, I’m sure he has a strategy. But, it’s just like you said, none of the four big sects in the Qi Province is an easy target. Therefore, I’ll pretend to surrender to the Burning Sky Pavilion, and with this, we’ll be able to preserve our full strength. With Nanbei Chao and Zhao Chongyang’s character, I’m sure they will attack the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness. At that point of time, we’ll be able to witness Nanbei Chao’s strategy and approaches. Their battle will certainly cause damage to all parties, and that will be the perfect time for the Heavenly Sword Sect to reap the harvest!”

Duan Jianhong’s eyes blinking. He was a brilliant man who had the ability to give thorough thought on anything he was going to do.

# Chapter 246 – Blood Red Dragon Statue On The Ancient Stone Door

---

This was Duan Jianhong's wishful plan. In his opinion, Nanbei Chao's threat toward the Heavenly Sword Sect was actually the perfect opportunity for the Heavenly Sword Sect to rule the entire Qi Province.

"Sect Chief, if we really surrender to Nanbei Chao, the Heavenly Sword Sect's reputation is going to be greatly affected."

One of the noble Sect Elders said.

"Reputation? This is a world where absolute powers rules; the winner gets to write the history! As long as we come out victorious to rule the entire Qi Province, who will care about what happened before? At that moment, we will be the only power in the Qi Province, and we might even get the Martial Saint Dynasty's attention!"

Duan Jianhong's eyes were flickering with intelligence.

"What Sect Chief said is right, this is the perfect opportunity for the Heavenly Sword Sect, and if we miss it, we won't have the same opportunity again. All of the four big sects are very powerful, and in order to destroy one sect, the opponent will have to pay a heavy price, allowing yet another sect to sweep in and harvest the fruits of labor. Therefore, no one really dares initiate a war, and this is the reason why the Qi Province has always maintained the same structured. But now, Nanbei Chao is going to break this

structure, and rule the entire Qi Province. This is definitely a tough mission. If Nanbei Chao, the Burning Sky Pavilion, the Black Sect, and the Valley of Happiness are all weakened by the war, the Heavenly Sword Sect will be the biggest winner. Therefore, surrendering to Nanbei Chao and the Burning Sky Pavilion is actually a really good choice right now.”

Someone said. He really admired Duan Jianhong’s strategy.

“In that case, although the Heavenly Sword Sect’s reputation will be affected, this is indeed a rare opportunity for us.”

Many people nodded their heads. They agreed that Duan Jianhong’s strategy made sense. With this, not only could they preserve their strength, it would also create a once in a lifetime opportunity for them. Most importantly, the Heavenly Sword Sect couldn’t be the first one to fight the Burning Sky Pavilion, because if they did, the Black Sect would benefit the most.

“But, if the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness also decide to surrender to Nanbei Chao, our plan won’t work.”

A Sect Elder worriedly said.

“You don’t have to worry about that. I know Daoist Black’s character really well, he is a stubborn man, and he would rather fight than surrender to Nanbei Chao. There is absolutely no way Daoist Black will surrender to Nanbei Chao and the Burning Sky Pavilion, there will definitely be a war between them. As for the Valley of Happiness, they all carry evil influences, so you can

actually call them an evil clan. Their Chief, Granny Feng is a person with a unique and independent character, she would never let anyone restrict her. Therefore, the Valley of Happiness won't surrender either. After we surrender, Granny Feng and Daoist Black will look down on me from the bottom of their hearts, but that's nothing. I, Duan Jianhong am a man who will achieve big things, I won't be bothered by these personal opinions."

Duan Jianhong said with a grin. His intelligence was higher than his height, he had a clear view on the overall situation of the Qi Province, as well as a detailed understanding of his enemies. A man like him would definitely live longer than anyone else.

.....

In the center of Inferno City, there stood a tall black palace. Layers of fog hovered around the palace, giving it a sense of ancientness. Under Xuan Ye's lead, the few men entered the palace.

"This is the center of Inferno City, but within a hundred mile radius, no one except me can come here with ease unless I'm hosting a trading event. But, since all the warriors in Inferno City have been robbed by brother Jiang, I don't think it's necessary to host a trading event any more..."

Xuan Ye said with a smile on his face. He had now finally found Wu Jiu; 7 years of relentless searching had finally come to a happy end. He couldn't help but feel happy and relaxed.

“Let’s get back to topic. Xuan Ye, do you know about any treasures that exist in the center of Inferno City?”

Wu Jiu asked.

“I’m sure there is a treasure here, and it’s restraining those demons and devils. If not, Inferno City would long ago have been destroyed. However, I haven’t found it in these seven years I’ve been here.”

Xuan Ye said as he furrowed his brows.

“The treasure is hidden within this palace, I can sense it now.”

Big Yellow said as his ears stood up.

Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye threw their eyes toward Big Yellow at the same time. Both of them were surprised. Although this dog seemed pretty amazing, he was only an Early Divine Core demon beast. A treasure that even they, Combat Soul warriors couldn’t sense... how could Big Yellow sense it?

“Big Yellow has a special treasure hunting ability. The more precious a treasure is, the clearer he is able to sense it. Since he sensed it just now, I’m sure the treasure is hidden somewhere within this palace.

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. His purpose when coming here was mainly to find this treasure. Only with the treasure could he

possibly defeat the Earth Devil.

“Big Yellow, can you sense exactly where the treasure is located?”

Jiang Chen looked at Big Yellow and asked.

“The treasure’s aura is pretty weak, let me try again.”

After saying that, Big Yellow closed his eyes. All the men held their breath, and dared not speak a word. After three minutes, Big Yellow suddenly opened his eyes, then he turned around and gazed at the inner part of the palace.

“There it is.”

Under Big Yellow’s lead, everyone walked in the direction he looked, then they came in front of a wall that seemed ordinary.

“This is just a normal wall, there is nothing special about it.”

Guan Yiyun said.

“Little Chen, scrape the outer layer stone.”

Big Yellow said.

Jiang Chen drew out the Bloodthirsty Sword, and with a swing

he scraped away the surface of the wall, revealing an ancient stone door.

“There is a hidden door behind the wall! How come I never discovered this?”

The surprised Xuan Ye stared at the wall with wide eyes.

Jiang Chen squinted his eyes. It was perfectly normal that Xuan Ye didn't discover this. It would be amazing if could discover it. The door was hidden behind a wall, and even he, the once greatest Saint in the world wouldn't pay any attention to a wall. Only Big Yellow who had sensitive senses toward treasure could find it.

“There's a carving on the stone door, it looks like a dragon.”

Tian Yishan said.

All the men looked at the stone door; there was a blood red dragon statue carved on the door. It was a mighty dragon statue. Although it was unknown when this dragon had been carved, it still gave these men a feeling that it was alive. The blood red dragon's body was leaned forwards, and its mouth was wide open, as if it was letting out a furious roar towards the heavens.

The blood red dragon's posture was overbearing and prideful, as if it was the only supreme existence in the world.

“The legendary True Dragon, they only exist in the higher

realms. The dragon is just a legendary creature in the Saint Origin realm. Rumors say that in ancient times, a powerful flood dragon cultivated into a true dragon, but that's just a myth."

Wu Jiu said. None of these men could hold themselves from looking at Jiang Chen. All of them had witnessed Jiang Chen unleash the True Dragon Palm; the dragon claw he unleashed look real and mystical.

"Why is there a carving of a true dragon here?"

Big Yellow was puzzled. He possessed the Dragon Horse bloodline that had been passed down since the ancient era, and he had dragon's essence in his body.

"Let's not focus on that for now. The treasure should be behind this stone door, let's open it up."

Wu Jiu said.

"Let me do it."

Guan Yiyun took a step forward, then he placed both hands on the stone door and pushed with all his strength. But, nothing seemed to happen.

"This stone door is really heavy, I can't push it open with my raw strength. Looks like I have to use my yuan energy."



A terrified expression emerged onto Guan Yiyun's face. In an instant, he circulated his yuan energy to his palm, causing the palm to start emitting a bright light. After that, with a tremendous amount of force, he pushed toward the stone door.

Crack crack!

Finally, cracking sound could be heard from the stone door that hadn't been opened for an unknown amount of years. But, with Guan Yiyun's strength, he could only make the door produce some cracking sounds. Just as he was going to continue pushing, beams of blood red light suddenly shot out from behind the stone door.

Bang! Ahh!

Guan Yiyun let out a miserable cry as he was suddenly knocked back. With sharp eyes and quick movement, Jiang Chen immediately pulled Guan Yiyun back.

Puh!

A mouthful of blood left Guan Yiyun's mouth, and his body was trembling.

“What a powerful red light!”

Guan Yiyun said in shock.

“Looks like the treasure is hidden behind this stone door, let me give it a try.”

Xuan Ye took a step forward and arrived in front of the stone door. Everyone back off and cleared the area for him. A serious expression emerged on their faces; this stone door was really mystical, it could attack by itself, and even a Divine Core warrior couldn't open it.

Ha!

Xuan Ye let out a loud shout, then he pushed his bright golden palm onto the stone door.

Bang...

Xuan Ye's strength kept coming from his body in a spectacular manner. It was not something Guan Yiyun could compare with. But, in the next second, more blood red lights shot out from the stone door.

Bang!

Just like Guan Yiyun, the powerful Xuan Ye was knocked back by the blood red light as well. His body was slammed into the opposite wall, and blood could be seen dripping down from his lips.

“Terrifying! If I had reacted a little bit slower, perhaps I would have suffered from a deadly injury just now!”

Xuan Ye showed a frightened expression. The blood red lights were like the most ferocious wild beasts; they attacked with mighty momentum, and even a Combat Soul warrior couldn't withstand the attack.

“How can this happen?”

Wu Jiu furrowed his brows.

“Even a Combat Soul warrior can't open this stone door. This means there is no way we can get hold of the treasure behind it.”

Tian Yishan was extremely shocked.

“This is terrible! What's actually hidden behind the door? Even a Combat Soul warrior can't touch, no wonder why no monsters dare come close to Inferno City.”

“What should we do now?”

All of them had ghastly expressions. Jiang Chen was also furrowing his brows. He didn't think this was the situation they were going to face.

“I too have no idea how to open this stone door.”

Big Yellow shook his head. Although he could sense the existence of the treasure, he had no idea how to actually open the door.

Buzz buzz!

Right at this moment, buzzing sounds could be heard from the stone door. After that, beams of blood red light shot out from the blood red dragon statue. The scene frightened everyone, and they all fell back quickly. However, Jiang Chen wasn't moving.

The blood red light's target wasn't them, it was Jiang Chen. When the blood red lights came out, they directly covered Jiang Chen, but they didn't show any sign of attacking him.

“Look, those blood red lights didn't hurt chief Jiang!”

Wang Heng exclaimed.

“Those blood red lights are really powerful, but why didn't they hurt brother Jiang? This is unbelievable!”

Xuan Ye was astounded with eyes wide open.

“All the treasure that have sentience can only be obtained by those who were born with great destiny. Brother Jiang is a man with a great destiny, so I guess only brother Jiang can open this stone door.”

Wu Jiu said. The blood red lights didn't hurt Jiang Chen, and that was the best proof for his explanation.

## Chapter 247 – Mysterious Blood Talisman

---

Wu Jiu, Xuan Ye and all the other people were stunned. They kept staring at Jiang Chen who was covered by the blood red lights. They couldn't believe what they were looking at, especially Xuan Ye and Guan Yiyun. Both of them were assaulted by these blood red lights, and they knew how terrifying it was. But, Jiang Chen seemed like he was unharmed, even though he was completely covered by them.

“The blood red light has accepted Little Chen!”

Big Yellow's eyes lit up.

Right at this moment, Jiang Chen was completely covered by the blood red lights. Not only did he feel no fear or threat, he felt like he was showering in the warmest sunlight; it was extremely comfortable. The blood red lights were gently rubbing themselves on his body, expressing their intimacy with Jiang Chen.

“It looks like these blood red lights have sentience, but why do they show their intimacy to me? I've never seen anything like this before, and it's also the first time I've seen that blood red dragon carving on the stone door.”

Jiang Chen was surprised, he never thought that this could happen. After seeing how Xuan Ye and Guan Yiyun were injured by these blood red lights, he thought he wouldn't be able to get the treasure anymore. He had never thought that these blood red lights would come to him by themselves.

“Regardless of why this is happening, I’ll have to go behind the stone door and get the treasure, then I’ll use it to deal with the Earth Devil.”

Jiang Chen had the ability to remain calm under any emergency. And since the blood red lights didn’t harm him, it was actually good news.

“Buddy, try and push the stone door and see if you can open it. Those blood red lights have accepted you; that means only you can open the stone door. If you fail, we’ll never be able to get the treasure behind the door.

Big Yellow said.

“Alright.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. Walking with big steps, he arrived in front of the stone door. He slowly extended both hands and place them on the door, then he started pushing with tremendous force. However, the door was still not moving, and there were more blood red lights shooting out from. Although the lights didn’t attacked him, and showed the same intimacy as before, they still showed no sign of moving aside and letting the door open.

“Since these blood red lights have accepted me, why can I still not open the door? I’ll try with my yuan energy.”

After that, Jiang Chen began circulating the Dragon Transformation skill. Just as he began to circulate it in order to open the door, clicking sounds immediately from the stone door. It had opened up by itself. At the same time, the blood red lights were wildly bouncing around, as if they were filled with joy and excitement.

“Look, the stone door is slowly opening, chief Jiang isn’t being attacked by those blood red lights!”

Wang Heng said in a surprised manner.

Pop!

The stone door was completely opened, and a deep popping sound could be heard after. Then, countless dazzling blood red lights shot out from behind the door. They were so bright that everyone were forced to close their eyes.

Finally, everyone opened their eyes when the lights started dimming down. They immediately looked at the scene behind the stone door. It was a completely sealed secret chamber, and there was nothing there except for a blood red talisman hovering in the center. Aside from the talisman, nothing else could be found. All those blood red lights were actually unleashed by this blood red talisman.

“Look, it’s a blood talisman!”



Guan Yiyun said.

Buzz...

The mysterious blood talisman was hovering in middle of the air, and it kept producing buzzing sounds. At the same time, a divine and ancient aura was constantly leaking out from it. It was so dazzling that it was difficult to stare right at it. On the surface of this blood talisman, mysterious carved patterns could be seen, and even Jiang Chen couldn't understand the meaning of these patterns.

“What is this blood talisman? I can actually feel that it's sentient!”

Xuan Ye was really astonished by it.

“A supreme aura! It looks like this talisman represented something mighty, an existence even I can't tell what is.”

Wu Jiu was shocked as well. It was just a talisman, but it had given them a rare feeling, as if they were looking at a supreme lord standing in front of them, and causing them to want to worship it from the bottom of their hearts.

“I don't know why, but when looking at this blood talisman, my bloodline began fluctuating. I'm sure this blood talisman is the reason why those demons and devils haven't dared attack Inferno City.”

Big Yellow kept staring at the blood talisman with bright eyes. He had a rarely seen serious expression on his face.

Jiang Chen took two steps forward and entered the secret chamber. He looked up at the blood talisman, then a puzzled look emerged in his eyes. For an unknown reason, he actually felt a brief kinship toward the blood talisman.

This was an absurd feeling. Past life and current life, Jiang Chen was pretty sure he had never seen this blood talisman before, and he had no relation with this blood talisman. However, the feeling of kinship came from his soul, it was an uncertain feeling that really existed.

Jiang Chen extended his hand, then, as if the blood talisman could sense Jiang Chen's movement, it jumped into his palm by itself. The palm-sized blood talisman was violently pulsating as it fell into Jiang Chen's palm. Jiang Chen could clearly feel the blood talisman's excitement. This was just a talisman, not a living creature, but it actually had its own mind.

When Jiang Chen stroked the blood talisman, his Dragon Transformation skill began circulating without his control. Jiang Chen was startled by this change. Ever since he had begun cultivating this skill, this was the first time something like this had happened. It was just a skill, but why was it circulating itself without its master's control? This was bizarre!

As the Dragon Transformation's skill circulation became faster

and faster, the intimate feeling between the blood talisman and Jiang Chen's soul was getting stronger and stronger, giving Jiang Chen a feeling that he and this blood talisman was actually just one entity.

“What's happening? Why do I have such a strong feeling of kinship toward it? Perhaps this blood talisman is related to the Dragon Transformation skill?”

Jiang Chen was truly shocked. Even with his strong mind, he still felt that this was really crazing. He had lived two lives, and was once the greatest Saint in the world. He had gone through death and come back to life; his experiences had given him a strong mind that no one else could compare with. However, what was happening right now had once again distracted his soul.

“Little Chen, just what is this blood talisman actually?”

Big Yellow asked.

Jiang Chen turned around and looked at everyone in confusion, then he shook his head and said, “I don't know.”

“How can you not know? Only you could get hold of this blood talisman, and if you don't know what it is, how are you going to use it to deal with the Earth Devil?”

Big Yellow said in a hopeless manner.

“I really have no idea what it is. But, what I do know is, with this blood talisman, we’ll be able to deal with the Earth Devil. Or, put it this way, it can help us restrain the Earth Devil.”

After all, Jiang Chen was a man with a strong mind. In just a short moment, he had regained his calm from the confused state. Then, he walked out from the secret chamber with blood talisman in hand.

“So this is the treasure hidden in Inferno City. This place has existed for such a long time, and this is the first time someone has discovered the blood talisman.”

Xuan Ye said as he stared at the blood talisman in Jiang Chen’s palm.

“But we don’t know what the use this blood talisman is, and we also don’t know how much power it can release.”

Wang Heng said while curling his lips.

“Even a Combat Soul warrior was injured by the blood red lights unleashed by it, what do you think?”

Yang Meng slapped Wang Heng’s head and gave him a look of disdain.

“Brother Jiang, what did you say just now? Use this blood talisman to deal with the Earth Devil?”

Xuan Ye recalled Jiang Chen's words just now, and immediately asked him with a surprised expression.

“That's right. My purpose for coming to Inferno Hell is to kill the Earth Devil, as I need its demon soul. However, this Earth Devil is too strong, and there is no way we can defeat it. But, with this blood talisman's help, I'm sure it will help us greatly with restraining the Earth Devil, and that will give us the perfect opportunity to kill it.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Xuan Ye, you have to help brother Jiang kill the Earth Devil.”

Wu Jiu said.

“Of course. However, that Earth Devil is really strong, I actually fought it once.”

Xuan Ye said. He could still remember the scene where he fought the Earth Devil, and it still gave him a daunting feeling.

“What? You've fought the Earth Devil before? That means you know where to find it?”

Jiang Chen looked at Xuan Ye. Those words were really good news.

“That was two years ago. I went to the center of Inferno Hell when searching for Lord Jiu, then I bumped into the Earth Devil. Its cultivation was stronger than mine, but with its mighty devilish force and incredible combat strength, we fought intensely, and I was no match for it at all. Finally, I was able to escape from the fight, badly wounded. Since then, two years have passed, and I’m afraid the Earth Devil is even stronger now. It might not have broken through to the Mid Combat Soul realm, but I’m sure it’s at least a peak Combat Soul monster. I don’t really know its exact condition, as I only bumped into it by accident.”

Xuan Ye explained what happened. He hadn’t found the devil cave yet, or else, he might already have found a trace of Wu Jiu.

“Enter the devil cave, we’ll definitely find the Earth Devil in there.”

Wu Jiu concluded.

“Haha, what are we waiting for? Let’s proceed to the devil cave now!”

Big Yellow was really excited. He could still remember being hunted by the Combat Soul Evil Devil back in the devil cave, and it gave him a really bad memory. Now, he wanted to return and get revenge.

“We don’t have to rush. Although we’ve obtained the blood talisman, we can’t allow any accidents to happen while dealing

with the Earth Devil. Brother Xuan Ye was wounded by the blood red lights, so let's wait for him to recover before we proceed to the devil cave. At the same time, all of us will use this time to adjust our conditions. I'll give brother Jiu some pills and natural essences that can help speed up his recovery, then we'll proceed to the devil cave in three days."

Jiang Chen strengthened his spirit. He didn't want any unforeseen accidents to happen. Although their time was limited, and he had to kill the Earth Devil as soon as possible, Jiang Chen didn't like to start a battle without confidence, especially since this concerned Han Yan's life.

"Alright, we'll do as you said."

Wu Jiu nodded his head. Although he had recovered to the Early Divine Core realm, in order to deal with the Earth Devil, this cultivation level was worthless. With three days, and a huge amount of natural essences and pills, he was confident he could go back to the peak Divine Core realm. With his cultivation base at the peak Divine Core realm, his combat strength could be considered equal to an ordinary Combat Soul warrior's combat strength. At that point of time, with Xuan Ye's help, their chances of defeating the Earth Devil would be greater.

Jiang Chen had robbed nearly all the warriors in Inferno City, and his wealth was so enormous that it could actually pile up into a gigantic mountain. There were all sorts of pills and medicines in his storage rings, almost an endless supply.

Jiang Chen also needed some time to stabilize his cultivation.

Also, with three days' time, he could spend some time researching the blood talisman.

.....

Three days flashed by. Outside the Burning Sky Pavilion, Duan Jianhong brought a couple of Divine Core Sect Elders from the Heavenly Sword Sect, and arrived at the Burning Sky Pavilion before Nanbei Chao's deadline. They were ready to surrender.



## Chapter 248 – Returning To The Devil Cave

---

Duan Jianhong met with Nanbei Chao and Zhao Chongyang and expressed the Heavenly Sword Sect's willingness to surrender, then promised to obey all of the Burning Sky Pavilion's orders without hesitation. After that, he returned to the Heavenly Sword Sect with all the Sect Elders.

“Did you see that? Even the Heavenly Sword Sect surrendered to use! From now on, the Qi Province will belong to the Burning Sky Pavilion.”

“That Duan Jianhong is a coward, he just surrendered without even fighting back. What an unexpected decision. I thought there would be a tough fight between us.”

“This tells us that Duan Jianhong is a man who knows which way the wind blows; he knew there wouldn't be any good outcome if he were to fight senior disciple Nanbei. Therefore, surrendering to us is their best option.”

.....

All the disciples from the Burning Sky Pavilion were discussing the recent events, and prideful expressions could be seen on their faces. Even a big sect like the Heavenly Sword Sect had come forth and surrendered. This made them all prideful for being disciples of the Burning Sky Pavilion.

Within the inner area of the Burning Sky Pavilion, Nanbei Chao

and Zhao Chongyang were sitting opposite of each other.

“I really didn’t think that Duan Jianhong would actually surrender to us.”

Zhao Chongyang still couldn’t believe what had happened.

“Hmph! Duan Jianhong is man full of schemes, you think he was sincere in surrendering? He just wants to preserve the Heavenly Sword Sect’s strength; he wants to see how we’re going to deal with the Black Sect and the Valley of Happiness. When all of us are weakened form the fighting, he will swoop in and try to destroy us all.”

Nanbei Chao let out a cold snort. Although Duan Jianhong was a wise man, he couldn’t hide his brilliant plan from Nanbei Chao.

“If that’s the case, we should just kill them directly. Let’s destroy the Heavenly Sword Sect first.”

Zhao Chongyang said with an angry expression.

“We don’t have to. After all, they have surrendered to us, so I won’t attack them. I want to let this Duan Jianhong witness my real strength, let him know how stupid his strategy is. Besides, since the Heavenly Sword Sect has surrendered to us, I won’t let them just sit back and relax, I’ll give them some tasks. Send my order to the Black Sect and the Valley of Happiness, I want them to surrender to me in seven days.”

Nanbei Chao said.

“With Daoist Black and Granny Feng’s character, they won’t surrender.”

Zhao Chongyang shook his head.

“I know. If they don’t surrender, I’ll just destroy them.”

Nanbei Chao said with ultimate arrogance.

“Since we’re going to strike anyways, why are we giving those guys seven days to consider? Why not just attack now? Seven days would give them enough time to prepare to fight back.”

Zhao Chongyang looked at Nanbei Chao, puzzled.

“I gave the Heavenly Sword Sect three days. So for the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness, I’ll give those guys seven days. I just want them to have the time to prepare. Even if both of them group together and fight back, I’ll still destroy them no matter what. For me, slaughtering the Black Sect, Valley of Happiness, or any other sect alone is not challenging at all. Why not just let them group together?”

Nanbei Chao said with a grin on his face. He was a man with the mightiest pride, he thought nothing of them at all. In his mind, the

other three big sects in the Qi Province were just some stepping stones for him to become the overlord of this land.

.....

At the same time, within the palace located in the center of Inferno City.

After three days of resting, Xuan Ye had recovered to his peak form. Even more exciting, with the help from all sorts of natural essences, Wu Jiu recovered to the peak Divine Core realm. Although it was only the Divine Core realm, since he had a strong foundation of being a peak Combat Soul warrior, together with some extraordinary skills that he knew; he could actually fight a Combat Soul warrior such as Xuan Ye with only his peak Divine Core cultivation.

Jiang Chen was surprised by another good news as well; in the past three days, Big Yellow had broken through to the Mid Divine Core realm. Together with Jiang Chen, this group of men could sweep across the entire Inferno Hell without much resistance.

In addition, after Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan had completely healed their injuries, both of them had broken through to the Mid Divine Core realm as well, and they were much stronger compared to before.

“Brother, with my current condition, I can finally help you with your mission.”

Wu Jiu's eyes were glowing; portraying a brimming energy.

“Kaka, this master dog has broken through to another level, who dares challenge me now?!”

Big Yellow laughed out heartily, incredibly excited.

“Perfect, let's proceed to the devil cave now!”

Jiang Chen strengthened his spirit. Right now, there were only seven more days until the doorway to the outside world opened up, and he had to kill the Earth Devil as soon as possible. Since his group had such an incredible force, and he possessed the blood talisman; as long as they could find the Earth Devil, Jiang Chen was confident they would be able to defeat it.

“Junior disciple Jiang, what about us?”

Guan Yiyun asked.

“Senior disciple Guan, brother Tian, I don't think you can provide much help with this. You guys just stay here and focus on healing your injuries, we will return once we've killed the Earth Devil. Then, we'll leave Inferno Hell seven days later.”

Jiang Chen said as he patted Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan's shoulders.

“Alright, if this is the case, be careful, junior disciple Jiang.”

Guan Yiyun said with some concern. He and Tian Yishan didn't have any dissatisfaction with Jiang Chen's decision; they understood that if they didn't do as he said, with their cultivation, the outcome would be the same as previously. Not only would they not be able to provide any help, they would become burden for Jiang Chen.

After that, Jiang Chen, Wu Jiu, Xuan Ye and Big Yellow left Inferno City and started flying toward the depths of Inferno Hell.

“Brother Jiang, where is the devil cave located?”

Xuan Ye asked.

“We'll follow the route I took last time and find two tall trees.”

Jiang Chen followed the route he took last time, and soon, they found two tall trees.

“There is an invisible natural formation between these two trees. Walk through them, then we'll arrive at the devil cave.”

Jiang Chen explained. Without hesitation, the group walked straight through.

Swoosh!

Chilly wind kept blowing by, and devilish energies filled the place. Jiang Chen and the group arrived at the same spot as last time. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow could remember this well, as this was where they had been ambushed by Evil Devils, and in the end, had attracted the Combat Soul Evil Devil that had chased them into the Poisonous Miasma Space.

“We will slaughter our way to the center of this devil cave where there is a devil palace, and a Combat Soul Evil Devil living there. We’ll have to make this place chaotic and kill it. At that point of time, I believe the Earth Devil will make its appearance.”

Jiang Chen said.

“The Combat Soul Evil Devil isn’t easy to deal with. Once we see it later one, brother Jiang, you can use the blood talisman straight away. We can use this opportunity to assess its power.”

Xuan Ye suggested.

“No, the blood talisman is for the Earth Devil. If I use it before that, the Earth Devil will be able to sense its aura, then it will be scared and go hide itself. If that happens, all our plans and strategies will go to waste. Therefore, we have to depend on ourselves in order to defeat the Combat Soul Evil Devil.”

Jiang Chen had given it thorough thought, he knew the importance of the blood talisman. It was hidden in Inferno City, and it was the reason why no monsters dared come close. If he

used it now, the Earth Devil would surely sense it and be alerted, then it would be almost impossible for them to kill it.

“What brother Jiang said is correct. Before the Earth Devil appears, we can’t use the blood talisman; we have to depend on ourselves to defeat the Combat Soul Evil Devil.”

Wu Jiu nodded his head, he couldn’t agree more on what Jiang Chen said.



## Chapter 249 – The Dao Of War

---

The Blood Talisman's aura was too strong, it would attract the attention of all Evil Devils once it was revealed, and when the Earth Devil sensed the Blood Talisman's aura, it would certainly hide and put their effort to waste.

“Everyone, be extra careful, that Combat Soul Evil Devil is really powerful.”

Jiang Chen reminded everyone. Then, he took the lead and started flying toward the depths of the place.

Xuan Ye had a serious look on his face. Although he was an Early Combat Soul warrior, no human warrior could gain an advantage when fighting an Evil Devil at the same level. Not everyone was an abnormal monster like Jiang Chen, and not everyone possessed the True Dragon Flame.

Roar!

Soon, the Evil Devils in the devil cave sensed the human auras. Wild roars sounded out from all direction. Then, ferocious devilish energy erupted all over the place. Countless wicked and strong Evil Devil dashed out from everywhere, towards Jiang Chen and his group.”

“Hmph!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. He had broken through to the Divine Core realm, and he had over 1,000 Dragon Marks in his body. A simple wave of his hand could produce a force carrying ten million jin. His mighty strength was not something these Evil Devils could withstand.

The Axe of Thunder appeared in Jiang Chen's hand, and it was immediately covered in True Dragon Flames. Jiang Chen raised the axe high up into the air, and with an ear-splitting sound, he chopped it toward the incoming Evil Devils with a tremendous amount of force.

Rumble...

The earth quaked, the mountains shook, and blood splashed all over the place. A deep trench was created by the massive amount of force, and black smoke kept emitting from it. The Evil Devils were howling and screaming as they were being slaughtered. Bits and pieces of flesh could be found all over the place. Jiang Chen's attack had killed countless Evil Devils.

Jiang Chen threw his hand forward in a grabbing motion. In an instant, all devil souls flew up and entered into his storage ring. With a fearless gaze, he kept sprinting forward while swinging the battle axe in his hand. Each strike would cause catastrophic damage, and no Evil Devils could stop him from marching forward.

“What a vigorous man, I have never seen such an incredible young genius before!”

Xuan Ye told Wu Jiu through his Divine Sense. He couldn't stop the shock from reaching his mind. Sweeping across the Inferno City, and now this; Jiang Chen was like a mighty warrior killing his way through. No one could stop him.

“Brother Jiang is indeed the genius with the most potential I've ever seen. Even those abnormal geniuses who never leave the Martial Palace and Martial Saint Dynasty can't compare with his potential.”

Wu Jiu replied. This made Xuan Ye feel even more shocked. He knew Wu Jiu really well, and Wu Jiu never praised anyone. This was the first time he had heard Wu Jiu do so.

Aowuu!

The turmoil was getting more and more intense, and soon, it had alerted the stronger Evil Devils. Over 5 Late Divine Core Evil Devils dashed to the scene. Each of them were at least 10 meters tall, and they all carried ferocious and bloodthirsty looks in their eyes. Each of these Evil Devils were carrying a creepy devil weapon. When they saw Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, a surprised look could be seen in their eyes.

Because, they recognized this man and dog. They came to the devil cave around two months ago, and they thought that these two had been killed by their chief. They never thought they would see them here again.

Roar!!

Without saying anything else, five valiant Late Divine Core Evil Devils raised their devil weapons high up into the air, then they unleashed their frightening devilish energies and attacked Jiang Chen and his group.

Swoosh!

No fear could be sensed from Jiang Chen. His combat strength was way more powerful than that of these Late Divine Core Evil Devils. Also, his True Dragon Flame could greatly restrain these Evil Devils. Because of this, none of these Late Divine Core Evil Devils were a match for Jiang Chen. With a swing of his battle axe, an Evil Devil was instantly killed.

“Kaka, it’s time for this master dog to show his mightiness!”

Big Yellow’s tail was wagging while a mystical symbol was blinking on his forehead. In the next second, he dashed forward with extremely great speed, slamming into one of the Evil Devils. Big Yellow had just broken through to the Mid Divine Core realm, so he was incredibly confident right now.

“Big Yellow, be careful!”

Wu Jiu exclaimed. Right as he was about to attack and give Big Yellow a hand, he saw Big Yellow using his head to crush the Evil Devil’s head, killing it on the spot.

“Kakaka...”

Big Yellow just killed a Late Divine Core Evil Devil with a single strike. He was incredibly excited, and he kept laughing out arrogantly toward the sky. As a Divine Beast, his strength and incredible talent was not something those ordinary beasts could compare with. Even though he was only a Mid Divine Core beast, it was a piece of cake for him to kill a Late Divine Core Evil Devil.

“What a strong head.”

Xuan Ye and Wu Jiu exchanged glances. Both could find shock in each other's eyes. They thought Big Yellow's only ability was the treasure hunting ability, but it looked like they were completely wrong. The man and dog in front of them were the most abnormal beings they had ever met.

Bang!

It was a violent battle, and massive blasts of energies kept rocking the place. When Xuan Ye and Wu Jiu were both startled by what they had witnessed, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had already killed all 5 Late Divine Core Evil Devils. It was a complete defeat, and no one could even withstand a single strike from either one of this duo.

Xuan Ye and Wu Jiu shook their heads. Both of these powerful warriors suddenly had a feeling that they weren't needed here. Just Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were enough to kill all these Evil

Devils.

A man and a dog were killing their way through a path in front of them. None of these Divine Core Evil Devils could slow them down. Soon, they arrived at the vicinity of the Devil Palace

Aowuu!

A loud roar sounded out from the Devil Palace. After that, the Combat Soul Evil Devil with a gigantic body darted out. It stared at the group with its wicked eye while carrying tremendous killing intent.

“Yaga!”

The Evil Devil bellowed out in an unknown devil language. All of a sudden, it waved its gigantic devil claw which was covered with black devil flames, with a tremendous force and incredible force toward Jiang Chen and the group, causing the surrounding air to tremble.

“Hmph!”

Xuan Ye let out a cold snort. He had prepared for this. He held his palms together, then he unleashed a bright seal and forcefully threw it at the devil claw.

Bang!

This was a collision from two Combat Soul realm beings. The massive impact had nearly torn the dimension apart. Ripples of energies swept across the place and disturbed the airflow in the entire devil cave. The seal unleashed by Xuan Ye was shattered by the Evil Devil, but the attack had successfully blocked the Evil Devil's attack.

Tap tap tap!

But, the Evil Devil was obviously stronger than Xuan Ye. Xuan Ye was forced back three steps before stabilizing his body.

“Incredible!”

Xuan Ye was shocked.

“Brother Jiu, I'll use my True Dragon Flames to restrain it. You and brother Xuan just strike together with full strength.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Haha, I'll deliver it a sneak attack.”

Big Yellow's body swayed, and he completely disappeared, as if he had escaped from the scene. Jiang Chen knew that Big Yellow wasn't running away, he was just hiding somewhere, preparing to sneak attack. This dog had a really wicked mind.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen leapt forward and flew up into the sky. With a loud banging sound, the scorching flame ignited and covered his entire body. The True Dragon Flame turned him completely into a flaming man.

Jiang Chen waved his hand and unleashed pouring flames onto the entire battlefield. In an instant, the battlefield was engulfed in a sea of flames. All the chilly devilish energies hovering around the area immediately swam away, as if they were sneaky mice seeing a fierce cat. The devilish energies that didn't disappear were burned away by Jiang Chen's True Dragon Flames.

Roar!

The Combat Soul Evil Devil let out an angry roar. It hated this flame so much, and now it was trapped by it, causing its devilish energies to be greatly suppressed.

Rumble!

The Evil Devil became furious. It immediately threw out its claw and grabbed toward Jiang Chen. Initially, it didn't pay any attention to Jiang Chen, and its only target was Xuan Ye. But, it never thought that this young man could actually unleash flames that could restrain itself.



Therefore, the Evil Devil had to kill this young man first. If not, it would be trapped by this sea of flames, and its combat strength would be greatly affected, limiting its ability to fight the enemies.

“Hmph! You have to ask for Lord Jiu’s permission if you want to hurt brother Jiang!”

Wu Jiu let out a cold snort. With mighty imposing momentum, his body swayed slightly, and he flew high up into the sky and arrived in front of Jiang Chen. Under Jiang Chen’s control, the True Dragon Flames wouldn’t do anything to affect Wu Jiu or Xuan Ye. Although both of them were trapped by the sea of flames as well, the flames would immediately move out of their way, and all the pressure was for the Evil Devil alone to bear.

“Weapons of a Chaotic War!”

Wu Jiu shouted out loudly. A golden light could be seen on both his palms, and in an instant, he forcefully struck out his palm. The grandeur of a violent battlefield exploded out, horses were neighing; weapons collided; morale was high.

All sorts of weapons appeared the moment Wu Jiu’s palm struck out, including blades, swords, pikes, halberds and many more. Each of them were extremely sharp and point, and the momentum of slaughter and battle on a chaotic battlefield was showering down on the scene, causing everyone to feel as if they were in a real battlefield.

“This is the energy of weapons, I never thought brother Jiu was

an expert in the Dao of War and was able to generate so many kinds of weapons and unleash the exact grandeur of a battlefield. These yuan energies are extremely sharp, it feels like an invincible general is unleashing the aura of a mighty king.”

This caused Jiang Chen’s opinion regarding Wu Jiu to grow once again. He had learned about the Dao of War before, and he knew this Dao was extremely tough to cultivate. Those who cultivated it must be extremely domineering, and they had to have personally experienced the grandeur of a chaotic battlefield; only then would one be able to unleash it perfectly. If Wu Jiu continued cultivating it, he would definitely break through to the Combat King realm in the future.

Bang, bang, bang...

Wu Jiu’s Weapons of a Chaotic War had transformed into countless razor sharp weapons, and they crashed toward the Evil Devil’s devil claw, tearing the gigantic devil claw into pieces.

This was the skill of a great warrior. Although he had only recovered to the peak Divine Core realm, but since the solid foundation of a peak Combat Soul warrior was still there, even Xuan Ye wouldn’t be his match if they really fought each other.

“Sonic Punch!”

At the same time, Xuan Ye too let out a violent shout and unleashed his ultimate attack. It was a shining gigantic fist that carried a tremendous force, almost enough to cause the air to

explode.

More importantly, Xuan Ye punched out with incredible speed, and he arrived in front of the Evil Devil in just the blink of an eye.

Aowuu!

The Evil Devil was restrained by the True Dragon Flames and was being attacked by two great warriors at the same time, causing it to roar out furiously. Suddenly, it opened up its mouth and shot out an eerie black beam which collided with Xuan Ye's Sonic Punch.

The black beam was formed by the Evil Devil's source energy, it was extremely powerful.

Bang!

The Combat Soul Evil Devil was simply too strong. Although it was being suppressed by the True Dragon Flames, its mightiness was still irresistible. The black beam actually penetrated the Sonic Punch without even slowing down.

“Hmph!”

Xuan Ye let out a cold snort. A silvery white pike appeared in his hand. This pike was a Superior Weapon, and its power was far beyond what a high-ranked combat weapon could compare with.

# Chapter 250 – Big Yellow Takes Credit

---

The pike shook and produced a thunderous sound. Bright energy waves radiated across the scene and covered the Evil Devil. Xuan Ye perfectly unleashed the power of this Superior Weapon and swung it like a living poisonous snake. It reached the Evil Devil's head in an instant.

Roar!

The Evil Devil let out a furious roar. Although it had a gigantic body, its speed was extremely great. In just the blink of an eye, it formed a black energy orb with tremendous devilish energy, and managed to block Xuan Ye's pike attack.

“Break away for me!”

Xuan Ye violently shouted out. His pike turned into a steel drill and started cracking the black energy orb. Xuan Ye was actually no match for the Evil Devil, but Jiang Chen's True Dragon Flame had effectively restrained it, causing the gap between Xuan Ye and the Evil Devil's combat strength to become smaller.

At the same time, Wu Jiu unleashed an attack as well. A golden halberd appeared in his hand, it was also a Superior Weapon. Quality wise, this halberd was much more powerful than the pike Xuan Ye was using.

Bang!

Wu Jiu struck out his halberd with the grandeur of a very powerful army, unleashing energy waves so sharp that even the air was cut apart. A huge amount of sparks emerged along its way.

Aowuu...

The Evil Devil became even more ruthless. Xuan Ye and Wu Jiu had both locked down on its aura. There was no way it could dodge the attacks of these two great warriors, it could only fight back with all its strength.

Even under such a situation, the Evil Devil didn't show any fear, there was only extreme brutality and great killing intent in its eyes. At this critical moment, a huge amount of devilish energy suddenly emerged from its sole eye. At the same time, its body was growing bigger and bigger, even unleashing an even stronger aura. This Evil Devil had some strong skills, allowing it to withstand Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye's attacks underneath the True Dragon Flame's pressure.

But, at the same time, a golden light suddenly appeared above the Evil Devil. The golden light was none other than Big Yellow, who had been hiding somewhere all this time.

Big Yellow had a serious expression right now. With his mouth wide open, he roared at the Evil Devil.

Soul Crunching Tune!

A deep, yet powerful roar sounded out from Big Yellow's mouth, and it resembled a dragon's roar. Layers of sound-waves weaved into a gigantic web, which instantly covered the Evil Devil. Big Yellow had been watching everything from the dark; this was the moment he had been waiting for.

Bang!

To this Evil Devil, Big Yellow's Soul Crunching Tune was a catastrophic disaster. If it was a normal situation, this Combat Soul Evil Devil might not even be hurt by Big Yellow's Soul Crunching Tune. After all, the gap between their cultivation levels was huge, so the Evil Devil could resist the attack with ease. However, the Evil Devil was currently unleashing a powerful attack, all its attention was on Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye. It never thought a dog would emerge at this critical moment.

Aowuu!

The Evil Devil was hit directly by Big Yellow's Soul Crunching tune. The blinking devilish energy in its sole eye dispersed in an instant. The attack caused blood to burst out from its mouth and nose, and even its sole eye was bleeding. After that, the Evil Devil's body started trembling. In a situation where it didn't have any way to defend itself, Big Yellow's Soul Crunching Tune penetrated into the depths of its soul.

Puchi! Puchi!

At the same time, Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye's attack arrived. The halberd and pike impaled the Devil Devil's head and body. Wu Jiu was the one who made the hole in its head appear, whereas Xuan Ye was the one who made the hole in the Evil Devil's body appear.

After that, the two men let out loud shouts at the same time. They unleashed tremendous waves of energy from their combat weapons, which tore the Evil Devil's body into pieces, and sent all its blood and flesh flying. It was killed in a miserable way.

Right after the Evil Devil was killed, Jiang Chen retracted the flames. Then, he took the Evil Devil's devil soul. This was a Combat Soul devil soul, and after it was purified, the energy within would be extraordinary. It was very important for him, as he could use it to form new Dragon Marks and increase his strength.

"Haha, when this master dog unleashes the Soul Crunching Tune, no one in this world will be able to match my mightiness! All foul enemies will have to die!"

Big Yellow burst into laughter as he hovering in the sky.

Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye put away their combat weapons, and the way they looked at Big Yellow changed once again. Even Jiang Chen felt surprised. He knew Big Yellow would have a new innate ability after breaking through to the Divine Core realm, but he hadn't seen Big Yellow use it. When Big Yellow used it for the first time, Jiang Chen was actually in secluded cultivation, that's why he didn't know.

Today was the first time Jiang Chen had witnessed it, and he was shocked by the ability's power. It was a critical moment just now, and if Big Yellow didn't strike at that moment, even with the combined attack of three men, they still could have killed the Evil Devil in the end, but it wouldn't be this easy. A Combat Soul Evil Devil's last attack before death was extremely terrifying.

"Big Yellow, you did great this time."

Jiang Chen walked up to Big Yellow and praised him.

"The sound-wave attack just now was really powerful, it actually attacks one's soul directly, which is incredibly difficult to defend against! I never thought Big Yellow had this ability, this is definitely an eye opener for me!"

Xuan Ye praised Big Yellow as well.

"That's right. If not for Big Yellow's Soul Crunching Tune sneak attack, even if we could still kill the Evil Devil, it wouldn't be this easy, and we might have had to pay a heavy price for it."

Wu Jiu nodded his head. In the battle just now, Big Yellow was indeed the key person, and his Soul Crunching Tune was really an incredible attack. Even they would suffer from it if they weren't aware.

Bang!



Right at this moment, a sky-piercing black beam shot up from the deepest area in the devil cave, producing an explosive sound loud enough to shake the ground.

Jiang Chen and the group were shocked, they immediately threw their sights toward the direction. Far away from where they were, they saw a black beam that shot right into the sky, and it was almost as if it had pierced a hole in the sky. It unleashed an aura that sent chills down their spines.

The devilish energies unleashed from the black beam swept across the entire devil cave in a very short amount of time, causing the place to be filled with rocking devilish energies. When all the Evil Devils in the devil cave sensed this supreme aura, all of them instantly kneeled down and kowtowed toward the source of the black beam.

“It’s the Earth Devil!”

Xuan Ye shouted.

“It finally appeared.”

A grin emerged on Jiang Chen’s face. The moment he had been waiting for had finally arrived. Even when he was about to face the mighty Earth Devil, no signs of panicking or nervousness could be found on his face; he only had an indifferent yet confident expression.

“Just like I had estimated, the Earth Devil is living in the deepest area of the devil cave, and all these Evil Devils are actually its people. Since we’ve just killed the Combat Soul Evil Devil, it alerted the Earth Devil. With its ferocious temper, it will certainly not let us off.”

Wu Jiu said.

Aowuu!

The shrill roar sounded like it came from the depths of hell, causing those who heard it to shiver and feel extremely awful. The black beam was a tremendous amount devilish energies unleashed from the Earth Devil’s body. It was quickly moving toward the group.

“Everyone be careful, the Earth Devil is coming to us!”

Jiang Chen reminded.

Both Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye had nervous expressions. The Earth Devil was a supreme existence amongst all devils, it was far more powerful than all these Evil Devils. Also, its ferociousness was not something any ordinary demons or devils could compare with. Just its aura alone was enough to frighten all its enemies. Now, they could clearly feel that the Earth Devil was at the peak Early Combat Soul realm.

They had placed all their hopes on the Blood Talisman. If the

Blood Talisman didn't work at this critical moment, they would be in extreme danger. Not only this, they would also have to depend on how much the Blood Talisman could restrain the Earth Devil.

“Brother Jiu, brother Xuan, don't worry, the Blood Talisman contains the aura of the king of all creatures. It can make all demons and devils surrender, and I'm sure it can provide us a lot of help with restraining the Earth Devil.”

Jiang Chen casually said. He had tremendous confidence in this. The reason why Inferno City had existed for so long was all because of this Blood Talisman. No demons or devils dared come close to Inferno City, as they were all scared of the Blood Talisman.

Boom!

Soon, a gigantic creature that looked like a black mountain from afar. It shook the entire devil cave as it landed onto the ground. The gigantic creature was over 30 meters tall, it really was as huge as a mountain. Black scales glowing with darkness covered its entire body, causing it to emit an eerie feeling. Endless devilish energies hovered around its body; it truly was a horrifying monster.

This was the Earth Devil. Unlike those Evil Devils, the Earth Devil actually had complete facial figures. Not only this, it had two pairs of cruel and eerie eyes; each of them looked like they carried hell within. It also had two protruding white fangs that looked like the sharpest weapons in the entire world, causing it look incredibly ferocious.

Behind the Earth Devil, a nearly 3 meter long tail was swinging around. The tail was fully grown with sharp spikes, and it wasn't hard to imagine that if anyone got hit by this tail, he would definitely explode into pieces.

“So strong!”

Xuan Ye was shocked. He tightened his grip on the pike, and was getting ready to strike.

When the Earth Devil arrived, it immediately threw its sight at this group. A bloodthirsty look could be seen in all four eyes. While looking at the group, it spat out its tongue and locked both its protruding fangs. It was only looking at this group as delicious preys.

Furthermore, intense anger could be seen in its eyes. The existence of these weak mortals in its territory killing its people was an insult to its dignity. This was something that it couldn't forgive.

“Buddy, hurry up and use the Blood Talisman! This big guy is too powerful, we're no match for it.”

Big Yellow immediately rushed Jiang Chen.

“Alright.”

Jiang Chen dared not hesitate. With a flip of his palm, the Blood Talisman instantly appeared. Then, he controlled it and made it slowly float up and hover in mid-air, then it unleashed countless blood red lights.

When the imposing Earth Devil saw the Blood Talisman, its expression changed dramatically. It stared at the Blood Talisman with its four eyes as if it had just seen the most frightening objects in the world. Also, when the blood red lights hit the Earth Devil's body, it immediately jumped up from the ground with a painful expression.

Roar!

The Earth Devil let out a wild roar. It couldn't bother with killing Jiang Chen and his group anymore. Without any hesitation, it turned around and started running with extreme speed.

“Oh no, the Earth Devil is trying to flee!”

Wu Jiu's expression changed. Neither he nor Xuan Ye expected that the Blood Talisman would be this powerful, causing the Earth Devil to instantly flee in fear.

“Hmph! It can't run away from this, the Blood Talisman's pressure is much stronger than we thought it would be.”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. He immediately circulated the Dragon Transformation skill and unleashed numerous Dragon

Marks into the Blood Talisman. In an instant, the Blood Talisman began violently vibrating, then it started chasing after the Earth Devil.

# Chapter 251 – Killing The Earth Devil

---

Whenever Jiang Chen circulated the Dragon Transformation skill, he would have a feeling of kinship with the Blood Talisman. This situation had given him even more confidence towards its power. After the Dragon Marks were injected into the Blood Talisman, Jiang Chen had gained full control over it. With a thought, the Blood Talisman turned into a trail of light as it chased after the Earth Devil.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh...

The Blood Talisman was glowing brightly. In an instant, countless silky blood red lights poured down and weaved into a gigantic blood red net. The net trapped the Earth Devil, giving it no opportunity to escape.

Roar!!

The Earth Devil was roaring and struggling, as well as unleashing tremendous amounts of devilish flames in attempt to free itself from the Blood Talisman's captivity. But, none of its efforts worked at all. Its fear of the Blood Talisman came from the bottom of its heart. In its mind, this Blood Talisman was the most frightening object in the world.

The blood red lights kept restraining the Earth Devil. No matter how much it struggled, there was no way it could shake them off its body.

“I never thought the Blood Talisman could be so powerful! It actually trapped the Earth Devil, completely!”

Xuan Ye was really shocked.

“I thought we would have to fight a tough battle, but with just the Blood Talisman alone, the Earth Devil is trapped! This is really frightening.”

Wu Jiu said with mixed emotions. The Earth Devil was simply too powerful, and none of them had full confidence in defeating it face to face. There would have to be a difficult battle for sure. However, the Blood Talisman’s power had actually exceeded their expectations, it had completely trapped the Earth Devil.

Roar!

The Earth Devil had become absolutely enraged. Its devilish and brutal characteristics were completely being unleashed now. With a seemingly endless amount of devilish energies, it kept fighting back, trying its best to break free from the trap.

But obviously, this was something that was really difficult to do. The blood red lights could even force back Combat Soul warriors. Although the Earth Devil was amazingly strong, it would still be hurt by the blood red lights.

Then, the rigid scales covering the Earth Devil’s body were cut open by the blood red lights, and blood began flowing out from the



wound.

“Haha, the Earth Devil is going to die, we don’t even have to attack; it’s doomed!”

Big Yellow was laughing out with excitement.

Aowuu!

Right at this moment, the Earth Devil let out a wild roar. All the scales on its body shattered in an instant, and at the same time, a strong suction force burst out from its body. It was a mysterious summoning power.

When the suction force appeared, the airflow within the entire devil cave began rolling. The Earth Devil sucked all devilish energies within the devil cave into its body, and even those Evil Devils who were kowtowing on the ground, worshiping it, couldn’t escape from the suction force. The devilish energies in their bodies was sucked out, and went directly into the Earth Devil’s body.

The summoning force was incredibly terrifying, especially in a place like this. The Earth Devil had simply made this entire place its own pool of devilish energies, and as long as it fought in this cave, it could summon the energies of any devil species and make it its own.

“Oh no, the Earth Devil is summoning more energies, it’s going to use the energy to break free from the Blood Talisman’s

captivity, then it will definitely flee from here!”

Xuan Ye said.

“The Blood Talisman’s pressure and restraining effects is not something this Earth Devil can run away from. However, since it has an endless supply of energy, it can keep fighting the blood lights. Even if the blood lights can continuously hurt it, it will take a long time before the Earth Devil is completely killed.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. He hadn’t thought that this Earth Devil could actually summon energies from other devilish creatures and make it his own.

“No wonder why the Earth Devil keeps hiding here and doesn’t want to leave. In this land, it is the absolutely king! Looks like we’re really lucky; without the Blood Talisman’s help, there is no way we could defeat it with our strengths alone.”

Wu Jiu said.

“We can’t just keep wasting time like this, we have to strike now.”

Big Yellow said. The Earth Devil was actually using the energies from the entire devil cave to fight the blood lights, and no one knew how long this would last. The doorway to the outside world was soon going to open, and there wasn’t much time left.

“If we want to strike, only brother Jiang can do so. These blood lights only recognize and accept him, so if we get closer to it, we’ll suffer from their attacks as well.”

Xuan Ye said.

“Alright, I’ll attack.”

Jiang Chen strengthened his spirit. They couldn’t just let this go on forever; he had to attack and cause a deadly injury to appear on the Earth Devil.

“No way! Brother, the gap between you and the Earth Devil is too huge! Once the Earth Devil count attacks, you will die!”

Wu Jiu opposed the idea.

“I have a way to do it. Let’s just wait for two hours. This amount of time is more than enough to cause great distraction and anger to its state of mind. At that point, it will have all its attention on the Blood Talisman, and will completely ignore us. I will attack it at that point of time, and I’m sure I will be able to cause injury that cannot be healed to this Earth Devil.”

Jiang Chen said as he squinted his eyes.

“Alright. Brother, take this halberd, use it when you attack

later.”

Wu Jiu passed the halberd in his hand to Jiang Chen. This was one of the best Superior Weapons, and though it still couldn't compare with a King's Weapon, it was still not something that those ordinary Superior Weapons could compare with.

“Alright.”

Jiang Chen didn't reject it. With this Superior Weapon, he had more confidence in dealing with the Earth Devil.

Roar!! ...

Time passed by, and soon, two hours had flashed by. In these two hours, the Earth Devil had been fighting non-stop against the Blood Talisman, but the Blood Talisman's suppression ability toward demons and devils was incredibly powerful, so no matter how much the Earth Devil struggled, there was no way it could escape. Besides that, the constant attacks from the blood lights had caused a lot of wounds to appear on its body, and blood to be seen everywhere. But, these kind of injuries didn't actually cause many negative effects on the Earth Devil's combat strength. It could still keep absorbing the endless devilish energies in the devil cave while fighting the Blood Talisman at the same time.

Just like Jiang Chen had estimated, after fighting relentlessly for two hours, the accumulated anger had caused the Earth Devil to be greatly distracted. All of its four eyes had turned completely red, and now, it had placed all its attention on fighting the Blood

Talisman and figuring out how it could escape. It had completely forgotten about the humans next to it.

A cruel look emerged in Jiang Chen's eyes. He grabbed the golden halberd and prepared to attack.

“Be careful.”

Wu Jiu reminded.

Jiang Chen's lip curved upwards. No matter what situation he was facing, panic could never be found on his face. His mentality was so strong that he wouldn't be distracted even if heaven fell down. When he attacked, there was only confidence on his face.

As the once greatest Saint in the world, his judgment had come to a stage where no one could compare. Also, he had vast combat experience. He could easily tell that the Earth Devil had completely forgotten all other things, and its mind was fully focused on fighting the Blood Talisman. Therefore, Jiang Chen had already sentenced the Earth Devil to death in his mind.

Buzz...

The golden halberd in Jiang Chen's hand produced some buzzing sounds. Powerful energies turned into Dragon Marks and covered its surface. In a split second, Jiang Chen disappeared from where he was standing, and appeared within the range of the Blood Talisman.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh...

In an instant, nine identical Jiang Chens appeared at the same time and surrounded the furious Earth Devil.

“What an abstruse movement skills! Unleashing nine identical copies of himself in the middle of a fight and using them to distract the enemy’s focus and mind, I know of a rare wolf specie that can use this powerful movement skill! It’s really powerful, and it’s good at surprising the enemy.”

Xuan Ye was once again surprised by this. After getting to know Jiang Chen, he had forgotten how many times Jiang Chen had surprised him.

Within the shower of blood lights, the Earth Devil had all its attention fixed on the Blood Talisman, but it was stunned for a second upon seeing so many figures suddenly appearing around it. In extreme anger, it waved its huge palm and slapped a few Jiang Chens in front of it into pieces. But at the same time, the real Jiang Chen’s attack had arrived.

Ha!

Jiang Chen let out a cruel shout. All 1,000 Dragon Marks in his body began violently vibrating at the same time, giving Jiang Chen tremendous strength. He thrust the golden halberd forward, and without much resistance, the mighty Superior Weapon penetrated the Earth Devil’s body. The halberd had hit its vital point.

Aowuu!

The Earth Devil became even more furious, and an incredible force exploded out from its body. Jiang Chen's expression changed as he sensed it. Without hesitation, he pulled the halberd out and began retreating. At the same time, he unleashed the Firethorn Combat Armor.

Even with all that, Jiang Chen was still knocked back by the incredible force, and he could only regain control of his body when he was nearly 3,500 meters away from where he had been knocked back from. His qi and blood was in a messy state, causing him to feel extremely awful, and his face was pale white as well.

Wu Jiu, Xuan Ye and Big Yellow immediately flew to Jiang Chen.

“Are you alright?”

Wu Jiu asked.

“I'm fine. The Earth Devil is done for.”

A grin emerged on Jiang Chen's face.

Roar...

The Earth Devil who was trapped by the blood lights was severely

injured by Jiang Chen's attack. A hole could be seen in its chest, and blood was shooting out from the wound. Although the Earth Devil was still behaving brutally, its aura was getting weaker and weaker.

“This is a deadly injury, any man would have died by now. This Earth Devil is indeed strong; it can still fight back with such terrifying combat strength.”

Xuan Ye said with mixed emotions.

“Haha, even so, this big guy is going to die soon. I don't think it has much more blood to spill.”

Big Yellow burst into laughter.

Jiang Chen had used the halberd to cause an unimaginable injury to the Earth Devil, but since the Earth Devil was so powerful, if it could escape now and find a place to hide, it could still slowly recover. But too bad, it was trapped by the Blood Talisman, and all its strength was used to resist the damage caused by the blood lights, so there was no way it could heal itself.

Another couple of minutes went by, and finally, the Earth Devil couldn't hold on any longer. Its aura had become incredibly weak, and its aggressive momentum was gone as well. It didn't even have the strength to summon more energies now.

“The Earth Devil is dying.”



Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. He extended his hand, then the Blood Talisman immediately flew back and fell into his palm.

Jiang Chen stored the Blood Talisman. After that, the group went up to the Earth Devil. The current Earth Devil could no longer pose any threat to them, so without any hesitation, Jiang Chen forcefully pierced the Earth Devil's throat with the halberd, killing it without any resistance.

After that, Jiang Chen slapped the Earth Devil's head and crushed it. In an instant, a black devil soul shot out from the crushed skull, and he grabbed it with his hand.

## Chapter 252 – Rather Die Fighting

---

Sensing the massive energy contained within the devil soul, a relieved expression finally emerged on Jiang Chen's face.

“I have gone through a lot in order to get you. Brother Yan, wait for my return, your life will be saved.”

Jiang Chen had a big smile on his face. He could imagine Han Yan once again standing in front of him, brimming with energy. He had finally accomplished his goal. Han Yan was his first brother after he had reincarnated, Han Yan's friendship had touched him. His brave action of protecting Yan Chenyu in a time of dangers, the willingness to sacrifice his own life for his brother's sake; how many people could do that?

“Brother Jiang, you have become one of Inferno Hell's legends this time by accomplishing something that no one has ever done. Not only have you robbed every single warrior in Inferno City, you even killed the horrifying Earth Devil.”

Xuan Ye said with a smile. Jiang Chen's accomplishment would definitely be recorded in Inferno Hell's history, he would become an existence that everyone would know about for time to come. Also, after what Jiang Chen had done in Inferno City, people getting robbed within Inferno City would definitely happen more frequently, and a major heist might happen as well. This also indicated that Inferno Hell would become even more chaotic in the future.

“Let’s go, it’s time to return to Inferno City. We’ll wait there for the opening of the doorway to the outside world.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. After having obtained the Earth Devil’s devil soul, the heavy burden in his heart had finally been lifted, and he had nothing else to do in Inferno Hell. Besides this, Jiang Chen had obtained a lot of benefits in his trip to Inferno Hell. Not only had he broken through to the Divine Core realm, he also possessed a massive amount of wealth that was beyond anyone’s imagination. With his current wealth, he could easily establish a big sect in the Qi Province.

In addition, Jiang Chen had another important element for establishing a big sect. He possessed an energy vein in Redsun Town. However, Jiang Chen currently had no intentions of establishing his own sect.

“Alright.”

Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye nodded their heads. Both of them had mixed emotions about leaving Inferno Hell. However, there was no doubt they felt excited. One of them had been trapped in the Poisonous Miasma Space for ten years, and had almost died in there. The other one had been staying in the harsh environment of Inferno Hell for seven years. For the two of them, Inferno Hell was like a gigantic jail, and their desire to leave this shithole was much stronger than that of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

Also, Wu Jiu had only recovered to the peak Divine Core realm, and he still had a long way to go in order to return to his peak. Once he left Inferno Hell, the first thing he would do was focus on

restoring his cultivation with all his effort.

“Brother Jiu, here is your halberd. Thank you for helping me.”

Jiang Chen handed the halberd over to Wu Jiu.

“Haha, cut the formalities!”

Wu Jiu laughed as he took the halberd. Then, he patted Jiang Chen on his shoulder.

The group quickly found the exit and left the devil cave. After that, they just flew straight toward Inferno City.

“Brother Jiu, the skill I saw you use just now, it’s the Dao of War, right?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“You’re right. But, it’s really difficult to cultivate.”

Wu Jiu shook his head. He was determined to break through to the Combat King realm and start mastering the dimensional laws. He did understand one thing, the Combat King realm was a supreme realm, and it was really difficult to reach it. It was not something one could rush.

“I noticed when brother Jiu unleashed the Dao of War, you were putting too much focus on the atmosphere of a battlefield. When you struck with your palm, the momentum of the battlefield was really incredible, and you even produced blades, swords, pikes and halberds with your yuan energy. But, if you cultivate these four weapons separately, I’m sure you will obtain unexpected results. All four weapons will have their own respective strengths, and that will make the overall power of your skill become much stronger.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Oh? Brother Jiang also an expert in the Dao of War?”

Wu Jiu looked at Jiang Chen with a surprised expression.

“I don’t know anything about that, I only had some inspiration when I watched brother Jiu use his skill.”

Jiang Chen smiled at Wu Jiu. He had told Wu Jiu the correct way to cultivate the Dao of War. As for whether or not Wu Jiu would take his words to heart, that wasn’t something he could control.

“Haha, good, brother Jiang’s thoughts doesn’t sound bad, I’ll give it a try later.”

Wu Jiu patted Jiang Chen’s shoulder as he spoke. However, the look of unconcern in his eyes couldn’t be hidden from Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen didn’t mind his response, he just replied with a smile.

In fact, Wu Jiu didn't really pay much attention to what Jiang Chen said. In his mind, although Jiang Chen was a peerless genius, he was just a young man, and there was no way his cultivation experience would be richer than Wu Jiu's. Besides, Wu Jiu had spent all his life studying and cultivating the Dao of War, he had his own mindset on how to cultivate it, and Jiang Chen wouldn't know about this.

Because of this mindset, Wu Jiu didn't break through to the Combat King realm, and he even spent a long period of time cultivating it. One day, when he recalled Jiang Chen's words, he decided to give it a try, and to his surprise, he actually broke through to the Combat King realm in just a short period of time after doing as Jiang Chen had recommended. After that, Wu Jiu forcefully slapped himself twice, cursing at himself for not doing as Jiang Chen had recommended. Of course, all of this is a story from the future.

.....

Qi Province, Black Sect.

On Guo Shan's mountain. Guo Shan was wearing a long gray robe, and both his hands were placed behind his back. He stood on top of the mountain peak as he looked far into the distance. It seemed as if he was waiting for someone.

"Brother, why haven't you come back? Something big is going to happen soon..."

Guo Shan sighed. Not long before this, Nanbei Chao and Zhao Chongyang had given the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness their final warning, telling both sects to surrender to the Burning Sky Pavilion within seven days. The news had spread across the entire Qi Province, creating a huge turmoil.

And before this final warning, the Heavenly Sword Sect's surrender had startled the entire Qi Province. No one could have foreseen the Heavenly Sword Sect's cowardly decision, they surrendered just like that, without even trying to fight back.

And now, the same request to surrender had been given to the remaining 2 big sects. Everyone knew that Nanbei Chao had broken through to the Mid Divine Core realm, and was impatient to defeat the other three big sects. Nanbei Chao's goal was clear, he wanted a complete change in the Qi Province's structure before going to the Martial Palace to continue cultivating; he wanted to rule the entire Qi Province.

Since his sudden appearance in the Qi Province competition, Nanbei Chao had become a dazzling star. He even became the first genius from the Qi Province that the Martial Palace had invited to join. No one knew how strong he had become after breaking through to the Mid Divine Core realm, but everyone knew that Qi Province was going to be in turmoil; the Qi Province's structure would see a complete change.

The entire Black Sect was covered in a shadow of worry. Even the Heavenly Sword Sect had surrendered; this caused them all too subconsciously feel that Nanbei Chao was really formidable, so formidable that even Duan Jianhong had to surrender.

At this moment, no one from the Black Sect could stop themselves from thinking about the young man in white clothes. He was the legendary man from the Black Sect, but too bad, he had entered Inferno Hell, and he wouldn't be coming back for some time.

Swoosh!

A man came from afar and landed next to Guo Shan. He was Yu Zihan.

“Zihan, it looks like you've gained quite a lot this time, you've actually broken through to the Divine Core realm. It's been quite some time since the Black Sect had a new core disciple.”

Guo Shan glanced at Yu Zihan. A look of joy could finally be found on his face.

“It's all because of this energy vein's help. I have been absorbing the source energy from the energy vein for a longer period of time. It has completely improved my physique, and allowed my cultivation to progress with incredible speed. Because of that, I broke through to the Divine Core realm, and since the Black Sect is now facing a disaster, I've come back to help.”

Yu Zihan said.

“Do you think Jiang Chen will come back before the devastating



change?”

Guo Shan asked.

“I’m afraid that will be difficult.”

Yu Zihan furrowed his brows.

“If Jiang Chen doesn’t come back, the Black Sect will be destroyed. Only he can fight Nanbei Chao.”

Guo Shan said as he squinted his eyes.

“The Black Sect has a strong foundation, it won’t be an easy task for Nanbei Chao to destroy us. Besides, that Granny Feng has arrived at the Black Sect, and she’s currently talking with Sect Chief in order to find a solution. The combination of two big sects is going to prove to be formidable.”

Yu Zihan said.

“Don’t underestimate Nanbei Chao, he is a mighty and ruthless man. Since he has given us 7 days, it means that he doesn’t fear us, even combined with the Valley of Happiness.”

Guo Shan said.

“Sect Elder Guo, if the war truly comes, what will you do?”

Yu Zihan asked as he looked at Guo Shan.

“I grew up in the Black Sect, and I will die in the Black Sect.”

After saying that, Guo Shan turned around and walked back to his courtyard. His words firmly expressed his attitude toward the coming disaster.

“Zihan, if Jiang Chen still hasn’t returned by the time the war arrives, you have to find a way to get Yan Chenyu and Han Yan out from here.”

Guo Shan said in a desolate tone.

.....

Back to Inferno Hell. After having killed the Earth Devil, Jiang Chen and the group began travelling back to Inferno City. At this moment, many people had returned to Inferno City. Aside from those warriors who didn’t want to leave this place, most of the people were waiting for the doorway to the outside world to open up.

At a wasteland about a thousand miles away from Inferno City, a fiery figure blocked Jiang Chen and group’s path. The man had fiery red hair that danced in the powerful energy waves unleashed from his body. Scorching flames covered his entire body, and an

excited look emerged in his eyes when he saw Jiang Chen.

“Huo Yun'er?”

When Jiang Chen saw the coming man, he was surprised.

“Jiang Chen, I have been waiting for you!”

Huo Yun'er was emitting a powerful desire for battle.

“You can't defeat me.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“I'd rather die fighting you.”

No signs of fear could be seen on Huo Yun'er's face. He knew he couldn't defeat Jiang Chen. After he had broken through to the Mid Divine Core realm, he immediately came to Inferno Hell, filled with extreme confidence as he tried finding Jiang Chen so that he could fight him. But when he arrived, no matter where he went, everyone were talking about the legendary story of Jiang Chen. This was like pouring cold water onto his burning desire.

Reality had taught Huo Yun'er a lesson; Jiang Chen's cultivation was greater than he could imagine. It was impossible for him to catch up for the rest of his life.

Even so, Huo Yun'er still longed for a fight with Jiang Chen. With that, he wouldn't have any regrets even if it would get him killed. In his mind, he died the same day as Yun Can died in the Black Sect.

The decision of fleeing from Jiang Chen that day was the greatest shame in Huo Yun'er's life, it had cast a permanent shadow in his heart. If he didn't fight with Jiang Chen, the shadow would follow him for the rest of his life, and his cultivation would stop progressing. If that really happened, his life would have no more meaning.

So he would rather fight with Jiang Chen, even if that meant he would be killed by Jiang Chen; he would still feel no regrets. Therefore, Huo Yun'er made up his mind, and had been waiting for Jiang Chen at the same spot for quite some time. Just like he said, he would rather die fighting.

## Chapter 253 – The Black Sect’s Crisis

---

“This young man isn’t bad.”

Both Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye nodded their heads. They couldn’t help but praise Huo Yuner. A man that fought for his life should be respected. I also showed Huo Yuner’s determination with cultivation. The mindset of not fearing death and just wanting a fight had also won Jiang Chen’s respect. There was no way he could fake the desire to fight, and no one would really dare fake it either, as it would cost them their lives.

Huo Yuner wasn’t an idiot. But under such a situation, he didn’t even have the slightest chance of defeating Jiang Chen; it was certain death for him.

“This guy is unyielding. Little Chen, are you going to kill him?”

Big Yellow asked.

“If he fought me that day outside the Black Sect, I would definitely kill him. But today, I won’t kill him; he has won my respect. Furthermore, Huo Yuner isn’t my enemy, he’s just a martial maniac.”

There was no deep hatred between Jiang Chen and Huo Yuner, it was all because the Green Sanctuary Sect had dragged Huo Yuner into this. Besides, Huo Yuner had spent all his life studying the martial arts; he was just a typical martial maniac who would rather die fighting than run away.

“Jiang Chen, let’s fight! I want to make up for running away the last time! I’ve prepared to die here! This is the kindling I’ve prepared, if I am killed here, please use this kindling to burn my body.”

Huo Yuner flipped his palm and revealed a fireball. Then, he simply waved his hand and threw it toward Jiang Chen.

“Fine, I’ll fight you.”

Jiang Chen grabbed the kindling and agreed to fight. He slightly moved his body, and in the next second, he appeared not far away from Huo Yuner. He unleashed his aura, which swept across the place like a fierce tsunami.

Sensing Jiang Chen’s powerful aura sweeping across the scene, Huo Yuner’s expression suddenly change. Just from this aura alone he could really feel that the gap between himself and Jiang Chen; it was not small.

“Haha, Jiang Chen, I have to say this; you are definitely the most amazing genius I’ve ever met. I have no regrets if I am killed by you.”

Not only did Huo Yuner have no fear, he was even laughing out loudly. Then, some bright fireballs shout out from Huo Yuner’s body, and slowly formed into a shiny fire seal in front of him.

“Heavenly Flames!”

Huo Yuner shouted out. When the fight began, he immediately unleashed his most powerful skill. Huo Yuner already had some initial success with cultivating the Heavenly Flame skill, and it gave him amazing combat strength. When the fire seal was formed, the heat caused the air surrounding it to burn.

Huo Yuner was truly a rare genius. Just with this skill alone, perhaps ordinary Late Divine Core warriors wouldn't be his match at all.

But an attack like this was nothing to Jiang Chen. With a wave of his hand, the True Dragon Flame transformed into a bright flaming pike. With a throwing motion, the flaming pike shot out, and everything surrounding it exploded as it flew toward Huo Yuner's fire seal.

Bang!

Obviously, Jiang Chen's True Dragon Flame was much more powerful than Huo Yuner's Magma Flames. Also, Jiang Chen had an incredible amount of yuan energy, as well as help from the Dragon Marks. Because of all this, Huo Yuner couldn't compare with Jiang Chen. The flaming pike instantly shattered Huo Yuner's fire seal, and it didn't stop there, or even slow down. In just a split second, it had impaled Huo Yuner's shoulder.

“You lose.”

Jiang Chen retracted the True Dragon Flames and spoke in an indifferent manner.

“Why didn’t you kill me?”

Huo Yun'er asked as he stared at Jiang Chen, his eyes carried a puzzled look. He knew how Jiang Chen handled his enemies; he would never give them any chances. But now, he only hurt Huo Yun'er, and didn't kill him.

“I have no intentions of killing you, that’s why you’re still alive. I defeated you with fire, and I don’t think you should consider that an insult to you. There is no deep hatred between us, and I have fulfilled your wish to fight with me today, and also spared your life. I hope you don’t come to challenge me anymore.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen walked past Huo Yun'er and continued his journey to Inferno City. Wu Jiu, Xuan Ye and Big Yellow glanced at the stunned Huo Yun'er, and without saying anything, they followed Jiang Chen.

Staring at Jiang Chen who was walking away, a confused look could be found in Huo Yun'er's eyes. He followed Jiang Chen with his eyes as if that rather thin man had some magical attraction.

Huo Yun'er touched the wound on his shoulder. Looking at the blood dripping down from his wound, a smile emerged on his face. At this moment, he had fulfilled his goal, and he felt relaxed. From now onwards, his cultivation path would once again become much smoother.



“Thank you.”

With a voice that only Huo Yun'er could hear, he expressed his gratitude.

Inferno City!

“Brother Xuan, the doorway to the outside world will open in seven days, but where does it open?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“It will be outside Inferno City, but no one will know the exact location, as the location is different each year. Still, it will be within 1,000 miles of Inferno City. Don't worry brother Jiang, as long as you want to leave this place, you'll be able to find out where the doorway is when it opens. Furthermore, there will be different tunnels that lead to the different provinces in the Eastern Continent.”

Xuan Ye explained.

“Where does brother Jiang want to go?”

Wu Jiu asked.

“I'm going back to the Qi Province. I am a disciple of the Qi

Province's Black Sect, and since I have accomplished my goal in Inferno Hell, I'll have to return at once. There are important matters I need to attend to; this trip has taken quite a lot of time from me."

Jiang Chen no time to waste, he just wished to leave Inferno Hell and return to the Black Sect.

"Qi Province?"

Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye exchanged glances. Neither of them had thought that a peerless genius like Jiang Chen actually came from a small province like the Qi Province. It was a province that the Martial Saint Dynasty had abandoned.

"I didn't know that even a small province like the Qi Province could cultivate an amazing genius like brother Jiang, this is extraordinary! I wonder if brother Jiang is interested in going to the Martial..."

Before Xuan Ye could finish his words, Wu Jiu threw his gaze over at him and stopped him from continuing.

"Of course, my vision isn't limited to the Qi Province. Once I'm done with what I'm supposed to do in the Qi Province, I'll proceed to somewhere else and expand my horizons."

Jiang Chen didn't ask where Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye came from, which powers they belonged to. In his opinion, there was no need

to ask that kind of question. If Wu Jiu wanted to tell him, he would have told him by himself. But, if he didn't want to let him know, there must be a reason behind it.

.....

Three days later. Within Palace Black, over 20 Divine Core warriors had gathered together. Part of these people were from the Black Sect, and the rest of them were from the Valley of Happiness.

There were a few Divine Core Sect Elders who had come from the Valley of Happiness. Not only this, all the disciples from the Valley of Happiness had temporarily moved to the Black Sect, and they were getting ready to combine forces and fight back against the Burning Sky Pavilion.

At the upper end of the palace, a woman in her forties sat next to Daoist Black. She was wearing a silver white muslin dress, and portraying a seductive aura from head to toe. Any slight movement from her curvy body would attract any man's soul. Although she wasn't young anymore, her charm was not something any young girl could compare with. Many of the Black Sect Elders forced themselves to look away from her, scared their souls might be attracted to this woman.

The aura unintentionally unleashed from this woman was not weaker than Daoist Black's. She was a great warrior who had reached the peak Divine Core realm, and she was none other than the Valley of Happiness's Granny Feng.

Not only she, all the other Sect Elders from the Valley of Happiness had their own charms, each of them were amazingly beautiful. But at this moment, none of them had any intentions of seducing any man. Including Granny Feng, they all wore solemn expressions.

“The deadline is getting closer; it looks like a violent battle is unavoidable.”

Granny Feng said.

“We have to fight this battle no matter what. I, Daoist Black will definitely not surrender to a young brat.”

Daoist Black said with a deep voice.

“Brother Black, do you have solutions to this problem? You should know this; once the war arrives in four days, we will not only have to face the Burning Sky Pavilion, we’ll also have to face the Heavenly Sword Sect, as they have already surrendered to the Burning Sky Pavilion. I know this Nanbei Chao and Zhao Chongyang; they will definitely not let Duan Jianhong sit back and watch us fight, so when the war comes, the Heavenly Sword Sect will definitely attack us together with the Burning Sky Pavilion.”

Granny Feng said.

“We’ll do our best and leave the rest to destiny’s will. I’ve prepared the Black Formation, and when the war arrives, all the

Divine Core warriors from both our sects will have to work together to control the formation. With this, even if the Burning Sky Pavilion and the Heavenly Sword Sect attacks at the same time, they will have a hard time breaking the formation.”

After saying that, Daoist Black threw his gaze into the empty space. A young man in white clothes emerged in his heart. He didn't know if that young man could return before the war came, and even if the young man returned, he also didn't know if that young man could really help resolve the Black Sect's crisis. This young man who wore white clothes had become Daoist Black's last hope.

“For now, this is the only thing we can do, hmph! I, Granny Feng will never surrender to anyone! Both the Burning Sky Pavilion and the Heavenly Sword Sect will have to pay a heavy price if they really try to destroy us!”

Granny Feng was a ruthless person as well. At this critical moment, there was no way she would compromise.

The entire hall carried a depressed and panicked atmosphere. Everyone were thinking about the coming war, and therefore, none of them noticed the old man amongst them who had a small grin on his face.

This old man was none other than Fan Zhongtang. No one here knew that he worked for Nanbei Chao.

In the blink of an eye, four days flashed by. On this day, chaos

would descend upon the Qi Province. The Burning Sky Pavilion had sent forth a massive troops of warriors. Under Nanbei Chao and Zhao Chongyang's lead, all disciples at the Heavenly Core realm and above had gathered, as well as the Divine Core Sect Elders from the Heavenly Sword Sect.

It was impossible for Duan Jianhong to stay out of this, Nanbei Chao would never allow that to happen. Therefore, all Divine Core warriors from the Heavenly Sword Sect were force to join the troop.

Boom! Boom! Boom! ...

Back in the Black Sect, early in the morning, the beating of the war drum swept across the entire Black Sect; this was the signal of an incoming war. The skies above the Black Sect were filled with layers of haze. The Black Sect and the Valley of Happiness had grouped together, and there were getting ready to engage in a life and death struggle with their enemies.

The catastrophe had finally arrived!

At the same time, many people were gathered outside Inferno City, impatiently waiting for the doorway to the outside world to open. There were of course those who weren't willing to leave this place; they would continue their lives in this harsh environment.

In Inferno Hell, one year was equal to a circle. The people; the alliances here would change every single year, and change happened every single year; just like a circle. Jiang Chen had left

his legacy here, and when he was gone, chaotic situation would still arise within Inferno Hell.

## Chapter 254 – The Mighty Nanbei Chao

---

The doorway to the outside world was not yet open. Everyone were anxiously waiting for the moment where it opened. Jiang Chen and his group stood in an empty field outside Inferno City. The crowds and groups were keeping their distance from this group; it was a group of terror. No one from the crowds had the qualifications to compare with the Combat Soul warrior. As for Jiang Chen, he had become a lord of terror in their hearts.

Jiang Chen's legend would certainly be told for generations to come within Inferno Hell. Not only this, when the doorway to the outside world was opened up, and all these people returned to where they came from, what happened in Inferno Hell would be known by the world. At the point, Jiang Chen's name would spread across all the provinces in the Eastern Continent.

“Brother Tian, when we return to the outside world, are you going back to the Qi Province, or the Jian Province?”

Jiang Chen asked Tian Yishan with a smile on his face.

“I've been away from the Black Sect for nearly two years, it's time for me to go back and have a look. Besides, if I return to the Jian Province now, I'm afraid I won't be able to find any safe places to stay.”

Tian Yishan replied.

“That's right. What happened in Inferno Hell will definitely



spread. Chief Jiang, not only did you kill Yang Shuo from the Myriad Sword Sect, you even killed Shangguan Wei from the Shangguan Clan. These two are the Jian Province's super powers, and they're not going to let go off this matter easily. Our relationship with Chief Jiang will be known by them, so returning to the Jian Province is just the same as seeking death."

Yang Meng said.

"I'll go where Chief Jiang goes. My life was saved by Chief Jiang, and from now on, no matter what Chief Jiang asks me to do, I, Wang Heng will definitely not say no!"

Wang Heng said while patting his chest. He had completely thrown himself at Jiang Chen's feet with great admiration.

"Alright, if that's the case, we'll return to the Qi Province together."

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

"Brother Jiang, you've killed too many people in Inferno Hell this time. Most of the men you've killed came from all sorts of big powers in different provinces. Once word about what happened here is known by them, I'm afraid they will all want to kill you. Let's put aside the powers outside the Jian Province; just the Myriad Sword Sect and the Shangguan Clan alone are really difficult to handle. Therefore, when you're out there, you must be extra cautious."

Xuan Ye reminded. It seemed like he still had something else to say, when he saw Wu Jiu looking at him, he just held back what he was going to say to Jiang Chen, for the second time.

“Haha, I, Jiang Chen have never feared any powerful enemies, I’m just scared I won’t be able to face any strong enemies. No matter who it is, the Myriad Sword Sect or the Shangguan Clan, they better not come mess with me.”

Jiang Chen burst into laughter. There were no signs of worry on his face. For every single man who eventually reached the top, there would be a path filled with enemies. Jiang Chen was given the opportunity to live a new life, and he was going to walk a path toward the top once again. Therefore, all the enemies he met along the way would just be stepping stone.

“That’s the spirit!”

Wu Jiu gave Jiang Chen a thumbs up and praised. Then he asked, “Brother, why haven’t you asked about my background, or for my help?”

“If you want to tell me, I wouldn’t need to ask. But if you don’t want to tell me, there is no point in me asking, isn’t that so? Furthermore, you’ve already helped me plenty with killing the Earth Devil, and I want to walk my own path by myself.”

Jiang Chen shrugged.

“Haha, good brother!”

Wu Jiu patted Jiang Chen’s shoulder. This young man in front of him not only had excellent talent, overbearing combat strength, and extraordinary courage; he was also a man with wisdom, a very intelligent man. A man like this would definitely achieve greatness in the future. Wu Jiu could imagine; the Eastern Continent wouldn’t be the last stop for a peerless genius like Jiang Chen.

.....

Dong! Dong! Dong! ...

Within the Qi Province’s Black Sect, the beating of the war drum sounded out across the entire Black Sect, and echoed far into the distance like a violent thunderstorm.

Right at this moment, all the Heavenly Core disciples and Sect Elders were hovering in the sky above the Black Sect. This was a small army of people from the Valley of Happiness and the Black Sect. Just the sheer force the group unleashed caused the ground to shake.

On the front, Daoist Black and Granny Feng were standing side by side. All Divine Core warriors stood behind them. With determination in their eyes, they stared at the massive force standing opposite of them.

On the opposite side, the same imposing aura could be felt from

the massive amount of enemies. The opposite camp was no weaker than the combined forces of the Black Sect and the Valley of Happiness. On the front of the opposite camp, three men stood side by side. The man standing in the middle wore a golden robe, and his golden hair was dancing in the breeze. An incomparable domineering look could be seen on his face. The man seemed pretty young, but with every movement he made, he portrayed the aura of an emperor, causing those who faced him to feel like surrendering.

The golden haired young man was none other than Nanbei Chao. As for the men who stood next to him, both of them had powerful auras that was no weaker than Daoist Black's and Granny Feng's. These two men were the chiefs of the Burning Sky Pavilion and the Heavenly Sword Sect, Zhao Chongyang and Duan Jianhong.

Both of them were the strongest men in the Qi Province, but right now, they just stood next to Nanbei Chao.

“Nanbei Chao, Zhao Chongyang, I know you want to exterminate the Black Sect and the Valley of Happiness, but this is not going to be an easy task, you'll have to pay a heavy price if you want to break the current structure of the Qi Province! Let me tell you this; today, the Black Sect and the Valley of Happiness will fight till the last drop of our blood!”

Daoist Black's voice was as loud as roaring thunder. His determination reached each and every single person at the scene.

“A major change to the structure signifies a turning point in history. With every big change like this, blood will be shed. I,

Nanbei Chao don't care how many people will die because of this, I'm only concerned about whether or not the outcome is what I want."

Nanbei Chao stood firmly with both hands behind his back. His speech about taking peoples' lives so lightly sent chills down the people's spines. He was an ultimate ruthless man, and for him, mortals were just tiny ants.

"Hmph! Nanbei Chao, it's not that easy to change the structure of the history, you are just a junior at the Mid Divine Core realm, and no matter how much of a genius you are, you're simply thinking too highly of yourself."

Granny Feng let out a cold snort.

"My approaches are not something you can imagine. Daoist Black, Granny Feng, I've given you a chance, and you didn't know how to cherish it; it's you who chose to be eliminated. Today, the warriors from the Burning Sky Pavilion are here to destroy everything and level the Black Mountain Range. A river of blood shall flow through this land, and there is nothing you can do to stop this from happening."

Nanbei Chao said in a cruel and arrogant manner.

"Haha, that's right! Daoist Black, Granny Feng, you guys really shouldn't resist any longer, your dying struggle won't help you."

Duan Jianhong burst into laughter.

“Coward!”

Granny Feng threw her gaze at Duan Jianhong, she couldn't stop herself from cursing, “Dan Jianhong, you are the Sect Chief of the Heavenly Sword Sect, one of the strongest men in the Qi Province, how you could be so cowardly and surrender to someone so easily? You're really disgusting!”

“Granny Feng, save your breath. All I did was follow the flow. Right now, the Qi Province's structure is destined for a major change, and only those who can adapt will survive!”

Duan Jianhong wasn't provoked by what Granny Feng said, he didn't even feel slightly embarrassed about his decision to surrender to the Burning Sky Pavilion.

“Nanbei Chao, do you really believe that Duan Jianhong was sincere when he surrendered? He is a cunning man, he just wants to be the man who profits from the way between us. Throw away your wishful thoughts of him helping you with everything he got. If Duan Jianhong doesn't attack us with all his strength, don't you think it's a very childish idea to try and exterminate two big sects at the same time?”

Granny Feng gazed at Nanbei Chao with a grin. All of them knew what Duan Jianhong's plan was.

“Cut the bullshit! Since we’ve come to this stage, there is nothing more to be said. Let the war begin!”

Zhao Chongyang unleashed his mighty force. His desire to fight was extremely powerful.

“Hmph! Nanbei Chao, let me see what you got! Take this attack!”

Daoist Black’s killing intent was massive. With a sway of his body, he leapt forward and struck out with his palm, unleashing a tsunami-like energy wave that crashed toward Nanbei Chao. He wanted to personally see how strong Nanbei Chao was, and if Nanbei Chao wasn’t his match, then there was no way that Zhao Chongyang and Duan Jianhong, who wasn’t sincerely helping the Burning Sky Pavilion, could defeat the combed forces of the Black Sect and the Valley of Happiness.

“Daoist Black, you’ll fight with me!”

Zhao Chongyang also unleashed his force. Just as he was about to strike, Nanbei Chao stopped him.

“Hmph!”

Nanbei Chao let out a cold snort, then he took a step forward and gently waved his palm forwards. Although the strike seemed soft and gentle, it actually carried an incredible force. A shiny golden palm appeared, and it shot toward Daoist Black in a formidable manner.

Bang!

The intense collision produced a huge amount of sparks in midair. Daoist Black's attack had been shattered by Nanbei Chao. The tremendous backlash from his attack being shattered knocked Daoist Black away, and he could only stabilize his body after traveling a small distance.

“So strong!”

Daoist Black's expression changed dramatically. He was a peak Divine Core warrior, but he was no match for Nanbei Chao. The mightiness of Nanbei Chao was not something he could handle.

“I told you, my strength is not something you could ever imagine.”

The pride on Nanbei Chao's face was getting stronger.

“Oh heavens! How can this Nanbei Chao be so strong? Even Sect Chief isn't his match, how are we going to win this war?”

“That's right! We are going to have a hard time with just Nanbei Chao alone, and there is also Zhao Chongyang and Duan Jianhong!”

At this point of time, all disciples from the Black Sect and Valley



of Happiness felt their hope going down. Their desire to fight had gone down by half, and although they had more warriors compared to their enemies, in terms of strongest warriors, they were no match for their enemies.

“Nanbei Chao really is a peerless genius, he actually has the combat strength to defeat all Divine Core warriors with just his Mid Divine Core strength. Even the two of us are no match for him... looks like we're in extreme danger today.”

Granny Feng furrowed her brows. She and Daoist Black had expected Nanbei Chao to be mighty, but his actual strength was far behind their expectations. Initially, they thought Nanbei Chao's would be similar to their. However, the reality was that Daoist Black had been knocked back by just a single blow from him.

Duan Jianhong who stood next to Nanbei Chao had an uneasy expression right now. Obviously, he too had underestimated Nanbei Chao. He didn't expect Nanbei Chao to be so strong; this was not something he wanted to see.

“Haha, way to go, mighty senior disciple Nanbei! You guys from the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness, just give up your worthless struggle!”

“Just surrender now! Just senior disciple Nanbei alone is enough to kill all of you!”

“Senior disciple Nanbei is the mightiest man, there is no way you can resist his attacks!”

When the disciple from the Burning Sky Pavilion witnessed Nanbei Chao knock back one of the strongest men in the Qi Province, Daoist Black with just a single strike, all of them began cheering. Their spirits had been raised by Nanbei Chao's mightiness.

“Activate the Black Formation.”

With a solemn expression, Daoist Black shouted out loudly.

## Chapter 255 – Opening

---

The faces of everyone from the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness turned cold. The Black Formation was their final weapon, and it was prepared to be used at the final moment of the war. But now, Daoist Black had just instructed them to activate it at the beginning of the war. This told them how critical the situation was. The fighting hadn't even begun yet, how were they going to win?

Granny Feng had a solemn expression as well. She knew why Daoist Black wanted to activate the Black Formation; Nanbei Chao was too strong! It could easily be seen how strong he was from how he knocked Daoist Black away just now. Perhaps even with the combined strength of her and Daoist Black, they will wouldn't be a match for this abnormal monster. Furthermore, Zhao Chongyang and Duan Jianhong, two powerful warriors would join the fight as well. There was simply no way they could win this war. If war really erupted, it would end just like Nanbei Chao had described it would. Rivers of blood would flow through the land, and they would suffer devastating losses.

Therefore, Daoist Black decided to activate the Black Formation in order to defend themselves. It could help reduce the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness's losses, and they could also use it to fight back against Nanbei Chao.

Right after Daoist Black finished speaking, all the men began working. All Divine Core warriors from the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness changed their positions, and stood in prearranged spots. After that, they took out golden talismans and held it in their hands.

All of them injected their Yuan energy into the talisman, causing them to instantly shatter. The shattered talismans transformed into golden beams, then they shot up into the sky. These golden beams connected with each other, and waved into a gigantic net. With Daoist Black and Granny Feng as the core, the Black Formation had been activated.

At the same time, all the Heavenly Core disciples hovered underneath the formation. With solemn expressions, the unleashed their Yuan energy and injected it into the formation. With this, the power of the formation would receive a great boost, a tremendous force that combined all the Heavenly Core disciples.

A formation like this was actually quite similar to the Green Sanctuary Sect's Gargantuan Formation. They were both formations that helped guard the sect, but after being strengthened by Daoist Black and Granny Feng, its power had become even greater.

The Gargantuan Formation could only channel everyone's energies to a single person, but the Black Formation could actually move the energy anywhere, and focus all the energy to a single spot. This meant that the force of the formation was everywhere. Wherever the enemies attacked, the force would move to that spot.

This formation was created with the help of the underground energy vein, it was the perfect formation to guard a sect.

“Attack now, don't let them fully activate the formation!”

Zhao Chongyang shouted out loudly.

“We don’t have to. Just let them activate the formation.”

Nanbei Chao laughed grimly, “If they don’t activate the formation, they might still have some strength to fight back. But if they activate it, they will lose all their strength.”

“Young master Nanbei, what do you mean by that?”

Duan Jianhong looked at Nanbei Chao, puzzled.

“If the formation is broken by us, all those Divine Core warriors will suffer the formation’s backlash, especially Daoist Black and Granny Feng who are the core of the formation. At that time, killing them will just be a piece of cake.”

Nanbei Chao said, full of confidence.

“Nanbei, this Black Formation obviously has been modified and improved by Daoist Black and Granny Feng. I don’t think it can be easily broken.”

Zhao Chongyang said.

“Breaking it without actually attack it is better. But, I still want to try and attack it myself, to test its strength. All of you just stand

back, don't do anything; let me check out this formation."

Nanbei Chao took a step forward. When his feet stamped in the air, the air violently trembled and produced a deep explosive sound, causing the hearts of those who heard it to tremble.

So powerful, frightening mightiness! No one could imagine a young Mid Divine Core warrior with such terrifying combat strength. Furthermore, every single move Nanbei Chao made portrayed the supreme aura of an emperor.

"Hmph! In front of me, no matter what kind of tricks you use, there will only be one consequence."

Nanbei Chao's voice shook the entire scene. Standing high, he forcefully struck out with his palm, unleashing a bright golden palm which pushed down like a huge golden mountain. Nanbei Chao actually targeted the core of the Black Formation, where Daoist Black and Granny Feng stood.

"Stop him!"

A bright light leaked out from Daoist Black's eyes. Together with Granny Feng, both of them unleashed their palms at the same time. This attack had merged with the force of the formation. A bright beam was unleashed, and it shot toward Nanbei Chao.

Ha!

Nanbei Chao let out a loud shout. The golden palm became even brighter, and under the eyes of everyone at the scene, it crashed into the bright beam in the most brutal manner.

Rumble...

The sky above the Black Sect was violently shaking. If not for the fact that the formation held off most of the energy, this attack alone would have already shattered a mountain.

Nanbei Chao's attack was simply too terrifying, the entire formation was violently vibrating. But luckily, the formation had merged with the massive energy of so many warriors, that's why even though Nanbei Chao was incredibly powerful, there was no way he could break it with just a single attack.

Bang! Bang! Bang! ...

Nanbei Chao was domineering, he kept unleashing attacks, palm after palm, causing the Black Formation to constantly shake.

“Haha, trying to fight me? The only consequence of doing that is death!”

Nanbei Chao's grandeur seemed to reach the heavens. His mightiness was beyond anyone's imagination. On the other side, Daoist Black and Granny Feng's faces were getting darker and darker. As a result of constant attacks from Nanbei Chao, their auras had become messy.

The faces of all the Divine Core warriors became pale and awful. Nanbei Chao's mightiness had gone beyond their imagination, it had completely defied their common sense. How could a Mid Divine Core warrior be so strong? If they hadn't witnessed it themselves, they wouldn't have believed it at all.

"Hold tight and stabilize the formation!"

Daoist Black shouted out loudly. Now, the Black Formation was their only hope, only with this formation could they defend themselves from Nanbei Chao's attack. If the formation was broken, it basically meant total annihilation for the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness, it would signify the end of the Qi Province's current structure, as well as the arrival of a new structure. And, rivers of blood would flow through the Black Mountain Range.

"Nanbei Chao! Nanbei Chao! Nanbei Chao! ..."

The spirits of those in the Burning Sky Pavilion had skyrocketed. Influenced by Nanbei Chao, all the disciple from the Burning Sky Pavilion behaved like they had just been injected with some stimulant. They were yelling and screaming like crazy.

Zhao Chongyang who stood back was laughing like a blooming flower. He could see the ending of today's war in his mind right now. After today, the entire Qi Province would belong to the Burning Sky Pavilion. Also, Nanbei Chao's mightiness had exceeded his imagination.



On the opposite side, the spirit of the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness had sunk to the bottom. All those Divine Core warriors who were supporting the formations had pale faces as well. The formidable Nanbei Chao had cast an eternal black cloud above their hearts.

Somewhere within the Black Formation, Guo Shan had raised both hands and was supporting the formation. He couldn't help but look far into the distance. With a bitter smile on his face, he murmured, "Brother, it will be too late if you don't come back soon..."

At this crucial moment, not only Guo Shan, many people were also thinking about the man who had a one-year fight agreement with Nanbei Chao. It was the only young genius in the Qi Province who could stand up to Nanbei Chao. But, it was rather disappointing that when the Black Sect had reached a point where its very existence was at stake, the man was nowhere to be seen.

There was another old man who stood next to Guo Shan. This old man had a different expression from all the others. There was no worry or hopelessness in his eyes, only excitement. This old man was none other than Fan Zhongtang.

Daoist Black has given Fan Zhongtang too much trust. He trusted him so much that he even let him have control of large areas of the formation. Daoist Black never thought of the possibility that he might betray the Black Sect.

The Black Formation was an intact formation, and no accidents should happen at any part of it. Once an accident happened, the

formation would break even without anyone attacking it, and all those who supported the formation would suffer a tremendous backlash. The consequences were devastating.

Haha...

Nanbei Chao was laughing out wildly. With a vigorous spirit, he kept unleashing powerful attacks.

At the same time, something finally happened back in Inferno Hell.

Bang!

A loud explosive sound could be heard from a hundred miles away. The sound awakened all crowds who had been keeping quiet, and caused them to go wild.

“The doorway to the outside world is going to open up. It’s in that direction. Hurry up; we only have ten minutes.”

Xuan Ye reminded.

“Let’s go.”

A look of excitement could be seen in Jiang Chen’s eyes. His group became the first ones to fly toward the portal. With their cultivation levels, travelling a hundred miles could be done very

quickly.

At this moment, a pitch black hole appeared in the skies a hundred miles away. Explosive sounds seemed to come out from the hole without end. The pitch black hole was the doorway to the outside world.

“Let’s go!”

With a leap, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow became the first ones to enter the hole. After that, the rest of the people followed them and jumped into the hole, including Huo Yuner. Huo Yuner wasn’t far away from Jiang Chen, but he didn’t go up to him to talk. In just seven days after he had fought Jiang Chen, Huo Yuner’s wounds had almost fully recovered.

Buzz...

Buzzing sounds could be heard in front of them. After that, bright portals appeared. Each of them shone in different colors, and behind each portal there was a tunnel.

“Brother, all these tunnels lead to the different provinces in the Eastern Continent, you guys go first.”

Wu Jiu said.

Jiang Chen threw his glance at one of the portals with a rather faded color; he could sense the Qi Province’s aura from it. Then, he

turned around and cupped his fist toward Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye, “Brother Jiu, Brother Xuan, we’ll meet again some other day.”

After finishing his words, Jiang Chen and his group entered the portal at the same time. Not long after they entered the portal, Huo Yun'er also walked into the same portal. He chose not to return to the Green Sanctuary Sect, he instead decided to follow Jiang Chen to the Qi Province.

After that, the rest of the men chose different portals and disappeared from the place. In just a short moment, there were only two men left; Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye.

“Lord Jiu, why wouldn’t you let me invite Brother Jiang to join the Martial Palace? With Brother Jiang’s talent, I’m sure he will become one of the Martial Saint Dynasty’s supporting pillars in the future. We should put more effort into cultivating him.”

Finally, Xuan Ye could let out the words he had kept bottled up for a long time. This was something that had confused him.

“He is a true dragon, I don’t want to become his shield; I want him to walk the road to the top by himself. I do believe, even without our invitation, with his extraordinary talent; he will be able to fight his way into the Martial Palace.”

Wu Jiu indifferently said.

“Now I understand, Lord Jiu wishes for Brother Jiang to temper

him. But, he has offended too many powers and men this time, so without the Martial Palace's protection, I'm afraid he is going to have a hard time."

Xuan Ye was still worried.

"Don't underestimate him. Let's go, the time for us to return has come, it's been ten years."

Wu Jiu threw his glance at the portal right in the center. It was the portal that led straight to the Martial Saint Dynasty.

# Chapter 256 – Fan Zhongtang’s Betrayal

---

Swoosh...

Wild wind kept blowing within the tunnel. Bright and variegated lights could be seen everywhere. All of these men had experienced this before, so they just focused on keeping the bodies stabilized, and didn’t move a bit.

“Little Chen, you’re the biggest winner for this trip to Inferno Hell, the harvest is simply massive! Perhaps the wealth you now possess is greater than the combined wealth of all four big sects!”

Big Yellow said in an excited manner.

“Of course! Chief Jiang has robbed so many Divine Core warriors, his current wealth is beyond anyone’s imagination! At least, I can’t even guess how much he has.”

Wang Heng said.

Jiang Chen replied with a faint smile. Indeed, the harvest for this trip was tremendous! Not only had he obtained great wealth and broken through to the Divine Core realm, as well as killed the Earth Devil and gotten its demon soul, accomplishing the goal he had in mind when he came to Inferno Hell. But now, Jiang Chen only had a sad expression on his face.

“Junior Disciple Jiang, as the biggest winner, you should be

happy, so why does it look like you're not satisfied?"

Guan Yiyun asked as he patted Jiang Chen's shoulder.

"The only regret I have is not being able to bring the Blood Talisman with me. The Blood Talisman is a mystical object, and I actually sensed some kinship with it. Truly a pity."

Jiang Chen shook his head. If there was anything Jiang Chen felt regretful over after this trip, it was the fact that he couldn't bring the Blood Talisman with him. This was the only regret he had.

"What? I thought the Blood Talisman was with you all the time? Why didn't you bring it out?"

Big Yellow's ears instantly stood up.

"That's right! Brother Jiang, after you obtained the Blood Talisman, wasn't it with you all the time?"

Tian Yishan was puzzled as well.

"Yes, it was with me at all times. But just now, when I entered the portal, the Blood Talisman let my body by itself and flew back to Inferno City. I guess it wants to continue protecting Inferno City."

Jiang Chen said. When the Blood Talisman left, he could sense

that it was somewhat reluctant, as well as helpless, as if it had to leave him no matter what.

“Just what is the relationship between me and the Blood Talisman? If it because of the Dragon Transformation skill? Looks like this miraculous skill passed down from the ancient era is not just a skill. Perhaps the Blood Talisman wouldn’t follow me because it wasn’t time to do so.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. He had a feeling that he would return to Inferno Hell again, as it felt like the Blood Talisman belonged to him. He would have to come back and find it.

“I see. The Blood Talisman is a really mysterious object. Although it accepted junior disciple Jiang, it looks like it would only follow you around within Inferno Hell. Once you left this place, the Blood Talisman returned on its own.”

Guan Yiyun saw the light.

“What a pity. That Blood Talisman is a rare treasure, and if you could bring it out, the power it gives you would make you really formidable.”

Big Yellow had a sad expression as well. As an expert in treasure hunting, his love toward treasures were greater than that of anyone else.

“Never mind that, let’s not talk about what happened in Inferno



Hell. Everyone, just focus on not getting pulled away by the dimensional cracks.”

Jiang Chen reminded everyone. As for the Blood Talisman, he didn’t want to talk about it anymore. Once the time was right, he would return to Inferno Hell and find it.

“Chief Jiang, there is a man following us.”

Wang Heng said.

“That’s Huo Yun'er from the Green Sanctuary Sect. Why is he following us instead of returning to the Qian Province? Don’t tell me he wants to fight brother Jiang again?”

Tian Yishan said as he furrowed his brows.

“No need to care about him.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

.....

Bang!

The war in the Black Sect was still going on. Under Nanbei Chao’s relentless attacks, the formation had still not been

destroyed. But everyone, including Daoist Black and Granny Feng, had dark faces. Their auras were in a messy state, and everyone had a hard time keeping the formation running.

“Nanbei, we are wasting time like this. Why don’t we attack together and shatter this formation?”

Zhao Chongyang shouted out.

“No need. This formation is pretty solid, but I told you just now; I will destroy this formation without even attack it. Not, it’s time to make that happen!”

Nanbei Chao’s voice was really loud, everyone at the scene could hear him clearly. But, few of them had any idea what he meant when he said he would break the formation without attacking it.

“Haha...”

Right as Nanbei Chao finished speaking, a wild laughed sounded out from somewhere within the Black Formation. At this moment, everyone could feel a major change happening on that part of the formation.

Bang!

In the next second, Fan Zhongtang retracted all his energy, causing a big breach to appear on the Black Formation. At this critical moment, Fan Zhongtang leapt forwards like a ferocious

tiger and struck out with his palm toward Guo Shan who stood right next to him.

Bang! Ahh!!

The palm hit Guo Shan's chest and almost shattered every single internal organ in Guo Shan's body. As he was putting all his focus on keeping the formation running, Guo Shan had never thought that someone would suddenly attack him; this caused him to face the attack without any defense up. A mouthful of blood burst out from Guo Shan's mouth, then he immediately fell down from the skies.

“Sect Elder Guo!”

Witnessing this, Yu Zihan who stood in the formation exclaimed loudly. He was so enraged that it seemed like flames were going to burst out from his eyes.

Fan Zhongtang's sudden betrayal, together with his sneak attack that seriously wounded Guo Shan caused two breaches on the formation to appear. Soon after, the perfectly intact formation was shattered along with a loud explosive sound.

Puuh...

The sudden destruction of the Black Formation sent a powerful backlash to all Divine Core warriors who were supporting it. Even Daoist Black and Granny Feng were throwing up blood, let alone

the other warriors.

Swoosh!

Yu Zihan didn't pay attention to the injury caused by the sudden backlash. He immediately flew down and rushed over to the falling Guo Shan, catching him before he hit the ground. Then, he landed on a nearby mountain peak.

“Sect Elder Guo!”

Yu Zihan shouted.

“Cough... The Black Sect is done for if Jiang Chen's doesn't return... remember, protect Yan Chenyu and Han Yan... leave me alone...”

After saying that, Guo Shan instantly entered a coma. Fan Zhongtang's sneak attack had caused him a serious injury that couldn't be healed.

“Haha...”

Fan Zhongtang burst into laughter. With a sway of his body, he arrived next to Nanbei Chao. Then, he bowed towards Nanbei Chao with utmost respect.

“How did this happened?”

Everyone from the Black Sect were stunned. This situation wouldn't even appear in their wildest dreams.

“Fan Zhongtang... you... why did you do that?”

Daoist Black was furious. He stared at Fan Zhongtang who had suddenly betrayed them. His decision to betray them had dealt a devastating blow to the Black Sect and the Valley of Happiness. Now, the Black Formation was broken, all the Divine Core warriors were injured by the backlash, no one could fight with their full strength any longer. Under such conditions, how were they going to fight the ferocious Burning Sky Pavilion?

“Daoist Black, I have long ago submitted to Nanbei Chao! He is a man who is born to be a king! Fighting him will just result in you dying! Initially, I didn't want to be this cruel, but since you kept protecting that Jiang Chen, making me lose to opportunity to avenge my grandson... Under such circumstances, I won't have to be nice to any of you any longer. I have been waiting for this day to come.”

What Fan Zhongtang said was like a sharp blade that pierced into the hearts of all disciples and Sect Elders of the Black Sect.

“Why does Sect Elder Fan Zhongtang want to betray us? He is the Black Sect's respectable Sect Elder, one of the biggest pillars. Sect Chief even asked him to be the acting Sect Chief when he entered secluded cultivation... why did he choose to betray us at this critical moment?”

“I can’t believe this, the Black Sect’s respectable Sect Elder has betrayed us... he was the Sect Elder I respected the most, but now he wants us all dead. Why did he do this to us?”

“We’re doomed! The Black Sect is completely doomed, we’re all going to die today!”

.....

At this moment, all the disciples and Sect Elders of the Black Sect had their hearts filled with despair. All of them were sad. If they were killed in the war with the Burning Sky Pavilion, their deaths would still be worthwhile. But now, they had been betrayed by their own ally, by a man they respected. This dealt them a heavy blow that no one could ever imagine.

“Fan Zhongtang! You bastard traitor! Daddy was blind to get along with you all this time!”

“Fuck you!! Let daddy kill this old bastard right now!”

.....

All the Sect Elders of the Black Sect were extremely furious, all of them just wished they could dash forward and eat Fan Zhongtang alive. Someone could even be seen with tears in their eyes; they had taken Fan Zhongtang as their brother. But now, their most trusted brother had betrayed them. The pain in their hearts was

unimaginable. They would rather be killed by Nanbei Chao while fighting than be betrayed by their own friend.

“Let’s do this, we must kill this old dog!”

“Daddy was blinded as well, how I could ever consider a dog as a Sect Elder?!”

“Pooh! Scum of the earth!”

.....

Everyone were extremely angry. In just a short amount of time, all the disciples and Sect Elders of the Black Sect turned felt their respect and friendship toward Fan Zhongtang turn into hatred. All of them wished they could tear Fan Zhongtang into pieces.

“Jiang Chen, I hate myself for not listening to your advice...”

Daoist Black had a bitter smile on his face. Only now did he recall Jiang Chen’s warning. He had warned him to pay more attention to Fan Zhongtang, but he had never taken the warning to heart, because he believed that the loyal Fan Zhongtang was definitely not a traitor. Now, it seemed like his judgment was far weaker than Jiang Chen’s.

Now, the Black Sect was going to face destruction. In Daoist Black’s mind, he was thinking about Jiang Chen. He had no idea if Jiang Chen would appear at this critical moment. Although the

chance of this happening was slim, Daoist Black still hoped it would happen.

“Granny Feng, I’m sorry.”

Daoist Black bowed deeply toward Granny Feng and expressed his apologies. If not for his misjudgment, the situation wouldn’t become like this. The combined force of two big sects would still give them the ability to fight back, but for now, all their warrior were seriously wounded. They had lost all ability to fight back.

“Brother Black, who could have thought that this might happen? Since it happened, all we can do is accept the fact. But, even if certain death is awaiting, I, Granny Feng, will still fight until the end!”

Granny Feng unleashed her energy and spoke with a prideful expression.

“I gave you a chance, but you rejected it. Now, you’ve lost the chance to surrender. Everyone listen up, kill them all!”

Nanbei Chao ordered with a cruel expression.



# Chapter 257 – Jiang Chen Returns

---

Rumble...

After Nanbei Chao had given out his order, the overall spirit of the Burning Sky Pavilion reached an extremely high level. All disciples and elders had perfectly unleashed their full energy, and each of them had incredible killing intent. Without hesitation, they began storming toward their enemies.

“Kill! All disciples and elders of the Black Sect, listen up! We will defend the Black Sect’s honor with our own blood!”

Daoist Black’s eyes turned red. Now, he had no emotions toward death, he only wanted to personally kill Fan Zhongtang. Before he died, killing Fan Zhongtang was his last wish.

Kill! Kill! Kill!

Everyone were burning with rage. All the warriors from the Black Sect were wildly yelling and screaming at the top of their lungs as they attacked with the combat weapons in their hands. At this moment, their blood was boiling; they wanted to fight together with their Sect Chief; they wanted to fight till the end! Even till the last drop of their blood, they wanted to defend the honor of their sect.

Even though they knew this was a struggle from their deathbeds, they still had to fight. A cornered wild beast’s attack was deadly. It was absolutely impossible for the Burning Sky Pavilion to

eliminate the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness without suffering any losses. Even if they had to smear the heavens with their blood; they wanted their enemy to pay a heavy price.

“Brothers! Kill one to break even, kill two to make a profit!”

The man shouting was Wang Yun. After he received guidance from Jiang Chen, his cultivation growth had improved a lot; he was now a great warriors at the peak Mid Heavenly Core realm. Wang Yun was a doughty man; he became the first man to ram into the enemies with longsword in hand.

Bang... bang... bang...

At this moment, fighting intent filled the entire scene. Both sides had immediately engaged in the war. The battlefield spread across a hundred miles, covering the entire sky above the Black Sect. The powerful and devastating energies kept sweeping across the places, shattering mountains after mountains. This was a war of life and death; the amount of people who died and were injured increased with every passing second.

Divine Core warriors fought Divine Core warriors; Heavenly Core warriors fought Heavenly Core warriors... As for the Mortal Core and Qi Hai warriors, they could only hide in the Black Sect and pray. They couldn't provide any help in a war like this; they could only serve as cannon fodder if they jumped into the battlefield. Therefore, praying to survive was the only thing they could do now. Also, they had to protect themselves from getting hurt by the energy ripples unleashed from the war. With their current cultivation bases, any energy ripples from the war could

kill them in an instant.

Bai Huadie was wearing a white dress that fluttered in the wind. She carried a long whip, and she was tangled in a fight with an Early Divine Core Sect Elders. As one of the top four geniuses of the Qi Province, Bai Huadie was a girl with extraordinary talent. She had broken through to the Divine Core realm, and if it wasn't for the fact that she had suffered from the backlash when the formation was broken, none of the Sect Elders who were the same level as her would be her match.

The top four geniuses of the Qi Province; Liang Xiao from the Heavenly Sword Sect was killed by Jiang Chen, Guan Yiyun from the Black Sect had gone to Inferno Hell, Bai Huadie from the Valley of Happiness had broken through to the Divine Core realm. Nanbei Chao was the one with the most amazing progress. With only a mere Mid Divine Core cultivation base, he already had the ability to change the entire structure of the Qi Province. Only Nanbei Chao could achieve such mighty progress.

“Fan Zhongtang, get your ass out here and fight with me!”

A Mid Divine Core Sect Elder shouted at Fan Zhongtang. He just wished to eat Fan Zhongtang alive.

“Hmph! Yuan Lei, since you so stupidly insist on fighting me, I'll send you to hell today!”

Fan Zhongtang had become completely hostile towards his once fellow sect members. With a loud shout, he forcefully punched

toward Yuan Lei. A scene like this was no doubt incredibly ironic for the Black Sect. At this crucial moment for the Black Sect, two men who were once from the same sect were fighting each other. No one would ever have thought that this would happen.

Rumble...

Both men were instantly engaged in a fierce fight. With their cultivation levels, it should supposedly be an equal fight, but since Yuan Lei was injured by the formation's backlash, he couldn't fight with his full combat strength. Therefore, he was on the receiving side moments after the fight had begun. He was no match for Fan Zhongtang.

Argh...

Blood-curdling screeches repeatedly sounded out throughout the scene. The entire sky above the Black Sect was filled with the pungent smell of blood. The fierce fights caused the death toll to repeatedly rise. For the fights between Heavenly Core disciples, the Burning Sky Pavilion did not have the upper hand. After all, the disciples of the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness together vastly outnumbered the Burning Sky Pavilion.

However, for this war, it was the fight between the Divine Core warriors that mattered. With the combined forces of the Divine Core warriors from the Heavenly Core Sect, both sides had a pretty equal amount of Divine Core warriors. But, since all Divine Core warriors from the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness were wounded by the backlash, everyone's combat strengths had been greatly reduced. Therefore, when the war began, their warriors

were injured even more, or even killed.

“Nanbei, I was thing thinking, why don’t we just attack and kill Daoist Black and Granny Feng straight away? This would end everything instantly.”

Zhao Chongyang looked at Nanbei Chao who had an indifferent expression.

“No, this is the change of the structure, the turning point in history. A major change must be associated with an intense war, and all the disciples of the Burning Sky Pavilion have to go through this major change; only then can the grow up. Today will be a bloody page in history, rivers of blood are destined to flow.”

Nanbei Chao stood in the air with both hands behind his back. He was enjoying the battlefield’s atmosphere. As for the increasing amount of dead and wounded men, it didn’t matter if they were his own allies or enemies, he had no feelings toward them.

Duan Jianhong who stood not far away gasped at Nanbei Chao’s cruelty. He was far more wicked than Duan Jianhong had expected. Becoming this man’s enemy would definitely make things difficult.

“Everyone listen, reserve some of your strength when you fight, just pretend you’re fighting with full force. Don’t forget our original intentions.”

Duan Jianhong sent out his message through his Divine Sense, informing all the Divine Core Sect Elders of the Heavenly Sword Sect.

“Fan Zhongtang, come face your death!”

Daoist Black shouted out loudly as he leapt toward Fan Zhongtang who was in an intense fight with Yuan Lei.

“Haha, Daoist Black, your opponent is me!”

Zhao Chongyang let out a hearty laugh. With incredible speed, he dashed forward and got in Daoist Black’s way. Then, he instantly struck out with his palm. On the other side, Duan Jianhong had attacked as well. He was blocking Granny Feng’s path.

“Coward!”

Granny Feng didn’t hide the despise she felt toward Duan Jianhong.

“Haha, Granny Feng, looks like you did a good job taking care of your health! Why don’t you just follow me? As long as you can please me, I can guarantee your survival.”

Duan Jianhong let out a hearty laugh.

“Bastard!”

Granny Feng waved her hand and unleashed a furious wind which swept toward Duan Jianhong. But, Granny Feng was like the others, she too had suffered a massive backlash because of the formation. As the core of the formation, she and Daoist Black had suffered the strongest backlashes. The strength between the four most powerful people in the Qi Province was pretty much equal, but because of the backlash, Granny Feng was currently no match for Duan Jiang.

Bang... bang... bang...

Violent killing intents could be sensed everywhere. The place had become a horrifying battlefield. The once green scenery with blue rivers had become a land of hell. Endless slaughtering was carried out, and the death toll kept increasing.

Nanbei Chao was the only man who had nothing to do in the entire battlefield. He was watching everything happening in front of him, he stood high above everyone else with an indifferent, yet noble expression. To him, this war was just a game for him. Those men who were fighting with their lives were just chess pieces that pleased his monarch mind. He really enjoyed this feeling.

Somewhere else. Within the tunnel that connected Inferno Hell and the Qi Province, Jiang Chen and the few men were talking and joking around. None of them knew that the Black Sect was in a grave crisis right now.

Suddenly, bits of bright lights appeared in front of them. All

those who had gone to Inferno Hell had experienced this before, and knew that these lights signaled that the end of the tunnel was ahead.

“The end of the tunnel is right in front of us. I wonder where in the Qi Province we will land.”

Tian Yishan said. He hadn't been in the Qi Province for two years.

“The Qi Province isn't big. With our current speed, even if we landed in the most remote area, we'll be able to return to the Black Sect in just a short amount of time.”

Guan Yiyun said.

A force pulled the group. They immediately held their breaths, and didn't dare resist the force.

In the next moment, a crack exploded forth in the air. Figures of men fell out from the crack. Luckily, these men were prepared, and they immediately stabilized their bodies as they fell out from the tunnel.

“Who are you?!”

A loud shout sounded out from behind them. Jiang Chen and his group turned around and saw a few young men looking in their direction. When these young men saw Jiang Chen's face, they were



startled for a moment, then extremely happy expression emerged on their faces.

“Young master Jiang! He’s young master Jiang!”

The leading young man was surprised. When these four young men saw Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, they looked like they had seen their biggest idol. Without hesitation, they walked forward and bowed toward them.

“So it’s you guys.”

Jiang Chen smiled. These young men were no strangers to Jiang Chen, they were from Redsun Town. The place they landed was a familiar place; they were at the entrance of Redsun Town. He didn’t expect that they would land in Redsun Town. Jiang Chen looked up, and he could still see a huge statue standing firmly in the center of Redsun Town. The statue was of none other than himself.

“Wow, Chief Jiang is so amazing! There is a statue of Chief Jiang here!”

Wang Heng said, filled with excitement.

“Kaka! I’m sure you guys don’t know about this; Little Chen and I came to Yellowstone to kill the Blood Devils, and we also killed Lord Bloodmoon, saving the entire Redsun Town in the process. The townspeople were grateful for what Little Chen had done,

that's why they built a statue of him, and worship it every day."

Thinking back to the scene that time, Big Yellow had a prideful expression on his face.

"Young master Jiang, you're finally back! The Black Sect is in a huge life and death crisis right now!"

The leading young man hastily said.

"What?!"

Both Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun's expressions changed.

"What is happening?"

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

"That Nanbei Chao has broken through to the Mid Divine Core realm, and right now, he has brought the men from the Burning Sky Pavilion to attack the Black Sect. The Valley of Happiness have joined forces with the Black Sect, but the Heavenly Sword Sect has surrendered to Nanbei Chao. I'm afraid they're fighting a violent war as we speak. I heard that Nanbei Chao is extremely powerful, so perhaps even with the combined force of two sects, they might not be able to withstand his attack."

The young man explained. Everyone in the Qi Province knew

what had recently happened.

“What?! I didn’t expect such big news! The Qi Province’s structure is going to see a big change... let’s go, we need to immediately return to the Black Sect!”

Jiang Chen dared not delay any longer, he immediately flew towards the Black Sect with extreme speed. Aside from Big Yellow, none of the others could keep up with him.

When Jiang Chen and his group left the place, Huo Yun'er emerged from the tunnel as well. After he learned about what was happening from the young man in Redsun Town, he hesitated a little bit, but then he too flew towards the Black Sect.

## Chapter 258 – Those Who Attacked My Sect Will Be Killed Without Mercy!

---

The excitement these men felt were instantly killed off, and a shadow was cast above their minds. Even more so for Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan. Both of them were disciples of the Black Sect, so their feelings towards the sect was much stronger compared to the others. At this moment, when their own sect was in a life and death crisis, it was impossible for them to stay free of worries.

“Junior disciple Guan, who is that Nanbei Chao? I’ve never heard of this man before.”

Tian Yishan asked as he furrowed his brows.

“He came out of nowhere during this year’s Qi Province competition and claimed to be the number one genius in the Qi Province. During the Qi Province competition, he alone defeated all number one geniuses from the other three big sects, and even I couldn’t withstand a single blow from him. I never thought Nanbei Chao could progress so quickly and break through to the Mid Divine Core realm.”

Guan Yiyun said with a bitter look on his face. The reason why he went to Inferno Hell was because he didn’t want there to be a big gap between himself and Nanbei Chao. But, judging from the current situation, it seemed like the gap between them had become greater and greater. Although Guan Yiyun was also a Mid Divine Core warrior, compared to Nanbei Chao who was an abnormal monster, they were on completely different level.

“I don’t know how someone like that can be found in the Qi Province...”

Tian Yishan said with mixed emotions.

“During the Qi Province competition, Nanbei Chao wasn’t the only rising star, we also had junior disciple Jiang. Junior disciple Jiang was only an Early Mortal Core warrior back then, and he was able to defeat every single disciple from all four big sects and become number one in the competition. Also, he made an agreement with Nanbei Chao to fight one year from then. Half a year has passed, and junior disciple Jiang has broken through to the Early Divine Core realm, and he even has the ability to kill Late Divine Core warriors. Even that Shangguan Wei was no match for him. I’m sure his full combat strength is not any less than that of Nanbei Chao. With that being said, junior disciple Jiang’s talent is much greater than Nanbei Chao’s talent.”

Guan Yiyun had similar mixed emotions. They were considered geniuses as well, but if compared to the abnormal monsters, Nanbei Chao and Jiang Chen, it sounded like their genius title was worthless.

“Looks like the one-year fight is going to happen ahead of schedule. Since junior disciple Jiang has returned, he and Nanbei Chao are definitely going to fight today, and it will be a battle of life and death. Let’s speed up, even if we can’t catch up to Jiang Chen, we still have to rush back and help.”

Guan Yiyun told everyone to hurry up. They all increased their speed to the maximum, transforming into a few beams of lights as they sped toward the Black Sect.

Back in the Black Sect, the violent war was still in progress. Blood-curdling screeches and blood spilling around made the music of slaughter appear. From time to time, dead bodies would fall down from the skies, and the mountain peaks underneath the battlefield were continuously being shattered by the devastating energies. All the Mortal Core and Qi Hai disciples could only run around for their lives with sad and angry expressions. At this moment where their beloved sect was in crisis, none of them could do anything to help, they could only hide themselves to avoid getting killed. This kind of feeling was really awful. They really wished they could fight the Mortal Core disciples of the Burning Sky Pavilion, and even the Heavenly Sword Sect. But too bad, none of them were here.

“Fuck off!”

Fan Zhongtang unleashed a powerful skill. He slammed his palm onto Yuan Lei’s chest, knocking him away. After that, he threw his glance at a remote mountain peak.

“Guo Shan, I am going to completely kill you today! I will also destroy Yan Chenyu and Han Yan’s bodies! I want that Jiang Chen to feel regret for the rest of his life!”

Fan Zhongtang shouted out loudly when he saw Yu Zihan bringing the Guo Shan who was in a come back to his mountain peak.

“Hurry up, stop him!”

Daoist Black who was intensely fighting with Zhao Chongyang roared out loudly. Because of Fan Zhongtang and his grandson, Yan Chenyu and Han Yan had suffered serious injuries and torture. This had caused Daoist Black to feel guilty when thinking about Jiang Chen. If he couldn't protect Yan Chenyu and Han Yan today, even if Daoist Black was killed, he wouldn't be able to die in peace.

Grrra!!!

Yuan Lei let out a furious roar. He ignored his own injuries as he sped up and stopped Fan Zhongtang. Right at this moment, none of the great warriors from the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness had a chance to help. All of them were even unable to fend for themselves. They were all on the receiving ends in their fights, and if this situation carried on, sooner or later all of them would be killed by their opponent.

“Yuan Lei, since you're courting death, I will now grant you your wish!”

Fan Zhongtang shouted. A bright longsword suddenly appeared in his hand, and without any delay, he forcefully swung it at Yuan Lei.

Rumble! ...

Both earth and sky were endlessly trembling. Blood filled the entire battlefield, and one of the Divine Core Sect Elders from the Valley of Happiness had been killed by a warrior from the Burning Sky Pavilion. At this point of time, many casualties occurred amongst the Divine Core warriors.

For the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness, casualties like this were devastating. Once the amount of strong warriors were reduced, that was the moment of their elimination. Besides that, Nanbei Chao hadn't even attacked yet. Daoist Black and Granny Feng were both struggling with their fights. But luckily, the elders of the Heavenly Sword Sect didn't seem to be fighting with all their strength. This actually gave them some room to breathe.

Arghh!!

A Divine Core Sect Elder from the Black Sect let out a miserable shriek right before he died.

The situation on the battlefield was getting more and more violent. Huge casualties were suffered in the battle between the Heavenly Core inner circle disciples. A long open wound could be found on Wang Yun's chest, and he was still fighting as his blood splashed around.

Following the death of each Divine Core warrior, despair filled the hearts of the disciples from the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness. All of them knew that after today's war, the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness would only exist in history, and all of them would be dead. The despair weakened their fighting spirit.



“Argh!! Daddy will fight it out with you!”

An inner circle disciple from the Black Sect let out a ground shaking roar the moment his opponent impaled his body with a longsword. Using the last strength he had, he pierced his combat weapon into his opponent's body. Both men died at the same time.

“Looks like the heavens wants to eliminate the Black Sect.”

Tears flowed down from Daoist Black's eyes. He knew the Black Sect was finished; its hundred year old legacy would be destroyed in his hand. It wasn't hard to imagine how he felt right now, every single dead elder and disciple were like a sharp blade poking his heart, causing his heart to be filled with miserable pain.

Misery, despair, unwillingness, anger, all sorts of negative emotions filled the hearts of every single elder and disciple of the Black Sect. They had completely given up all their open. The deaths of their fellow disciples, the shattered mountain peaks; the homes where they had live for so many years... right now, their home was being destroyed, and shadows had been cast upon their hearts. With this, many men had given up fighting back, and just stood still, waiting for death to save them from this misery.

Puchi!

On the other side, Fan Zhongtang had sliced Yuan Lei's arm off with his sword, and knocked the severely wounded Yuan Lei far away with his energy. After that, he turned into a trail of light as

he sped over to Guo Shan's mountain peak.

“Traitor, what are you trying to do?!”

When Yu Zihan saw Fan Zhongtang, his expression immediately changed.

“What I'm trying to do? I am going to kill that old fool Guo Shan, destroy Han Yan and Yan Chenyu's dead bodies, I want revenge for my grandson! Yu Zihan, I will kill you first if you get in my way!”

Fan Zhongtang said with a grin on his face.

“Fan Zhongtang, are you really not afraid of Jiang Chen? He will come back and get revenge for everything, I'm sure you know his approach!”

Yu Zihan said in a cold manner.

“Hmph! Do not try to use that little bastard to scare me! That little bastard is lucky he isn't here today, otherwise he would be dead for sure!”

Fan Zhongtang let out a cold snort. Without hesitation, he took a step forward and unleashed powerful energy which crashed toward Yu Zihan.

Bang!

Although Yu Zihan tried his best to defend, he was after all only an Early Divine Core warrior. The gap between him and Fan Zhongtang was huge. In an instant, blood burst out from his mouth because of the tremendous force, and his face instantly became pale white.

“Only over my dead body will you be able to touch Yan Chenyu and Han Yan!”

Yu Zihan was a man with courage. He grit his teeth, and he didn’t move a single inch before Guo Shan.

“Then, I will smash you into pieces.”

Fan Zhongtang threw his hand out and grabbed toward Yu Zihan. If this strike really hit Yu Zihan, he would definitely shatter into pieces.

“Brother Jiang, I tried my best, I hope you don’t blame me...”

A smile appeared on Yu Zihan’s face as he waited for death’s arrival.

Crack!

A crystal clear bone cracking sound suddenly sounded out in front of Yu Zihan, and a painful scream followed the next second.

Yu Zihan was shocked, he suddenly discovered a man standing in front of him, and the painful scream came from Fan Zhongtang.

“Old fool, I knew you were up to no good! How dare you hurt my brother?! I, Jiang Chen will let you know the taste of utter misery!”

This man who suddenly appeared was none other than Jiang Chen; he had finally returned. With his hand, he crushed Fan Zhongtang’s arm. With his current combat strength, Fan Zhongtang was like an ant in front of him; he could kill him anytime he wanted.

“Jiang Chen!”

Sweat filled Fan Zhongtang’s forehead. With extreme shock, he stared at Jiang Chen who had suddenly appeared. What made him shocked was Jiang Chen’s current cultivation level. It caused him to feel terror from the bottom of his heart.

“Brother Jiang, you’re finally back!”

Yu Zihan was so excited he nearly started jumping. Seeing Jiang Chen at this moment made him happier than seeing his own father. Perhaps only this man in front of Yu Zihan could solve the Black Sect’s crisis.

“Zihan, I’m late. Sorry for letting you and brother Guo suffer.”

Jiang Chen said with a faint voice. He had seen Guo Shan lying on the ground in a coma, and the fury in his eyes was burning hot; he couldn't control it any longer.

“Not late, it's not late at all!”

Yu Zihan said with a smile. He was so happy that tears flowed down from his face, “If this old bastard Fan Zhongtang hadn't suddenly betrayed us, the Black Formation could still last for a long time! Because of him, Sect Chief and all Divine Core warriors suffered from the formation's backlash, all of them were injured.”

“Old dog!”

Jiang Chen grabbed Fan Zhongtang's other arm and shattered it in an instant.

“I won't let you die so easily, I will keep you alive, and let Sect Chief kill you himself!”

Jiang Chen said with a cruel expression. He shattered both of Fan Zhongtang's arms and legs, then threw him onto the ground like a crippled man, “Zihan, help me watch this old dog. An eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth; those whose hands are stained with the blood of the Black Sect shall die!”

Jiang Chen was furious, the scene in front of him had ignited flames in the bottom of his heart. In an instant, he flew high up into the sky and shouted out loudly with the Sonic Hawk Cry, “I,

Jiang Chen have returned! Those who attacked my sect will be killed without any mercy!”

# Chapter 259 – Antedated One Year Fight Agreement

---

Jiang Chen's voice was boosted by the powerful Sonic Hawk Cry. The violent sound waves rocked like thunder strikes from above. It swept across the entire battlefield, and was heard by every single person.

Right at this moment, all the men on the battlefield looked up into the sky. What they saw was a young man dressed in white. Blood wings flapped behind his back, keeping him floating up high. The energy leaking out from his body caused all those who stared at him to feel a shiver down their spines.

“Look, it's senior disciple Jiang! Senior disciple Jiang has finally returned!”

“So strong, what a formidable energy! Senior disciple Jiang's aura is no weaker than Nanbei Chao's aura! He has broken through to the Divine Core realm, the Black Sect is saved!”

“Only senior disciple Jiang can fight this Nanbei Chao, and he finally returned at this critical moment, hahaha!”

.....

When the disciples of the Black Sect who had given up all their hope saw Jiang Chen, a light of hope immediately lit up within their hearts. They all became excited, and the diminished desire to

fight had once again returned.

“He’s finally back, hahaha!”

With his head pointed towards the skies, Daoist Black also started laughing. Tears could be seen flowing down from his cheeks. He had put all his hope onto Jiang Chen, and if Jiang Chen didn’t return in time, the Black Sect would definitely become a hell filled with slaughter, and countless disciples of the Black Sect would die.

Roar~

A loud roar that shook the sky sounded out from far, and just a split second later, the source of the roar landed onto the battlefield. It was a dog with a body bigger than an adult bull, and the entire body was glowing in a golden light. In an ultimate ferocious manner, when he arrived at the battlefield, he immediately crushed an Early Divine Core warriors from the Burning Sky Pavilion into pieces with his head, killing him in an instant.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. Using the True Dragon Palm, he unleashed a gigantic blood red dragon claw. The dragon claw crashed down like the sky was falling down, and instantly shattered a Mid Divine Core elder into powder in a formidable way.



“Perfect!”

Daoist Black shouted. Jiang Chen didn't disappoint him! He just returned from Inferno Hell, and he killed a Mid Divine Core warrior as easily as squeezing an ant.

“Daoist Black, go to hell!”

Taking advantage of the fact that Daoist Black wasn't paying full attention, Zhao Chongyang slammed his palm onto Daoist Black's chest with speed great as lightning.

Puh! A stream of blood shot out from Daoist Black's mouth.

“You're courting death.”

Jiang Chen glared at the scene. With a sway of his body, he arrived behind Daoist Black and used his hand to support Daoist Black's body.

Bang!

Without saying anything, Jiang Chen once again unleashed the True Dragon Palm toward Zhao Chongyang.

“Tiny Jiang Chen, what can you do? Even if you have finally returned, there's still no way you can prevent the elimination of the Black Sect, you're just here to get yourself killed.”

As a peak Divine Core warrior, Zhao Chongyang didn't take the Early Divine Core Jiang Chen seriously. In an instant, a bright light was unleashed by him. The bright light turned into a big shiny hand which thrust toward the True Dragon Palm.

Bang!

The big shiny hand shattered as soon as the explosive sound was heard. Jiang Chen's True Dragon Palm kept crashing forward, causing it to seem like the sky was falling down. The tremendous force gave Zhao Chongyang a suffocating feeling, and his expression finally changed. Only now did he realize that he had underestimated Jiang Chen.

Bam!

The True Dragon Palm knocked into Zhao Chongyang, sending him flying 300 meters away before he was able to regain control of his body. Jiang Chen didn't stop there, he immediately drew his Bloodthirsty Sword. With lightning fast speed, he arrived in front of Zhao Chongyang and swung his sword down from above in a swift motion.

Fast, extremely fast! Even the powerful Zhao Chongyang couldn't resist this strike.

Puchi!

Blood splashed around. Jiang Chen's sword had chopped off one of Zhao Chongyang's arms. Zhao Chongyang didn't even have the ability to defend himself from this attack. One of the original four strongest men in the Qi Province was actually this vulnerable in front of Jiang Chen.

“Save me, Nanbei!”

Zhao Chongyang was frightened from the bottom of his heart. Jiang Chen's formidability had caused him to feel like he was facing a mighty king. First, he was wounded by the True Dragon Palm's force, and now, one of his arms had been sliced off. There was no way he could resist another strike from Jiang Chen. At this moment, Zhao Chongyang could only call for Nanbei Chao's help.

Swoosh!

A golden light suddenly appeared and blocked the path between Jiang Chen and Zhao Chongyang. After that, a man followed the light and appeared in the same spot. The man had golden hair, and wore a golden robe. He was Nanbei Chao.

Both men looked into each other's eyes, and neither of them spoke a word. The two strong rivals had finally met for the second time. However, the situation was completely different from the first time. When they met for the first time, Jiang Chen was like an ant in front of Nanbei Chao, and he could easily kill him like killing an ant. But, in just half a year, everything had changed. The once tiny little ant had grown to level where he could fight him face to face.

“Well done!”

The seriously wounded Daoist Black couldn't help but shout once again. Jiang Chen's formidability had exceeded his expectations. Daoist Black knew very well how strong Zhao Chongyang was, they were both amongst the four strongest people in the Qi Province, and they knew each other really well. But, after Jiang Chen appeared, he had nearly killed Zhao Chongyang with just two strikes. Such powerful combat strength had reached an unpredictable level, and he was surely no weaker than Nanbei Chao.

Right at this moment, the restless battlefield had actually become completely silent. Everyone threw their glance at Jiang Chen and Nanbei Chao. These two men were the legendary men of the Qi Province.

“So this young man is Jiang Chen? What a horrifying approach! He's just an Early Divine Core warrior, but he actually has such powerful combat strength, even Zhao Chongyang wasn't a match for him!”

Granny Feng was really surprised.

“Master, this Jiang Chen was only at the Early Mortal Core realm when he participated in the Qi Province competition half a year ago. In just half a year, he has actually grown to this level! If I hadn't witnessed it myself, I really wouldn't be able to believe it!”

Bai Huadie arrived next to Granny Feng. She stared at Jiang Chen with her beautiful eyes. As a person who is said to be a genius, Jiang Chen's progress had caused Bai Huadie to feel a mountain-like heavy pressure.

Yi Qingzi who was also called a genius had her mouth wide open in shock. She too had participated in the Qi Province competition, and she could still remember when she admitted defeat to Jiang Chen when they fought in the same stage. Although she was weaker than Jiang Chen at that time, she never could have thought that in just half a year, the gap between them would become so huge.

“Senior disciple is really formidable, even Zhao Chongyang is no match for him!”

“Senior disciple Jiang is the true number one genius in the Qi Province! Perhaps even Nanbei Chao isn't his match! It's still hard to tell who the winner today will be.”

“Fight, damn it! Weren't they behaving arrogantly just now? Now that senior disciple Jiang has returned, even the Burning Sky Pavilion Sect Chief was badly wounded by him! Let's see if they can still be so arrogant!”

.....

All the disciples of the Black Sect were really excited, their gloomy feelings were all gone, and their fighting spirit was soaring with each passing moment.

“Jiang Chen! Jiang Chen! Jiang Chen! ...”

Someone started shouting Jiang Chen’s name, and soon after, the entire crowd was doing the same. All the disciples from the Black Sect raised their hands high up into the air as they cheered. Influenced by this, the disciples from the Valley of Happiness did the same, and shouted Jiang Chen’s name. This name carried a unique power, just by shouting it they could all feel their confidence returning to them. This name gave them unlimited hope!

Duan Jianhong’s face was the darkest one of all the people here. The Heavenly Sword Sect was caught in a dilemma. Nanbei Chao’s formidable strength was far beyond his expectations and imagination, and now, there was another man who was similar in strength to Nanbei Chao. The situation had gone out of his control, and it seemed like there was no way he could accomplish his tiny wicked plan.

“Attack! Kill them all!”

Big Yellow shouted. He was the first one to attack, he rammed and crashed in all directions where the enemies stood. In an instant, several bodies were sent flying. Compared to the slaughter in Inferno City, the scene he was facing right now was nothing. He was knocking a few hundred Divine Core warriors around everywhere back in Inferno City, this small amount of Divine Core warriors in front of him was nothing. Honestly, there weren’t enough here for Big Yellow to kill.

杀！杀！杀！

Kill! Kill! Kill!

The killing intents soared high up into the sky. Under Big Yellow's lead, all the disciples of the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness became even stronger, and their spirits soared even higher. They sliced and stabbed towards the enemies with their weapons. On the opposite side, because of Jiang Chen's formidable arrival, and him inflicting grave injuries upon their Sect Chief, the once high spirited disciples began losing all their spirit.

“I, Tian Yishan have returned!”

“I, Guan Yiyun have returned!”

Just when the violent war resumed once again, another couple of powerful auras landed not far away, instantly joining the battlefield.

“Huo Yun'er is here to help Black Sect!”

Huo Yun'er arrived as well with an ocean of flames behind him, causing him to look like a man made of flames. He carried his scorching hot flames and arrived at the battlefield. The combined forces of these men once again made the battlefield become even more violent.

“Look, there are so many Divine Core warriors! That's senior disciple Guan Yiyun, he has also broken through to the Divine Core

realm!”

“That’s Tian Yishan! I’ve heard about him, he was the number one genius in the Black Sect two years ago, but he left the Qi Province. I never thought I’d see him again today.”

“Isn’t that Huo Yun'er from the Green Sanctuary Sect? Why is he helping us?”

“It doesn’t matter! Brothers, senior disciple Jiang has now returned, as well as senior disciples Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun! Our strength has now increased, let’s take this opportunity to kill our enemies! Kill them all, let them know fear and make them wet their pants in terror!”

“Fuck them! Daddy is going to kill those bastards from the Burning Sky Pavilion and make them piss blood!”

.....

Violent, the entire battlefield became violent in an instant. The spirit of the two sides had switched, the disciples of the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness who had once given up all hope now looked like they had been injected with some sort of stimulant. They became extremely strong, causing their enemies to have a hard time resisting.

In the skies, Jiang Chen and Nanbei Chao stood opposite of each other. Neither of them paid any attention to the battlefield below.



“Jiang Chen, you’ve really surprised me, I never thought you would have such incredible progress. Looks like I underestimated you.”

Nanbei Chao said. Jiang Chen’s incredible progress had indeed exceeded his imagination. No matter how prideful Nanbei Chao was, he was forced to take Jiang Chen more seriously now. There weren’t many people could make Nanbei Chao pay serious attention.

“Nanbei Chao, your actions today have pushed the Burning Sky Pavilion into the deepest abyss. Looks like our one year fight will happen earlier than agreed upon.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent voice. He had looked forward to fighting Nanbei Chao for a long time. Although there was still 6 more months until their fight, judging from the current situation, there was no way they could wait any longer.

“I was thinking about letting you stay alive for another half year, but since you can’t wait to get yourself killed, I will just grant you your wish today.”

Nanbei Chao unleashed his energy. The aura of a supreme emperor instantly covered his entire body.

## Chapter 260 – An Eye For An Eye

---

“Let the fight tell who the last man standing will be.”

Jiang Chen unleashed his energy, and without any hesitation, he unleashed the True Dragon Palm which crashed toward Nanbei Chao. Jiang Chen dared not show any neglect when fighting Nanbei Chao. If Nanbei Chao was the same stage as him, he could completely look down on him. But, since there was a one stage difference between them, it was a different story. Although Jiang Chen could easily kill any Late Divine Core warriors, Nanbei Chao wasn't someone those people could compare with.

“Trinity Fist!”

Nanbei Chao shouted as he punched out with a tremendous force. Both men had flown higher into the sky, and were fighting a battle that only belonged to them.

Nanbei Chao was cultivating the heavenly favored Imperious Ruler skill, which made him destined to walk the path leading to him becoming an imperial emperor. The Trinity Fist was one of the Imperious Ruler skill's terrifying combat skills.

Bang...

Both of them were extremely ferocious men. When the True Dragon Palm collided with the Trinity Fist, the tremendous energy ripples swept across the entire place, it even covered the heavens above, blocking the sun from sight. The violent energy waves

swept across the sky, and the powerful shockwaves caused everyone's hearts to tremble, as if a dark shadow had been cast above their souls.

After the collision, both men stood still on the same spot, and they looked completely calm. It was actually an equal match.

Jiang Chen squinted his eyes and threw his razor sharp gaze onto Nanbei Chao, then he thought to himself, "This man is indeed a rare genius, he didn't disappoint me. If he was born in the same era as me in my past life; his achievements would not be any weaker than mine."

This was Jiang Chen's assessment toward Nanbei Chao. It was an extraordinary assessment.

But on the other side, Nanbei Chao was shocked; a storm was violently raging within his mind, "What an incredible man! In just half a year, he has actually grown to this stage where he can have a balanced fight with me! Furthermore, he's only an Early Divine Core warrior... If we were in the same stage, wouldn't that mean I'd be no match for him?! This is impossible!!"

Nanbei Chao was deeply shaken by this. He was incredibly shocked, and couldn't accept this reality. In his mind, he was the most talented person in this world, he was the number one genius whom surpassed the ancestor and dazzled the contemporaries. But now, he was facing a man with greater talent than himself. This really disturbed his mind.

“No one is allowed to stand higher than I, Nanbei Chao! I have to kill him today no matter what! I have to let everyone know that I, Nanbei Chao am a man who is destined to be a true emperor!”

A malicious and wicked look emerged in Nanbei Chao’s eyes. He would never allow anyone to surpass him in terms of talent; it was unbearable.

“Jiang Chen, you’ve really surprised me, and you’ve earned my attention. But, I’ll have to kill you today. You’re really lucky to be killed by me.”

Nanbei Chao’s energy kept rising like a raging tsunami. He once again punched out with the Trinity Fist. The gigantic mountain like fist flew toward Jiang Chen once again.

“Haha, show me what you got! You want to kill me; I want to kill you. Let’s fight and figure out who the last man standing will be!”

Jiang Chen was incomparably domineering. His pride came from the bottom of his heart as well, and it was no weaker than Nanbei Chao’s pride. Once again, he unleashed the True Dragon Palm and resumed the intense fight with Nanbei Chao.

Bang! Bang! Bang! ...

Two mighty and ferocious men had opened up a new battlefield high up in the skies. They were exchanging attacks in the most brutal way, and they nearly destroyed the sky where they fought.

Energies swept and raged crazily, it was difficult to find out who had the upper hand.

“They are so strong, amazingly strong! They are truly the mightiest geniuses!”

“The small Qi Province has actually cultivated two mighty men like them, this is really terrifying! I wonder who the winner will be!”

“I’m sure senior disciple Jiang will win this fight! Ever since he came to the Black Sect, he has done the seemingly impossible countless times!”

No one could resist the shock that struck their minds. This was an ultimate fight between two bright stars; none could remain calm any longer.

“How can this be happening, why is that Jiang Chen so strong?! It’s only been half a year!”

Zhao Chongyang nearly cried out. He had lost one arm now, and his combat strength had been greatly reduced. Daoist Black and Granny Feng were fighting Duan Jianhong together.

Right now, the Burning Sky Pavilion’s only hope was Nanbei Chao who was currently entangled in a fierce fight with Jiang Chen, and judging from the current situation, it was still unclear whether or not Nanbei Chao would win in the end.

But the battlefield in front of him was showing him the Burning Sky Pavilion's doomsday. Those Divine Core warriors who suddenly appeared out of nowhere were all genius warriors, extremely powerful ones. Especially Big Yellow, he was the most brutal existence in the battlefield. He crashed and slammed in all direction in the cruelest manner.

Arghh...

The disciples and elders of the Burning Sky Pavilion were screaming and yelling. The attacks they were facing right now gave them no room to fight back. If this continue, the Burning Sky Pavilion would disappear into the abyss, eliminated.

Zhao Chongyang's heart was bleeding. He never thought this would happen. According to his plan, defeating the Black Sect and the Valley of Happiness was an easy task. After that, they would be able to rule the entire Qi Province, and he would be the new master of the Qi Province.

But nothing was perfect, the sudden return of Jiang Chen had shattered Zhao Chongyang's perfect plan, and the tables were now turned. Now, it wasn't the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness who were facing risk of elimination, it was the Burning Sky Pavilion.

“Arghh! I give up, surrender, I want to surrender!”

A Divine Core elder from the Burning Sky Pavilion who was fighting with Guan Yiyun suddenly shouted. He felt as if he

couldn't fight any longer, the situation had changed too quickly, and he was no match for his opponent. Their biggest hope, Nanbei Chao, was tied up in a fight with Jiang Chen, and it looked like it would be extremely difficult for him to kill Jiang Chen. Even with Nanbei Chao's strength, by the time he really killed Jiang Chen, everyone from the Burning Sky Pavilion would already be dead.

“Hmph! Who gave you the right to surrender?!”

Guan Yiyun let out a cold snort as he mercilessly attacked. The longsword in his hand penetrated his opponent's chest in the next second.

“I can't let the blood of the Black Sect disciples and elders have been shed in vain; an eye for an eye! Want to surrender and keep your life? No way!”

Guan Yiyun had an imposing aura, he never gave his opponent any chance to surrender. He shook his longsword and sliced his opponent's body in half, causing blood to rain down from the sky.

“Haha, not bad Guan Yiyun buddy! It's impossible for these guys to surrender, Little Chen would never allow that to happen.”

Big Yellow was laughing out heartily. He extended his head and continued crashing and slamming in all direction. His path was filled with blood-curdling screeches.

Previously, Guan Yiyun had not been a man without mercy, he

would still give his enemies a chance to surrender. But, since he had been in Inferno Hell for such a long time, he had changed the way he dealt with his enemies. Those who came back from Inferno Hell were all cruel men, they wouldn't even blink their eyes when they killed.

At this moment, everyone from the Burning Sky Pavilion had completely lost all their hope. Their opponents didn't even allow them to surrender. Clearly, they wanted to kill them all.

This was karma. When they were on the upper side and were killing the people from the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness, none of them even furrowed their brows. But now that the tables had turned, no matter how they begged for forgiveness and asked to surrender, their karma had decided that this was impossible.

Although Nanbei Chao was extremely ruthless and arrogant, there was one thing he was right about. At even turning point in history, with every end of an era, blood must be shed. Today was a day of major change for the Qi Province, and the Black Sect's battlefield was destined to be a hell filled with slaughter. Rivers of blood were destined to flow in this battle, and the blood would either belong to themselves, or their enemies. Those who were involved could not escape.

This was the cruel world of cultivation. Life and death and was normal, there were not many rules that applied to this realm, and the thing that mattered the most was strength.

The Burning Sky Pavilion's army had been completely defeated and had dispersed. The formidable Big Yellow needed no



description. Guan Yiyun, Tian Yishan, Huo Yun'er; each of them were extremely strong. Even Yang Meng, Wang Heng and the few others were men who killed without blinking their eyes. The fights they had experienced in Inferno Hell was a hundred times more terrifying than this.

Arghh...

The miserable shrieks could be heard everywhere. The number of disciples and elders from the Burning Sky Pavilion were constantly reducing. More than half the sect elders from the Heavenly Sword Sect had been killed, and the rest of them were suffering from serious injuries, and were struggling with defending themselves. This time, Duan Jianhong had made a wrong decision. If he had chosen to join the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness, he would not be trapped in this situation.

Bang!

In the sky above, Jiang Chen and Nanbei Chao were still locked in a fierce fight. Both of them were men with extraordinary talent, and they both possessed all kinds of skills. It was really difficult to determine who the winner would be.

The situation had caused all the men from the Burning Sky Pavilion and Heavenly Sword Sect to completely lose all their hope. Since the beginning of the war, Nanbei Chao was their only hope. But now, it seemed like they couldn't depend on him any longer.

“Stop!”

Duan Jianhong who was fighting Daoist Black and Granny Feng suddenly shouted.

“Daoist Black, Granny Feng, you should know that I didn’t genuinely surrender to Nanbei Chao. Now, with the utmost sincerity, I have decided to have the Heavenly Sword Sect join you. We’ll work together and kill those men from the Burning Sky Pavilion. Let’s turn our hostility into friendship, what do you think?”

Duan Jianhong said. He knew the Burning Sky Pavilion was going to be destroyed today, and if he still didn’t do something, he would meet the same end. Once Jiang Chen was freed from the fight, what awaited him would be certain death.

“Haha, Duan Jianhong, are you out of your mind? I don’t think that’s what you told us just now!”

Daoist Black burst into laughter. He had never laughed with such joy before, this caused all the depression in his heart to disappear.

“Duan Jianhong, it was your own choice, your own decision that pushed the Heavenly Sword Sect into the pit of fire, and now you’re trying to join forces with us? Even if we agreed, do you really think Jiang Chen will let you off?”

Granny Feng said with a grin on her face. Then, she forcefully

whipped Duan Jianhong with her whip. In the current situation, there was no need for them to accept Duan Jianhong's proposal to join forces. Also, they couldn't accept his personality either, it was better for them to fight him until he died.

“Daoist Black, Granny Feng, you better consider my proposal. Although Jiang Chen is really strong, he is locked in a fight with Nanbei Chao. Both of you are seriously injured, and you're no match for me even when working together. Currently, no one in this battlefield can defeat me. I didn't even use my full strength when fighting you two just now, and if you guys really want to enter a life and death struggle, I'll use my full strength to kill both of you now.”

Duan Jianhong had a cold expression as he threatened.

“Damn you, show me what you've got, stupid fat guy! This dog master wants to see if I can't kill you with my head!”

Big Yellow suddenly appeared behind Duan Jianhong. His head was glowing brightly, and without any hesitation, he rammed into Duan Jianhong.

# Chapter 261 – The Ultimate Showdown

---

Hmph!

Duan Jianhong let out a cold snort. With extraordinary speed, he gently struck out with his palm, slapping towards Big Yellow's head.

As one of the strongest peak Divine Core warriors, Duan Jianhong didn't take this Mid Divine Core dog seriously. In his mind, he was already imagining Big Yellow's head being crushed into several pieces by his palm.

But too bad, reality showed him a different scene than what he had imagined. When his palm collided with Big Yellow's head, a sound resembling metal clanging was immediately heard. Duan Jianhong felt as if he slapped solid hard cold steel. Not only did he not crush Big Yellow's head into pieces, his hand had torn up because of the backlash.

“What?!”

Duan Jianhong was struck with extreme shock. He immediately put away his scornful attitude. The mightiness of this dog had exceeded his expectations. With just a Mid Divine Core cultivation base, he had actually wounded him.

Daoist Black and Granny Feng who stood next to each other were stunned by what they saw as well. Both of them exchanged glances, and could find shock and helplessness in each other's eyes.

They both knew Jiang Chen had extraordinary combat strength, but now, even a dog following him possessed mighty combat strength. This twisted all their common sense.

“Let’s attack together, don’t let that Duan Jianhong have any chance to fight back!”

Daoist Black said in a cold manner. He had suffer quite a serious injury just now, but Granny Feng was in a much better condition. Together with Big Yellow’s help, there was no way Duan Jianhong would be able to resist this combination.

Bang! Bang! ...

The powerful energy ripples raged across the area. The three humans and dog were engaged in a fierce fight. Under all the attacks, Duan Jianhong who once carried an imposing aura became busy handling all the attack. In just a short period of time, he had switched to a disadvantageous position.

Argh!! ...

On the other part of the battlefield, the cries of the Burning Sky Pavilion disciples could be heard everywhere. Nearly all the Heavenly Core disciples and Divine Core elders had been killed, and the ones who were still alive were seriously injured, and had lost their will to fight. On the other side, the ones from the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness were fighting with amazing strength. If this situation continued, it wouldn’t take more than a few minutes before all the men from the Burning Sky Pavilion and

Heavenly Sword Sect were eliminated.

Arghh...

Soon, the last Divine Core elder from the Heavenly Sword Sect let out a miserable shriek before he was killed by Huo Yun'er. Now, the Heavenly Sword Sect was only left with Duan Jianhong, who was still struggling with fighting back.

But the current Duan Jianhong's attitude had change. His wise plan had vanished like a soap bubble. Not only did accomplishing his dream of ruling the entire Qi Province prove to be impossible, his decision had also caused all of the strong warriors from the Heavenly Sword Sect to die. Even he himself was trapped in deep danger.

“Why did this happened? Why did this Jiang Chen appear?!”

Duan Jianhong crazily roared, both his eyes had turned red.

“Haha, Duan Jianhong, you're finished! The Burning Sky Pavilion is finished, and you, your Heavenly Sword Sect is finished as well! All because of your own decision!”

Daoist Black laughed out to his heart's content. The situation was completely reversed now.

“Soul Crunching Tune, die now!”

Big Yellow suddenly let out a loud shout, unleashing sound waves like a raging tsunami. Wave after wave covered Duan Jianhong in an instant. After breaking through to the Mid Divine Core realm, Big Yellow was able to use the Soul Crunching Tune once every seven days.

Duan Jianhong was after all a great peak Divine Core warrior, and with Big Yellow's cultivation, he could at most have a balanced fight with him. If Big Yellow unleashed the Soul Crunching Tune when the fight began, it might not give him any good results, but since Duan Jianhong's mind was distracted, his heart was completely filled with despair, as well as him having fought for such a long, it worked wonders. Duan Jianhong had also thought he knew all of Big Yellow's skill, and he didn't think Big Yellow would still have such a powerful combat skill.

The Soul Crunching Tune was incredibly powerful, it could seriously injure the target's soul directly. Back in Inferno Hell, even the Combat Soul Evil Devil was affected by it; let alone Duan Jianhong.

The Soul Crunching Tune hit Duan Jianhong's face. The devastating power caused blood to burst out from his mouth, and he could feel a tearing pain in the deepest area of his soul.

Daoist Black and Granny Feng became even more shocked. They didn't expect Big Yellow to have such a powerful skill. Although that terrifying sound wave attack was not unleashed towards them, it had still nearly made them lose their minds.

Although they were shocked, Daoist Black and Granny Feng were still paying full attention to the battle. Right as Duan Jianhong threw up blood, the two of them attacked at the same time. With two chopping sounds, both of Duan Jianhong's arms were sliced off by Daoist Black and Granny Feng.

Actually, both of them had shown mercy toward Duan Jianhong. If not, he would be sliced in half by both of them.

Of course, Daoist Black and Granny Feng didn't kill him because they felt sympathy for him. Duan Jianhong must be killed, but as one of the strongest men in the Qi Province, they couldn't let him die so easily.

"Ahh!! Daoist Black, Granny Feng, please don't kill me!"

Duan Jianhong let out a miserable shriek. He knew death was upon him, so he immediately begged for forgiveness. After being hit by Big Yellow's Soul Crunching Tune, his soul was constantly experiencing a tearing pain, and to make things worse, he had just lost both arms, causing him to lose all ability to fight back. He was no match for Daoist Black and Granny Feng now.

"We will kill you for sure, but not now."

Daoist Black extended his hand and unleashed his yuan energy, then he transformed his powerful yuan energy into a cage with Duan Jianhong locked within.



Ahhh!!! ...

The blood-curdling screeches still hadn't stopped. But, the war had nearly come to an end. The Burning Sky Pavilion disciples were fleeing in all directions, but the Black Sect disciples caught up to them, and their blood rained down from the sky. In just a few minutes, all the disciples and elders from the Burning Sky Pavilion were killed.

Zhao Chongyang who had lost one of his arms was completely stunned. The war had ended in a way that didn't even exist in his wildest dreams. He threw his gaze at the battlefield that was filled with the pungent smell of blood, and he looked at the bodies of disciples and elders from the Burning Sky Pavilion, and it felt like a heavy stone was pressing down on his heart, causing him to feel difficulties when breathing.

“Zhao Chongyang, just give up, the Burning Sky Pavilion is already done for! From today and onwards, there will be no Burning Sky Pavilion and Heavenly Sword Sect in the Qi Province!”

Daoist Black came in front of Zhao Chongyang.

“Haha...”

Zhao Chongyang suddenly let out a crazy laughter toward the sky. He was laughing with blood and tears filling his face, giving him a miserable look. Despair had completely engulfed his heart, all his dreams had burst to nothing, like soap bubbles; this was the

reality he was facing.

War was always like this, no one could tell how it would end until the last moment. Zhao Chongyang didn't get the last laugh, and neither did Duan Jianhong; it was Daoist Black who got the last laugh.

Dead bodies were scattered across the entire black mountain range, the once green scenery and clear waters was smeared with blood, and the pungent smell of blood was upsetting people's emotions.

The loser were always in the wrong, and Zhao Chongyang didn't run away from this fact. Of course, he knew that with his current condition, there was no way he could escape from his opponents.

Daoist Black struck once again, imprisoning Zhao Chongyang within a cage formed by his yuan energy. Now, the previous two most powerful men in the Qi Province were kept in captivity.

“Zhao Chongyang, Duan Jianhong, the reason why I spared your lives is to let you witness my judgment, I want you two to witness the fight between Jiang Chen and Nanbei Chao. Today, we'll see who the number one genius is, who surpasses the ancients and dazzles the contemporaries! Today, if Jiang Chen is defeated, with Nanbei Chao's ability, both of you will still have a chance to survive, while the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness will be eliminated. But if Nanbei Chao is defeated, the Burning Sky Pavilion and Heavenly Sword Sect will only exist in the Qi Province's history.”

Daoist Black threw his glance at the skies above him. Massive amounts of energies were raging, and both men were still locked in a violent fight.

Daoist Black had long ago expected a major change in the Qi Province's structure, but he didn't think it would happen so quickly. He had actually placed all his hopes on Jiang Chen to change the Qi Province's structure, and Jiang Chen didn't disappoint him. Although only half a year had passed, Jiang Chen had managed to obtain the strength that allowed him to fight Nanbei Chao. This was something Daoist Black hadn't expected either.

The war had almost come to an end. Everyone were looking into the sky above, they held their breath and paid close attention to the battle between the two geniuses.

Everyone knew that the result of this fight would be the key to determine the Qi Province's fate. Of course, all from the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness were hoping for Jiang Chen to find the battle.

As for Zhao Chongyang and Duan Jianhong, they had place their bets on Nanbei Chao. If Nanbei Chao was the last man standing, they might still have a chance at surviving, but if Nanbei Chao was defeated by Jiang Chen, it meant there were completely finished.

Bang...

In the sky above, Jiang Chen and Nanbei Chao had once again exchanged attacks, and both of them were forced back nearly 30 meters. After fighting for so long, these two men still had tremendous fighting spirits, and they were filled with energy; none of them felt tired at all. Their reserved yuan energy was incredibly strong, and with just this alone, they had thrown all other geniuses into the shade.

“I never expected you to progress with such incredible speed, it looks like I should have just killed you back in the Qi Province competition.”

Nanbei Chao's eyes turned red. Jiang Chen's cultivation speed and powerful skills had frightened him. He was so proud of himself that he never paid any attention to his opponent, but now he had started regretting giving Jiang Chen a chance back at the Qi Province competition.

“Are you scared?”

Jiang Chen asked with an indifferent smile.

“Nonsense! I, Nanbei Chao am the number one genius underneath the heavens, I will never fear you. Jiang Chen, I have to admit that you as well are a rare genius, but you are still far away from being able to compete with me.”

Nanbei Chao started laughing.

“I think you’ve seen it, the war underneath us has come to an end. The Burning Sky Pavilion and Heavenly Sword Sect have been defeated. Because of you, countless men have died.”

Jiang Chen gazed at the battlefield underneath him.

“Haha, their deaths means nothing to me. As long as I can kill you now, I will still complete my goal, conquering the Qi Province.”

Nanbei Chao was laughing out crazily. To him, all mortals weighed nothing in his heart. He didn’t care how many people dies because of him as long as he could accomplish his goal, satisfying his monarch’s heart.

“You and I are very different. I, Jiang Chen show no mercy towards the enemies, I have my own ideals of justice; this is the difference between you and me.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Your ideas of justice is nothing but a joke to me. Jiang Chen, I’m going to attack with my full strength now, if you don’t have any stronger skills, you’re going to be killed by me.”

Nanbei Chao once again unleashed his energy and tremendous killing intent. It was as if the previous fight was just a warm once, and the real fight came now.

“Show me what you got.”

No signs of fear could be found on Jiang Chen’s face. In this world, there was nothing that could make him feel fear.

## Chapter 262 – Who Is The Juvenile King?

---

Waves of energies swept across the sky. Everyone were holding their breath, because they knew Jiang Chen and Nanbei Chao were going to have an all-out battle. The upcoming battle was going to be more intense and violent than anything they had seen before.

This was a fight that arrived ahead of schedule, a battle of life and death. Both men would try their best to kill their opponent, because they knew, the man standing opposite of them were the biggest rival of their lifetime. If they didn't get rid of each other, their future troubles would be grand.

“Intelligent King Fist!”

Nanbei Chao's golden hair was violently fluttering. The loud shout that came from his mouth shook the skies, and dispersed the dark clouds hovering above him. Bright lights were projected from his fist, and it carried a sense of intelligence. In a most formidable way, he unleashed the attack.

Bang!

An explosion as loud as a clap of thunder sounded out throughout the entire scene. A gigantic fist big as a huge mountain appeared. Together with a lifelike feeling and extreme speed; it crashed towards Jiang Chen.

“So strong!”

Granny Feng exclaimed with mixed emotions.

“What an incredible fist skill from Nanbei Chao! The Intelligent King Fist, you can sense intelligence from the fist unleashed by him! Once it locks down on a target, the target won’t have any chance to escape, because no matter where you go, the fist will follow you. This is why it’s named the Intelligent King Fist. This fist contains Nanbei Chao’s full strength, Jiang Chen will have to face it up front.”

Daoist Black’s eyes were flickering. The fist skill used by Nanbei Chao was really rare, and extremely terrifying. Most attacks allowed the opponent to dodge if he was quick enough, but the Intelligent King Fist had its own intelligence. No matter how much one tried to dodge it, one would still have to bear its full power in the end.

“What an extraordinary skill. Since you’ve attacked me with such a powerful skill, I’ll destroy it with an even more powerful skill.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes were clear, no signs of fear could be found on his face. He didn’t even have any intention to dodge the Intelligent King Fist unleashed by Nanbei Chao.

“Six Profound Solar Fingers!”

Bright golden lights emerged on Jiang Chen’s fingertips. He pointed his fingers forwards, and in an instant, six huge fingers



resembling six gigantic pillars appeared.

The Six Profound Solar Fingers came from the Nine Profound Solar Fingers, which was the strongest combat skill derived from the Nine Celestial Solar Energies. No ordinary combat skills could compare with its strength. Now, Jiang Chen had mastered the Six Profound Solar Fingers, and he was able to unleash it with an amazingly formidable force that was no weaker than Nanbei Chao's Intelligent King Fist. If Jiang Chen was a Mid Divine Core warriors like Nanbei Chao, perhaps Nanbei Chao wouldn't even be his match, and the Intelligent King Fist would be shattered by the Six Profound Solar Fingers in an instant.

Six huge fingers merged into a single gigantic finger, and crashed into the Intelligent King Fist like a gigantic mountain.

Bang!

Both sky and earth was shaking. The energy ripples produced by the massive collision had messed up the entire void. The ground underneath them was trembling, and ever far away from the battle, many people could feel their minds shaking. Some weaker warriors nearly lost their minds, and had a very difficult time breathing.

“So powerful! Are these two men still humans?”

“We are all similar age, but why is the gap between us so huge? If I could have 10% of senior disciple Jiang's ability, my dream would come true!”

“Then just keep dreaming! Compared to senior disciple Jiang, we are a disgrace to the word genius. It only took him half a year to break through from the Early Mortal Core realm to the Early Divine Core realm, and now he can even fight with Nanbei Chao who is a Mid Divine Core warriors. There are none underneath the heavens who can compare to his incredible talent.”

.....

Everyone were immersed in deep shock. In the hearts of all disciples and elders from both the Black Sect and the Valley of Happiness, Jiang Chen’s image kept growing taller. He had become the idol of all younger generation disciples, especially those young and pretty disciples from the Valley of Happiness. All of them stared at Jiang Chen like nymphos, and flames nearly shot out from their eyes.

“He is so handsome, I’m willing to give everything to Jiang Chen, including my body!”

One of the female disciples from the Valley of Happiness showed of her nympho side.

“Wake up little sister. Although you have a pretty face, senior disciple Jiang will never like you. Why don’t you just give everything to me? Of course, that includes your body! I promise I’ll be gentle!”

A disciple from the Black Sect teased.

“Get lost!”

The female disciple glared at the guy who spoke to her. After that, she turned around and continue looking at Jiang Chen.

“Triple Intelligent Fists!”

Like a mighty emperor, Nanbei Chao punched out another three times at the same time. Three gigantic fists appeared in midair and flew toward Jiang Chen in a seemingly unavoidable manner. The Triple Intelligent Fists was the most advanced version of the Intelligent King Fist, and it allowed Nanbei Chao to unleash three fists at the same time, each of them identical, which meant that the power behind this attack had increased tremendously.

“Hmph! Firethorn Combat Armor!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. In the next second, a golden armor appeared and covered his entire body. Countless sharp thorns could be seen on the armor, and with Jiang Chen’s control, numerous golden beams that hid the sky and covered the earth shot out from these thorns like sharp swords, and pierced towards the three fists.

“True Dragon Palm!”

At the same time, Jiang Chen unleashed his True Dragon Palm. With the combination of the Firethorn Combat Armor and the

True Dragon Palm, Jiang Chen leaped forwards, throwing himself directly into the three incoming Intelligent King Fists.

Bang!

The True Dragon Palm slapped right onto one of the fists, crushing it in an instant. Jiang Chen responded extremely quickly to this. Without any hesitation, he unleashed another True Dragon Palm and crushed the second fist. As for the last fist, Jiang Chen's method to deal with it was even more brutal, it completely stunned every single person at the scene.

Under the shocked gazes from the surrounding people, with the protection of the Firethorn Combat Armor, Jiang Chen crashed into the last fist with his own body.

Bang!

Right as the last fist collided with Jiang Chen's body, his body suddenly became the only source of light at the scene. Beams of golden lights were unleashed from his body, and were weaved into a gigantic net. Then, all the golden lights transformed into seemingly indestructible swords, and pierced into the last Intelligent King Fist. After that, with his own terrifying body strength, Jiang Chen rammed into the fist himself.

Bang!

The air violently trembled because of the tremendous force. The

defense of the Firethorn Combat Armor was incredible armor. It was an armor that combined both attack and defense. Jiang Chen suffered no injuries after shattering the Intelligent King Fist. With a thought in his mind, he retracted the Firethorn Combat Armor. He stood hovering above in this sky with a grim face.

“Nanbei Chao, if that was your strongest attack... Really disappointing.”

Jiang Chen pointed his finger at Nanbei Chao, showing his ultimate domineering attitude. He was like a real king overlooking all mortals.

Nanbei Chao was a man who was extremely proud of himself, there was no way he could bear the look of despise from Jiang Chen. In his mind, only he could despise others. He never allowed anyone to look down on him, it was an insult to him.

“Looks like in term of combat strength, it’s very difficult for us to decide who the final winner is.”

Nanbei Chao said in a cold tone.

“Nanbei Chao, in front of me, what do you have that can make you feel proud? Don’t forget the gap between our cultivation levels, I am only at the Early Divine Core realm, but you’re at the middle stage. Having a draw in a fight when you’re one stage higher than me, haha; it is ironic how you can still be so arrogant; you’re just a shameless man! If my cultivation level was the same as yours, I would be able to kill you with just one finger; just like

killing an ant, am I right?”

Jiang Chen’s words were like sharp blades poking into Nanbei Chao’s heart. This was a speech he couldn’t take at all. He was a great warrior, an existence destined to be a ruler. But now, he was being looked down upon by someone else. This feeling was even worse than swallowing a fly. Now, he was really regretting not killing Jiang Chen back in Whirling Sun City. His decision had brought him today’s disaster.

“Jiang Chen, I’ll kill you today.”

It seemed like flames were going to burst out from Nanbei Chao’s eyes.

“Kill me? With what? Those weak skills you have?”

Jiang Chen kept mocking Nanbei Chao. This was a psychological attack; he was attacking Nanbei Chao’s weakness. The mocking words were Nanbei Chao’s biggest weakness.

No one could compare with Jiang Chen’s fighting experience and the ability to judge his opponent during a fight. He knew that with his current combat strength, even if he attacked with all his strength, he could at most have a balanced fight with Nanbei Chao; there was no way he could kill him at all. Therefore, Jiang Chen decided to target Nanbei Chao’s mind, then he would use other skills to attack him, such as the Great Illusion Realm.

“Jiang Chen, I’m sure you know this, there is no way we can find a winner even if we fight for ten days. I, Nanbei Chao am cultivating the Imperious Ruler skill, and I have the innate body of a ruler. A ruler sits high above all, so I’ll use the aura of a ruler to defeat you.”

Nanbei Chao shook his body. With that, a mighty aura turned into a bright beam that shot into the sky. This aura carried the strong will of a ruler, causing those who sensed it to feel like worshipping him.

“Hmph! You think you can become a ruler just by cultivating some mysterious skill? What a joke! I’ll let you know what a true king is like!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort, then an equally powerful aura was unleashed from his body as well. Two auras were soaring through the heavens, trying their best to surpass each other.

Nanbei Chao’s aura was golden, and on the opposite side, Jiang Chen’s aura was blood red, and there were shadows of dragons within.

Nanbei Chao did indeed possess the innate body of a ruler, but Jiang Chen as the once greatest Saint underneath the heavens, he was actually a true king who sat high above all else, looking down on all mortals without anyone daring to disobey him.

“Imperious Ruler skill, merge with my aura!”

With a ferocious look in his eyes, Nanbei Chao was crazily circulating his Imperious Ruler skill. All his focus was on merging with the aura. It caused the aura to look like it had its own life as it soared through the heavens.

Jiang Chen wore a cruel expression on the other side. He was circulating the Great Soul Derivation skill, merging it into his blood red king's aura.

“What powerful auras! Both auras carry intense pressure, as if two supreme kings are standing right there! It's even causing my soul to tremble!”

“Nanbei Chao is cultivating the Imperious Ruler skill, causing his entire body to be filled with the aura of an emperor! As for senior disciple Jiang, it feels like he is a natural king, giving me an impressing that his aura of a supreme being is actually coming from deep inside his body!”

“Nanbei Chao's aura carries a feeling of nobility, but senior disciple Jiang's king's aura feels like a king's innate aura. But at the same time, it also feels like he is someone who has walked step by step and finally reached the throne above all! Both of them are really terrifying!”

“This is a fight between auras! Let's see who the real juvenile king is!”



# Chapter 263 – Immortal Spirit Body

---

Bang!!

Thunderous sounds kept coming from both auras. Two bright beams shot right into the heavens above; they looked like two gigantic pillars that supported the heavens, and they dazzled the ones who were watching the battle.

All the men who were watching the fight had their eyes wide open as they stared into the heavens above. This was an unusual battle, there were no sparks caused by collisions between energies. This fight between auras was much riskier than a normal fight, because each of them had merged their mind, and even soul energy into the auras. It even carried their pride that came from the bottom of their hearts. Neither of them were willing to admit defeat. Once a man's aura was completely surpassed, he would suffer a tremendous backlash, and the injury he suffered would be much greater than one that came from face to face collision.

Both men's auras were like the most violent ocean waves; wave after wave, climbing higher and higher. Whenever Nanbei Chao's aura climbed higher, Jiang Chen's aura would follow. The battle between the two was reaching its climax.

“I can feel a supreme aura from Nanbei Chao's body support him, it makes me feel that he doesn't belong to a mortal realm. It's impossible for a mortal cultivating the Imperious Ruler skill to have such a noble aura.”

Jiang Chen squinted his eyes. The nobility in Nanbei Chao's aura had surprised him. If he wasn't the reincarnation of a Great Saint, the once most supreme existence that sat high above all with the aura of a true king, he might have been defeated by Nanbei Chao's noble aura in an instant.

Compared to Jiang Chen's surprise, the shock in Nanbei Chao had reached the absolute maximum level, "What is happening?! I was born from the Immortal Spirit, and I have a real Immortal Spirit Body, which means I am not a mere mortal! My aura is the noblest aura that can be found in this mortal realm, there is no way these mortals can compare with me! But it seems like this Jiang Chen was born a true king, his invisible supreme aura is even stronger than mine! My aura was born with me, and it comes from my source, but this Jiang Chen, not only does he have a noble aura, he's also giving me the impression that he is a true king who was walked step by step to his throne that lays above all else!"

Nanbei Chao couldn't imagine how the noble aura on a man could give him two different feelings, this caused him to feel really bad in his heart. He knew very well about his origin, as a man with an Immortal Spirit Body, he had an aura of nobility that surpassed every single being in this realm. But now, he had a feeling that he was surpassed by Jiang Chen.

"Nanbei Chao, you lose!"

All of a sudden, Jiang Chen's voice sounded out in Nanbei Chao's ear. His voice was like a sudden clap of thunder that exploded into the skies. Only Nanbei Chao could hear him, because he used the Great Soul Derivation skill.

“Bullshit, I won’t be defeated by you! I am a born noble, what are you? You are merely an ant in front of me!”

Nanbei Chao let out a cold snort. He transmitted his message to Jiang Chen through his divine sense.

“Nanbei Chao, no matter how noble you are, you just can’t compare with me. I am the real king, and let me tell you what a real king is. A real king relies on 30% of his talent, and 70% of his relentless effort. You can at most be considered a genius, but in order to become a real supreme existence, you still have a long way to go. As for me, I long ago stood on top of this realm.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen suddenly shouted, “I am the true king!”

These five words were like sudden claps of thunders within the clear sky. It was so loud that even the air started vibrating. The powerful sound waves turned into ripples that swirled around in the air. When Jiang Chen shouted out these five words, the Great Soul Derivation skill had immediately shaken Nanbei Chao’s mind. At the same time, Jiang Chen had completely unleashed the aura that came from his source. Right at this moment, he felt like he had returned to the Saint Cliff a hundred years ago; the aura of a supreme Great Saint was completely unleashed.

Bang!!

The aura containing the Saint’s aura disappeared after just a split

second, but it had caused all the people witnessing this scene to enter deep fantasy. Even if it only lasted for a very short amount of time, it had completely destroyed Nanbei Chao's aura.

The golden light beam above Nanbei Chao's head cracked in an instant, causing Nanbei Chao to suffer a tremendous backlash. He could only hear a constant buzzing sound in his head, and he couldn't help but throw up a mouthful of blood.

Nanbei Chao had an Immortal Spirit Body, and he came from the Realm of Immortals, a real that sat high above all other realms. This was the reason why he was born with nobility. But there was one thing he didn't realize, this place was the Saint Origin realm, it was a completely independent realm, and it had its own system that was completely different from the Realm of Immortals.

Jiang Chen had reached the top of this realm a hundred years ago, he was the real king of this realm. There was a saying that a strong dragon would never try to pressure the local snake. No matter how noble Nanbei Chao's origin was, he just couldn't defeat Jiang Chen. When Jiang Chen unleashed his Saint's aura for a split second, all of Nanbei Chao's noble aura had been shattered into pieces.

“Look! Nanbei Chao was defeated! He is hurt, his aura was completely shattered by senior disciple Jiang!”

“Heavens! What did I just see?! The Early Divine Core Jiang Chen just defeated the Mid Divine Core Nanbei Chao! Just now, I actually fell into a huge illusion because of senior disciple Jiang, and in that moment, it was as if senior disciple Jiang was no longer

a mortal, but a supreme Saint that sat high up above all!”

“Amongst all strong, there is always someone stronger; amongst all tall mountains, there is always one taller! Nanbei Chao believes himself to be the strongest, he thought he was the number one genius underneath the heavens, but he never thought an abnormal monster like senior disciple Jiang actually existed! Senior disciple Jiang defeated Nanbei Chao, he is real juvenile king!”

.....

All the disciples immediately jumped up and started cheering. The ending was one they had thirsted for, and were hoping to witness with their own eyes. Although Nanbei Chao wasn't severely injured, in a battle like this with Jiang Chen, being injured meant being defeated. Once his combat strength was weakened, he would soon be killed by Jiang Chen. No one doubted that.

“Impossible! This is impossible! How could my aura collapse?! Jiang Chen, you can never surpass me!”

Nanbei Chao was completely panicked. He felt like he had just suffered the biggest blow to his face. The situation caused him to feel like he was in a bad dream.

“Hmph! Your pride is nothing in front of me. Nanbei Chao, since you're now injured, there is no way you can be my match, your hands are tied and you're just waiting to be killed!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold snort. He took a step forwards, then he once again unleashed the True Dragon Palm toward Nanbei Chao. At this moment, the dragon shaped aura above his head was still there.

Right at this moment, Jiang Chen behaved in the mightiest way possible. It was as if was a god of war who had just descended from the heavens to kill all enemies.

“I will not lose!”

Nanbei Chao shouted, then he suddenly unleashed the Intelligent King Fist.

Bang!

Too bad, the current Nanbei Chao was no longer fit to fight with Jiang Chen. The Intelligent King Fist couldn't match the True Dragon Palm, and it was instantly destroyed. It knocked Nanbei Chao 350 meters back.

“Nanbei Chao, once the aura of a person has collapsed, there is no way he can make it rise again. I have cast a permanent shadow in your heart. I'll kill you today and help you get rid of this shadow.”

Jiang Chen was extremely ruthless. He walked in midair, and in just a second, he arrived in front of Nanbei Chao. Once again, he unleashed the True Dragon Palm.

Bang... bang... bang...

In the sky above, the terrifying blood red dragon claw kept appearing. Each strike would knock Nanbei Chao hundreds of meters away. Jiang Chen was like the fiercest tiger as he relentlessly bombarded Nanbei Chao with a seemingly endless amount of attacks.

“So ferocious! Senior disciple Jiang is indeed the mightiest man!”

Everyone from the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness were incredibly excited. Wang Yun and the other disciples who had become Jiang Chen’s followers were even jumping on their feet. Everyone could tell that Nanbei Chao was done for.

“Haha...”

On Guo Shan’s mountain, Yu Zihan was laughing out loudly. With one foot stepping on the seriously injured Fan Zhongtang’s face, he rudely said, “Old fool, do you see that?! How dare you offend Jiang Chen, this is the result of doing so! You really thought Nanbei Chao is the strongest man underneath the heavens? Do you see that? He was beaten by Jiang Chen like a dog who doesn’t even have the ability to fight back!”

Fan Zhongtang’s face became pale white; he knew he had lost, a complete defeat. He hated himself for not killing Jiang Chen while he was still weak, and allowed him to become their biggest threat.

Huo Yun'er who stood far away had a faint smile on his face. He finally realized; choosing to become Jiang Chen’s enemy was a

complete mistake! They were not men at the same level.

Urgh~

Whenever Nanbei Chao was dealt a heavy blow by Jiang Chen, he would throw up a mouthful of blood. Both his eyes turned red, and his heart was suffering from a huge grievance that couldn't be released. He had the same feeling as Fan Zhongtang, he was regretting not killing Jiang Chen with a slap during the Qi Province competition.

“Nanbei Chao, this is the end! Nine Phantom Wolves!”

With an imposing aura, Jiang Chen's body swayed, and nine identical Jiang Chens appeared at the same time, surrounding Nanbei Chao. If he was still in his top condition, Nanbei Chao would surely be able to find out which one the real Jiang Chen was. But now, his mind was completely messed up.

Swoosh!

A razor sharp longsword appeared in Jiang Chen's hand. Nine Jiang Chens raised their longsword high up into the air at the same time, then they all slashed toward Nanbei Chao in a formidable manner.

Nanbei Chao's still responded pretty quickly. He had finally found out which one the real Jiang Chen was, but he had run out of time to fight back. What he could do was move his body and try



his best to dodge Jiang Chen's longsword.

Puchi!

It was too late, blood was already splashing around. Jiang Chen had sliced off one of Nanbei Chao's arms.

"Jiang Chen, I'll never forget today's events!"

Nanbei Chao furiously roared out. After that, he turned around and began crazily fleeing.

"Still trying to run away?"

Jiang Chen wouldn't let Nanbei Chao go easily. The True Dragon Palm turned into a huge blood red cage as it fell down from the sky above, completely imprisoning Nanbei Chao. Followed by a cracking sound, Nanbei Chao's other arm had been completely crushed.

Argh!!!

Nanbei Chao let out a miserable shriek. Then, an invisible light shot out from Nanbei Chao's body, and completely covered his seriously injured body. With help of this light, Nanbei Chao turned into a silver white beam and slipped out from the gap between the True Dragon Palm, instantly disappearing from everyone's sight.

“What was that light?”

Jiang Chen was stunned. The silver white light just now gave him a familiar feeling. Jiang Chen’s expression change soon after.

“When I cut open the gate to the Immortal Realm a hundred years ago, I saw an immortal light dash out from the Realm of Immortals right before I died. The light just now had the same aura as that immortal light! Nanbei Chao isn’t mortal, he was born from that immortal light!”

Jiang Chen’s face darkened. He had always wondered where Nanbei Chao’s aura came from, and now he finally understood.

## Chapter 264 – A Single Slip May Cause Everlasting Sorrow

---

A hundred years, Jiang Chen cut open the gate to the Realm of Immortals, and when he did that, an immortal light slipped out. In other words, it was Jiang Chen who brought Nanbei Chao to this realm. And now, both of them were irreconcilable enemies of life and death.

The powerful Immortal Spirit Body couldn't be easily killed. Jiang Chen had inflicted Nanbei Chao with serious injuries, but in the end, he still slipped away. Jiang Chen didn't manage to kill him.

“I don't care if you're any Immortal Spirit or a mortal. If I, Jiang Chen can defeat you once, I'll be able to defeat you twice, and a third time if need be. When you offended me, your path towards becoming a ruler changed into a path towards becoming a beggar.”

Jiang Chen's eyes were cold and penetrating. He had no idea how strong one with an Immortal Spirit Body could become, but he had no fear of it at all. Furthermore, because of today's battle, Jiang Chen had cast a permanent shadow in Nanbei Chao's heart.

The Qi Province was only Nanbei Chao's first stop on his path towards becoming a ruler, but it had ended with defeat; he was mercilessly destroyed by Jiang Chen. This had seriously affected Nanbei Chao's ability to continue cultivating his Imperious Ruler skill, this incident would become a huge obstacle in his cultivation path.

“Is Nanbei Chao dead?”

“I don’t think so, it seems like he slipped away.”

“He could actually escape in such a conditions? Looks like he really is a man with special abilities. I heard that Nanbei Chao was born from an Immortal Spirit, I wonder if this is true.”

“So what if he really was born from an Immortal Spirit, he was still defeated by senior disciple Jiang Chen. No matter how strong he is, he is just a small obstacle in senior disciple Jiang Chen’s path.”

.....

Nanbei Chao was seriously injured, and had escaped. This caused everyone from the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness to happily cheer. Excitement could be found on all their faces.

“Jiang Chen! Jiang Chen! Jiang Chen! ...”

It was unclear who started shouting, but soon, everyone began shouting his name. Even the Divine Core elders were shouting together. With all their yuan energy and strength, their shouts shook the nine heavens. It was as if they wanted the name to be heard by every single inch of the entire Qi Province.

Everyone were shouting with respect. Right at this moment, Jiang Chen's weight in these peoples' hearts became heavier and heavier; he had become a man whom everyone would throw themselves at his feet.

Respect. That's right. From today onwards, even Daoist Black and Granny Feng would respect Jiang Chen from the bottom of their hearts.

Today was a day for major change, it was a day that would definitely be remembered in the Qi Province's history, and the name Jiang Chen would be told for generations to him. He had become the number one person in the Qi Province.

For all disciples and elders here, the twists in today's events had caused them to feel as if their emotions were riding on a huge wave. If Jiang Chen hadn't returned at the right time, no one could imagine how many of them would be here, cheering. Most likely, none of them would be cheering, and the bodies of those from the Burning Sky Pavilion would be replaced by them.

This was a great lifesaving deed, the greatest kindness underneath the heavens. Not only had Jiang Chen saved the Black Sect; he had also saved their lives.

Compared to the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness's excitement, there were three men who had pale white faces. Obviously, they were Zhao Chongyang, Duan Jianhong, and Fan Zhongtang who had been completely crippled by Jiang Chen.

“Sigh... There’s already a Nanbei Chao, why did the heavens give birth to another one, Jiang Chen...”

Zhao Chongyang let out a sigh as his face pointed towards the sky. Nanbei Chao was a peerless genius, but being born in the same era as Jiang Chen was his biggest misfortune.

Jiang Chen calmed his mind down. Then, he descended from the skies, landing in front of all disciples and elders. He threw his glance at the seriously injured Duan Jianhong and Zhao Chongyang.

“I wonder what you two are feeling right now.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face.

“Jiang Chen, you’ve really surprised us. I, Zhao Chongyang didn’t take you seriously even in my wildest dreams. If I had paid more attention to you, the Burning Sky Pavilion wouldn’t have been destroyed today.”

Zhao Chongyang said with a bitter smile on his face. If he knew Jiang Chen would become such a huge threat to his future, he would have killed him half a year ago, regardless of anything.

Duan Jianhong on the other side felt extremely regretful as well. His first regret was similar to Zhao Chongyang, he didn’t pay enough attention to Jiang Chen earlier. But his second regret was that he shouldn’t have surrendered to the Burning Sky Pavilion. If

he made the same decision as the Valley of Happiness, fighting Nanbei Chao with the combined force of the three big sects, he would not be in his current state.

“Everything belongs to the victor, and you were defeated. This is a war that you can only pay for with your life; defeat means death. Zhao Chongyang, since you’re one of the biggest powers in the Qi Province, I’ll give you the chance to kill yourself.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

“Hahaha...”

Zhao Chongyang let out a loud laugh filled with miser. Suddenly, he completely stopped laughing, and cracking sounds could be heard from his body. After that, streams of blood shot out from his body. The Burning Sky Pavilion’s Sect Chief, one of the most powerful men in the Qi Province had just killed himself.

Zhao Chongyang’s death didn’t cause Jiang Chen to have any change in his expression. In the next second, he turned to Duan Jianhong. When Duan Jianhong sensed Jiang Chen looking at him, he lost control of his body, and his soul trembled. He didn’t want to die! The more intelligent a man was, the more scared he was of death. When death arrived by his side... that sensation was extremely terrifying.

“Jiang Chen, can you spare my life? I promise, from now on, the Heavenly Sword Sect will pledge its loyalty to you!”

Duan Jianhong's face became extremely pale as he repeatedly begged for forgiveness.

“Do you think I care about the Heavenly Sword Sect? Duan Jianhong, you are a smart guy, but usually, a smart man can easily be ruined by his own intelligence. You have to bear the consequences of your mistakes. I'll give you the same chance, just kill yourself.”

Jiang Chen said. He was like a king sitting on his throne, deciding whether or not a man should live or die.

“No, I don't want to die!”

Duan Jianhong's body was trembling. He knew the death was coming; his heart was filled with infinite despair.

“A single slip may cause everlasting sorrow, if you don't want to kill yourself, I'll give you a hand.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand, unleashing a bright lights that quickly cut through Duan Jianhong's throat, sending his fat head high up into the sky. Blood streamed out from his neck, it was a horrifying scene, with a touch of evil.

This was Jiang Chen's approach, he never showed any mercy to his enemies. Everyone from the Black Sect knew about Jiang Chen's fierce and resolute character, so they didn't react much to his actions. But, those from the Valley of Happiness were



incredibly frightened. This young man who only seemed to be 17 years old was too brutal! He just killed two of the most powerful men in the Qi Province without even blinking his eyes.

At the same time, all disciples and elders from the Valley of Happiness felt glad they joined forces with the Black Sect. If they chose the strong side, their destinies might not have been any better than the other two big sects.

“Jiang Chen, I knew you wouldn’t disappoint me! I can’t even believe how you could grow with such incredible speed.”

Daoist Black said with a smile on his face. Although he had been badly injured, he just couldn’t help but be excited. The Qi Province’s structure had been tremendously changed right now, and he had become the biggest winner.

And obviously, Jiang Chen’s ambitions weren’t limited to this tiny Qi Province, he had become the strongest man in the Qi Province, and he had no reason to stay here. Jiang Chen was definitely going to go to a bigger place, and then, Daoist Black would be the Qi Province’s ultimate leader.

At this moment, Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun flew over to Daoist Black.

“Greetings, Sect Chief.”

Both men bowed toward Daoist Black at the same time. As

disciples from the Black Sect, they were like all the other disciples; Daoist Black had an irreplaceable position in their hearts.

“Good, Yishan, you’re back as well. Yiyun has also broken through to the Divine Core realm, the Black Sect’s most glorious era is coming!”

Daoist Black looked at both disciples with a smile on his face..

“It’s all thanks to junior disciple Jiang. If not for him, both of us would have died in Inferno Hell by now.”

Guan Yiyun said.

Daoist Black nodded his head. He had absolute belief in what Guan Yiyun said. Jiang Chen had only been in Inferno Hell for three months, but he had grown so much. Without thinking further, he already knew that Jiang Chen must have gotten some massive benefits in Inferno Hell.

“Young master Jiang is a talented man, you have my respect. I want to thank young master Jiang for saving us, the Valley of Happiness.”

Granny Feng came in front of Jiang Chen and bowed her head. With her status, bowing toward a young man really showed how great Jiang Chen’s status was right now.

“This is Granny Feng, the Valley of Happiness’s Chief. If not for

her combining their forces with ours, I'm afraid we wouldn't have been able to survive until you returned."

Daoist Black Said. After this tough battle, the relationship between the Black Sect and Valley of Happiness had become much better.

"Perfect! From today onwards, the Valley of Happiness will be in an alliance with the Black Sect. I promise that the Valley of Happiness's home will never be intruded by anyone. In the Qi Province, you will have an eternal home."

Jiang Chen said. He immediately assured Granny Feng with an amazing promise.

Hearing this, Granny Feng immediately felt pleasant joy. Finally, she could have a peace of mind. She had been worried about this. Although Jiang Chen had defeated Nanbei Chao, he might also have the same goal as Nanbei Chao, wanting to rule the entire Qi Province by himself. If he really did that, the Valley of Happiness would have no ability to stop him at all.

But Jiang Chen's words had clearly expressed where he stood. Granny Feng had no intentions of ruling the Qi Province together with the Black Sect. As long as the Black Sect allowed the Valley of Happiness independency so that they could live their own life, Granny Feng would be more than happy.

"Buddy, Huo Yun'er just left."

Big Yellow said.

Jiang Chen turned around and saw a trail of fire far away from him, and soon, it disappeared from his sight. Seeing this, a smile appeared on Jiang Chen's face. He knew the reason why Huo Yun'er had helped him today. Huo Yun'er didn't want to owe Jiang Chen anything. Huo Yun'er was just a martial maniac, and from some angles, Jiang Chen liked this man.

“Jiang Chen, what should we do with the Burning Sky Pavilion and Heavenly Sword Sect's headquarters?”

Daoist Black asked.

“Sect Chief, all these matters are up to you to decide. I have something more important to do.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen turned around and flew straight toward Guo Shan's mountain peak.

Seeing this, Daoist Black's expression turned cold, then he followed Jiang Chen. Many of the injured elders and Heavenly Core disciples followed Daoist Black.

It was time for payback, all of them wanted to settle the score with Fan Zhongtang; this traitor had to pay for what he had done! Because of Fan Zhongtang, the Black Sect had lost many elders and disciples in today's war.

On the mountain peak, Fan Zhongtang was still struggling underneath Yu Zihan's foot. When he saw the huge amount of people appearing around him at the same time, his body began to violently tremble.

## Chapter 265 – Major Cleanup

---

“Old fool, get up now!”

Yu Zihan moved his foot away from Fan Zhongtang’s face, then he grabbed the collar on his back and pulled him up from the ground.

“Kill him!”

“This old bastard, don’t let him die easily! Put him in a cage and throw him into a shithole!”

“Damn it, many of our men died because of him! Give him death from a thousand cuts!”

.....

All disciples and elders from the Black Sect were extremely angry, they all wished they could jump onto Fan Zhongtang and bite him into pieces. Their hatred toward Fan Zhongtang was far beyond their hatred for the Burning Sky Pavilion and Heavenly Sword Sect.

The Burning Sky Pavilion and Heavenly Sword Sect were their enemies, a battle was destined to break out between them and the Black Sect; life and death would then be decided by fate. But, a traitor who betrayed them during the most crucial moment like Fan Zhongtang had done was always held in contempt, and all

people hated this kind of man the most.

Daoist Black raised his arm, signaling for everyone to calm down.

“Sect Elder Fan, you know, I trusted you the most. Jiang Chen warned me about you, he told me that something wasn’t right, but I didn’t believe him. My trust in you nearly dragged the Black Sect and the Valley of Happiness into an eternal perdition. You’ve really disappointed me.”

Daoist Black was trembling as he spoke. Disappointment, hatred, anger, ferociousness, all sorts of emotions emerged in his eyes. Daoist Black was the one who felt the most pain when Fan Zhongtang betrayed the Black Sect.

Betrayed by one of the people he trusted the most, a man he treated like his own brother... it was a feeling that few could imagine.

“You’re the one who forced me to do this, you’re the one who kept protect Jiang Chen! He killed my grandson, but you still wanted to protect him!”

Fan Zhongtang shouted.

“It was Fan Kun who screwed up first! I even had to give Jiang Chen an explanation for that! This is not enough to justify your betrayal!”

Daoist Black furiously roared out.

“Hmph! Fan Zhongtang, if my guess is correct, you and your grandson surrendered to Nanbei Chao even before Fan Kun did those stupid think. There was no enmity between you and I before that, but Fan Kun still wanted to kill me. He tried to kill me right after the one-year fight agreement with Nanbei Chao was made, and the reason why you two wanted to kill me was so you could claim credit in front of Nanbei Chao for killing me, all so that when Nanbei Chao conquered the Qi Province, you and your grandson would obtain good positions. Am I right, Sect Elder Fan?”

Jiang Chen stared at Fan Zhongtang with a faint smile on his face. He was a wise man, and he knew what was going on behind the scenes long before this. Fan Zhongtang’s betrayal didn’t happen today.

Fan Zhongtang’s expression changed, he couldn’t find anything to say at this moment, he could only stare at Jiang Chen in shock. This expression proved that Jiang Chen’s words were correct.

“Damn it, this bastard betrayed us long ago! Who gave him the audacity to take the Black Sect’s resources after having secretly surrendered to the enemy?! He deserves a thousand deaths!”

“Fuck! I bet this old fool has been eagerly waiting for the day where Nanbei Chao attacks the Black Sect so he could betray us and help Nanbei Chao defeat us! He is the real culprit who tried dragging the Black Sect into an everlasting perdition!”



“This is ridiculous! I can’t stand this old fool any longer; we must kill him with at least a thousand cuts!”

.....

Everyone from the Black Sect were furious. This old fool had betrayed the Black Sect, and he was pretending that he was forced to do it because of Jiang Chen and Daoist Black. It now looked like Jiang Chen did a really good job by killing Fan Kun. If he hadn’t, there would be more than one traitor today.

“Sect Chief, can you give me another chance? Regardless of what I did, I did contribute a lot to the Black Sect during all these years... please spare my life!”

Fan Zhongtang’s face turned awfully pale. He knew he had completely lost, been completely defeated because of Jiang Chen. Just like Duan Jianhong, he was a man who was scared of death. Even now, he still tried to use his past relationship to beg Daoist Black for forgiveness.

“Sins of the heavens can be forgiven, but one’s own sins cannot be forgiven. Zihan, kill him.”

Without waiting for Daoist Black to make a decision, Jiang Chen immediately spoke with a cruel tone. He did this as he didn’t want Daoist Black to make the difficult decision. Asking Daoist Black to personally kill Fan Zhongtang was something cruel one could do.

“Alright.”

Yu Zihan showed no hesitation. If Jiang Chen hadn't returned at the right time, he would have been killed by Fan Zhongtang by now.

“Senior disciple Zihan, skin him alive!”

“Yea! Don't let him die easily!”

All disciples of the Black Sect thoroughly hated Fan Zhongtang.

Yu Zihan slowly raised the sharp longsword in his hand and placed it on Fan Zhongtang's throat. Under Fan Zhongtang's frightened stare, the tip of the longsword slowly cut through his throat. Yu Zihan purposely did it slowly, cutting his neck bit by bit, prolonging time so that Fan Zhongtang could slowly taste the entire process of dying.

“Sigh!”

Daoist Black let out a long sigh, then he just turned around. He didn't even want to look at Fan Zhongtang's body.

“Brother Black, everything has finally settled down. From today onwards, the Black Sect will be the Qi Province's only ruler. The Valley of Happiness doesn't have many requests, we just want to

enjoy our peaceful lives in our original home. Today's war has caused my sect to suffer serious losses, so I'll bring all elders and disciples back to the Valley of Happiness, we need to take some time to recover. As for the cleanup regarding the Burning Sky Pavilion and Heavenly Sword Sect, the Valley of Happiness isn't going to join."

Granny Feng said. She was a smart person, and this was the smartest decision she could make. As long as Jiang Chen was still here, the Qi Province would forever be the Black Sect's territory. The Valley of Happiness weren't interested in sharing that power, they just wanted peace for themselves. As for how the remaining disciples and resources of the Burning Sky Pavilion and Heavenly Sword Sect were handled, the Valley of Happiness didn't want to put their hands in that. All resources and wealth would go to the Black Sect.

"Alright. I really appreciate the Valley of Happiness's help this time. Once I've settled everything here, I will certainly pay a personal visit to the Valley of Happiness."

Daoist Black said.

After that, Granny Feng just brought everyone from the Valley of Happiness and flew away. The war had ended, a new structure would soon form, and what remained was of no concern to them.

"Tian Yishan, bring some men to the Heavenly Sword Sect. Guan Yiyun, you too bring some men to the Burning Sky Pavilion. Inform all their disciples; those who are willing to surrender will become disciples of the Black Sect, and those who don't want to,

just dismiss them. If there's anyone who wants to try fight back, just kill them with no mercy."

Daoist Black told Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun with a solemn expression. He trusted these two disciples the most.

"Disciple understands."

Both Tian Yishan and Guan Yiyun cupped their fist toward Daoist Black. After that, they brought a large group of inner circle disciples and flew towards the Heavenly Sword Sect and Burning Sky Pavilion.

"Brother Jiang, please have a look at Sect Elder Guo Shan, he was struck by Fan Zhongtang's sneak attack, and is in a critical condition right now."

Seeing that everything had settled down, Yu Zihan hurriedly reminded.

Jiang Chen's expression changed slightly, then he immediately walked toward Guo Shan. He bent down and put his fingers on Guo Shan's wrist, sending a pure Yuan energy into his body."

"Jiang Chen, how is Guo Shan?"

Daoist Black was anxious, he felt really guilty when he saw Guo Shan suffering from such a bad injury. If he hadn't trusted Fan Zhongtang so much, Guo Shan wouldn't be like this.

“He did suffer a bad injury, but his source is untouched. Compare to Little Yu and Brother Yan’s conditions, he’s much better. This is older brother Guo’s fortune; not only can I save his life, I can make his cultivation improve, as well as his natural endowments.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“Buddy, what tricks are you going to use?”

Big Yellow asked.

Jiang Chen raised his head and looked at Daoist Black, “Sect Chief, please bring me the heart of the energy vein underneath the Black Mountain Range. As long as older brother Guo is fed with it, he will be able to quickly recover.”

“What? Heart of the energy vein?!”

Daoist Black’s expression changed, “Jiang Chen, the energy vein is the most important thing and the fortune of the Black Sect, it’s all because of the energy vein that the Black Sect was able to prosper for all these years, and the heart of the energy vein is the essence for the entire energy vein. If we take it out from the energy vein, the entire energy vein will quickly be depleted.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He had expected Daoist Black to say this.

“Sect Chief, the energy vein underneath the Black Mountain Range has been absorbed for so many years, and it’s almost depleted. Even its heart is in a bad condition compared to before. Furthermore, because of today’s war, more than half of the Black Sect’s properties have been destroyed. Instead of rebuilding everything, why don’t we just move? There is a brand new energy vein underneath in Yellowstone’s Redsun Town, I found it while I was killing all the Blood Devils, and I’ve used it a bit. The reason why Yu Zihan and Guo Shan were able to cultivate so quickly was all because they have been absorbing the energy essence from that energy vein.”

Jiang Chen said.

“What? There’s a brand new energy vein underneath Redsun Town?”

Daoist Black was even more shocked than he previously was.

“Sect Chief, this is great news for us! If what Jiang Chen said is true, why don’t we just move the entire sect to Redsun Town? The current Black Sect has become a ruined place because of the war, and rebuilding it would be a lot of trouble. Why don’t we just let Jiang Chen use the energy vein’s heart to save Sect Elder Guo Shan, then we move away from here.”

“That’s right. When the Qi Province’s new structure has been established, we, the Black Sect will become the only major power here. After today, a new chapter will unfold within the Qi Province, and since it’s a new chapter, we’ll need to have a new image as well. The discovery of a new energy vein means that the

Black Sect has obtained a new fortune.”

Some of the Divine Core elders joined the discussion as well. All of them knew how much a new energy vein was worth, it was definitely not something the Black Sect’s current energy vein could compare with.

“Alright, if this is the case, the Black Sect will move to a brand new place. Jiang Chen is the biggest contributor to the Black Sect’s victor, so not to mention the energy vein’s heart, even if he wanted my life, I would give it to him without asking any question. By finding a new energy vein, Jiang Chen has once again made a huge contribution to the Black Sect.”

Daoist Black said. The more he looked at Jiang Chen, the more he liked him. Having a disciple like this was a really good fortune for the Black Sect.

“Everyone has suffered injuries, take all these healing pills and divide them amongst yourselves. After that, we’ll have a big cleanup. Furthermore, after we take control of the Burning Sky Pavilion and Heavenly Sword Sect, we’ll have to gather all their resources and put them to good use. Their energy veins will also belong to us.”

Jiang Chen said.

Everyone wore excited expressions on their faces. A brand new chapter was unfolding in front of them; there was nothing that could make them happier.

## Chapter 266 – Saving Han Yan

---

Following Jiang Chen's orders, the entire Black Sect became busy. A majority of the people had suffered from different degrees of injuries during the war, and some of the Divine Core elders were in pretty bad condition. For example, Yuan Lei had lost one arm, and it would take him at least 2-3 months to fully recover. Also, his cultivation would most likely stop at the Mid Divine Core realm because of it.

After the war, the first step was for everyone to heal up. Daoist Black had taken out the entire stock of healing pills and given them to all the disciples and elders.

In addition, there were dead bodies scattered around everywhere, and each of these dead bodies carried a storage ring. The wealth within these rings was simply amazing.

After going through this catastrophe, the Black Sect had transformed from its roots, and the overall strength of the entire sect had risen to a very high level. At this moment, Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan had brought a group of people and gone to the Burning Sky Pavilion and Heavenly Sword Sect to take control of everything. As for the others, after harvesting all the wealth of the dead, it was time for the outer circle disciples to do some work. They were tasked to collect the dead bodies of their fellow disciples and elders, then have them buried properly. As for the bodies of their enemies, they would just burn them to ashes on the spot.

Everyone were busy with their own matters. Some were busy healing themselves, and some were cleaning the place up. Jiang



Chen didn't bother with any of this; he now had all his attention fixed onto Guo Shan.

On Guo Shan's mountain peak, Jiang Chen placed Guo Shan inside a room. He had obtained the Earth Devil's devil soul, but he didn't immediately go to heal Han Yan. Han Yan had the bloodline of the Ancient Divine Devil in his body, and with the help of the Blood Banner, he was in a stable condition where no accidents would happen in the near future. Guo Shan's condition was bad, and Jiang Chen couldn't wait any longer with that. If he wasn't healed in time, his condition would probably become worse than Han Yan's. Han Yan did after all have the support of the Ancient Divine Devil's bloodline, whereas Guo Shan just possessed a mere mortal's bloodline.

“Brother Jiang, how is Sect Elder Guo?”

Yu Zihan asked.

“Don't worry, he's much better compared to Little Yu and Brother Yan.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile. As long as he got the heart of the energy vein, not only would Guo Shan fully recover, he would also obtain great advantages.

Not long after that, Daoist Black returned. He held a fist-sized translucent crystal in his hand. This crystal was the heart of the energy vein, and it contained the source essence of the entire energy vein.

After the energy vein's heart was taken out, everyone could clearly feel the natural Yuan energy in the Black Mountain Range slowly dissipating. According to this speed, it would take at most one month before all the energy contained within the energy vein was completely depleted, and the Black Mountain Range would return to just a normal mountain range.

“Jiang Chen, here is the heart of the energy vein.”

Daoist Black handed the energy vein's heart over to Jiang Chen.

“The energy vein was formed by the condensation of natural essences; not only does it contain a vast amount of energy, it also represents great fortune. I'll feed older brother Guo this energy vein's heart together with some other healing pills; not only will that help Guo Shan fully recover, it will also help improve his constitution. His cultivation will also increase at an incredible speed.”

Jiang Chen explained. As the once greatest Saint underneath the heavens, he knew better than anyone else how to save a man.

“If that is the case, hurry up and save Sect Elder Guo's life.”

Daoist Black said.

“Sect Chief, I can see you suffered some serious injuries as well. Why don't you just go back and heal yourself? Don't worry about

anything here.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face. He could tell that Daoist Black was in a bad condition right now. Also, there wasn't much Daoist Black could do to help here.

“Alright.”

Daoist Black nodded his head, then he turned around and left.

“Big Yellow, you and Yu Zihan just stay outside. I'll have to help older brother Guo absorb this energy vein's heart.”

Jiang Chen turned to Big Yellow and Yu Zihan.

◦

“Damn you, me again?”

Big Yellow murmured as he walked out from the room.

“Big Yellow, you've done great work this time, you showed us all your incredible mightiness! Even the Heavenly Sword Sect's Sect Chief, Duan Jianhong was defeated by you! You have my deepest respect!”

Outside the room, Yu Zihan cupped his fist toward Big Yellow, expressing his admiration.

“Wahaha, Yu Zihan, you have a brilliant way of looking at things! This master dog hasn’t really showed all my mightiness yet! Come, let this master dog tell you all about what happened back in Inferno Hell...”

Big Yellow would definitely accept all kinds of flattery underneath the heavens. Yu Zihan’s flattering speech almost made Big Yellow burst with joy. He immediately pulled Yu Zihan aside and began talking endless about his heroic adventures back in Inferno Hell.

Back in the room, Jiang Chen held the energy vein’s heart in his hand. At the same time, he took out a few healing pills from his storage ring and placed them together with the energy vein’s heart.

Ha!

Jiang Chen let out a light shout. A powerful force burst out from both his palms and engulfed the energy vein’s heart and all the pills. With a powerful squeezing forces, the heart and pills shattered and transformed into bright lights.

Jiang Chen waved his hand and unleashed a barrier with his Yuan energy. He covered Guo Shan’s body with this barrier, as well as the bright lights that were originally the energy vein’s heart and the healing pills.

Buzz...

Buzzing sounds could be heard from within the barrier. Under Jiang Chen's control, the essences of the healing pills and the energy vein's heart slowly penetrated into Guo Shan's body.

Jiang Chen did it all slowly. Guo Shan was in a coma right now, and he had no consciousness at the moment. If Jiang Chen injected everything into Guo Shan's body in one go, Guo Shan would be unable to withstand the violent impact.

Even with this slow pace, Guo Shan's body could be seen lightly trembling. After trembling for nearly twenty minutes, Guo Shan let out a groan and slowly opened his eyes. What he could see was a dazzling colorful light in front of him, and his body was filled with energy. Shock struck his mind, as he didn't what his current condition was like. But there was one thing he knew, the energy in his body was constantly healing his injuries.

"Don't move. Focus your mind and control these energies, try your best to absorb as much as you can."

Jiang Chen's voice reached Guo Shan's ears.

"Brother, it's you."

Hearing Jiang Chen's voice, Guo Shan immediately became agitated. He knew Jiang Chen would return no matter what, and since it was Jiang Chen who was healing him right now, it meant that the Black Sect's crisis had been resolved, as well as his life.

Guo Shan was curious about what happened after he entered the coma, but he knew Jiang Chen was in the middle of healing him, and this was the most crucial moment. Therefore, he didn't ask anything. It wouldn't be too late to ask after he had fully recovered.

Guo Shan had regained his consciousness, this allowed him to control the energy in his body. Therefore, Jiang Chen sped up his pace, crazily injecting the energies of the healing pills and the energy vein's heart into Guo Shan's body.

"What energy is this? Not only do they contain strong healing powers, there is also a vast amount of source energy which helps me heal my injuries at an incredible speed! At the same time, it's also improving my constitution. With this, my constitution is going to experience a tremendous transformation."

Guo Shan became really excited.

With a solemn look in his eyes, Jiang Chen unleashed bright energies with both his hands, and turning those bright energies into bright circles which covered Guo Shan, and eventually turned into a cocoon. After that, he put his hands down.

"Older brother Guo, take your time to absorb all the energies. I'll go check on Brother Yan."

Jiang Chen said as he stood up. Guo Shan's condition was currently nothing much to worry about, all he needed to do now was to slowly absorb all the energies.

“Alright. Thank you for saving me, brother.”

Guo Shan’s voice sounded out from within the cocoon.

“There’s no need for formalities.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile as he walked out from the room. Guo Shan was his own brother, that’s why he would try his best to save his life; this was part of the ideals of justice that existed within his heart, it was something unique to him, and it was what made him different from Nanbei Chao.

Nanbei Chao was too proud of himself. In his heart, there was only himself. He considered himself an emperor who sat high above all, and believes that all mortal should bow in front of him. Therefore, a man like him would never have any friends. Jiang Chen never admired his nobility for a second, he actually felt pity for Nanbei Chao, even though he had the powerful Immortal Spirit Body.

Guo Shan had placed Han Yan in a sealed secret chamber. When Jiang Chen entered the secret chamber, he immediately felt steaming devilish energies hovering above the huge Blood Banner, and the foul spirits were violently roaring. Han Yan’s body was inside the Blood Banner.

Jiang Chen extended his hand and performed a grabbing motion. As if sensing Jiang Chen’s summoning, the Blood Banner immediately flew into Jiang Chen’s hand. With a flip of his hand,

Jiang Chen placed the Blood Banner into his storage ring; then he walked in front of Han Yan.

Underneath Han Yan's body there was a round cushion, and Han Yan was quietly lying on it with his eyes tightly shut. His handsome face seemed threatening even when he saw in a coma.

“My brother, sorry for keeping you waiting.”

A gentle smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face as he looked at Han Yan. Han Yan was his first brother after his reincarnation, he was a brother who had proven to be willing to give up his life for Jiang Chen.

“Since people keep calling you Little Devil King, you will be a real devil king in the future.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He took out the Earth Devil's devil soul from his storage ring. Healing Han Yan was much easier than healing Guo Shan and Yan Chenyu, he only needed to feed him the Earth Devil's devil soul. With the powerful devilish characteristic of the Earth Devil's devil soul, he would be able to completely awaken the Ancient Divine Devil bloodline that is slumbering within Han Yan's body. At that point of time, under the impact of the two devilish characteristics, Han Yan's destroyed viscera would be able to completely recover, and he would be revived with a new form of life.

“A Combat Soul Earth Devil, I wonder how much stronger you will become after completely absorbing it.”



Jiang Chen said with mixed emotions. The Combat Soul Earth Devil combined with the completely Ancient Divine Devil's bloodline, it was really difficult to imagine how strong Han Yan would become once he awakened. But, according to Jiang Chen's estimation, once Han Yan awakens, he would at least be a Late Divine Core warrior.

The impact of this was simply going to be huge. Furthermore, if anyone tried to consume a Combat Soul Earth Devil's devil soul directly, just the massive energy contained within the devil soul alone would cause the person's body to explode in an instant.

But Han Yan was not an ordinary person, he possessed the complete bloodline of the Ancient Divine Devil, and he bore the will of the Ancient Divine Devil; he could completely control the massive energy contained within the Earth Devil's devil soul and absorb all the energies, as well as the devilish characteristic source into his own body. With that, he would definitely become a real devil king, and not just a man with the name Little Devil King.

While holding the Earth Devil's devil soul, Jiang Chen walked closer to Han Yan.

## Chapter 267 – The Rise Of A Brilliant Genius

---

The Earth Devil's devil soul was emitting a dark devilish source energy, and it was producing a constant buzzing sound. Jiang Chen's eyes could be seen glowing. Without hesitation, he pushed the devil soul into Han Yan's body.

Buzz...

Immediately, violent buzzing sounds began sounding out from Han Yan's body. Threads of devilish energies overflowed from his body and covered the entire secret chamber.

Roar!

Jiang Chen could hear a deep yet subtle roar come out from Han Yan's body; it was the furious roar of the Earth Devil, and it sounded like it was coming from the deepest abyss. It carried a strong unwillingness to accept what was happening.

Before this, Jiang Chen hadn't used the True Dragon Flames to purify the devil soul. This was because only the strong devilish characteristic from the source could awaken the Ancient Divine Devil's bloodline in Han Yan's body. Only with that would Han Yan be able to wake up.

Jiang Chen stared at Han Yan who was currently lying on the floor, preparing himself for anything unforeseen. However, what happened next allowed Jiang Chen to know that his worries were useless. The Ancient Divine Devil bloodline in Han Yan's body was

much stronger than he expected.

The devilish energy overflowing from Han Yan's body was getting stronger, and much more intense. Because of that, Han Yan's body began to tremble.

At the same time, an aura carrying an ancient sense, an extremely noble aura could be felt from Han Yan's body. This aura was like the Earth Devil's aura, but Jiang Chen could feel that the aura belonged to a king amongst all devils, just like the Earth Devil.

It was as if this aura had just awakened because of the challenge and provocation of the Earth Devil's aura, and it was waking up fast!

“This is the aura of Ancient Divine Devil.”

Jiang Chen's expression changed into a serious one.

The Ancient Divine Devil's bloodline had completely awaken. Right as this aura awakened, the Earth Devil's aura showed signs of fear, and tried escaping. But because of the Ancient Divine Devil's bloodline, there was no way it could escape from Han Yan's body.

“Perfect, the Ancient Divine Devil's bloodline is really powerful, it's actually the ancestor of all devils! With this Divine Body, Brother Yan will definitely become a mighty devil king who will

shake the world in the future. If everything goes smoothly, the Ancient Divine Devil will completely devour the devilish source energy contained within the Earth Devil's devil soul and become part of Brother Yan's body."

Jiang Chen had a surprised look on his face. Judging from the current situation, it looked like the Earth Devil's devil soul would help Han Yan greatly.

Rumble...

The secret chamber was filled with intense and chilly devilish energies, and claps of thunder kept sounded out from within. The devilish energies overflowing from Han Yan's body had a sense of nobility to them, it was not something that ordinary devilish energies could compare with.

A dark beam formed entirely from devilish energies suddenly shot up into the sky from Guo Shan's mountain peak. It was so powerful that the entire Black Sect shook because of it.

"What is that? What a strong devilish energy!"

"I can feel a supreme aura from it, it's as if a mighty devil king has just descended from the heavens! My soul is trembling just from sensing a tiny amount of the leaker aura! The beam is coming from Sect Elder Guo Shan's mountain peak, I'm sure it's from Han Yan!"

“In the Black Sect, only the Little Devil King, senior disciple Han Yan possesses the Ancient Divine Devil’s bloodline! He suffered severe injuries because of Fan Kun, and was in a critical condition. It looks like senior disciple Jiang Chen just saved his life. Not only that, he also awakened the strong Ancient Divine Devil bloodline within senior disciple Han Yan’s body. The Black Sect is going to have another amazing genius!”

.....

All the disciples were first frightened by the devilish energy beam, but in the next second, all of them became rejoiced with wild excitement. In the Qi Province, first there was Jiang Chen, now there was Han Yan. Both of them were geniuses from the Black Sect, and this caused these disciples’ pride to be a part of the Black Sect to grow even bigger.

Within the secret chamber, the devilish characteristic had been completely devoured by the Ancient Divine Devil’s bloodline, and everything had been merged into Han Yan’s body. The Ancient Divine Devil’s bloodline was smoothly circulating within Han Yan’s body, especially in his viscera.

Crack... crack...

Cracking sounds could be heard from within Han Yan’s body. His bones, his flesh, everything within him was experiencing a complete transformation right now, especially the destroyed internal organs that were being reconstructed by the bloodline.

“This is truly what I call a complete transformation; change into a new self.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

Rebuilding one's self was a painful process. Following the beginning of the reconstruction of his body, Han Yan's face began twisting because of extreme pain, and his body was trembling even more violently.

Two hours later, bright beams started shooting out from Han Yan's body. Jiang Chen knew that these bright lights didn't come from Han Yan's devilish energies; these glorious lights represented a newborn Han Yan.

Those who survived a great disaster were destined to have good fortune eternally after. Han Yan's affliction worked out as a blessing for him; he had now welcomed his new life.

Han Yan's vitality had completely awakened, and he had regained his consciousness. He didn't have time to pay attention to what was going on around him, or even who stood next to him. All his attention was focused on the Ancient Divine Devil's bloodline and the massive amount of energy within his body.

It was the massive energy brought to him by the Earth Devil's devil soul. The vast amount of energy was not something any ordinary man could withstand, so Han Yan couldn't help but focus all his attention on absorbing these energies within the Ancient Divine Devil's bloodline.

“Looks like it will take Brother Yan two days to completely absorb all these energies. In two days, another brilliant genius will be making his debut.”

A smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face. He pushed open the secret chamber's door and left. With Han Yan's current condition, there was no need for him to keep staying beside him. Han Yan would be able to handle the energies in his body with the help of the Ancient Divine Devil bloodline.

After leaving Han Yan's secret chamber, Jiang Chen threw his glance to another room. His eyes instantly became gloomy while the gentleness in his eyes became stronger.

Jiang Chen slowly walked toward the tightly shut door. With a gentle movement, he pushed the door open so as to not wake the sleeping beauty. In his mind, Yan Chenyu was just sleeping.

It was a finely decorated room with a soft bed placed in its corner. This told Jiang Chen that Guo Shan took serious care of Yan Chenyu.

A young girl in pure white clothes was quietly lying on the soft bed. Although her face looked a bit pale, she still looked like a sleeping beauty, like a snow white princess. When though she was lying there without moving, her beauty still caused anyone who looked at her to suffocate.

Jiang Chen slowly walked over to the bed. A sudden pain struck

his heart. He reached out his hand and gently stroked Yan Chenyu's face.

Jiang Chen could still remember how he patted his own chest and promised Yan Zhanyun he would take good care of Yan Chenyu; he wouldn't let anything harm her. But now, Yan Chenyu had been lying here for a few months. This was the first time Jiang Chen felt like he had failed to keep a promise.

Furthermore, Yan Chenyu was the girl he loved; the only girl that had touched his heart both in past and present life.

“Little Yu, once I'm done with the matters in the Black Sect, and after Brother Yan wakes up, I'll go find some Nine Solar Holy Water. Big Bro Jiang Chen will definitely wake you up as soon as possible. After that, I will never let anyone hurt you again, no matter who it is.”

Jiang Chen said with a soft voice.

After being fed with the Profound Six Solar Pill, Yan Chenyu had entered a stable condition, and she would be able to fully recover once Jiang Chen found the Nine Solar Holy Water.

After returning from Inferno Hell, Jiang Chen's next goal was to go look for the Nine Solar Holy Water. He didn't care what price he had to pay, he was determined to make Yan Chenyu fully recover.

Furthermore, searching for Firethorn Savage's demon soul, the



Earth Devil's devil soul, or even the Nine Solar Holy Water was a really good way for Jiang Chen's cultivation to progress. From Firethorn Savage to the Earth Devil, Jiang Chen had experienced a tremendous growth in the process of fighting them, and the benefits he received were extraordinary.

For the next two days, Jiang Chen just stayed inside the room, accompanying Yan Chenyu. He didn't pay any attention to what was going on outside. After all, he had no interest in anything related to the sect right now.

Within these two days, the entire Black Sect was busy. Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan had taken control of both Burning Sky Pavilion and the Heavenly Sword Sect, and they didn't face any resistance. They had finally consolidated the entire Qi Province.

With the help of all sorts of healing pills, all those disciples and elders who had suffered from different degrees of injuries had nearly recovered. Even Daoist Black had emerged from his secluded cultivation. Now, the Black Sect was in its post-war rest and reorganization state. He, as the Sect Chief, he to stand out and manage everything.

After getting Jiang Chen's approval, Daoist Black personally brought a few elders and disciples to Yellowstone's Redsun Town. It was a troublesome matter to build a new home base for the Black Sect, and they were going to have to do it carefully.

Guo Shan's mountain peak had become the calmest place within the Black Sect, and it had also become the center of attention as well. On the second day, Guo Shan had fully recovered.

Guo Shan walked out from his room. A powerful energy could be sensed from his body. With the help of the energy vein's heart, not only did he have a surge in his cultivation and break through to the Late Divine Core realm, his constitution had improved as well, which gave him an ever brighter future. Now, he would have no problems becoming an advanced alchemist. His value had skyrocketed.

“Sect Elder Guo, it looks like misfortune came to you as a blessing in disguise. Congratulations for breaking through to the Late Divine Core realm!”

Yu Zihan immediately cupped his fist toward Guo Shan when he saw Guo Shan emerge from his room. For an entire day, Big Yellow had been telling him about what happened back in Inferno Hell, and Yu Zihan had been listening to him with great interest. He kept imagining himself being in the story, thinking about how exciting that would be.

“Where is brother Jiang? What kind of amazing pills did he give me? They actually made me go through such a tremendous transformation!”

This was the biggest question in Guo Shan's mind.

“Old man, knowing Little Chen is your greatest fortune. What he gave you was the heart of the energy vein underneath the Black Mountain Range, as well as some healing pills. If not for that, do you really think you'd be able to see such a huge transformation?”

Big Yellow said.

“What? Heart of the energy vein?”

Guo Shan was thrown into a fright at once. The heart of the energy vein was the Black Sect’s foundation.

“That’s right. Brother Jiang asked Sect Chief to take out the energy vein’s heart. After that, the entire Black Sect will move to Redsun Town, and the future Black Sect will be built in Redsun Town. That will be the strongest place within the entire Qi Province.”

Yu Zihan said.

“Where is brother Jiang?”

Guo Shan asked.

“He is in Little Yu’s room now. I think it’s best not to disturb him right now.”

Yu Zihan said.

## Chapter 268 – Drinking The Dog’s Wine

---

Hearing this, Guo Shan threw his glance at Yan Chenyu’s room and nodded his head. He knew how important Yan Chenyu was to Jiang Chen. Since Jiang Chen had helped change the entire structure of the Qi Province after returning from Inferno Hell, he had finally found some time to spend with Yan Chenyu. Obviously, Guo Shan wouldn’t go disturb them

“Big Yellow, Zihan, quickly tell me, what happened after I entered a coma? How did you all come back in time? Also, where is that Nanbei Chao now? What is the situation like in the Heavenly Sword Sect and Burning Sky Pavilion?”

Guo Shan sat next to a stone table and immediately began throwing questions. All these questions were the ones he eagerly wanted to know the answer to.

“That goes without saying. Zhao Chongyang and Duan Jianhong have both died, none of those who came to attack the Black Sect survived; all of them died miserable deaths. Also, Nanbei Chao was defeated by Brother Jiang, both his arms were sliced off by Brother Jiang as well. The only regret is that Nanbei Chao eventually escaped. But, I think Brother Jiang has left an eternal shadow within Nanbei Chao’s heart, and it will surely affect his future cultivation.”

Yu Zihan said. When he thought about the battle between Jiang Chen and Nanbei Chao, even if he was just a bystander, his blood couldn’t help but start boiling.

“What? All of them died? Even Zhao Chongyang and Duan Jianhong were killed? Brother Jiang’s cultivation growth is simply amazing! I was still worrying about his one-year fight with Nanbei Chao, I had never thought that with just half a year, he would be able to defeat Nanbei Chao! This is amazing!”

Guo Shan said with mixed emotions. In fact, when he found out that the Black Sect still existed, he had guessed that this was how the war ended. But when he heard what had actually happened, he was still struck with extreme shock.

“That’s right! Brother Jiang is a mighty genius, with only his Early Divine Core cultivation base, he was able to defeat Nanbei Chao who has a Mid Divine Core cultivation base. He can really be considered to be invincible in the Divine Core realm. Perhaps only those Late Divine Core geniuses from some of the big sects would be able to have a match with Brother Jiang, or some extraordinary geniuses from the Martial Palace. Brother Jiang is really the number one genius amongst all warriors the same level as him, I can’t really how strong Brother Jiang will become when he breaks through to the mid, or perhaps even the Late Divine Core realm. At that point of time, perhaps he would be able to fight Combat Soul warriors with no fear.”

Yu Zihan too had mixed emotions. He was also a genius from the younger generation, but the existence of Jiang Chen had caused him to feel a tremendous pressure.

“Now, the overall situation in the Qi Province has settled down. We, the Black Sect has become the biggest victor. From now on, the Qi Province will rule the entire Qi Province!”

Guo Shan said with a smile.

“I think the next Sect Chief will be brother Jiang.”

Yu Zihan said.

“Haha, Zihan, you’re wrong. Do you really think brother Jiang will be limited to this tiny province? He is a true mighty dragon, sooner or later he is going to soar through the horizon. The tiny Qi Province isn’t going to keep him for long.”

Guo Shan let out a hearty laugh.

“Oh that’s true! With Brother Jiang’s ability, he will surely become a big shot in the future; he really won’t be limited to becoming the Sect Chief of this tiny Black Sect.”

Yu Zihan replied with a smile as well.

“What you say is correct. Not only is the Black Sect too small, Little Chen wouldn’t even put his mind on becoming the next emperor of the Martial Saint Dynasty.”

Big Yellow said while holding his head up high. He knew Jiang Chen much better than these two men, Jiang Chen’s ambitions was not something Guo Shan and Yu Zihan could ever imagine.

“Oh right, where is that bastard Fan Zhongtang? What did you all do with him?”

When Guo Shan thought about Fan Zhongtang, a fierce look swiftly emerged in his eyes. Not only was the Black Sect nearly eliminated because of his betrayal, Guo Shan was nearly killed by him as well. If not for Jiang Chen returning at the right time, Guo Shan might have already met Yama.

[TL: Yama is the king of hell.]

“I killed him.”

Yu Zihan casually said. He was greatly satisfied about being able to personally kill the traitor.

“So you took all the credit, eh?”

Guo Shan glared at Yu Zihan.

Rumble...

All of a sudden, another deep, yet subtle rumbling sound could be heard. Guo Shan raised his head and saw the dark beam trembling even more violently than before. The rumbling sound was coming from the dark beam. Guo Shan had noticed this dark beam when he emerged from his room, but he hadn't gotten to ask about it yet.

“It feels like a Devil King is coming! The energy is getting

stronger and stronger... I wonder how strong Han Yan will become when he fully awakens.”

Yu Zihan said with mixed emotions. For an entire day, he and Big Yellow had been paying close attention to the dark beam.

“Looks like older brother Jiang has found the Earth Devil’s devil soul. It won’t take long before Han Yan fully awakens. His Ancient Divine Devil bloodline will fully awaken at the same time.”

Guo Shan nodded his head. It wasn’t hard for him to imagine that when Han Yan fully awakened; it would be the same as the birth of another mighty genius.

On the next day, the Black Sect was still incredibly busy. But suddenly, a loud explosive sound that caused the earth to shake was heard. A wave of devilish energies swept across the entire Black Mountain Range, starting from Guo Shan’s mountain peak.

“What a powerful devilish energy! Is senior disciple Han Yan going to awaken now?”

“It really feels like a Devil King is coming, amazing!”

.....

Everyone were shocked. Covered by the devilish energies, many disciples’ souls and hearts trembled.



Swoosh!

In the next moment, the devilish energy withdrew, it returned to the secret chamber on Guo Shan's mountain peak.

Bang!

A massive force came from the secret chamber, it punched a huge hole in the secret chamber's solid wall. After that, a sturdy man swiftly jumped into the sky.

Everyone instantly threw their glances at the man. When they sensed the enormous aura that overflowed from the man's body, they couldn't help but feel shivers running down their spines.

The young man had a handsome face. He wore a long blue shirt, and his dark hair was fluttering in the breeze. A pair of sharp eyes were coldly flickering, causing those who stared into his eyes to feel a frightening sensation.

This young man was none other than the fully recovered Han Yan. His Ancient Divine Devil bloodline had fully awakened. Furthermore, he had also fully absorbed the Earth Devil's devil characteristic source. Although he didn't break through to the Late Divine Core realm, he stood firmly in the Mid Divine Core realm. Most importantly, the massive amount of energy contained within the Earth Devil's devil soul wasn't depleted, it was stored within the Ancient Divine Devil bloodline, and Han Yan could slowly absorb it in the future.

Even with all this, his progress was simply startling. Half a year ago, when Han Yan participated in the Qi Province competition, he was only a Late Mortal Core warrior, and before he was injured and entered a coma, he had just broken through to the Heavenly Core realm. But now, he had reached the peak of the Mid Divine Core realm. This horrifying progress was simply unbelievable.

“Oh heavens, senior disciple Han Yan has actually reached the peak Mid Divine Core realm! This is terrifying!”

“So astonishing! He went from an Early Heavenly Core warriors to a peak Mid Divine Core warrior; the Ancient Divine Devil’s bloodline is really amazing!”

“The Black Sect now has another mighty genius! I really envy those who were born with special bodies; they were born geniuses! No matter how many relentless hours we spend in cultivation, we just can’t compare with their sudden surges in cultivation.”

.....

Everyone from the Black Sect were staring at Han Yan who was hovering in the sky. His progress had hugely impacted them.

“Junior Disciple Han is really amazing! It looks like the Earth Devil’s devil soul really helped him a lot!”

Guan Yiyun said with mixed emotions as he looked far into the

distance. He was one of the top four geniuses in the Qi Province, the number one genius in the Black Sect; but now he had been completely surpassed by Jiang Chen and Han Yan.

Back on Guo Shan's mountain peak, when Jiang Chen sensed Han Yan's energy, he immediately walked out from Yan Chenyu's room.

“Peak Mid Divine Core realm, not bad. Furthermore, the Ancient Divine Devil's bloodline has completely awakened. His growth speed in the future will be incredible, he could break through to the Late Divine Core realm at any time. With Brother Yan's current combat strength, I believe he isn't much weaker than me and Big Yellow. The Ancient Divine Devil's blood is no joke.”

Jiang Chen murmured. He was very confident in Han Yan's current combat strength. With the full awakening of the Ancient Divine Devil bloodline, Han Yan must have awakened his powerful innate ability, or perhaps even inherited the Earth Devil's powerful innate ability.

“Damn it, the birth of another abnormal monster.”

Big Yellow couldn't help but say.

Above in the skies, Han Yan's eyes were glowing brightly. He finally threw his glance onto Guo Shan's mountain peak. When he saw Jiang Chen, a smile immediately emerged on his face. With a sway of his body; he landed in front of Jiang Chen.

“My brother!”

Han Yan spread his arms and gave Jiang Chen a big hug. The ‘my brother’ said everything he wanted to say. Although he had entered a coma, he still knew everything Jiang Chen had done for him in his subconscious mind. Not only had Jiang Chen saved his life, he had also caused his cultivation to soar incredibly. His heart was filled with thousands of grateful words, but he didn’t want to speak them; a hug was more than enough; this was his brother.

“Get lost, daddy has no interest in men.”

Jiang Chen pushed Han Yan away and teased him.

“Damn you, I have no interest in you at all!”

Han Yan snappily said. After that, both of them began laughing at the same time.

In the same night, right in the courtyard, all men had gathered together. Guo Shan took out all the fine wine he had brewed. Han Yan’s recovery made Jiang Chen really happy. Finally, he had fulfilled one of his wishes.

Jiang Chen, Big Yellow, Han Yan, Guo Shan, Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan were drinking to their heart’s content and laughing out heartily. The men told Han Yan all about what happened while he was in a coma. Just when they were in the middle of telling the story about what happened in Inferno Hell, Daoist Black came and

joined the group.

“Not cool, guys. Why did no one invite me to drink with you?”

Daoist Black came without an invitation. He didn't consider himself an outsider, he simply sat down next to Han Yan, grabbed a wine pot and began drinking to his heart's content.

“Hey, Big Yellow has been drinking from that pot.”

Han Yan reminded Daoist Black in a serious manner.

Puh~

Daoist Black immediately threw up all the wine he had drank. After violently coughing for some time, he angrily glared at Han Yan.

“Why didn't you tell me earlier?”

Daoist Black opened his eyes wider than a camel's. He had actually just shared a wine pot with a dog, and it was the dog who drank first. Damn it, how was he going to face other people in the future if they knew about this?

## Chapter 269 – Blissful Island

---

“You didn’t ask me earlier either.”

Han Yan spread his arms and said in a helpless manner.

Haha...

Everyone burst into laughter. As the Black Sect’s Sect Chief, Daoist Black had just drank a dog’s wine. This was not something that other people should know happened.

“Damn you, what’s wrong with this master dog’s wine? Fuck, do you all know how many people dream about having a sip of my leftover wine? This is your lucky day, don’t try to be greedy!”

Big Yellow immediately became angry; he kept shouting at Daoist Black. This dog didn’t care who he was facing, he would even dare challenge the father of the heavenly king.

Daoist Black stared at Big Yellow who seemed like he had just suffered the biggest grievance. His face turned red because of embarrassment, but in the end, he just couldn’t speak any words. If any other dog had dared be so arrogant in front of him, he would definitely have skinned the dog alive. But, this dog was not a dog that could easily be trifled with. Even Duan Jianhong was defeated by him. Putting that aside, Big Yellow and Daoist Black did have a pretty good relationship. With Daoist Black’s current condition, where he hadn’t even fully recovered, perhaps he might even be defeated by this dog.

“Sect Chief, it’s a truth that not anyone can drink Big Yellow’s wine. Today, Brother Yan has finally recovered, and his cultivation has skyrocketed. It’s good news for us, and we should celebrate.”

Jiang Chen hurriedly changed the focus to Han Yan, Giving Daoist Black an excuse to escape from this embarrassing moment.

“Right. Brother Yan is considered a rare genius right now, not only does he have the Ancient Divine Devil’s bloodline, he’s even a peak Mid Divine Core warrior at such a young age. I’m afraid even I am no match for Brother Yan.”

Daoist Black looked at Han Yan with a smile on his face. For him, it was a glorious thing to have so many geniuses in the Black Sect. The future would definitely shine brightly because of these geniuses.

“It’s all because of Little Chen! Come, a toast to my Little Chen!”

Han Yan raised his wine pot and tossed off its lid.

“Damn you, shouldn’t you toast this master dog as well? If not for this master dog, do you really think that guy could have killed the Earth Devil by himself?”

Big Yellow became furious once again.

“Brother Yan, Big Yellow did contribute to the most important part of the trip to Inferno Hell. You should toast him as well.”

Jiang Chen said in a serious manner. If not for Big Yellow coming along with him to Inferno Hell, Jiang Chen would not have been able to kill the Earth Devil in such a smooth manner. Putting aside all other issues, without Big Yellow, there were two things he wouldn't have been able to accomplish.

First, without Big Yellow, there was no way Jiang Chen could have found the hidden Blood Talisman within Inferno City. Without the Blood Talisman, he couldn't have handled the powerful Earth Devil. Secondly, without Big Yellow, Jiang Chen wouldn't have been able to leave the Poisonous Miasma Space. The Spiraling Defense Mechanism Big Yellow made was extraordinary, and it was the key that allowed Jiang Chen and Wu Jiu to escape from the Poisonous Miasma Space.

“Fine, a toast from me, Han Yan to Big Yellow!”

Han Yan raised the wine pot and gave Big Yellow a toast. Only then did Big Yellow let out a satisfied laugh.

“Jiang Chen, the most important task for us now is to move the Black Sect to Redsun Town. I have already settled everything in the Redsun Town, our next step is to start building. Do you have any ideas how we should proceed with this?”

Daoist Black asked. Although he was the Black Sect's Sect Chief, he still consulted Jiang Chen when it came to the Black Sect's most



important matter. Obviously, he considered Jiang Chen one of the key persons who could decide anything for the Black Sect.

In fact, even if Jiang Chen was appointed as Sect Chief of the Black Sect, no one would have any objections. Without Jiang Chen, there would after all be no Black Sect any longer. Furthermore, with Jiang Chen's current strength, he could be considered the strongest man in the Qi Province.

“I have no interest in managing the sect. Sect Chief, just do what you feel is right. Once all these matters have come to an end, I'll still have some other important matters I need to attend.”

Jiang Chen said. His words allowed Daoist Black to understand something. In the Qi Province, Daoist Black would be the only ruler. Jiang Chen had no interest in ruling the Qi Province.

.....

During the next few days, the Black Sect was experience a real major change. Redsun Town was completely crowded, and in just three days, more than half of a brand new base had been built. For those cultivators who had amazing skills and tricks, building a new base was the simplest thing they could do.

On this day, while Jiang Chen was accompanying Yan Chenyu in her room, someone suddenly knocked on the door.

Hearing the knocking, Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. Usually,

no one would come disturb him while he was accompanying Yan Chenyu. It seemed like something had happened.

Jiang Chen stood up and opened the door. It was Daoist Black who was knocking on the door.

“Sect Chief, is there anything important?”

Jiang Chen said with a displeased tone. Daoist Black better give him a good reason for disturbing him, otherwise Jiang Chen would become really angry.

“Jiang Chen, someone wants to see you.”

Daoist Black said with a solemn expression. This told Jiang Chen that the person who wanted to see him was not someone simple.

“Who?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“It is I.”

A voice came from Daoist Black’s back. After that, the man appeared in front of Jiang Chen’s eyes.

“Brother Xuan.”

Jiang Chen felt surprised. The man who was looking for him was Xuan Ye. No wonder Daoist Black became so nervous; the visit of a Combat Soul warrior had definitely shocked him.

“Brother Jiang, can I go in and have a look at my sister-in-law’s condition?”

Xuan Ye asked with a smile on his face.

“Please come in, brother Xuan.”

Jiang Chen smiled. It looked like Xuan Ye had found out about his current situation, and came here because of Yan Chenyu. But, there was no way Xuan Ye could help with Yan Chenyu’s condition. Anyhow, since he came with good intentions, Jiang Chen couldn’t just reject him.

Xuan Ye walked into the room. Daoist Black didn’t follow, he just closed the door for them. He was extremely excited right now, he had no idea who this Xuan Ye was, but he knew that this man was a powerful Combat Soul warrior, and he was Jiang Chen’s friend. If the Black Sect could have a Combat Soul warrior as a friend, it would be incredibly advantageous.

Xuan Ye walked into the room and looked at Yan Chenyu. He immediately nodded his head when he saw Yan Chenyu’s beautiful and gorgeous appearance.

“My sister-in-law is really as beautiful as a fair. Brother Jiang, Lord Jiu has learned about everything regarding you, he specifically sent me here with some herbs; we hope these can help sister-in-law.”

Xuan Yu looked at Jiang Chen and flipped his palm. A storage ring immediately appeared, “Here are some pills and herbs. Please take a look, Brother Jiang.”

Xuan Ye handed the storage ring to Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen sent his divine sense into the storage ring, and in an instant, all kinds of herbs appeared in front of Jiang Chen’s eyes.

Revival Pills, Heavenly Snow Grass, Thousand Year Old Dragon Ginseng, Bloody Fleeceflower Root

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. All these pills and herbs were extremely expensive, and each of them were premium quality ones that had been grown for many years. Even in the Martial Saint Dynasty, these were all top quality items amongst all precious items. There was no way he could find these in a small place like the Qi Province.

With the combination of all these herbs, they could really revive a dead man. By simply sending these precious herbs to Jiang Chen, he could easily tell how prestigious Wu Jiu’s status and background was.

But it was a pity that all these herbs were useless for Yan Chenyu.

However, this actions did touch Jiang Chen's heart.

“Brother Jiang, I think that with all these herbs, we should be able to heal sister-in-law, right?”

Xuan Ye asked with a smile. He was confident in the herbs and pills he had brought.

“Brother Xuan, all these herbs and pills are extremely priceless, please help my send my gratitude to Brother Jiu. It's too bad, these herbs can't help Little Yu at all.”

Jian Chen replied with a smile.

“Impossible! With the combination of all these herbs and pills, as long as the person isn't completely dead, they will be able to heal all injuries.”

Xuan Ye was shocked. His confidence in these herbs was gigantic.

“I don't want to hide this from Brother Xuan. Little Yu has the Nine Yin Meridians, a rare Nine Yin Body. In order to save her, I will need to find Nine Solar Holy Water.”

Jiang Chen shook his head.

“What?! Nine Yin Meridians?”

Xuan Ye exclaimed, shocked. He didn't expect that this girl lying on the bed had such a rare and powerful body.

“The Nine Solar Holy Water is extremely rare, even Lord Jiu doesn't have this rare item with him. According to my knowledge, none of the sects in all 28 provinces have the Nine Solar Holy Water. What should we do then?”

Xuan Ye furrowed his brows.

“None of them have it?”

Jiang Chen's heart missed a beat. Only the Nine Solar Holy Water could heal Yan Chenyu, that's why his next goal was to find it. Although his goal was clear, he still had no idea where to start from. When he was looking for Firethorn Savage and the Earth Devil, he still knew roughly where it could be found; there was a clear destination. However, Xuan Ye's words just now caused him to feel like a headless fly; no idea where to go next.

“Oh right, there might be a place where you can find the Nine Solar Holy Water.”

Xuan Ye suddenly said.

“Where is that?”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up.

“The Blissful Villa.”

Xuan Ye said.

“Where is this Blissful Villa?”

Jiang Chen asked again

“It’s not located in any of the 28 provinces. The Blissful Villa is built on an island called the Blissful Island. There is an ocean north of the Eastern Continent, and the Blissful Island is located somewhere in that ocean. On this island, there will be a trade fair every year, and many extraordinary men, rogue cultivators, and even demon lords who live in that ocean goes there every year to participate. Also, all kinds of rare items can be found there as well. You could try your luck there. If my memory serves me well, the trade fair will start in one month. With your speed, I believe you can make it in time.”

Xuan Ye said.

“Blissful Island, Blissful Villa... Alright, I’ll make a trip to the ocean.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes were bright. Although he had no idea whether or not he could find the Nine Solar Holy Water on that Blissful Island, there was at least hope. Having a target was better than nothing.

“There are many foul demons and pirates living in the ocean. Brother Jiang, you better be careful when you’re there.”

Xuan Ye reminded.

“I don’t think the ocean will be more dangerous than Inferno



Hell.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile. He was able to walk out from a place like Inferno Hell, what was there to worry about with this Blissful Island? He had made up his mind, he would go there tomorrow.

Rumble...

Right at this moment, a loud rumble could be heard outside the Black Sect's gate. A few powerful energies carrying intense killing intent swept across the entire Black Sect.

## Chapter 270 – Six Heroes Of Mount Mang

---

These few powerful energies carried hostile auras. They obviously came with bad intentions. This caused Jiang Chen to furrow his brows. From their auras, he could tell that they were all Late Divine Core warriors. Some of them could even compare with Daoist Black. Since Zhao Chongyang and Duan Jianhong were both dead, there were no more warriors this strong that could be found in the Qi Province, and it was impossible for so many Late Divine Core warriors to suddenly appear.

“We are the Six Heroes of Mount Mang, we’re here to kill Jiang Chen!”

A voice swept across like a sudden clap of thunder in the clear sky, and it echoed across the entire Black Mountain Range, heard by every single person. Many people had slight changes in their expressions, but at the same time, they felt that the situation was funny. This was the third time someone had come here and yelled about killing him since he first came here.

“Who are these Six Heroes of Mount Mang? When did I offend them?”

Jiang Chen was startled for a moment.

“Brother Jiang, don’t forget how many people you killed in Inferno Hell. I’m sure what you did in Inferno Hell is known by many; it’s normal that someone will come, seeking revenge.”

Xuan Ye said with a smile, as if he had expected this to happen. He had a look of leisure on his face, and it didn't seem like he had any intentions to help.

“So you're here to watch the show?”

Jiang Chen gazed at Xuan Ye.

“Lord Jiu told me that you need to solve your own problems. You have too many enemies, and this is just the beginning.”

Xuan Ye shrugged his shoulder, then he turned around and exited the room.

Jiang Chen gave Xuan Ye's back his middle finger. After that, he took a step forwards and arrived outside of the gate.

Right at this moment, all great warriors of the Black Sect had arrived. They all looked at those six intrepid men.

Swoosh! Swoosh!

Han Yan and Big Yellow walked up to Jiang Chen. Han Yan threw his glance at the six men standing opposite of them, then he asked, “Little Chen, who are these Six Heroes of Mount Mang? Looks like they are pretty strong, when did you offend them?”

Six people stood opposite of them. Five men and a woman, and

all of them were Late Divine Core warriors. The leading man seemed to be in his fifties, and he was at the peak of the Divine Core realm, no weaker than Daoist Black. A force like this could really go many places within the Eastern Continent without many obstacles.

These six people also had weird appearances. The woman was carrying a lute, and her hair was tied in a braid that pointing towards the sky. Jiang Chen couldn't help but relate her to Murong Xiaorou, but this woman was much prettier than her, at least she had a curvy and seductive body. A lute was drawn onto her pretty face, which caused her to look kind of ferocious, but at the same time, giving her a touch of a wild beauty.

The rest of the men also had all kinds of weird appearances, causing people to think they were some upright men.

“Who are these people? What an unusual way to dress! They came here with such great killing intent, I wonder how senior disciple offended them.”

“Senior disciple Jiang's ability to offend people is just like his talent, superb!”

“These few people seem really strong, but I think senior disciple Jiang should be able to handle them with ease. With his current abilities, no ordinary Late Divine Core warriors are his match.”

All the disciples of the Black Sect were discussing amongst themselves. In the past, if this strong group suddenly came to the

Black Sect, they would definitely be frightened to death. But now, with the presence of Jiang Chen, they wouldn't be scared no matter how strong the enemies were.

“Which one of you is Jiang Chen?”

The woman asked. She had a high vocal pitch that was irritating to the ear. The flute in her hand was reflecting purple ripples underneath the sunshine, it was a powerful combat weapon.

“I am. Why are you looking for me?”

Jiang Chen took a step forward.

“So it's you who killed Mang Seven. We siblings have come here today to kill you, we will avenge our seventh brother!”

A short fat man said in an eerie manner.

“Damn you, who is that Mang Seven? Did you guys come to the wrong place?”

Big Yellow couldn't restrain himself from speaking any longer.

“Don't try to deny it! We were once the Seven Heroes of Mount Mang, but our seventh brother went to Inferno Hell, and according to the news we got, he was killed by you!”

Eldest Mang shouted at Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow finally understood. It was because of what they had done back in Inferno Hell. They had no idea who this Mang Seven was, because they had killed too many people back in Inferno Hell. Perhaps this Mang Seven really was killed by them.

“Jiang Chen, I’ve heard about the Seven Weirdoes of Mount Mang, they are from the Qing Province, the fifth biggest province in the Eastern Continent, and they’re a group of really strong warriors. No one really dares challenge them, and they have been acting like tyrants in the Qing Province. Rumors say that this group offended a Combat Soul warrior from a big sect in the Qing Province, and out of anger, the Combat Soul warrior sent one of them to Inferno Hell by force. The remaining six weirdoes flew from the Qing Province, and were never seen again. Didn’t think I’d see them here.”

Daoist Black said. As the Black Sect’s Sect Chief, he did have some insight regarding the other provinces in the Eastern Continent.

“So you are the Six Weirdoes of Mount Mang. You truly have no sense of honor, calling yourselves heroes.”

Jiang Chen said as he started laughing out loud.

“Watch your tongue! We, the Seven Weirdoes of Mount Mang... no, we, the Seven Heroes are all great warriors who surpass the ancient and dazzle the contemporaries! You’re just courting death

by being impolite to us! Today, we are going to avenge seventh brother! Not only will we kill you, we're also going to slaughter this entire sect!"

Mang Third was born with crossed eyes, and he kept blinking while he was talking, giving people an impression that there was something wrong with his mind.

When the Six Heroes of Mount Mang found out their seventh brother had been killed by Jiang Chen from the Black Sect, they immediately rushed to the Black Sect. None of them knew anything about the major change that had occurred in the Qi Province. In their minds, although Jiang Chen was strong, with their combined strength, unless it was a Combat Soul warrior who personally fought them, they wouldn't find any match in the Divine Core realm.

"Hmph! Since you've done all kinds of evil things, I don't have to be courteous to you. You would be lucky if you never had to meet me, but since you're here, I'll just kill you all."

Jiang Chen coldly humphed.

"Jiang Chen, be careful when fighting them. These Six Heroes of Mount Mang are not some ordinary warriors. If you were to fight them one at a time, none of them would be your match, but once they work together, they become extremely powerful. I've heard they can attack flawlessly, and have the ability to attack with all kinds of skills at the same time, causing their opponent to have a hard time defending effectively. People say they're invincible below the Combat Soul realm."

Daoist Black reminded.

“Little Chen, shall we fight together?”

Han Yan asked with a smile.

“Alright.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. If these Six Heroes of Mount Mang really had perfect synergy, it would be pretty difficult to defeat them. After all, six Late Divine Core warriors with perfect synergy could make their combat strength increase to an incredible level. Han Yan was a peak Mid Divine Core warrior, and together with his Ancient Divine Devil bloodline, his combat strength was nearly on par with his and Big Yellow's.

“Kaka, how could you forget Big Yellow in such an exciting moment?”

Big Yellow started laughing out loudly. His majestic body dashed forward, and he became the first one to crash into the Six Weirdoes of Mount Mang.

“How come there is a dog here? It's been a long time since Lord Fourth ate meat, and this dog looks pretty meaty. Let's kill it and have a cooked dog meal later.”



When Mang Fourth saw Big Yellow, he became the first one to dash forward. He couldn't help but stick out his tongue.

“How dare you want to eat this master dog?!”

Big Yellow grit his teeth in anger. His head began glowing with a golden light as he dashed toward Mang Fourth with extreme speed.

“Jiejie!”

Mang Fourth let out an evil laugh. He raised his arm, then a razor sharp dagger appeared in his hand. He waved his arm, forcefully thrusting his dagger toward Big Yellow. The other five weirdos were watching the show with joyful smiles. All of them knew how strong Mang Fourth was, and if this strike hit its target, Big Yellow's head would definitely be destroyed.

Clang!

Too bad, a shocking scene played out in front of them. When the dagger hit Big Yellow's head, metal clanging sound was heard, and a huge amount of sparks emerged from the center of the impact. The dog's head wasn't destroyed, and instead, Mang Fourth suffer a huge backlash, and his dagger nearly fell out of his hand. He was knocked back about fifty meters before he regained control of his body.

“What a tough head!”

Mang Fourth's expression changed dramatically. He was a Late Divine Core warrior, and the dagger in his hand was a high-ranked combat weapon. But, even with the high-ranked combat weapon, he still couldn't damage this dog's head. This was incredibly shocking.

“Kaka, trying to fight this master dog with just that little trick, you're too weak!”

Big Yellow laughed with his head pointed towards the skies. His majestic body was trembling because of the laughter. He was showing off his pride at the maximum level.

“Let's fight together, this dog isn't easy to handle.”

Eldest Mang's expression became serious. Followed by his words, all six of them moved into different positions, and connected their auras at the same time. Jiang Chen's eyes lit up when he saw their positions. He finally understood why the Seven Heroes of Mount Mang could run around in the Qing Province without much resistance; it was all because their synergy had reached a perfect level.

Ding...

The woman raised the lute in her hand. With a gentle swing of her soft hand, a sound-wave rushed out toward Big Yellow. Many of the disciples felt an irritating feeling when they heard the sound, as if it was some devilish tune that caused those who heard it to feel extremely uncomfortable.

“Be careful Big Yellow, this sound-wave isn’t easy to deal with!”

Han Yan reminded. Jiang Chen on the other side didn’t care at all. Attacking Big Yellow with sound waves was like trying to show off in front of an expert. Big Yellow’s Soul Crunching Tune was much more terrifying than this devilish lute tune.

Indeed. Under the shocked gazes of the Six Weirdoes of Mount Mang, Big Yellow opened his mouth widely and devoured the sound waves unleashed by the woman. After he did that, he didn’t forget to burp and say, “Doesn’t taste bad, give me some more.”

Big Yellow still had the same brimming with energy look, and he didn’t show any signs of being hurt.

“What?!”

The woman cried out in shock. She knew how powerful her devilish lute tune was. After all these years of basically running unhindered through the Qing Province, the reputation of the Lute Devil frightened many people. However, this dog in front of her had just devoured her devilish tune; this was insane!

“Die now!”

Eldest Mang immediately attacked. He was the strongest man in the group. He unleashed a huge phantom hand which slapped toward Big Yellow. At the same time, all the other weirdoes

unleashed their attacks as well. It looked like they trying to kill Big Yellow with one combined attack.

“Let’s do this.”

Jiang Chen dashed forwards. On the other side, Han Yan unleashed his incredible devilish energy and unparalleled grandeur.

# Chapter 271 – Nine Heavenly Devil Waves

---

Rumble...

Jiang Chen unleashed the True Dragon Palm and tore Eldest Mang's attack to pieces. As for Han Yan, he unleashed a black beam looking like a devilish dragon that carried a tremendous devilish energy. It was so powerful that even the air started vibrating. With just this single attack, the Six Weirdoes of Mount Mang's formation was almost completely broken.

“Damn it, where did these abnormal monsters come from? These two brats' cultivations are obviously weaker than ours, so how can they possess such powerful combat strength?”

Mang Fourth said in a slightly depressed manner.

“The enemies are incredible, but we still have to avenge seventh brother. Let's attack together, kill this trio at the same time.”

Eldest Mang had a gruesome look in his eyes as he spoke. A huge silver blade appeared in his hand, and it was glowing with a deadly shine. At the same time, the other five weirdoes took out their own combat weapons. With their flawless synergy, they were able to perfectly combine their combat strength.

“Brother Yan, let's attack with the cornering formation; we'll use our strongest skills to break their formation.”

Jiang Chen told Han Yan. There was a light of determination in his eyes. With the combination of himself, Han Yan and Big Yellow, he was going to cripple these Six Weirdoes of Mount Mang.

“Got it.”

With a sway of his body, Han Yan moved to the back of the group. His Ancient Divine Devil bloodline had completely awakened, and with a cultivation base at the peak Mid Divine Core realm, it was a time where Han Yan felt proud of what he had. He was actually going to find someone he could test his combat strength on, and these Six Weirdoes of Mount Mang had come at the perfect time.

In the blink of an eye, Jiang Chen, Han Yan, and Big Yellow positioned themselves on three separate spots, cornering the Six Weirdoes of Mount Mang in the center. It was supposed to be a scene where the six weirdoes surrounded the trio, but the tables had now turned.

But the Six Weirdoes of Mount Mang had no feat at all. They had been working as a team for many years, and had gone through a lot of battles. They had now met their strongest opponent yet, and they were confident that with their flawless synergy, they would be able to defeat the trio whose cultivation was weaker than theirs.

“Let’s attack!”

Eldest Mang was the first person who attacked. With a loud voice he shouted, “Mountain Ripping Blade!”

Bang!

Eldest Mang swung the huge blade in his hand toward Jiang Chen with tremendous force. The strike carried an incredibly strong force, and it nearly sliced the space around them. A powerful buzzing sounded out, so powerful it seemed like it alone could rip a mountain to pieces.

“Rapid Thunderstorm!”

Mang Second struck at the same time with the longsword in his hand. With a swing of his sword, he unleashed countless sword lights toward Big Yellow.

“World Shaking Seal!”

“Thunderous Sword!”

“Raging Inferno, Prairie Fire!”

“Devilish Lute Tune!”

The other four weirdoes unleashed their strongest attacks at the same time. At this moment, devastating attacks and colorful energies could be seen everywhere, wreaking havoc in the entire area.

The amazing thing was, although the six of them were unleashing their own attacks, they could actually transfer their yuan energy amongst each other and completely combine the strength of all six attacks into one.

Although the strength of all their attacks was combined, they still did have their respective targets. The Mountain Ripping Blade and Devilish Lute Tune were going toward Jiang Chen. The Devilish Lute Tune was really powerful, but this woman dared not use it again Big Yellow anymore, because Big Yellow could just eat all her attacks. This frightened her. Still, she didn't believe that Jiang Chen could also withstand here devilish tune.

The Rapid Thunderstorm sword skill and the World Shaking Seal was targeting Big Yellow, and the Thunderous Sword and Raging Inferno, Prairie Fire were crashing toward Han Yan.

“The six of them has flawless synergy, but it's the six of them versus three opponents. It's really difficult to have anyone under the Combat Soul realm be their match. But, with Brother Jiang and Big Yellow's abilities, they shouldn't have any problems handles this. What surprises me is that young man called Han Yan, he's actually very strong as well. I didn't expect a peerless genius like this to exist in the Black Sect.”

Xuan Ye stood far away with both arms crossed in front of his chest. There was a hint of praise in his eyes when he looked at Han Yan.

“So frightening! These six freaks are really frightening!”



“If it was a one on one fight, none of these six weirdoes would be a match for senior disciple. It’s because of their flawless synergy that their combat strength is so high.”

“Don’t worry. With the abilities of senior disciple Jiang and senior disciple Han, these six weirdoes will be defeated soon. They will see the same ending as Mang Seventh; killed by senior disciple Jiang!”

.....

All the disciples were watching the battle in a serious manner. For them, watching a high-level battle like this was a rare opportunity. Not only would they be able to learn something from it, watching a battle like this would also help improve their cultivation.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. With his full strength, he unleashed the True Dragon Palm. Every time he formed a new Dragon Mark, every time his cultivation progressed, the True Dragon Palm would become stronger. The gigantic blood red dragon claw grabbed the blade light unleashed by Eldest Mang, and shattered it in the most formidable way. After that, Jiang Chen unleashed the Sonic Hawk Cry. The tremendous sound-waves immediately crashing into the Devilish Lute Tune, causing a huge amount of sparks to emerge when the sound waves collided.

Clang... clang... clang...

On the other side, Big Yellow was even more formidable. He was covered in countless sword lights, but he kept pushing forward with his head, shattering all sword lights. After that, Big Yellow leapt forward like a snake, and crushed the World Shaking Seal with his head.

His hard head caused many people to feel speechless and helpless.

“Nine Heavenly Devil Waves!”

Han Yan was like a devil king as he covered himself with steaming hot devilish energies. Layers of waves pushed forwards in a seemingly invincible way, completely crushing all the opponents’ powerful attacks.

“Damn it, how can these three be so strong?! They just dismissed all our combined attacks!”

Mang Fourth kept cursing while attacking.

“Fuck his dad! My Devilish Lute Tune has never failed, not once! Whenever I used it, all enemies will be frightened to death... Why did I have to bump into two freaks today?!”

The woman carrying the flute was so mad she nearly threw up her blood. Sound-wave attacks were really difficult to defend against, and under normal conditions, no warriors would want to

fight those who could attack with sound-waves, let alone sound-wave attacks unleashed through combat weapons, as the force would increase significantly.

When the Six Weirdoes of Mount Mang were mentioned, everyone knew that there was a Lute Devil amongst them. But today, this woman had suffered a huge blow. Not only had she found a dog who could devour her sound waves, there was another young man who could also attack with powerful sound waves, and he even destroyed her sound wave attack.

“This Jiang Chen is much stronger than we imagined. Let’s focus our strength, don’t let the attacks be dispersed.”

Eldest Mang reminded everyone with a solemn expressed. He was starting to regret coming here without learning more about the real situation. Not only was Jiang Chen’s mightiness beyond his expectations, the other two had also made him speechless with their formidable strength.

Rumble...

The Six Weirdoes of Mount Mang repeatedly attacked, attempting to find an opportunity to kill one of their opponents. Furthermore, with Eldest Mang’s warning, all six of them became extremely careful, and dared not disperse their strength. They all knew how strong their opponents were, and once their combat strength was dispersed, they would immediately become weakened, and each of them would be killed by their opponent.

Jiang Chen, Han Yan and Big Yellow were also crazily attacking. At this moment, the entire battlefield was violently shaking. Powerful energy waves formed into countless dark clouds, while dazzling and colorful energy ripples swept across the scene.

The combat skills' radiance was gorgeous, but behind these gorgeous radiant lights was devastating forces. If anyone jumped into the center of the battlefield, he would immediately be shattered into pieces.

“So brutal! This is the first time I’ve witnessed this kind of battle!”

“Yea! Six Late Divine Core warriors, not once in the history of the Qi Province have there been so many Late Divine Core warriors! Senior disciple Jiang Chen, senior disciple Han Yan, and Big Yellow are fighting them by themselves, and they don’t seem to be in a disadvantageous position at all!”

“It’s because those six weirdoes have flawless synergy, which gives them extremely powerful combined combat strength. Without that, none of them would be able to match senior disciples!”

“Just keep watching! Senior disciple Jiang is going to destroy their synergy sooner or later, and he will kill them all!”

.....

Excitement filled these disciples. Witnessing a battle like this was really exciting.

“Hmph! Let’s destroy them!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. He was finally angry. He pointed his finger like a sword, then he unleashed the Six Profound Solar Fingers. In an instant, all six huge fingers merged into one bright gigantic finger. The finger destroyed all attacks coming towards him, and it kept pushing forwards.

Roar!

Big Yellow let out a roar that sounded like a dragon’s cry. A golden barrier immediately covered his body. Like a mad bull, he sprinted forward with his head in front, shattering all the powerful attack coming his way. Big Yellow who was in the center of the battlefield was not affected at all.

“Nine Heavenly Devil Waves, Seizing Life!”

Han Yan was angry as well. With his dark hair fluttering around because of his mighty devilish energy, he really looked like a mighty devil king. At this moment, he seemed like the source of all devilish energies. Waves after waves of devilish energies burst out, and each wave was stronger than the previous one. The powerful attack resembled an endless ocean’s waves as they crashed toward the Six Weirdoes of Mount Mang.

Rumble...

Under these brutal attacks, the Six Weirdoes of Mount Mang finally couldn't hold on any longer. The attacks unleashed by them were all destroyed. The combined attack from Jiang Chen, Han Yan and Big Yellow was simply too formidable, and it crashed toward them in an unavoidable manner.

Bang bang bang...

With such brutal and formidable attacks, the six weirdoes' formation was finally broken. The six weirdoes were sent flying in six different direction, and each of them had pale white faces. It looked like they had all suffered pretty bad injuries.

"Kill them."

Jiang Chen said in a cruel manner. His eyes were even crueller than his voice. With a sway of his body, he arrived in front of the woman who carried the lute. His sudden appearance shocked the woman, and when she tried to raise her lute to fight back, Jiang Chen snatched it away with lightning speed.

Before the woman could respond, Jiang Chen took the opportunity to punch out with lightning speed. His fist landed right on the woman's forehead, and in an instant, the woman's skull shattered and turned into a blood mist.

# Chapter 272 – Withdrawal From The Black Sect

---

“Aiya! Senior disciple Jiang just doesn’t know that men are supposed to be tender toward woman.”

“You’re right, he is too brutal, not gentle at all.”

Many of the disciples teased Jiang Chen. But in their minds, none of them really considered this Lute Devil a woman.

“Sixth Sister!”

Eldest Mang yelled. He was so angry it seemed like a fire was going to ignite within his eyes. Without and hesitation, he shook the huge blade in his hand and drew a circle with it, then he forcefully slashed at Jiang Chen.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, then the Bloodthirsty Sword appeared in his hand. With a swing of his arm, the Bloodthirsty Sword dashed forward like a poisonous snake and poked right into the side of the huge blade. With such tremendous force, Eldest Mang simply couldn’t hold onto the blade any longer. The huge blade was knocked away by Jiang Chen’s sword.

Puchi!

Jiang Chen was extremely fast, no one saw how he struck. In the next second, the sword impaled Eldest Mang's chest, piercing a hole through his body.

Eldest Mang looked at the young man in front of him with extreme shock. His heart was enraged. As a peak Divine Core warrior, he had never even imagined being killed by an Early Divine Core warrior, not to mention a young one.

Eldest Mang suffered some minor injuries from the previous exchange, that's why he was no match for Jiang Chen. Because of that, it was perfectly normal that he would be killed by Jiang Chen.

“Seven Weirdoes of Mount Mang, your evil business in the Qing Province has nothing to do with me, we walk our own separate paths. However, since your path led to you coming here to disturb me, don't blame me for being cruel. Also, seeing how close the relationship between you seven weirdoes is, I'll send you all to hell so you can accompany each other there.”

Jiang Chen said with a cold voice. After that, he moved his wrist and pulled his sword sideways, slicing Eldest Mang's body in two. Just like the Lute Devil, he was killed on the spot.

Ahh!

On the other side, the formidable Big Yellow was also attacking. He had killed the cross-eyed man with his powerful head. After



that, he dragged his own majestic body and slammed himself into another man.

Han Yan on the other side was also attacking in an extremely formidable manner. With the Nine Heavenly Devil Waves, he killed one of his opponents. After that, he unleashed an eerie devil claw and grabbed at the last weirdo.

Ahh! Ahh!

Finally, followed by the last two blood-curdling screeches, all Six Weirdoes of Mount Mang were dead. The trio had each killed two of them, it was a tragic ending. From now on, there wouldn't be any legends about the Seven Weirdoes of Mount Mang in the Eastern Continent anymore.

Everyone in the Black Sect held their breath as they stared at the trio hovering in the sky with amazement in their eyes. They were extremely powerful, and none of the disciples had ever seen anyone so formidable before. The trio had just killed six Late Divine Core warriors without even giving their opponents any chance to fight back.

Xuan Ye's eyes were glowing as well. He kept throwing examining looks on both Jiang Chen and Han Yan while nodding his head.

“Such talent, even those geniuses in the Martial Palace can't compare with them. With Jiang Chen and Han Yan's current cultivation levels, I think only those Late Divine Core warriors in

the Martial Palace and Martial Saint Dynasty can put up a fight against them.”

Xuan Ye sighed. With his judgment, Han Yan was considered pretty standard. He was a peak Mid Divine Core warrior, and he also had a Divine Body. It was perfectly normal for him to fight and kill someone who had a higher cultivation level than himself. What really shocked Xuan Ye was actually Jiang Chen! Jiang Chen was only 17 years old, and not only was he an Early Divine Core warrior, he was also able to defeat all Divine Core warriors with his mere Early Divine Core cultivation level. Such powerful combat strength has never been seen before.

During the next days, there was not a single peaceful moment for the Black Sect. The people who wanted to kill Jiang Chen and avenge their friends kept coming. Most of them were just acting on impulse, they never fully understood the current situation, and they just kept coming with extreme anger. Of course, all of them were killed by Jiang Chen in the end. If they knew that Jiang Chen had just killed the Six Weirdoes of Mount Mang, perhaps they couldn't be coming like they did. At least they would make some preparations.

Also, everyone from the Black Sect had finally witnessed Jiang Chen's incredible ability in offending people. All of them were amazed by the insane amount of enemies Jiang Chen had. It had reached a level that went beyond their imagination. None of them could even begin to imagine what Jiang Chen had actually done back in Inferno Hell.

When someone was killed, there would always be someone else

who comes forth to seek revenge, and when those people who came to seek revenge were killed, there would be even more people coming, to take revenge for those who failed to get revenge. All of these people were coming from all sorts of big powers from the other provinces, and all of them had respective backgrounds. If this cycle of revenge kept running, no one would be able to predict when it would come to an end.

Within the Black Sect, on Guo Shan's mountain peak.

“Brother Jiang, it's just the beginning, there's simply too many powers and people who wants to kill you. The men you killed in Inferno Hell came from almost every single province in the Eastern Province, many of them were from big powers and had quite profound positions back in their respective powers. Stories of what happened in Inferno Hell must have crazily spread, and your name must have been heard by many powers and people as well. The endless waves of people seeking revenge that you had to face in the last two days is proof of that. But, I believe no more idiots will come here without preparation. They will begin to prepare before coming to kill you.”

Xuan Ye said.

“Brother Xuan, what you said is correct. I am almost in a situation where anyone could be my enemy. I don't mind facing so many enemies, but this will definitely affect the Black Sect. The restless situation the Black Sect is facing right now is not what I want to see.”

Jiang Chen said as he furrowed his brows. The Black Sect had

just unified the entire Qi Province and had just settled down. But, the Qi Province was still the same Qi Province, the Black Sect didn't have a Combat Soul warrior that could protect them. There was no way it could compare with those bigger sects in the other provinces.

“That's right. As long as you're still in the Black Sect, there is no way the Black Sect won't get affected by this. Don't forget, amongst all your enemies, there is also the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan from the Jian Province. Both of them are gigantic existences, and even the Martial Saint Dynasty has to show them respect to a certain degree. If a big sect like them wants to destroy the Black Sect, it would be a piece of cake.

Xuan Ye reminded.

Jiang Chen nodded his head. Although the Black Sect had become a sole power in the Qi Province, when compared to those super powers like the Shangguan Clan and the Myriad Sword Sect from the Jian Province, the gap between their power was simply too huge. There was no way they could be compared. If those two super powers really wanted to destroy the Black Sect, it would just be a matter of moving their fingers.

Finally, Jiang Chen made a decision.

“I'll announce to the public. From today onwards, I will no longer be a part of the Black Sect, I will no longer have any relationship with the Black Sect. All hatred and desire to get revenge shall be directed toward me alone; I want to give the Black Sect peace.”

Jiang Chen's eyes were glowing. For him, whether or not he stayed in the Black Sect made no difference. Since the situation had settled down, it was time for him to go to some bigger places. He had prepared himself, he would proceed to the Blissful Island tomorrow and participate in the trade fair. He wanted to find out where he could get the Nine Solar Holy Water. While he was away, he wanted peace for the Black Sect. After all, his friends were still here.

“If this is brother Jiang's decision, your brother I will also provide some help for the Black Sect. I'll make an announcement when I return; from now on, the Black Sect will be protected by the Martial Palace. Furthermore, when I leave, I will bring two persons with me, and they will continue cultivating in the Martial Palace. With this, the Martial Palace's reason for protecting the Black Sect will become valid.”

Xuan Ye said.

Hearing this, the few other men who were also at the scene kept quiet, and their expressions changed immediately, including Daoist Black. The way they looked at Xuan Ye changed tremendously.

Oh heavens! He was from the Martial Palace!

Martial Palace! The holy land for all warriors, and it was directly controlled by the Martial Saint Dynasty. It was a place where countless geniuses dreamt about going. The Qi Province had long

ago been abandoned by the Martial Saint Dynasty, so this was unexpected good news. A Combat Soul warrior from the Martial Palace would personally bring 2 of the Black Sect's disciples with him to the Martial Palace so they could cultivate there. This was a once in a lifetime opportunity.

Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan were at the scene as well. Both of them knew Xuan Ye from back in Inferno Hell, but none of them knew he was actually from the Martial Palace. It seemed like Wu Jiu was also from the Martial Palace.

Jiang Chen was the only person who could still remain calm. He had long ago guessed that Wu Jiu was from the Martial Saint Dynasty. The reason why Xuan Ye came here to help him, even help the Black Sect, and make an exception by bringing two men back with him must have been because of Wu Jiu. He was trying to repay Jiang Chen's help with this.

“If that's the case, thank you, Brother Xuan.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist toward Xuan Ye.

“Brother Jiang, you can choose two men, I'll bring them back with me when I leave. As for you, Lord Jiu hopes you can join the Martial Palace with your own effort, and even achieve a great position in the future.”

Xuan Ye said. What Wu Jiu meant was pretty obvious, although Jiang Chen had a lot of enemies now, the Martial Palace would not protect him at all. He wanted Jiang Chen to go through everything

on his own and gain more experience.

Toward Wu Jiu's intention, Jiang Chen could only laugh. He was not the young who lacked experience that Wu Jiu thought he was, he was the reincarnated greatest Saint in the world. Of course, Wu Jiu was doing this out of good intentions, that's why Jiang Chen didn't say anything about it.

Jiang Chen turned to Han Yan, but before he could say anything, Han Yan hurriedly waved his hand, "Little Chen, I want to follow you, I don't want to join the Martial Palace so quickly."

Han Yan was also an adventurous man. Besides, Jiang Chen's current condition was no good. He was facing a situation where almost everyone he met would be his enemy. As his brother, Han Yan wanted to fight together with him.

"Brother Yan, you better consider it twice. Entering the Martial Palace is a rare opportunity. The environment in the Martial Palace is much more suited for cultivation, the Black Sect can't compare."

Jiang Chen reminded again.

"That's right. Han Yan, joining the Martial Palace is an honor, and you'll be the pride of the Black Sect as well."

Daoist Black hastily said.

“Don’t try to talk me into doing it, I’ve made up my mind.”

Han Yan said with determination.

After that, Jiang Chen turned to another three men; Guan Yiyun, Tian Yishan, and Yu Zihan.

“Brother Xuan, can you give me one more spot? I want to let three men join the Martial Palace.”

Jiang Chen asked.

“No problem.”

Xuan Ye agreed without hesitation.

“Senior disciple Guan, Brother Tian, Zihan, you three follow Brother Xuan and enter the Martial Palace, this is a once in a lifetime opportunity.”

Jiang Chen said to the trio. All of them had a close relationship with him, and with such a rare opportunity in front of them, Jiang Chen had to help them fight for it no matter what.



## Chapter 273 – Big Dog Becomes A Puppy

---

Struck by this sudden surprise, a look of excitement emerged on their faces. Entering the Martial Palace and cultivating there was a dream that existed in the minds of everyone from the younger generation, especially Tian Yishan. He had spent the last two years wandering from place to place, and not once in his wildest dreams did he imagine that he would be able to cultivate in the Martial Palace.

“Brother Xuan, you know both Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan, they both are talented young men with great potential, and spending time cultivating them is a wise choice. Yu Zihan had absorbed a lot of energy essences from the energy vein, causing his bodies constitution to improve a lot. He is also a man with great talent, I’m sure he fits the requirement to join the Martial Palace.”

Jiang Chen told Xuan Ye.

“I’m sure the people Brother Jiang recommends are good. But, I have to remind you three, although you are considered geniuses in the Black Sect, once you arrive at the Martial Palace, you will become the most ordinary men. I’m sure you’ve heard how many amazing and promised geniuses there are in the Martial Palace. Furthermore, the competition in the Martial Palace is really intense. Therefore, don’t think you’ve gotten a sudden rise in life, it’s really the opposite. You better prepare yourselves mentally.”

Xuan Ye looked at Yu Zihan and the other two, he spoke in a serious tone.

“We’ll definitely not neglect this opportunity!”

The three of them said at the same time. The Martial Palace was a gathering place for all geniuses in the entire Eastern Continent. Those who entered the Martial Palace were all favored children of the heavens. Not only were the best geniuses from all different provinces there, there were many geniuses who came from the Martial Saint Dynasty itself. Therefore, being able to enter the Martial Palace barely meant they had stepped over a door with higher requirements. In order to get the most out of it, it all depended on their effort.

But the three of them wouldn’t give up such a rare opportunity. As Jiang Chen’s friends, they had witnessed Jiang Chen becoming stronger and stronger, and none of them wanted to fall behind too much. But since they didn’t possess an abnormal Divine Body like Han Yan did, the three of them could only do their best to cultivate in order to prove themselves.

“Listen carefully. When you three arrive at the Martial Palace, don’t bring shame to the Black Sect.”

Daoist Black once again warned the three in a serious manner. When they arrived at the Martial Palace, they would represent the Black Sect’s honor. If their performance is too lousy, the Black Sect would become a laughing stock.

On the same day, Xuan Ye left together with the three. Under the envious and jealous eyes from countless Black Sect disciples, the four of them soon disappeared.

Jiang Chen also made an announcement the same day about his withdrawal from the Black Sect. From today onwards, he was not a disciple of the Black Sect any longer, and he would leave the Qi Province and proceed to another place soon. At the same time, Jiang Chen gave out a wild statement. Those who wanted to seek revenge could just come after him, he would take them all on.

Evening. Jiang Chen walked out from Yan Chenyu's room and threw his glance at Guo Shan who had been waiting for him.

“Older brother Guo, I have no idea how long my trip to the Blissful Island will take. It's a long journey, and it will take me nearly two months. It's a journey filled with danger, so I'll need you to help me take care of Little Yu.”

Jiang Chen said in a solemn manner. He had no idea if he would find the Nine Solar Holy Water during his trip to the Blissful Island, but he could imagine how dangerous the journey would be. Not only because of the complicated situation out in the ocean, but also because of all the enemies that were seeking revenge.

What Jiang Chen worried about the most was Yan Chenyu. No matter where he went, Yan Chenyu was always attached to his heart, like a string.

“Brother, please rest assured. I, Guo Shan will protect Little Yu with my own life. As long as I can still breathe, no one is allowed to touch Little Yu!”

Guo Shan slammed his own chest and promised. His life was saved by Jiang Chen, so he had to ensure Jiang Chen that he wouldn't have to worry while not here.

“Good. I believe the Sect Chief will handle all matters regarding the Black Sect. The construction of the new home base in Redsun Town has almost come to an end, all of you will be able to move there in just a few days. Brother Yan and I will leave for the Blissful Island tonight.”

Jiang Chen patted Guo Shan's shoulder. Since Fan Zhongtang was dead, and the Qi Province had been unified, as well as the Martial Palace's protection, Jiang Chen actually didn't have many worries regarding Yan Chenyu's safety.

In the same night, Jiang Chen left the Black Sect together with Han Yan and Big Yellow, then he began his journey toward the vast ocean.

“In order to cross the Eastern Continent and reach the ocean, with our current speed, it will take us at least twenty days. Once we've reached the ocean, it'll take us a few more days to reach the Blissful Island. Looks like we have to fully utilize our time and rush, if not, we might miss the trade fair.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Little Chen, that is the best possible result, but we have to cross several provinces in order to reach the ocean, and with our combination, I'm afraid we might bump into a lot of trouble along

our journey.”

Han Yan said.

“You’re right. There are people who wants to kill me everywhere. If we bump into any of them, our journey will definitely be delayed. If we’re unfortunate enough to bump into some Combat Soul warriors, it would be even worse.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. He agreed with what Han Yan said.

“What is there to worry about? Those enemies only know Jiang Chen’s name, they don’t know what you look like. They wouldn’t be able to recognize you even if you stood right in front of them.”

Big Yellow said. His tail was wagging back and forth.

“Indeed, they can’t recognize me. But if you follow me, I’m sure they’ll figure out who I am.”

Jiang Chen said as he stared at Big Yellow. There were many young geniuses like him in the Eastern Continent, but only he had a dog that followed him everywhere he went. Furthermore, Big Yellow’s appearance made it extremely easy for him to be recognized. As long as they saw Big Yellow, even an idiot would know that the young man next to him was Jiang Chen.

“Damn it, what do you mean, buddy? Don’t tell me you’re going to dumb daddy behind? Without daddy following you, will you

able to sense those precious treasures?”

Big Yellow instantly became angry.

“Why are you getting so upset? I never said I was going to dump you behind.”

Jiang Chen glared at Big Yellow. Even if Big Yellow wanted to leave him, Jiang Chen would drag him back with all his effort. Although Jiang Chen could recognize any ordinary treasures with his experience, Big Yellow was the one who had the ability to sense all precious treasures. There would definitely be a lot of rare treasures in the trade fair, and with this dog following along, they might be able to find a great fortune.

“What Little Chen means is that you need to disguise yourself.”

Han Yan said with a laugh.

“Damn it, why me?”

Big Yellow widened his eyes.

“Because you are easily recognizable.”

Jiang Chen shrugged his shoulders.

“Fuck! How do you want this master dog to disguise himself?”

Looking at how Jiang Chen and Han Yan were acting, Big Yellow knew he couldn't escape from disguising himself.

“It depends on you. As long as you can disguise yourself into something so that no one can realize you're a dog.”

Han Yan said, laughing.

“Damn you! Han Yan, you're the dog, you entire family are all dogs!”

Big Yellow gnashed his teeth in anger. He threw his glance onto Han Yan's butt.

“Fuck! It's you who keeps say you're a master dog, alright? Also, look at yourself in a mirror and see if you really are a dog or not!”

Han Yan nearly coughed up some blood. This dog was ridiculous, he kept addressing himself as the master dog, but he just denied being a dog.

“No way! There is no way I can change my handsome and mighty image!”

Big Yellow firmly shook his head.

“If you refuse to disguise yourself, even if we arrived at the Blissful Island, I don’t think we will have time for the trade fair, as we’ll spend all our time running around for our lives.”

Jiang Chen said in a serious manner. The Blissful Island’s trade fair was a famous even, many big sects would send their warriors to participate. Once Jiang Chen was recognized by any one of them, it would become a terrible event.

“Big Yellow, with your amazing abilities, transforming yourself into a small form should be a piece of cake, right?”

Han Yan looked at Big Yellow.

What? Transforming into a smaller form? Big Yellow was startled.

“Han Yan, daddy is such a handsome and mighty existence, and you ask daddy to transform my majestic body into a puppy? This is an insult to this master dog!”

Big Yellow gnashed his teeth in anger. It seemed like he was about to jump up and bite Han Yan’s butt.

“Big Yellow, Han Yan’s idea isn’t bad. Transforming into a puppy, your iconic image won’t be so obvious. If we asked you to transform into a pig, or even a mouse, that would seriously affect you mighty and handsome imagine.”



Jiang Chen said.

“No way! Daddy isn’t going to do it no matter what!”

Big Yellow started jumping. He would never do something that would cause damage to his image, he just couldn’t accept transforming into a puppy.

But too bad, Big Yellow was a mighty Divine Beast, it was extremely difficult for him to transform into human shape. With his current cultivation, he had no way of doing it.

“Big Yellow, why don’t you try transforming into a smaller form? Perhaps you’ll look even more mighty then!”

Han Yan pursued. He knew Big Yellow’s real identity, so he knew that Big Yellow had the ability to transform himself into a smaller form.

“No way!”

Big Yellow’s attitude was firm.

“Damn you! Brother Yan, let’s go, we’ll part with this dog now.”

Jiang Chen gazed at Big Yellow. Then, he just turned around and flew away. Han Yan immediately followed after. They really dumped Big Yellow behind.

“Fuck you! You bastards, without this master dog, do you really think you can find precious treasures?!”

Big Yellow yelled. Jiang Chen and Han Yan ignored him, and just continued flying.

“Damn it! These bastards! Alright, this master dog will transform!”

Big Yellow finally gave in. Just after his words left his mouth, Jiang Chen and Han Yan returned to him fast as lightning. Huge grins could be found on their faces.

Big Yellow kept gnashing his teeth and murmuring to himself. His body start glowing with a golden light, and while glowing, his majestic body started shrinking.

In just the blink of an eye, the majestic Big Yellow transformed into a half meter long puppy. A pair of cute eyes were angrily staring at Jiang Chen and Han Yan, but his current appearance was absolutely adorable.

Pfff~ Hahaha...

Jiang Chen and Han Yan couldn't hold it any longer. Both of them instantly burst out into laughter. Their bodies were bending back and forth as they laugh, and they started feeling pain in their stomachs from laughing too much. The ferocious Big Yellow had

actually transformed into an adorable puppy. This puppy in front of them looked like a big kitty, and no signs of ferociousness could be found. Even when angry he looked absolutely adorable.

If they hadn't just witnessed him transform, even Jiang Chen wouldn't have been able to recognize Big Yellow.

## Chapter 274 – Lucky Strike

---

“Damn you! Are you two done laughing?”

Big Yellow kept looking at them with eyes that felt like devouring the two laughing men. He felt that his current image was a really huge insult to his mighty and supreme image.

“Not yet, just let me laugh some more!”

Han Yan was convulsed with laughter, and he didn’t show any signs of stopping. Soon after, a shrill scream burst out from his mouth.

“Ouch! My butt!”

A terrible pain came from Han Yan’s butt. Big Yellow was too fast, so fast that Han Yan didn’t even notice having been bitten on his butt.

“Damn dog, let go of me, the pain is killing daddy!”

Han Yan cursed. He turned around and slapped Big Yellow’s head, but not only did he not knock Big Yellow away, he even hurt his palm because of the backlash.

“Damn it, what is this dog’s head made off?! Why is it so tough!? Ouch! Loosen your mouth, daddy’s butt is going to explode!”

Han Yan's face was twisting in pain, but Big Yellow didn't want to release the butt. Next, a violent fight erupted between the man and dog.

Looking at what was happening, Jiang Chen covered his eyes with his hand, praying for Han Yan in his mind. This man and dog made him think about what happened when he first met Big Yellow. Jiang Chen knew better than anyone else how strong this dog was.

“Fuck! Damn dog, if you don't release me, I'm going to fart!”

Han Yan roared out loudly. This trick did work. Hearing that Han Yan was going to fart, Big Yellow immediately let go of his butt and dashed aside. Then, he transformed back into his original form.

“How dare you bite daddy's butt?!”

Han Yan was furious. He immediately dashed toward Big Yellow. On the other side, Big Yellow was also still angry. It looked like he was going to take a few more bites before he could calm down. He just couldn't bear the fact that they asked him to transform from a mighty dog into a puppy.

Bang, bang, bang...

Another fight erupted. The man and dog were fighting in the

wilderness, and it was hard to tell which one was winning. Jiang Chen just stood aside, watching the show with a smile on his face.

The man and dog fought for nearly ten minutes. In the end, neither could defeat the other, and both of them looked miserable. Han Yan's clothes were falling apart because of Big Yellow's teeth, and Big Yellow's golden fur no longer had the same luster, causing him to look like a stray dog.

"That's enough, I think both of you have fought enough for now. It's time to go."

Jiang Chen said as he shrugged his shoulders.

"Little Chen, you just stood aside and watched us like you were watching a monkey show, is this really fine?"

Han Yan was speechless.

"Neither of you are good men!"

Big Yellow threw his gaze at both Jiang Chen and Han Yan. When he thought of the fact that he had to hide his mighty and handsome image in the future, and disguise himself as a puppy in public, the fury in his heart started burning more intensely.

"I was thinking, even if you can become smaller, you still look like a dog. Why don't we use a towel to cover Big Yellow's head, and only show his eyes? I can guarantee no one will be able to tell

who he is!”

Han Yan suggested.

“Fuck!”

Big Yellow opened his mouth and bitt toward Han Yan’s butt again.

“Damn you, again?!”

Han Yan instantly moved, he turned into a trail of light and flew forward. He didn’t want to bother with this dog anymore; he had finally witnessed and experienced how stubborn this dog was.

Haha...

Jiang Chen burst into laughter and caught up to both of them. It wasn’t hard to imagine, with these two as his companions, his future journey wouldn’t be lonely and boring.

.....

A few days later, the trio arrived in the Qing Province.

“I think we’ve just arrived in the Qing Province. We are pretty fast, we should be able to arrive before the trade fair begins.”

Jiang Chen said.

“The Qing Province is the fifth largest province in the Qi Province, really outstanding! Just the landscape and energy alone is not something the Qi Province can compare with. The natural Yuan energy here is much stronger than in the Qi Province, no wonder why it’s ranked fifth in the Eastern Continent. All the sects here are considered super powers in the eyes of the Black Sect.”

Han Yan said with mixed emotions.

“Let’s go. We’ll cross the Qing Province immediately, and try our best not to get into any trouble.”

Jiang Chen said. He then turned around and looked at Big Yellow who followed behind him, or to be exact, a golden puppy.

“Big Yellow, why haven’t you said a word along the way?”

Jiang Chen teased.

“Get lost!”

Big Yellow had been feeling depressed along the way, he really disliked his current imagine. If not for the fact that if he transformed, he would be discovered by enemies, he would have long ago transformed back into his original look.



Jiang Chen and Han Yan exchanged a glance and smiled together. They knew Big Yellow was in a bad mood right now, so they didn't want to provoke him anymore. Soon, they resumed their journey and flew toward the inner territory of the Qing Province.

Jiang Chen didn't waste his time on the road, he absorbed a lot of demon souls, and in just a few days, he had formed another hundred Dragon Marks, allowing his cultivation to progress once again.

“Little Chen, the skill you're cultivating is really terrifying, it can directly absorb any souls. In just a few days, I can feel that your aura has become stronger. You're getting closer to breaking through to the Mid Divine Core realm.”

Han Yan looked at Jiang Chen with a surprised expression.

“Yes, the method I use to level up is really incredible, but I can't keep using this method, as it will seriously affect my foundation. I still have quite a number of souls that I can absorb, but with my current condition, I can't absorb them anymore. If I do, my foundation will be seriously affected, and the loss will outweigh the gain.”

Jiang Chen explained to Han Yan. After that, knowingly or unknowingly, he gazed at Big Yellow. Jiang Chen had reached a bottleneck in his Dragon Transformation skill's cultivation. If he wanted to improve his foundation, the best solution was to make the Dragon Transformation skill evolve again.

If he could get more of Big Yellow's blood, he would be able to make the Dragon Transformation skill evolve again. However, Jiang Chen could only put this thought in his mind. Looking at Big Yellow's gloomy face, if he dared mention this request, Big Yellow would certainly go on a rampage.

More importantly, there would be a serious side effect to Big Yellow if he took away his blood. Jiang Chen didn't want to hurt his own brother just to make himself stronger. In his heart, both Big Yellow and Han Yan were his brothers that he would give his life for.

Furthermore, each time Jiang Chen's cultivation advanced, his demand would become greater. Even though Big Yellow had the Dragon Horse's bloodline, only the blood essence from his source was useful for Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen just couldn't bring himself to draw out Big Yellow's blood essence.

Right at this moment, a wild breeze blew by. A nearly 30 meter tall eagle suddenly swooped in from their left. A couple of young men stood on the back of this huge eagle, all of them wore arrogant expressions on their faces. Their cultivation bases were pretty strong, none of them were below the Divine Core realm. It was impossible to find such a group of young strong men in the Qi Province.

“You men in front of us, move aside quickly if you don't want to get killed!”

A young man dressed in green clothes shouted at Jiang Chen's group. He was carrying a whip in his hand, and it seemed like if Jiang Chen didn't move aside, he would attack them with his whip.

“Fuck, so arrogant!”

Han Yan was very angry, but he was immediately stopped by Jiang Chen. These few young men all wore the same clothes, and it wasn't hard to see that they were some genius disciples from a big sect in the Qing Province. They were all prideful, and they had no respect for anyone. Jiang Chen just wanted to proceed to the Blissful Island, he wanted no trouble in the Qing Province.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan moved aside, making way for these people. When the arrogant group came closer, they purposely slowed down and gazed at Jiang Chen and Han with looks carrying despise. When the arrogant young man who just shouted saw Big Yellow, he immediately burst out into laughter.

“Haha, look, this guy got a puppy as his pet beast! Truly a garbage man!”

The young man was cheerfully laughing.

“What are you looking at? Stupid bitch!”

Big Yellow cursed. Fury was still burning within his stomach, there was no way he would be courteous with these guys.

“Damn dog, what did you just say?”

The young man was immediately pissed off.

“I said you’re a stupid bitch! All of you are stupid bitches! All your family members are stupid bitches!”

Big Yellow said with disdain.

“Fuck you! You’re courting death!”

The young was extremely furious. He immediately whipped at Big Yellow. The whip was like a poisonous snake as it whipped toward Big Yellow, and it produced a large amount of sparks along its way.

Pa!

A big hand grabbed the whip. With a cold tone, Jiang Chen said, “Friends, you better not challenge us.”

“Who are you?! How dare you talk to me like that?! You’re courting death!”

The young man was really arrogant and aggressive. He was so prideful that he would look down on anyone. Just as he was about to strike once again, a female disciple with seductive makeup

stopped him and said, “Let it, junior disciple Wang. Don’t delay senior disciple Mao’s important matters. Senior disciple Mao has gone ahead of us, and I think he should have arrived at the Serpent River by now. That serpent is going to transform into a Flood Dragon today, and senior disciple Mao is going to kill it during its weakened period, we have to rush over and help.”

“Hmph! Consider this your lucky day!”

The young man coldly harrumphed. He immediately pulled the whip out from Jiang Chen’s hand. Then, they continued their journey on the eagle’s back.

“Damn it! Just look at his idiot look, who gave him the audacity to be so arrogant in front of this master dog? Little Chen, why did you stop me? This master dog wants to bite them to death!”

Big Yellow was flustered and exasperated.

“Hey guys, did you heard what they said just now? They’re heading to the Serpent River.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up.

“I heard some of what that girl said. There’s a strong giant serpent that’s going to evolve into a Flood Dragon in the Serpent River.”

Han Yan said.

“That’s right. Although a serpent is pretty strong, it’s still just a serpent, still considered the same as a snake or python. It’s extremely difficult for one to evolve into a dragon. There shouldn’t be any powerful giant serpents in the Qing Province, so if my prediction is correct, it should be a peak Divine Core giant serpent that is evolving toward the Combat Soul realm. But, because of its bloodline, this giant serpent is going to evolve in advance in order to completely become a Flood Dragon.”

Jiang Chen explained to the group. Just as he finished speaking, a loud bang could be heard from afar. Somewhere far from where they were right now, lightning accompanied by the peals of thunder could be seen, even from far away.

“That’s the Heavenly Tribulation! A serpent evolving into a flood dragon is an act of defiance against the natural order, and that giant serpent just attracted the rare Heavenly Tribulation. Although the strength of this tribulation isn’t strong, it’s not something a peak Divine Core demon lord can withstand. Even if this giant serpent manages to succeed, it will enter the weakest period of its life. Those people just now were actually going after this giant serpent who is evolving into a Flood Dragon! Hahaha! Looks like I was struck by a lucky strike!”

Jiang Chen burst into laughter. With a sway of his body, he immediately started flying forward, following those people he encountered not long ago.

# Chapter 275 – Minor Three Tribulation

---

Layers of dark clouds descended from the skies and condensed themselves far above in the skies. This Heavenly Tribulation didn't seem to be aggressive, it obviously wasn't a terrifying Heavenly Tribulation. Also, it occurred at a remote and deserted place. If not, it would definitely have attracted the attention of a lot of people.

“Daddy hasn't seen what a Heavenly Tribulation looks like. My knowledge of this world will increase today.”

Han Yan spoke with a shocked expression as he followed Jiang Chen.

“Country bumpkin.”

Big Yellow threw his gaze at Han Yan.

“Fuck, have you seen any Heavenly Tribulations before this?”

Han Yan looked at Big Yellow and asked.

“Never.”

Big Yellow turned his head away.

Ugh...

Han Yan became speechless.

“However, I do know that a Heavenly Tribulation won’t easily appear. When something is going to defy the natural order and isn’t accept by the heavens, at that point of time, the Heavenly Tribulation will appear as punishment and destroy that thing.”

Big Yellow said.

“What are the things that can be considered to defy the natural order?”

Han Yan curiously asked.

“You really are a country bumpkin. Things that defies the natural order isn’t known. For example, the Saint Origin realm is an independent realm, and anything that has strength greater than what this realm can contain will be considered something that defies the natural order, and it will not be accepted by this realm. Therefore, a Heavenly Tribulation will appear to eliminate them. The serpent belongs to the snake category, and it’s now going to evolve into a more advanced life form. Although it’s just going to transform into a Flood Dragon, and not a True Dragon, its bloodline will still experience a tremendous evolution, and it will become a noble existence. That’s the reason why a Heavenly Tribulation has appeared, its purpose is to punish this serpent. If this serpent can withstand the punishment, it will transform into a dragon and become a noble existence. If it can’t survive the tribulation, it will turn into ashes and die on the spot.”



Big Yellow Dog explained.

“What Big Yellow said is correct. It’s the same for humans. When we break through to the Saint realm, we have to withstand the punishment of the heavens. If we can survive it, we’ll successfully break through to the Saint Realm. If we don’t, we will perish and turn into ash. Cruelty is nature of cultivation.”

Jiang Chen said. In his previous life, he had gone through two Heavenly Tribulations. The first appeared when he was breaking through to the Minor Saint realm, and the second when he broke through to the Great Saint realm. Therefore, he knew very well how terrifying it was. Compared to what he had gone through, the tribulation the giant serpent was facing right now was nothing. The only regret Jiang Chen had was not being able to go through the Immortal Tribulation. If he did, he would be able to evolve into an immortal, and break through into the Immortal Realm.

“A Saint’s tribulation, I wonder what that will look like...”

Han Yan said with mixed emotions. For him, a Saint was someone supreme that he couldn’t even imagine. In the Eastern Continent, even a Combat King warrior was a rare existence, let alone the even more powerful Saint. Han Yan was born in the small Qi Province, and although he had great talent and was a peak Mid Divine Core warrior, in his mind, the Saint realm was still just a legend in his eyes.

“Little Chen is a man who defies the natural order, I can

guarantee that when he starts forming his Combat Soul, the Heavenly Tribulation will be attracted. If you don't believe me, just wait and see."

Big Yellow was an excellent judge of character, he always had accurate judgment of people. With Jiang Chen's degree of defiance towards the natural order, this realm would soon lose its tolerance, and the moment Jiang Chen breaks through to the Combat Soul realm, he would be going through endless Heavenly Tribulations.

"You're right. Little Chen is just an abnormal monster. He's only an Early Divine Core warrior, but I can't think of anyone in the same stage as him who can be so strong."

Han Yan nodded his head. He had no doubts about what Big Yellow said. Jiang Chen's insanely abnormal strength was obvious.

A smile appeared on Jiang Chen's face, and his eyes became brighter. He had no fear toward the Heavenly Tribulation. In this life, he was going to walk a path that defied the heavenly order.

Rumble...

The thunder was furiously roaring in the skies. Rainbow colored lightning started appearing in the dark clouds. The lightning swiftly jumped around in the skies like snakes. Although the scene looked beautiful, the energy contained within these clouds were beyond anyone's imagination.

Flying at their top speed, the trio soon approached the Serpent's Great Mountain Stream. Being so close, the pressure from the Heavenly Tribulation clouds could make one's soul tremble.

Seven people were standing right in front of them. All of them looked to be young, and they wore the same green clothes. Solemn expressions could be found on their faces, and they were all staring into the direction pointing towards the Serpent's Great Mountain Stream. Jiang Chen had previously met six of them, and the eagle those six rode was nowhere to be seen. In front of their group, a man firmly stood.

This man had a handsome face, and fair skin complexion. His body was full of power and grandeur, and his brows were aggressively curved. The aura of a great warrior could be sensed from his entire body.

The man seemed like he was in his mid-twenties, but his cultivation base was extremely strong, it was at the Late Divine Core realm. Having such an incredible cultivation base at his age proved that this man had extraordinary talent.

“Hey, those two guys followed us here.”

When the young man who had a conflict with Jiang Chen just now saw them, his expression instantly became cold.

“What are you looking at? Stupid bitch!”

Big Yellow was squatting down on Jiang Chen's shoulder. He was baring his teeth while letting out some provoking words.

“Fuck you!”

The young man couldn't hold his anger any longer. He was a respected man with his status back in his sect, but this dog kept provoking him and cursing him as a stupid bitch. He just couldn't stand it any longer.

“What's wrong?”

The leading man threw his gaze at Jiang Chen and Han Yan while furrowing his brows. A look of hostility could be found in his eyes.

“Senior disciple Mao, I don't know where these two guys came from. They had a conflict with junior disciple Wang just now, and that puppy is abominable, it has a disgusting mouth!”

A female disciple said. From the way she talked, one could easily tell how much respect and admiration she had toward this senior disciple Mao.

“Hmph! Kill them all.”

The senior disciple Mao coldly harrumphed as he prepared to attack Jiang Chen.

Roar!

Right at this moment, a roar so powerful the ground started shaking sounded out from the Serpent's Great Mountain Stream. After that, a thirty meter long silver-white giant serpent flew out from the Serpent's Great Mountain Stream. It flew into the sky and coiled its body underneath the dark clouds.

This giant serpent had a huge body. Scales the size of a human's palm fully covered its body. On both sides of its body, two huge claws could be seen emitting a metal radiance. On top of its head there were two long silver white horns that shone brightly. It had a ferocious look in its eyes, causing those who stared into them to feel as if they had been dragged into hell.

“Look, senior disciple Mao, that giant serpent has come out to meet its Heavenly Tribulation!”

That female disciple shouted out with great fear.

“Hmph! Let's leave those two guys alone for now. They better not cause any trouble for me! If they do, I'll make sure they die in the most miserable way possible.”

Senior disciple Mao retracted his energy, temporarily giving up on attacking Jiang Chen. His name was actually Mao Fang, and he was the chief core disciple of the Qing Province's Qingyi Sect. He had a formidable cultivation.

“Senior disciple Mao has spent a long time preparing to kill this giant serpent. Those who dares disturb him will be killed by us!”

The disciple named Wang said with a cruel tone.

“Keep quiet for now, don’t let that giant serpent find out we’re here. The Heavenly Tribulation is coming. This giant serpent is extremely fierce, I’m sure it’ll be able to withstand the Heavenly Tribulation and evolved into a Flood Dragon. After doing so, it will enter a weakened state temporarily, then we’ll immediately strike and kill it. Once I obtain its demon soul and blood essence, my Nine Murdering Flood Dragons will see a complete evolution, and I’ll break through to the Combat Soul realm and become one of the peerless geniuses. That will be my time to fight with those geniuses from the Martial Palace.”

A bright glow blossomed in Mao Fang’s eyes, as if he could already see his own bright future. He had spent a lot of time and effort in order to kill this Flood Dragon, and not only had he estimated the exact time for this giant serpent’s evolution, he had also arrived here early and hidden. He had also gotten help from his junior disciples.

“Look, the Heavenly Tribulation is here!”

The female disciple exclaimed.

Rumble...

The sound of thunder roared out from the dark clouds. In an instant, a thick blood red lightning bolt struck down onto the giant serpent's head.

Roar!

The giant serpent let out a wild roar. Beams of light shot out from its body and flew toward the lightning bolt.

Rumble...

The Heavenly Tribulation's power was incredible. In just a blink of an eye, the entire giant serpent had been covered with fierce lightning. Cracking sounds could be heard from all over its body. The serpent angrily roared out multiple times, and there was also a feeling of misery in its roars.

When the lightning disappeared, the giant serpent's body began emitting a dark smoke, and it became weaker.

Rumble...

Thunder and lightning rumbled within the sky. A much stronger pressure covered the scene, and the second thunder bolt was currently condensing itself.

“This is the weakest form of the Heavenly Tribulation, it's called the Minor Three Tribulation, and there will only be three lightning bolts altogether, and its power will only get stronger

with each consecutive bolt. One will succeed the tribulation as long as one can withstand all three lightning bolts. However, compared to the Intermediate Six Tribulation and the Major Nine Tribulation, it's still considered pretty weak. With this giant serpent's ability, I think it'll be able to succeed this Minor Three Tribulation, but it will definitely become weakened after that. These people are here for this serpent."

Jiang Chen explained. He knew about the Heavenly Tribulation better than anyone else.

"Little Chen, after this giant serpent succeeds this Minor Three Tribulation, it will evolve into a Flood Dragon, and that will give it a small amount of a dragon's bloodline. If you can get its demon soul and blood essence, the benefits you'll receive will be boundless!"

Big Yellow's eyes were twinkling with brilliance. He had begun having some understanding regarding the skill Jiang Chen was cultivating.

"You're right. If I can obtain the demon soul and blood essence of a Flood Dragon, my Dragon Transformation skill will evolve once again, and that will give me a much stronger foundation. My cultivation will improve as well. Today's luck is indeed good."

A faint smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face.

"But, I don't think those people will give up so easily."



Han Yan threw his glance at Mao Fang and his group.

“If they don’t provoke me, we’ll just continue our journey after we kill the Flood Dragon, but if they do provoke me... hmph!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. This Flood Dragon was his huge stroke of luck, there would only be one ending for those who tried to stop him.

When you were covered in lice, you wouldn’t feel itchy any longer; when you were up to your ears in debt, you would stop worrying. Jiang Chen had too many enemies, he had already offended the Myriad Sword Sect and the Shangguan Clan, that's why he didn’t mind offending another big sect.

Rumble...

The rumbling thunder grew louder and louder, and the dark clouds in the sky continued pushing down. Followed by another explosive roar, a red lightning bolt as thick as a dragon’s body struck onto the giant serpent. The valiant lightning appeared similar to gigantic waves as it struck toward the giant serpent’s body.

Aowuu...

The giant serpent let out a sharp blood-curdling screech. The formidable power was not the only terrifying part of the Heavenly Tribulation. What was even more shocking was the powerful

Heavenly Pressure. Under the Heavenly Pressure, all existences would feel tiny, and their souls would tremble.

After the second lightning bolt descended, the giant serpent had become completely weakened. Its massive body was floating around in the sky, many of its scales had been ripped away, and blood was dripping down.

# Chapter 276 – An Emaciated Camel Is Still Bigger Than A Horse

---

The thunder rumbled within the skies, and the dark clouds became denser. The mighty Heavenly Pressure pushed itself down towards the giant serpent, and its massive force was wreaking havoc in the Serpent's Great Mountain Stream underneath, causing the water pond lying below to explode. The explosive sound caused those who heard it to feel as if their ears were exploding.

Soon after, the third lightning bolt had been fully condensed. This was the last bolt in the Minor Three Tribulation. Once the giant serpent succeeded, it would successfully have evolved.

But the last tribulation bolt was the most difficult to survive, it carried a force greater than the previous two tribulation bolts combined.

Rumble...

A black thunder dragon exploded out from the dark clouds while furiously roaring. It directly collided with the giant serpent's body.

Aowuu!

The giant serpent let out a blood-curdling screech. The scales on its body were falling off, and were scattered all around the ground. Its flesh was torn, and its blood was raining down from the sky. In

an instant, the giant serpent was knocked away from the sky, and fell into the Serpent's Great Mountain Stream.

After this strike, the dark clouds in the sky began slowly dispersing. In just a few breaths time, the clear and bright sky had returned as if nothing had happened. But for those who had witnessed the occurrence of the Heavenly Tribulation, a breathless feeling possessed them, and their hearts were filled with extreme shock.

“The Heavenly Tribulation is really terrifying! Even when we were so far away, we could still feel the mighty Heavenly Pressure! If I had to face the Heavenly Pressure directly, perhaps I wouldn't even be able to gather my will to fight back.”

“Only those with powerful bodies like the giant serpent can withstand the Heavenly Tribulation. If it was someone else, I'm sure he would be killed by the first lightning bolt.”

“That giant serpent has survived the Heavenly Tribulation, it has now evolved into a Flood Dragon. Soon, its cultivation will break through to the Combat Soul realm. I wonder what its current condition is like.”

A few of the disciples from the Qingyi Sect had mixed emotions. After witnessing the real power of the Heavenly Tribulation, a permanent shadow had been cast in their hearts.

“Get ready to attack. The Flood Dragon is in its weakest condition, and it's in the middle of preparing to break through to

the Combat Soul realm, this is the perfect time for us to kill it. It will fully recover once it breaks through to the Combat Soul realm, and if that really happens, killing it will be impossible.”

Mao Fang unleashed his aura and was first to start flying towards the Serpent’s Great Mountain Stream. The rest of the group took out their respective combat weapons without any hesitation, and followed behind him. Even though they knew that the Flood Dragon was currently weakened, after having witnessed how strong it was when facing the Heavenly Tribulation, none of them had any confidence in dealing with it.

On the other side, Jiang Chen and Han Yan exchanged a glance, “Let’s go!”

Both men started moving. Without any hesitation, they flew toward the Serpent’s Great Mountain Stream.

Right at this moment, over at the Serpent’s Great Mountain Stream, the giant serpent was soaking its entire body underneath the water, leaving only its huge head above the surface of the water. Blood could be seen everywhere in the water. The giant serpent’s eyes were shut, and it was resting. On its head, a golden light was blinking, and a pointy dragon horn could be found right in the middle of its brows. This was a symbol that appeared after its evolution; the giant serpent was now a real Flood Dragon, and it possessed the noble bloodline of a dragon.

The Flood Dragon was currently in a weakened state, but at the same time, the Flood Dragon’s bloodline was healing its severely injured body. It wouldn’t take long before this Flood Dragon could

break through to the Combat Soul realm and become a truly mighty demon lord.

“Let’s do this!”

Mao Fang suddenly shouted. An excited look covered his face. While staring at the Flood Dragon underneath the mountain stream, he struck out with his palm in a most formidable manner.

With an explosive sound, Mao Fang completely unleashed his aura of a Late Divine Core warrior. A dazzling palm appeared, it crashed toward the Flood Dragon like a mountain with its violent energy.

Sensing the sudden attack, the Flood Dragon who was focusing on its recovery instantly opened up its eyes. Its fury transformed into raging flames and burst out from its eyes.

Roar!

The Flood Dragon was furious. It couldn’t accept the fact that some humans were trying to kill it while it was weakened.

Even though the Flood Dragon was currently weakened, it still had formidable strength. A powerful silver white energy beam shot out from its mouth, destroying Mao Fang’s incoming attack.

Roar!

The Flood Dragon let out another furious roar, then it leapt out from the water. Its gigantic body hovered within the sky, and its body was bleeding, while its torn flesh could be seen everywhere. It stared at the humans in front of it with a pair of big eyes like a poisonous snake.

“Petty humans, how despicable are you?! How dare you launch a sneak attack while I am in a weakened condition?!”

The Flood Dragon spoke in human tongue. Its voice was so loud that it sounded like raging thunder.

“Haha, Flood Dragon, you are extremely weakened right now, you are no match for us right now. I suggest you give up all resistance, and let us kill you; this will guarantee you’ll be able to die a pleasant death.”

Mao Fan burst into laughter. He was going to get this Flood Dragon’s demon soul and blood essence no matter what. Also, since he had a strong cultivation base, he didn’t take this Flood Dragon seriously at all.

“Petty humans, I’ll definitely eat all of you!”

The Flood Dragon violently roared. After that, it turned its gigantic body around and fled far into the distance. It was in the middle of a critical moment, that’s why it didn’t want to fight these humans right now.

“Trying to run?”

How could Mao Fan give this Flood Dragon the opportunity to escape? He had been prepared for this moment! Just as the Flood Dragon turned around, Mao Fang attacked.

With great speed, Mao Fang appeared right in front of the Flood Dragon. With an imposing aura, he shouted, “Nine Murdering Flood Dragons, die now!”

Mao Fang’s arm suddenly expanded into an enormous size, as if it was transformed by his yuan energy. His arm transformed into a phantom Flood Dragon, and it attacked the real Flood Dragon in front of him.

“You’re courting death!”

The Flood Dragon was extremely angry. It swung its gigantic tail forcefully onto Mao Fang’s arms, sending violent energy ripples out that even shattered a mountain peak far underneath them.

There was a saying: an emaciated camel is still bigger than a horse. The Flood Dragon was no longer the giant serpent, it now possessed the bloodline of a Flood Dragon, which gave it a complete thorough transformation. That combined with its formidable cultivation, it wasn’t something that anyone could kill, even if it was in a weakened condition.



Obviously, Mao Fang had expected this. That's why he had called upon his junior disciples for help.

Rumble...

Mao Fang struck once again. He unleashed a giant energy web, and figures of Flood Dragons could be found all over the web. This was an incredibly strong combat skill, and if he could obtain the blood essence of a real Flood Dragon, and study how a Flood Dragon fought, his combat skill would see a significant improvement.

The Flood Dragon was extremely brutal. The Flood Dragon unceasingly attacked with its gigantic body, and was locked in a fierce fight with Mao Fang. It was only locked in a fierce fight because it was weakened. If it was in top shape, Mao Fang would be no match for it.

“Damn it!”

The Flood Dragon cursed. It had broken through the energy's captivity, and continued fleeing far into the distance.

“Stop the Flood Dragon!”

Mao Fang shouted. At the same time, the other six disciple disciples from the Qingyi Sect moved.

“Qingyi Grand Formation!”

The female disciple shouted. With combat weapons in their hands blowing, they worked together and unleashed a giant energy web, locking the entire area down, giving the Flood Dragon no chance to escape.

All of the Qingyi disciples were at the Divine Core realm, and they were all geniuses from the younger generation. This meant their strength was not something any ordinary Divine Core warriors could compare with. And because they were all from the same sect, they had pretty decent synergy.

“Looks like this group of people is pretty strong. Little Chen, are we going to attack?”

Han Yan asked.

“Let’s be patient; watching two tigers fighting from a hilltop is much better. I’m sure that the Flood Dragon has some other powerful abilities it can use to survive.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face. He had a bad impression toward those people from the Qingyi Sect. Just now, if the Flood Dragon wasn’t facing the Heavenly Tribulation, perhaps they would have attacked Jiang Chen by now.

“Die now!”

Mao Fang took out a longsword as thin as a cicada’s wings from

his storage ring. Not only was it a high-ranked combat weapon, it was a high-ranked combat weapon of the highest quality. With both hands tightly clenching onto the longsword, he slashed at the Flood Dragon.

Slash!

When the longsword hit the Flood Dragon's body, it immediately drew a huge wound on its already torn up body. It pulled its flesh out, and caused its blood to rain down from the sky.

Roar!

When the Flood Dragon suffered from such severe injuries, it was like the last nerve in its body had been provoked. This caused its eyes to instantly turn blood red, and fury could be seen bursting out from its eyes.

“Petty humans! I'm going to kill you all! I will kill you all!”

The Flood Dragon had become furious. On top of its head, the newly grown dragon horn started shining, and as the horn became brighter and brighter, the Flood Dragon's aggressiveness became stronger and stronger, giving those from the Qingyi Sect an extreme feeling of danger.

Swoosh!

In the next second, an energy beam that looked like a dragon

shout out from the dragon horn. It seemed like an invincible blade as it pierced toward where Mao Fang stood.

There was a disciple of the Qingyi Sect stood in front of Mao Fang.

Puchi!

The energy beam's speed was too fast. It was so fast that the disciple couldn't even react before the energy beam pierced through his body. A huge hole instantly appeared right in the middle of his body. He died on the spot, and he didn't even have the chance to cry out.

The energy beam didn't seem to be slowing down after killing the man. In an instant, it arrived right in front of Mao Fang.

“Not good!”

Mao Fang felt the danger. He never thought that a desperate attack from the Flood Dragon could be so terrifying. Without hesitation, he raised the longsword in his hand and swung it toward the energy beam.

Clang!

Two massive forces clashed into each other. Mao Fang was instantly knocked back, and he was only able to stabilize his body after flying nearly 400 meters away. Impacted by the enormous

energy, Mao Fang threw up a mouthful of blood on the spot, and he even had two bloody scars on his trembling palm.

Roar!

The Flood Dragon once again let out a wild roar. It slammed its gigantic tail onto one of the Qingyi disciples. The disciple let out a blood-curdling screech right before he instantly exploded into a bloody mist.

The Flood Dragon's condition had become even worse, it was extremely weak right now, and the light on its dragon horn was completely gone.

Without bothering with the rest of the people from the Qingyi Sect, the Flood Dragon immediately flew far into the distance. It didn't even have any thoughts about killing the remaining disciples.

“Hurry up, it's running away!”

Big Yellow urged them.

“Don't worry, it can't escape from me.”

In a flash, Jiang Chen appeared in front of the Flood Dragon and stopped it from flying. Without saying anything, Jiang Chen instantly unleashed the True Dragon Palm. A huge blood red dragon claw appeared in the skies and pushed down toward the

Flood Dragon.

The Flood Dragon's expression changed dramatically. It had used up all its strength in its last desperate attack, there was absolutely no way it could defend itself from Jiang Chen's True Dragon Palm.

# Chapter 277 – Reckless

---

“Petty humans!”

The Flood Dragon was furious. It struggled with all its effort, but it was unable to escape from the True Dragon Palm. Furious roars left the Flood Dragon’s mouth. It knew that its doomsday had arrived, but fury and unwillingness still burned within its heart.

It had waited so long just for today’s evolution, and if it was given just one more day, or even just half a day, it would be able to complete its evolution and break through to the Combat Soul realm. By then, it would be able to transform into a dragon and soar through the skies.

But too bad, time wasn’t on its side. It was destined to pave the way for someone else.

“Don’t resist.”

Jiang Chen said in a cold tone. The Flood Dragon was like an arrow at the end of its flight; there was no way it could withstand Jiang Chen. The Flood Dragon’s body was violently twisting under the True Dragon Palm’s enormous squeezing pressure.

“Ahh... Petty brat, how dare you take my blood essence by force?!”

The Flood Dragon furiously roared. It was suffering from intense

pain right now. Jiang Chen needed to draw out its blood essence before it died. Once it lost its blood essence, it would be done for.

The blood essence was the Flood Dragon's complete bloodline, it was the result of its evolution, the fruit that had been harvested after going through the painful Heavenly Tribulation's punishment. But now, someone was taking it away by force. This really upset the Flood Dragon.

“Flood Dragon, I know you've gone through a lot in order to reach your current stage. I'd feel guilty if I killed you, so I'll just draw out your blood essence and spare your life, I won't take away your demon soul. With this, you'll only lose the opportunity to evolve further, but you can still be the same demon lord.”

Jiang Chen threw out his hand and made a grabbing gesture. Immediately, an orb of blood that looked like a crystal burst out from the Flood Dragon's mouth and fell onto his palm. After losing its blood essence, the Flood Dragon became sluggish, and its gigantic body began swaying back and forth. It looked like it could fall down from the sky at any time.

At the same time, the newly grown dragon horn that appeared after the evolution disappeared. The Flood Dragon once again returned to its previous form, and it would never be a Flood Dragon again.

But, not being able to evolve again was better than dying. Jiang Chen could easily kill this Flood Dragon and take its demon soul, but he didn't do it, and he even gave up on the demon soul. His decision didn't fit his approach at all.



Actually, Jiang Chen knew very well how much pain this Flood Dragon had suffered in order to evolve. There were countless serpents in this world, but not many of them could really evolve into a dragon and soar through the skies. This situation was similar to that of a human cultivator; both needed great determination to succeed. Jiang Chen really admired this. He was also a man with great determination, and since he was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, he would also walk the same heaven defying path, just like this giant serpent.

Furthermore, Jiang Chen had no ill feelings toward this giant serpent, and he had actually taken advantage of its perilous state. Also, this giant serpent who had lost its blood essence could no longer pose any threat to Jiang Chen. Therefore, Jiang Chen decided to spare its life.

“Leave this place.”

Jiang Chen stored away the blood essence, then he turned around to the giant serpent and spoke with a cold voice.

The giant serpent was startled upon hearing that Jiang Chen was sparing its life. It knew about its current condition very well; if Jiang Chen wanted to kill it, it wouldn't take too much effort. He could kill it just like crushing an ant. But now, Jiang Chen had actually set it free. It just couldn't believe it.

“If you don't leave now, I believe those men won't let you go.”

Jiang Chen said.

Hearing this, the giant serpent threw its angry glance at Mao Fang and his group. After that, it extended its body and flew into the distance. Soon after, it disappeared from everyone's sight.

“Buddy, why'd you let it go? Aren't you afraid it'll come seek revenge in the future?”

Big Yellow looked at Jiang Chen and asked.

“I've given it a chance to live. If it still wants to seek revenge, I won't give it a second chance.”

Jiang Chen said in a cruel tone. The reason why he let this giant serpent go was because he respects its great determination. But if this giant serpent really came to seek revenge, it would become Jiang Chen's enemy, and Jiang Chen never showed his enemies any mercy.

Jiang Chen showing mercy was rare... this was actually the first time he had done so. He was a man with his own will. To kill or not to kill; it all depended on his mood.

On the other side, when the disciples from the Qingyi Sect saw the giant serpent flying far into the distance, they immediately became angry. Mao Fang was the first to dash forward. Staring at Jiang Chen with extreme anger, he said, “Bastard, you actually stole my fruits of labor, and you even let that giant serpent go!”

Mao Fang felt like he was going to throw up his blood. He had just witnessed Jiang Chen draw out the Flood Dragon's blood essence, the thing that supposedly belonged to him. He had spent a long time preparing to get the Flood Dragon's blood essence and demon soul. However, not only was he now injured, he had also two core disciples at the Divine Core realm, and in the end, he had paved the way for someone else. He didn't get the blood essence, and the demon soul was gone as well.

“Get the hell of out of here you stupid bitch! Who do you think you are?! What do you mean your fruits of labor?! Does it have your name on it?! Even if it really belongs to you, can't we rob it from you?! Do we really have to think twice before robbing someone?!”

Big Yellow stood on Jiang Chen's shoulder as he spoke. His words could make his opponent start coughing blood.

“Damn dog, I'm definitely going to peel your skin off! Guys, I don't care who you are, you better give me back my blood essence! If not, I'll make you die in the most miserable way possible!”

Mao Fang's eyes could be seen turning red. His aura had completely locked down Jiang Chen.

“Brats, the Qingyi Sect is not a sect you can afford to offend, and senior disciple Mao Fang is not someone you can mess with! You better hand over the blood essence right now!”

The disciple named Wang shouted.

“You four, chase after that giant serpent, it’s an arrow at the end of its flight. Kill it and get me its demon soul, I’ll handle these two guys.”

Mao Fang said to his four fellow disciples. Not only was he going to kill the giant serpent, he was also going to kill these two guys who came out of nowhere. Stealing his fruits of labor was really an act of courting death.

“Big Yellow.”

Jiang Chen threw a casual glance at Big Yellow. In an instant, an excited look emerged in Big Yellow’s eyes. He immediately moved, then he blocked the path in front of the four Qingyi disciples.

“You have to pass this master dog if you want to go after that giant serpent!”

Big Yellow’s head was rocking back and forth, he was showing off his pride in front of these people with his half meter long body. He was incredibly adorable right now. His current greatest weapon was his weak looks; he could pretend to be weak, then later devour his opponent. If anyone really considered Big Yellow as an adorable puppy, a devastating ending would be guaranteed.

“Damn it! I’m going to tear this damned dog to shreds!”

Disciple Wang couldn't bear it any longer. With a swing of his arm, the whip transformed into a poisonous snake as it whipped toward Big Yellow. Big Yellow didn't move, he just let the whip hit his head.

Slap!

Sparks flew off in all directions, and nothing happened to Big Yellow. Disciple Wang was stupefied.

“Too weak! It is master dog's turn now!”

Big Yellow loudly roared. He leapt forward and instantly appeared right in front of disciple Wang. Although his body was still tiny, his head had suddenly become huge. With his mouth wide open, he put disciple Wang's entire head into his mouth.

Crack! Ahhh!!

Followed by a miserable cry, Big Yellow bit off disciple Wang's head. Blood splashed out from his neck, and he died on the spot.

“What?!”

Witnessing what just happened, the other three disciples became greatly frightened. They stared at the brutal Big Yellow, and they couldn't help but take a few steps back. None of them could even begin to imagine why this dog was so terrifying. An Early Divine Core warrior had just been bitten to death without even a chance

to fight back.

The three disciples, hearts alarmed and trembling in fear, walked behind Mao Fang. It was impossible for them to chase after the giant serpent with Big Yellow in their way. It looks like their hopes of getting the giant serpent's demon soul was gone.

“Who gave you the audacity to kill a disciple from the Qingyi Sect? Brats, let me give you one last chance; hand over the Flood Dragon's blood essence, then I'll consider giving you pleasant deaths, and leave your bodies intact.”

Mao Fang said while gnashing his teeth in anger. He had found out the cultivation levels of the trio in front of him, so he didn't take them seriously. In his mind, it was all because of his hard effort that Jiang Chen was able to capture the Flood Dragon. Because him, the Flood Dragon was like an arrow at the end of its flight; any Divine Core warrior would easily be able to kill it.

“Let me give you a chance to live; get the hell out of here immediately. I never give anyone a second chance.”

Jiang Chen indifferently said.

“Haha, what an arrogant brat. Looks like you have no idea how strong I am. Since you don't want to hand over the blood essence, I'll just kill you and get it myself.”

Mao Fang made an expression as if he had just heard the funniest

joke in the world. He simply waved his hand and unleashed a shadowy Flood Dragon made from his Yuan energy. The shadowy Flood Dragon charged at Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. Killing intent burst out from his eyes. Since this guy wanted to behave recklessly, he wouldn't be polite any longer.

Jiang Chen punched out with a massive force. His fist collided with the shadowy Flood Dragon, causing it to shatter together with a cracking sound. It was instantly destroyed by Jiang Chen.

Mao Fang was a Late Divine Core genius, he wasn't someone those ordinary Late Divine Core warriors could compare with. If he was in top shape, Jiang Chen might have some trouble killing him, but too bad, Mao Fang was seriously wounded by the Flood Dragon's desperate counter attack. Jiang Chen also formed another 100 Dragon Marks after leaving the Black Sect, causing his total number of Dragon Marks to become 1,100. Because of all this, Mao Fang was no match for Jiang Chen.

“What?!”

Mao Fang was greatly alarmed. This was simply unbelievable. Jiang Chen's attack caused him to feel a tremendous pressure.

“Die now!”

Mao Fang grit his teeth in anger. He swung the longsword in his

hand, unleashing an energy beam that flew toward Jiang Chen.

“Hmph!”

Jiang Chen raised his hand and unleashed the True Dragon Palm. Using the dragon claw, he grabbed Mao Fang’s longsword, then he forcefully pulled the longsword from Mao Fang’s hand.

Jiang Chen was as fast as a sudden clap of thunder. He took the longsword and turned it around, pointing the sharp edge at Mao Fang’s throat.

“Don’t-, don’t kill me! I’m from the Qingyi Sect...”

Mao Fang could sense the dangerous threat of death. But too bad, before he could finish his begging speech, the longsword penetrated into his throat.

“You-, you really killed senior disciple Mao Fang! Outrageous, who gave you the audacity to kill a disciple from the Qingyi Sect?! There is no way you can escape our hunt!

The female disciple exclaimed in great shock. Although she was threatening Jiang Chen, her voice was violently trembling.

“Big Yellow, kill them all.”

Jiang Chen didn’t look at the remaining three disciples from the



Qingyi Sect, he only told Big Yellow to kill them, with an indifferent tone.

# Chapter 278 – Transformation, Mid Divine Core Realm

---

Ahh! Ahh! Ahh!

The blood-curdling screeches sounded out. The remaining three Qingyi Disciples were killed by Big Yellow. After showing off his invincible mighty, Big Yellow had finally gotten rid of his gloomy mood, and become much more relaxed.

Jiang Chen didn't show any mercy when killing these people. The Qingyi Sect was a big sect in the Qing Province, he had to kill them all so that there wouldn't be any witnesses left. If not, they might not be able to leave the Qing Province. Even if they did manage to leave, the Qingyi Sect would definitely keep hunting for them, and they might follow them to the Blissful Island. That would be troublesome.

“Buddy, you've gained a lot this time! The Flood Dragon's blood essence is going to do you a lot of good!”

Big Yellow said, excitement in his voice.

“Let's go, we need to find a quiet place so I can absorb it. Once my cultivation improves some more, we'll have more confidence during our trip to the Blissful Island.”

Jiang Chen said, smiling.

Before they left the place, Jiang Chen didn't forget to take all the Qingyi Sect disciples' storage ring. All of them were core disciples, so there must be a lot of treasures in their storage rings. They were all dead, so he couldn't let their wealth go to waste.

Two days later, the trio left the Qing Province. They found a quiet valley somewhere and landed within.

“Brother Yan, Big Yellow, I'm going to enter secluded cultivation now. Help me guard against disturbances.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Damn you, asking daddy to guard again.”

Big Yellow threw a gloomy glance at Jiang Chen. However, it seemed like Big Yellow had gotten used to guarding Jiang Chen while he was in secluded cultivation. He just liked to complain.

“Little Chen, don't worry, just focus on your cultivation.”

Han Yan said.

After that, Jiang Chen found a rundown cave and sat down with both legs crossed. With a flip of his palm, the Flood Dragon's blood essence appeared in his palm. It was emitting a blood red light.

“The Flood Dragon's blood essence, although inferior to a true

dragon's blood essence, it can still make my Dragon Transformation skill evolve. With this blood essence, I'll be able to break through to the Mid Divine Core realm, and my foundation will stabilize. I also won't have to worry about any problems in the near future."

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. Without hesitation, he immediately swallowed the blood essence.

Bang!

A massive amount of energy erupted from the Flood Dragon's blood essence. It flowed into every single part of Jiang Chen's body. No one could really withstand the sudden impact from this violent energy, only Jiang Chen who had an extremely strong body could resist it.

Buzz...

As if having sensed the dragon bloodline contained within the blood essence, the Dragon Transformation skill automatically started circulating. Blood red dragon marks flew out from Jiang Chen's Divine Core and started swimming around within his body.

Each Dragon Mark looked like a real dragon. The Dragon Marks devoured the energy contained within the blood essence, bit by bit, and used the energy to form new Dragon Marks. This energy wasn't the most important element, the strength of the bloodline was the most important thing right now.

Following the continuous absorbing of the Flood Dragon's blood essence, Jiang Chen could clearly feel the Dragon Transformation skill experiencing constant change. The Dragon Transformation skill was an incomparably abstruse skill. Even though Jiang Chen had cultivated it for such a long time, he still hadn't completely mastered it. What only he knew was, when he reached the skill's peak, he would have 108,000 Dragon Marks, then he would be able to transform into a dragon and soar through to the heavens. But, he didn't know how many tiers there were in this skill. If there really were different tiers you could cultivate the Dragon Transformation skill to, the Dragon Transformation skill would level up into another tier upon absorbing the Flood Dragon's blood essence.

Jiang Chen suddenly moaned. The evolution of the skill brought forth an extremely delighting feeling. He could clearly feel the tremendous transformation inside his body.

His bones were producing cracking sounds, and his blood was rumbling. All his viscera violently pulsating, and every single piece of his was experiencing the highest possible degree of tempering. This caused his body to become even stronger.

A blood red shadowy dragon was swirling around above Jiang Chen's head. It was the source of his qi and blood, and it had become incredibly strong now.

“Transform!”

Jiang Chen suppressed the excitement within his heart. As his foundation rose, as it got stronger and stronger, new Dragon

Marks were also forming within his body. With every new Dragon Mark formed, his powerful combat strength would also rise. The total number of Dragon Marks represented Jiang Chen's true strength.

One hundred Dragon Marks, two hundred, three hundred...

An hour later, a deep, yet subtle explosive sound could be heard from the cave. Han Yan and Big Yellow could both clearly feel an extremely strong aura leaking out from the cave. Because of this powerful aura, all flowers, plants and trees started violently shaking.

At this moment, Jiang Chen's dark hair was fluttering, even though there was no wind, and the white robe on his body was also fluttering. Blood red Dragon Marks hovered around his entire body. Each of them looked like a real dragon, and they all carried a powerful force.

1,600 Dragon Marks! That's right, after Jiang Chen absorbed the Flood Dragon's blood essence, the Dragon Transformation skill had changed fundamentally, and under the impact of this change, Jiang Chen managed to form another 500 Dragon Marks, giving him a total of 1600 Dragon Marks, which was the requirement for him to break through to the Mid Divine Core realm. In other words, Jiang Chen was now a Mid Divine Core warrior.

Buzz...

Yuan energy was violently vibrating outside Jiang Chen's body.

After breaking through to the Mid Divine Core realm, Jiang Chen's confidence reached the peak. With his current combat strength, it would be impossible for him to find any match under the Combat Soul realm, and if he met Nanbei Chao again, he believed he could beat him to death.

Furthermore, with 1600 Dragon Marks and a cultivation base at the Mid Divine Core realm, even if he were to face a Combat Soul warrior, he wouldn't be so vulnerable like before. And if he really was defeated, he would still be able to escape.

Jiang Chen had a clear understanding about the gap between the Divine Core realm and the Combat Soul realm. In the road of cultivation, the Qi Jing realm, Qi Hai realm, Mortal Core realm, Heavenly Core realm, and the Divine Core realm; they were all classified as the Five Foundation Realm. In other words, Jiang Chen was still in the Foundation Realm. The Combat Soul realm was completely different, there was a huge gap between the Divine Core realm and the Combat Soul realm, and it was extremely difficult to step over this gap.

Before a peak Divine Core warrior's Divine Core transforms into a Combat Soul, there was almost no possible way for the peak Divine Core warrior to be a match for a Combat Soul warrior. Honestly, the difference between the Divine Core realm and Combat Soul realm was like the difference between heavens and earth.

This was why there were so few Combat Soul warriors. A Combat Soul warrior carried a big weight even in the Martial Saint Dynasty.

When Jiang Chen stepped into the Mid Heavenly Core realm, he was able to kill a Divine Core warrior, but it was impossible for him to kill a Combat Soul warrior after stepping into the Mid Divine Core realm.

Although Jiang Chen was an insanely talented man, in order for him to have the ability to kill a Combat Soul warrior, he would have to break through to the peak Mid Divine Core realm, or perhaps even the Late Divine Core realm. Even that was considered extremely terrifying.

The Dragon Transformation skill's fundamental change greatly impacted Jiang Chen, in a positive way. He could once again form new Dragon Marks by absorbing demon souls and devil souls in big quantities, without it affecting his foundation.

But, every time his cultivation advanced, the amount of energy required to form new Dragon Marks would increase. Although Jiang Chen still had a lot of demon and devil souls that he had gotten in Inferno Hell, for now, only Late Divine Core souls could be useful to him. Mid Divine Core soul were worth next to nothing in his eyes, and as for anything below that, it was worthless.

Huff...

Jiang Chen exhaled. He had just broken through to the Mid Divine Core realm, but he didn't want to rush and start absorbing soul. He instead took some time to feel the changes in his body.



“It’s too bad the Flood Dragon’s blood essence didn’t contain any innate abilities...”

Jiang Chen pitied within his mind. The Flood Dragon had completed its evolution, and if Jiang Chen could absorb its demon soul, he would certainly inherit the Flood Dragon’s innate ability. Soon after, Jiang Chen threw his glance at Mao Fang’s storage ring.

“This guy was using a combat skill that can unleashed shadowy Flood Dragons, and its potential for attack is extremely formidable. Too bad it didn’t have the Flood Dragon’s blood essence to make it even stronger. That’s why he wanted to get the Flood Dragon’s blood essence and demon soul; he actually wanted to improve this combat skill. I wonder if I can find the combat skill in his storage ring...”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. His Yuan energy shook, and Mao Fang’s storage ring was instantly opened up for him to inspect. Glancing through the ring with his divine sense, Jiang Chen immediately found a golden paper quietly lying in a corner of the storage ring.

Controlling his divine sense, the golden paper instantly appeared on top of Jiang Chen’s palm. The paper was very thin, but its material was not ordinary; it felt nothing was being held in his hand. A faded golden light was emitting from the characters on the paper.

Jiang Chen read through the paper, and he immediately saw four big golden words, “Nine Murdering Flood Dragons!”

There was something remarkable about the level of this combat skill, it was actually a High-Ranked Heavenly Combat Skill!

“Why is there a High-Ranked Heavenly Combat Skill in this tiny Qing Province? Even the Qingyi Sect shouldn’t have a combat skill remotely close to the level of this skill... This Mao Fang’s luck is not small... I wonder where he found this combat skill. But too bad, he was too weak, so he couldn’t unleash the full power of this skill. In order to cultivate this skill, one will have to study how a Flood Dragon fights, and if he can really obtain the Flood Dragon’s bloodline, he would be able to unleash its full power.”

Jiang Chen said. Now that he possessed the Flood Dragon’s bloodline, this combat skill seemed like it was specifically designed for him. He would be able to perfectly unleash the full power of each style.

Of course, with a mere Mid Divine Core cultivation base, it would be really difficult for Jiang Chen to cultivate a High-Ranked Heavenly Combat Skill. Even if he had the Flood Dragon’s bloodline to help him, he could at most only cultivate and unleash the first three styles out of the nine total styles that existed in the Nine Murdering Flood Dragons skill. But, even with this, he was much stronger than Mao Fang. Mao Fang was only able to cultivate the first style, and he couldn’t even unleash the full power of the first style.

The Nine Murdering Flood Dragons was similar to Jiang Chen’s Six Profound Solar Fingers. The First style would unleash one Flood Dragon, the second style would unleash two Flood Dragons,

and the last one, and the ninth style would unleash nine Flood Dragons at the same time, attacking the opponent with tremendous power.

Since Jiang Chen had the Flood Dragon's blood essence, he would be able to unleash the Nine Murdering Flood Dragons with overpowering strength. Even the Six Profound Solar Finger couldn't compare with it.

Another hour later, a loud roar sounded out from within the cave. After that, three lively Flood Dragons suddenly rushed out from the cave. Each Flood Dragon was 3 meters long and tall, and their appearance was extremely terrifying. The Flood Dragons flew around the entire valley once, then they disappeared; stunning both Han Yan and Big Yellow.

## Chapter 279 – Not A Good Man

---

“What a powerful combat skill! Why do I feel like I’ve seen it before?”

Han Yan said, sighing.

“It’s the Nine Murdering Flood Dragons. I found the skill in Mao Fang’s storage ring.”

A voice sounded out from behind. Han Yan and Big Yellow turned around. They saw Jiang Chen walking out from the cave with both hands placed behind his back.

When Han Yan and Big Yellow sensed the formidable aura leaking from Jiang Chen’s body, they couldn’t help but feel shocked.

“Little Chen, you’re really giving me a huge blow to my face. In just two hours of secluded cultivation, you’ve broken through to the Mid Divine Core realm... you’re too abnormal!”

Han Yan said, a slight hint of depression could be found in his tone. He possessed the Ancient Divine Devil’s bloodline, and that made him a mighty genius. With his talent, he wouldn’t be weaker than anyone in the Martial Palace and Martial Saint Dynasty. But when he was compared to Jiang Chen, he felt really embarrassed.

“The Flood Dragon’s blood essence is really useful for me, it has

given me huge benefits, and I broke through to the Mid Divine Core realm only because of the blood essence. With my current combat strength, ordinary Combat Soul warriors wouldn't be able to easily kill me."

Jiang Chen's eyes shone brightly, showing that he had extreme confidence. Although he was not a match for Combat Soul warriors, it was also impossible for ordinary Early Combat Soul warriors to kill him with ease.

"I didn't expect Mao Fang to have a combat skill that even you would be interested in. Judging from the strength of the Flood Dragons you unleashed just now, I can say its power is really incredible."

Han Yan said.

"That Mao Fan was a genius with quite good luck. He must have found this High-Ranked Heavenly Combat Skill somewhere. A skill at this level is extremely rare. Even in the entire Eastern Continent, I'm afraid only the Martial Saint Dynasty might have a skill of this level. But too bad, Mao Fang's cultivation base limited the power of this skill, that's why he was so obsessed with that Flood Dragon. Once he got its blood essence and demon soul, then absorbed it, he would be able to unleash the full strength of the Nine Murdering Flood Dragons skill, and even break through to the Combat Soul realm."

Jiang Chen said.

“Kaka, too bad, that guy’s luck reached its limit, causing him to bump into you. All he did was pave a way for you.”

Big Yellow said, with a laugh. “Buddy, since you’ve broken through to the Mid Divine Core realm, combined with the formidable Nine Murdering Flood Dragons and all those terrifying skills you have, no warriors in the Divine Core realm will be a match for you at all, and I’m sure you’ll be able to kill those Divine Core geniuses in the Martial Palace with just a single strike. It would also be incredibly difficult for an ordinary Combat Soul warrior to kill you.”

“That’s right. My overall combat strength is much higher than before. We won’t have to worry about too much trouble when we reach the Blissful Island, and I have much more confidence about this trip now.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face. For this trip to the Blissful Island, he would definitely meet many strong people, and because of his sensitive identity, he couldn’t afford to be careless. The rogue cultivators and mighty sea creatures were all formidable existences.

For those who possessed great fates, no matter where that person went, luck would strike. Just like this time, they actually bumped into the Flood Dragon by coincidence. If Jiang Chen wasn’t traveling to participate in the Blissful Island’s trade fair, he wouldn’t come to the Qing Province. And if not for the Qingyi disciples provoking him, he wouldn’t have found out about the giant serpent that was about to evolve, and he wouldn’t have been able to receive such huge benefits.

Every time the Dragon Transformation skill evolved also meant a huge stroke of luck for Jiang Chen. Today's stroke of luck had given Jiang Chen boundless benefits.

As for Mao Fang of the Qingyi Sect, he had reached the Late Divine Core realm at such a young age, and he also accidentally found a High-Ranked Heavenly Combat Skill. He could be considered a person with a great amount of luck. However, when a man with great luck met a man with even greater luck, that person's luck would be suppressed, and it would become bad luck. It happened to Mao Fang, and it also happened to Nanbei Chao. They were all favored children of the heavens, existences that can defy all land under the heavens. But when they met Jiang Chen, everything changed.

The trio continued flying with great speed, rushing toward the ocean. They bumped into a lot of people along their way, but because Big Yellow was successfully disguised, and the fact that few people knew what Jiang Chen looked like, as well as the fact that Jiang Chen and Han Yan maintained low profiles, they didn't run into any trouble along their journey.

Ten days later. The trio had completely left the Easter Continent, and they had arrived at the border of the ocean. In front of them was a vast ocean, and they could only see water that stretched to the ends of the earth.

"I wonder how big this ocean is. Perhaps it's even bigger than the entire Eastern Continent!"

Han Yan said, impressed.

“The Saint Origin realm is extremely vast. There are tens of thousands territories here, and its size is unmeasurable. Besides the Eastern, Western, Southern and Northern Continents, there are also a lot of vast oceans. This ocean is connected to the Eastern Continent, and naturally, it belongs to the Eastern Continent. But in actuality, all oceans have their own structure, they basically have nothing to do with the continents. We are just at the border of the ocean, there is still a great way to go until we reach the Blissful Island.

Jiang Chen said.

“Little Chen, look at those people, I think they’re going to the Blissful Island as well. Since we don’t know the exact location of the island, why don’t we just follow them?”

Han Yan threw his glance at the people flying in front of them. Most of people were in groups of three to five men, some of them rode on flying demon beasts, and some wore the same clothes and had more people in their group compared to the other. Those people were clearly from some big powers. This could also be seen from the prideful expressions on their faces.

“The ocean is a place filled with dangers. Normally, this many people won’t appear at the same time, so these groups are certainly going to participate in the Blissful Island’s trade fair. Let’s follow them, we might also be able to get some news from them.”



Jiang Chen added. With a sway of his body, he started flying. Since Big Yellow transformed into a smaller form, he just relaxingly squatted down on Jiang Chen's shoulder. Han Yan flew next to Jiang Chen, feeling the raging ocean beneath and enjoying the distinctive mood.

Splash!

The water suddenly splash underneath them. A huge shark leapt out from the water, and with its mouth wide open, it targeted Han Yan who flew above it.

“Hmph!”

Han Yan threw his glance at the shark. With just a cold hump, the shark instantly trembled with fear, then it dived back into the ocean and disappeared.

“Just a small sea demon, how dares it be so aggressive in front of me? What a reckless creature.”

A grin appeared on Han Yan's face.

.....

“Idiot, what are you looking at? Never seen such a handsome dog before?”

“Damn it, why are you so ugly? Compared to this handsome master dog, you’re just so far behind!”

“Hey! Pretty, do you have time for some chit chat?”

Along the way, Big Yellow teased every single person he met. With his mouth, he successfully attracted a lot of hateful glares. Even Jiang Chen couldn’t help but feel a slight desire to kill this dog, let alone other people.

Jiang Chen felt really helpless. All he could do was keep apologizing to those who Big Yellow offended. He was in a situation where there were enemies almost everywhere, and now, even before they arrived at the Blissful Island, Big Yellow had nearly offended every single person. If he truly ended up offending everyone, how were they going to get along on the island?

Han Yan lightly coughed. He purposely kept distance from Jiang Chen, pretending he didn’t know this dog.

“Little Chen, bringing this damn dog is no different from purposely bringing troublemaker.”

Han Yan told Jiang Chen through his divine sense.

“Get lost! Han Yan, you’re the troublemaker! You’re going to need this master dog during the most critical moment!”

Big Yellow bared his teeth at Han Yan. Then, he turned around

and teased a female cultivator, “Hey, pretty, do you want to be this master dog’s human pet? I’ll spoil you for sure!”

Finally, Jiang Chen couldn’t take it any longer. Before the female cultivator could become angry, he pulled Big Yellow from his shoulder. He put one of his hands on Big Yellow’s head, and the other hand on his mouth.

“Damn it! You damn dog, can’t you be more obedient? Stop bringing daddy trouble!”

Jiang Chen felt like throwing up some blood. This dog was an extremely ridiculous being... no, the supreme ridiculous being. His ability to attract hate was unrivaled. No matter where he went, no matter what time it was, this dog could give anyone the impulse to tear it to pieces.

What made Jiang Chen feel even more depressed was that the female cultivator Big Yellow had teased just now was in here fifties. Her skin was rough, and she had a fat body. She reminded Jiang Chen about Murong Xiaorou; Big Yellow had actually teased someone like that. Really shameless.

“Where did this damn dog come from?! Kill it!”

“Yea! Peel off its skin while it’s still alive, then throw it into the ocean and feed those sharks!”

“This dog is really cruel! I’m sure that young man isn’t a good

man either. Birds of a feather flock together, like master like pet!”

“You’re right. Let’s keep a distance from him, I’m sure he’s a bad person!”

.....

Everyone were pointing their fingers at Jiang Chen. Suddenly, Jiang Chen had a feeling that he was mistaken as the number one obscene man underneath the heavens. Without hesitation, he sped up and kept a distance from those people.

“Damn you, do you still want to venture together with us? Damn dog, can’t you just stop talking, even just a little?!”

Jiang Chen kept slapping Big Yellow on both sides of his face.

“Damn you! Buddy, how dare you slap this master dog’s handsome face?! I think you’re courting death!”

Big Yellow opened up his mouth and tried biting Jiang Chen’s palm.

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes. He was really speechless when it came to this dog. In the end, he could only beg Big Yellow to stop causing trouble.”

“Haha, Little Chen, none of them think you’re a good man.”

Han Yan couldn't help himself from bursting out into laughter.

“Get lost, you're the only good-for-nothing man here!”

Jiang Chen helplessly threw his gaze at Han Yan.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan flew with extreme speed. In just a few minutes, they had ditched all those people behind. Soon after, they saw another group of people in front of them. The group seemed to be discussing something. Jiang Chen and Han Yan sped up and got closer to them. This group of people were perhaps talking about the Blissful Island's trade fair, and they really needed more information now.

“There is a Blissful Manor on the Blissful Island, and the master of the manor has occupied the entire island. He is rich with resources, and he's enjoying a life with many wives.”

Someone said.

“That's for sure. With just the trade fair alone, he's able to earn an enormous amount of wealth and resources. I heard that Master Blissful is actually a demon lord from the ocean, and he has good relationships with many demon lords of the ocean. He's a really powerful existence.”

# Chapter 280 – Demon Lord, A Golden Lion

---

Hearing this, Jiang Chen and Han Yan exchanged glances.

“No wonder that the master of the Blissful Manor can occupy such a prominent island in the ocean; he’s actually a demon lord of the ocean!”

Han Yan finally understood.

“The Blissful Manor holds a major trade fair each year, it’s a massive event. Many great warriors from different powers in the continent will participate. Also, many rogue cultivators and demon lords of the ocean will come to the event as well, mainly because a trade fair like this is really rare. A lot of rare and unique treasures can be found. A lot of those treasures found in the trade fair were originally found in the ocean, and similar items can rarely be found in the continent.”

“That’s right. Everyone is taking what they need, and trading for treasures that they need. Who wouldn’t want to participate in a trade fair like this and try their luck? Also, there will be many Combat Soul warriors in the event as well.”

“Of course, even big powers like the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect will send someone over, and there might even be someone from the Martial Palace and Martial Saint Dynasty. I heard that everyone who wants to enter the Blissful Island and participate in the trade fair will have to pay a certain fee. Putting aside everything, just the fee alone is a huge amount of wealth for

the owner."

"Sigh... this really makes me envious!"

.....

Everything that was said by the people in front was clearly head by Jiang Chen and Han Yan. Just from this short conversation alone, Jiang Chen had gained a basic understanding about the Blissful Island. It had also given him a small hope of finding the Nine Solar Holy Water, which was his main target for his trip to the ocean.

For the next few days, more and more warriors could be seen flying toward the Blissful Island. Most of them came from the different 28 provinces in the Eastern Continent, and the rest were some strange men who lived in the ocean. All of these strange men wore weird clothes, but none of them were weak. The majority of them were Divine Core warriors, and the rest were Heavenly Core warriors. All of these people were heading in the same direction for a single purpose; the trade fair!

The ocean waves were rumbling, wave after wave, and the occasional furious roars of the demon lords. When those demons who were causing trouble in the ocean sensed the powerful auras above the ocean surface, they immediately hid underneath the ocean surface, not daring to show their heads.

The group passed a lot of islands along their way. Some of the islands had splendid sceneries, and looked like paradises on top of

the ocean. Of course, most of the islands were just desolated islands where nothing except rocks could be found.

“The ocean’s scenery is really amazing, and the natural Yuan energy is rich as well. Not a bad place to stay and cultivate.”

Han Yan was amazed.

“Not only this, the special environment of the ocean has also produced all kinds of special and rare treasures. However, compared to life on a continent, the life in the ocean is just too boring, and the environment is pretty standard. Definitely not as exciting as a continent.”

Jiang Chen said.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan were flying at incredible speed. Early morning one day, the both finally saw an island floating on the ocean far into the distance. Under the sunlight’s shine, the entire island was glowing brightly.

Since they were still far away from the island, the island looked like a mirage to them. Floating above the ocean’s surface, with Jiang Chen and Han Yan’s extraordinary eyesight, they could see white fog hovering in the sky above the island.

“We’re here, that’s the Blissful Island.”

Big Yellow said.



Soon, the trio arrived near the Blissful Island. This was an island with a beautiful scenery. Jiang Chen could see the entire island from where he stood. It was an enchanting scenery; lofty and strong pine trees stood everywhere, there was a magnificent waterfall constantly pounding the rocks underneath, and white fog covered the entire ocean, causing the island to look like a paradise on top of the ocean. Just the scenery alone pleased their spirits and made their hearts feel relaxed.

“Damn, the master of the Blissful Manor really knows how to find a perfect spot! Just living here will allow anyone to live a long life without even cultivating.”

Han Yan couldn't help but praise.

“Indeed, this place is truly an amazing place to live.”

Jiang Chen praised as well. The man who picked this island is truly someone who knows how to enjoy life.

Right at this moment, more than a hundred people had gathered around the island. They all hovered above the surface of the ocean in small groups, and there were more people arriving.

“What are these people doing here? Why don't they just land on the island?”

Han Yan curiously asked.

“Where did this idiot come from? Doesn’t he know the rules of the Blissful Island?”

A warrior heard what Han Yan said, and he immediately threw a look of despise at him.

“Bastard, watch your mouth! Are you courting death?!”

Big Yellow cursed. Although he had been quarreling with Han Yan a lot during their journey, when there was an enemy, he would stand together with him.

“Fuck, where did this dog come from? How dare you talk like that to your grandpa?! I think you’re the one who is courting death!”

The warrior was really arrogant. After speaking, he immediately stretched his arm and grabbed at Big Yellow, completely ignoring Jiang Chen.

Slap!

Jiang Chen raised his palm and slapped the warrior’s face. The tremendous force knocked him far away. There were simply too many people who had no idea who they were provoking when they took action. Not only was this warrior ignorant, he was also annoying.

“Brat, how dare you slap me?!”

The warrior instantly became furious. He pointed his finger at Jiang Chen and shouted at him. At the same time, two men arrived next to him. Clearly, they were his helpers.

“The reason I slapped you was to save your life.”

Jiang Chen indifferently said. He spoke the truth though. If he hadn't slapped that warrior away just now, one of his arms might have been bitten off by Big Yellow. Jiang Chen didn't want any trouble before landing on the Blissful Island, but that didn't mean he was a coward. If this warrior provoked him anymore, he didn't mind killing him right here.

“What did you just say?”

The warrior was extremely angry. Just before he did something again, a man suddenly appeared right in front of him. It was the man he had scolded as an idiot, Han Yan.

Han Yan clenched the warrior's throat with his palm like an iron fist. Felling extreme danger from the palm, the warrior's soul started trembling.

“If you don't want to die, you better keep quiet in front of me.”

Han Yan said, slowly. He stared at the warrior with sharp eyes, causing the warrior to lose his courage to stare back. The warrior

didn't feel like he was facing a young man, but a bloodthirsty devil king. He had no doubts that if he tried to fight back, he would instantly be killed by this young man.

“A misunderstanding, just a misunderstanding! Brother, please forgive us.”

“My friend is too impulsive, I apologize for him.”

The warrior's friends hurriedly apologized on behalf of their companion. None of them were idiots, with their experience, they could easily tell that this young man in front of them was really strong, and was not someone they should mess with. Having mighty strength at such young age, he might be a genius from some big sect. There was no way they could afford to offend a man like this. If they really pissed him off and got killed here, their entire lives would go to waste.

“You should be glad I decided to spare your life.”

Han Yan pulled away his palm. In an instant, the warrior felt like he was going to collapse. Cold sweat covered his forehead. Although only a few seconds had passed, it felt like it was a few years for the man. The aura leaking from the young man's body caused his soul to tremble.

“I suppose you two young masters are here for the first time? If that is the case, it makes perfect sense that you don't know about the Blissful Island's rules. The island will only open for the public when the trade fair starts, and before that, no one is allowed to

step onto the island. The trade fair starts in three days, and those who arrived early will have to wait.”

Someone explained the rules of the Blissful Island to Jiang Chen and Han Yan with a smile on his face. He didn't dare leave anything out.

“I see.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. If that was the case, he would just wait here like the others. He was here to participate in the trade fair, so he didn't want to get too much attention.

Swoosh... swoosh... swoosh...

During the next days, more and more people arrived. Regardless of where they came from, none of them dared break the rules set down for the Blissful Island. Before the trade fair started, no one would step onto the island.

Bang!

All of a sudden, a loud explosive sound could be heard from behind. A figure appeared in the sky above like a sudden clap of thunder. When everyone threw their gaze at source of the lightning like sound, they could see that it was actually a quite majestic figure.

This man looked to be in his forties, and he had a majestic 2.5

meter tall body, and his golden hair made him look somewhat ferocious. A golden armor covered his majestic body, and it glowed brightly under the sunlight.

What was even more shocking was the man's cultivation, he was a Combat Soul warrior!"

"That's Golden Lion, a demon lord! I never expected to see him here."

"This Golden Lion is the overlord of the Golden Lion Mountain in the Liang Province, he isn't a human, but a rare lion demon. He has a mighty cultivation base, and no one dares challenge him. Even those powerful sects in the Liang Province have to show him some respect."

"The Blissful Island's trade fair is too attractive, even a Combat Soul warrior was attracted. I'm sure the Golden Lion isn't the only Combat Soul warrior here, those big sects in the Eastern Continent will definitely send their Combat Soul warriors here as well. Some powerful rogue cultivators might emerged as well."

.....

Everyone were discussing amongst themselves. They were actually whispering to each other, because they were scared that if they spoke too loud, they might offend the Combat Soul demon lord in some way. A Combat Soul demon lord was not someone they could afford to offend.

The Golden Lion's appearance was imposing, he didn't even look at the crowd; he just walked toward the Blissful Island.

"This Golden Lion is so arrogant! How dare he ignore the Blissful Island's rules? The trade fair starts in only two days, but now he's actually entering the island."

A man from the crowd said.

"Hmph!"

Right after the man finished speaking, the Golden Lion coldly harrumphed. Without even turning his head, the Golden Lion casually stretched out its hands and grabbed the warrior like it was grabbing a chicken. No matter how much the warrior struggled, he just couldn't escape the Golden Lion's grasp.

"No rules applies to me, the Golden Lion!"

The Golden Lion was extremely ruthless. Without any hesitation, he killed the warrior and dumped the body into the ocean. After that, he continued walking toward the island.

"What an unfortunate man. If he didn't know the rules of the Blissful Island, why didn't he just keep his mouth shut? A Combat Soul demon lord is extremely brutal, his life was wasted by offending him."

"Right! The waiting rule does not apply to Combat Soul warriors,

they can enter the Blissful Manor whenever they want. Not only that, the master of the manor will personally greet them. We just can't compare ourselves to them."

Many people shook their heads and let out sighs. The death of the warrior was not considered a fair one. A Combat Soul demon lord's approach was extremely ruthless, and none should challenge their dignity.



# Chapter 281 – A Magnificent And Unprecedented Event

---

“The trade fair hasn’t yet started, no one is allowed to enter the island. For those who disobey the rule, no mercy will be showed!”

A crystal clear voice suddenly sounded out from the Blissful Island. In the next moment, everyone saw a bright beam shoot out from the island. To everyone’s surprise, it was a young girl, or to be exact, a mermaid.

The girl’s upper body was that of a human, and her lower body was that of a fish. She looked amazingly beautiful, and her two big eyes were brimming with energy. She wore a thin shirt on her upper body.

She was a Divine Core demon lord from the Blissful Manor, and she was here because she found out someone was trying to intrude the island before the trade fair started.

“Hmph! Open your eyes and see who this daddy is!”

The Golden Lion coldly harrumphed, he glared at the young girls with a look of despise.

“Ah! You’re senior Golden Lion! I’m sorry! Senior Golden Lion is our master’s best friend, and he is a Combat Soul warrior, so he isn’t restricted by our rule. Please come in!”

When the young girl saw the Golden Lion, her attitude immediately changed, and she welcomed him.

“Too bad we’re not eligible for such preferential treatment. If we were, we might be able to befriend the Manor Master. With that relationship, we might even be able to enjoy some advantages during the trade fair.”

Someone really envied this treatment.

“Wait till you break through to the Combat Soul realm, I’m sure the Manor Master will show you some respect then.”

Someone replied to the guy. In this world where strength was everything, envying someone who got preferential treatment was useless. The most important thing was to have strength.

Another day passed. More and more people were gathering around the Blissful Island. The auras leaking from all these warriors had covered the entire area, causing the water to constantly ripple, and all the demons living in the ocean to flee far away from the island.

Swoosh!

All of a sudden, a loud cry was heard from the distance. When everyone glanced at the source of this cry, they immediately saw a huge eagle with a powerful aura flying toward them. Eight men stood on the back of this huge eagle. Three of them were old men,

and the remaining five were young men. Seven of them were Divine Core warriors. The leader of this group seemed to be in his fifties, and his aura was the strongest amongst the group, it was even comparable to the Golden Lion. He was a Combat Soul warrior.

These eight men all wore the same green robes. Looks of ferociousness could be seen on their faces. They didn't seem too friendly, it was as if they could kill anyone at any time.

“They are from the Qing Province's Qingyi Sect. Their leading man is Mao Sheng, he is the Qingyi's chief Sect Elder, and he's an Early Combat Soul warrior. I didn't expect to see him here.”

“Why does all of them have such gloomy expressions? Looks like someone owes them a lot of money.”

“You don't know what happened? I heard six of their core disciples were killed by someone in the Serpent's Great Mountain Stream. All of them were Divine Core warriors, and one of them was a peerless genius from the Qingyi Sect, Mao Fang. Also, he is Mao Sheng's grandson.”

“Oh heavens! Who would dare kill that Mao Fang, he is simply courting death! No wonder why Sect Elder Mao Sheng looks so angry, it's all because his grandson was killed by someone.”

.....

People were discussing the events everywhere. Right at this moment, Jiang Chen and Han Yan saw the men from the Qingyi Sect, and their expressions immediately changed as they looked at the huge eagle.

“Not good! Hurry up and hide your aura!”

Jiang Chen immediately grabbed Big Yellow and tucked him into his shirt. After that, he instantly hid his aura and hid within the crowd together with Han Yan. He stood completely still without moving a bit.

“Damn it! How could we forget about that eagle?”

Han Yan couldn't help but curse. They had killed every single person from the Qingyi Sect at the Serpent's Great Mountain Stream, and they thought there were no eyewitnesses left. Only, they had actually forgotten about the eagle.

Jiang Chen could still remember what happened. When they got to the Serpent's Great Mountain Stream, the huge eagle was nowhere to be found, so he didn't pay any attention to it. But, the eagle was a demon lord with an Early Divine Core cultivation base, and it was more intelligent than some humans. Jiang Chen had no idea if the eagle had witnessed how he killed Mao Fang and the rest of the people. Since the eagle was here, if it recognized Jiang Chen, they would be doomed.

What truly made Jiang Chen speechless was the fact that Mao Fang's grandfather was a Combat Soul warrior, and he had

personally come to the Blissful Island. Judging from the way he looked now, if he knew who the culprit was, it wasn't hard to imagine what would happen.

The men from the Qingyi Sect walked off from the eagle. After that, the eagle retracted its wings and transformed into a forty year old man. He wore a black robe, and he started looking around with his eagle eyes.

The Dark Eagle furrowed his brows, as if he had just smelled something familiar. But, after looking around for some time, he couldn't find anything, as there were too many people around.

Seeing this, Jiang Chen and Han Yan finally let out sighs of relief. As long as the Dark Eagle couldn't find them now, once the trade fair started and they were allowed to step onto the island, they would be safe, as fighting on the island was forbidden.

A massive trade fair like this would attract a lot of powers and warriors. With so many rare and unique treasures, robbing was something really tempting to those who had eyes on things they wanted. But, since the Blissful Island's trade fair had been held for so many years without any trouble, it wasn't hard to imagine how domineering the Manor Master was.

“You guys just wait here until the trade fair starts.”

Mao Sheng told the disciples from the Qingyi Sect, then he simply walked toward the Blissful Island. This was the preferential treatment given to a Combat Soul warrior, not only could they

enter the Blissful Manor whenever they wanted, they would also be welcomed by the Manor Master.

“Haha! I, Old Man Ling Shan is here as well!”

Following a suddenly roar of laughter, an old man as thin as a stick came from far away and landed next to Mao Sheng.

“Mao Sheng, I heard your grandson was killed by someone, congratulations!”

What Old Man Ling Shan said nearly caused the crowd to spit out their blood. This guy’s grandson just died, and he was feeling down at the moment. But, he just congratulated him for that?! Wasn’t he just asking for trouble?

“Get lost!”

Mao Sheng stared back with, extremely furious.

“Haha...”

Old Man Ling Shan laughed out to his heart’s content. After that, he just went straight to the Blissful Island. Clearly, he wasn’t afraid of Mao Sheng.

“This Old Man Ling Shan is a rare existence. He’s actually a rogue cultivator from the Qing Province, and he’s also a Combat Soul

warrior. But, he is a weird character, he won't even show any respect to those big sects in the Qing Province."

Someone said with a sigh.

"Hehe, this old man seems pretty nice."

Han Yan laughed.

"Damn it, buddy, you're suffocating this master dog!"

Big Yellow struggled near Jiang Chen's chest.

"Stay low. If you come out now, that eagle will immediately find us."

Jiang Chen tenaciously restrained Big Yellow. There was no way he could let Big Yellow out right now, the Dark Eagle would recognize his puppy appearance, and if he changed back into his big dog form, everyone would be able to recognize him.

The trade fair was getting closer and closer. More and more great warriors had arrived, and many strange cultivations who live on the ocean could be seen as well. Many Combat Soul warriors had also arrived and entered the Blissful Island in advance.

Basically, nearly all major powers in the Eastern Continent had sent their men here, and they were all lead by a Combat Soul Sect

Elder, and the rest were Divine Core Sect Elders and disciples. The purpose for the Divine Core disciples coming here was to let them experience the trade fair.

“What a grand occasion! So many Combat Soul warriors have arrived, but none of them are from the Qi Province. We’re pale when compare to them!”

Han Yan whispered to Jiang Chen. He was shocked after seeing so many Combat Soul warriors. Although Han Yan was a genius, the Qi Province was a really small place, he hadn’t seen so many Combat Soul warriors before.

“There are many big provinces in the Eastern Continent. The Qi Province and Qian Province are both ranked the lowest. Putting aside the Jian Province which is ranked the second largest, even the Qing Province who is ranked fifth has countless Combat Soul warriors.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Look, a huge sword is flying toward this place!”

Someone exclaimed. A huge golden sword was speeding toward them from the distance, causing towering waves as high as the sky to rise wherever it passed. It was a huge sword, it was over 50 meters long. A group of men lined up on the sword, each of them wore prideful expressions on their faces.



The group all wore the same white clothes, and they all carried huge swords on their backs. Their appearance caused them to look like a group of sword gods.

“They are from the Myriad Sword Sect! The people from the Jian Province are here as well!”

“Hurry up and make way for them, the Myriad Sword Sect is not someone we can mess with! If they are provoked and kill us with their swords, our deaths would be in vain. The Jian Province is the second strongest province in the Eastern Continent, and this Myriad Sword Sect is the strongest sect in the Jian Province. I heard their Sect Chief has reached the peak Combat Soul realm, and there’s a great chance of him breaking through to the Combat King realm. Even the Martial Palace’s Palace Master would have to give them face!”

“I heard that a genius disciple from the Myriad Sword Sect was killed by a young man named Jiang Chen in Inferno Hell! That Jiang Chen is a really brave man, he even dared offend the Myriad Sword Sect.”

“That’s nothing, the Myriad Sword Sect isn’t the only power Jiang Chen offended; he even killed an elder from the Shangguan Clan. The Shangguan Clan is a super power at the same level as the Myriad Sword Sect. Rumors say that this guy ruthlessly killed countless Divine Core warriors and offended many great powers in Inferno Hell.”

“What a brave man! How can he be talented at such a young age? I wonder what this Jiang Chen looks like.”

“He is rather easy to recognize. Someone told me that a majestic big yellow dog always follows him around. If you see a young man with a big yellow dog, it is definitely Jiang Chen!”

.....

After the men from the Myriad Sword Sect arrived, the topic switched to Jiang Chen.

“Little Chen, I never thought you’d be so famous!”

Han Yan teased Jiang Chen through his divine sense.

“Fuck! It is I, the master dog who is famous! Didn’t you hear what they said? They can only recognize Little Chen when they see this master dog!”

Big Yellow obediently stayed near Jiang Chen’s chest while speaking with a prideful tone.

When the men from the Myriad Sword Sect arrived, the huge sword carrying them immediately transformed into an ordinary longsword. The leading man grabbed the longsword and stored it away. The old man had an imposing appearance, and he was also a Combat Soul warrior.

Not long after the Myriad Sword Sect arrived, a few more

powerful auras could be sensed from the distance. Another group of men were flying toward the Blissful Island, they all stood on top of a shield. These men had the same arrogant and prideful expressions as the previous men, causing them to look no inferior to the Myriad Sword Sect.

“They are from the Shangguan Clan, the Shangguan Clan is here as well!”

“This year’s trade fair is indeed a magnificent and unprecedented event! Even super powers like the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan were attracted!”

Many people started sighing. A scene like this was indeed a rare one.

## Chapter 282 - Discovered

---

The Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan were both gigantic existences in the Eastern Continent. Aside from the Martial Saint Dynasty, no one dared offend them. This group of people from the Shangguan Clan were also being led by a Combat Soul warrior.

“Shangguan Chong, never thought I’d see you here.”

Seeing the coming men, the Combat Soul Sect Elder from the Myriad Sword Sect who was about to step onto the Blissful Island stopped and spoke.

“Why? Don’t tell me that only you, Ye Xiao is allowed to come here?”

Shangguan Chong said in a cold tone. The atmosphere immediately became heated upon the two men meeting. It clearly showed that their relationship wasn’t good. But, it wasn’t something unexpected. There was a saying that two tigers couldn’t live on the same mountain. The Myriad Sword Sect and the Shangguan Clan were both super powers from the Jiang Province. Naturally, they opposed each other with equal harshness. This was just like the relationship between the four big sects in the Qi Province.

“Hmph!”

Ye Xiao coldly harrumphed. He didn’t bother with Shangguan Chong anymore, and just continued walking toward the Blissful

Island. On the other side, Shangguan Chong was also walking toward the Blissful Island with an imposing aura.

“Little Chen, the Myriad Sword Sect and the Shangguan Clan are both here. Together with the Qing Province’s Qingyi Sect, all your powerful enemies are here at the same time. If your identity is exposed... Well, that would be really exciting!”

Han Yan teased Jiang Chen through his divine sense.

“Why do I only feel my head going numb?”

Jiang Chen gazed at Han Yan. He felt really speechless after hearing Han Yan’s words. If his real identity was exposed in such a grand situation, well... he wouldn’t have to worry anymore, as he would probably be killed without even knowing what happened.

“Do you guys see that? Those whose cultivation levels are below the Combat Soul realm are not allowed to step onto the Blissful Island in advance. Even those from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan aren’t excluded from this rule, even they do not dare break the rule.”

“Of course, the Manor Master is a supreme demon from the ocean, even the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan have to give him face. After all, this place isn’t on the Eastern Continent.”

“Furthermore, I’ve heard that the Manor Master has a mighty cultivation base. No one dares break the rules set by him.”

.....

Everyone were discussing amongst themselves. Even super powers like the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan weren't excluded from the island's rules. None of the warriors below the Combat Soul realm were allowed to step onto the Blissful Island in advance, they had to stay outside the island and wait for the trade fair to start, just like everyone else.

There was only one day until the trade fair started. More and more people were gathering around the Blissful Island. But for Jiang Chen and Han Yan, this day was a gloomy day. The Dark Eagle's gaze was simply too sharp, it was as if it had discovered some familiar auras. It continued scanning the crowds with its eyes, and if this continued, they would be discovered sooner or later.

Nonetheless, Jiang Chen and Han Yan were better at hiding themselves than others. If they weren't, they might have already been found by the eagle.

"Damn it, that Dark Eagle is really troublesome. It will find us sooner or later."

Han Yan said in a gloomy tone.

"That's right. Buddy, don't tell me you want this master dog to keep staying under your clothes? You're going to need this master dog in the trade fair."

Big Yellow was the gloomiest of the three, he had been hiding underneath Jiang Chen's clothes for an entire day; he was soon going to become crazy.

"Looks like it will soon find us. The trade fair is starting soon, so we just need to do our best to hide from that Dark Eagle. Once we step onto the island, we'll be safe even if it discovers us. After all, no one is allowed to fight on the island, and I believe those people from the Qingyi Sect won't dare break that rule."

A fierce look emerged in Jiang Chen's eyes. He wasn't someone who was afraid of trouble. Furthermore, facing the Qingyi Sect alone was much better than his real identity being exposed.

On the third day, when the sky got brighter, a loud explosive sound could be heard from the Blissful Island. Then, beams of lights shot out from the island and stopped outside the island. The leading person was the beautiful mermaid who came out to greet the Golden Lion.

Many warriors could barely restrain themselves when they saw this girl. The deadly seductive attraction that came from this demon beast was far greater than that of ordinary humans.

Of course, even if these warriors had some evil intentions in their mind, they could only lock them up in their minds. No one were brave enough to offend, or even touch someone from the Blissful Manor. If they really did so, they would have to pay with their lives.

Dozens of men wearing golden armors followed the girl. All of them had imposing auras, and although their cultivation bases weren't powerful, they were at least at the peak Heavenly Core realm. The leading man was a Divine Core warrior.

They were warriors from the Blissful Manor. Not all of them were demons from the ocean, there were actually quite a number of humans amongst them.

“Ladies and gentlemen, the annual trade fair is going to begin soon. If you want to participate, you'll have to obey the rules set down by our master. Starting from now, the island and manor will open for everyone. Those who wants to enter the manor and participate in the trade fair will have to pay one Earth Restoration Pill!”

The girl spoke with a crystal clear voice, making sure that every single warrior here could hear what she said.

“What, an Earth Restoration Pill per person? This is ridiculous! I remember it only cost 1,000 Mortal Restoration Pills last years, why did the price go up by ten times?”

“Yea! An Earth Restoration Pill is equal to ten thousand Mortal Restoration Pills, why do we need to pay so much just to enter the manor?”

“Fuck, there are so many people here! One Earth Restoration Pill per person, doesn't that mean the Manor Master is going to be



come filthy rich?”

.....

Just as the girl finished speaking, a storm immediately erupted amongst the crowds. The entrance fee being ten times higher than usual, many people simply couldn't take it. The difference in Earth Restoration Pills and Mortal Restoration Pills was not just in terms of numbers, there was also a huge difference between the level of energy within, and quality.

For example, there was no one who would want to exchange an Earth Restoration Pill with ten thousand Mortal Restoration Pills.

An Earth Restoration Pill was really expensive, only Divine Core warriors had the ability to absorb one. For some powerful Divine Core warriors, an Earth Restoration Pill might not be worth a lot, but for those Late Heavenly Core warriors, paying an Earth Restoration Pill was like slicing a chunk of meat from their bodies.

“This is the new rule set by our master. If you aren't willing to pay, you can just leave now. We won't force you to do it.”

The girl spoke once more.

“Haha, it's just an Earth Restoration Pill per person, that's not too much. We, the Myriad Sword Sect will be the first ones to pay. Pretty girl, here are seven Earth Restoration Pills for us seven.”

A Divine Core disciple from the Myriad Sword Sect said with a laugh. He led all the disciples from the Myriad Sword Sect to the girl, then he casually tossed seven Earth Restoration Pills to the girl.

“We welcome the Myriad Sword Sect to the trade fair. I wish you have an enjoyable time in the trade fair.”

The girl signaled a warrior behind her to store the Earth Restoration Pills. After that, she replied to the Myriad Sword Sect disciples with a smile on her face.

“The Myriad Sword Sect is filthy rich, all their core disciples are rich as well; of course they have all the pills they need.”

Someone muttered. Compared to those super powers like the Myriad Sword Sect, they were just too inferior.

“Just an Earth Restoration Pills. Since I’ve come here, I can’t just go back empty handed. The trade fair is only held once a year, even if I can’t get anything, it’s still worth paying an Earth Restoration Pill to gain experience.”

A rogue cultivator casually walked over and handed an Earth Restoration Pill over to the girl. After that, he stepped onto the Blissful Island.

Afterwards, more and more people started paying the entrance fee. Although the Manor Master increasing the price was

somewhat shady, the majority of the people didn't really mind that much, as it was just an Earth Restoration Pill. Those who genuinely came here to get some rare and unique treasures were all rich and wealthy men, even those who felt pain regarding the price also paid and stepped onto the island. After all, they had traveled far to get here, and no one wanted to return empty handed.

“Little Chen, let's go.”

Han Yan said.

“Alright.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. The two men started walking, they wanted to enter the island before the men from the Qingyi Sect discovered them.

“Stop right there!”

Just as Jiang Chen and Han Yan started walking, a loud shout immediately sounded out behind their backs.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan's expressions turned cold. In the end, they were still discovered. The Dark Eagle moved its body and arrived in front of Jiang Chen and Han Yan, and his expression immediately changed upon seeing their faces.

“They are the ones!”

The Dark Eagle pointed his finger at Jiang Chen and Han Yan. Without any hesitation, he let out a loud shout. The disturbance immediately alerted many of the people around. Numerous eyes looked to the source of the shout, and were wonder what the cause of the conflict was.

“Dark Eagle, what’s going on?”

All six core disciples from the Qingyi Sect came forth and threw their glances at Jiang Chen and Han Yan.

“They are the ones who killed Mao Fang and the others! They were all killed by them!”

The Dark Eagle’s words caused the scene to ignite. Many people here came from the Qing Province, and the news about Mao Fang’s death had been spread across the entire Qing Province. Everyone really wanted to know who was brave enough to kill the Qingyi Sect’s biggest genius.

“Damn it!! In the end, we were still discovered! Daddy is going to suffocate soon!”

Big Yellow leapt out from Jiang Chen’s clothes and landed on his shoulder.

“That’s right, they are the ones! That damn dog as well!”

The Dark Eagle was even more certain when he saw Big Yellow. During the last two days, he had sensed a familiar aura lingering within the air. But, because there were too many people around, as well as the fact that Jiang Chen and Han Yan were hiding their auras, he couldn't discover them. But, since the crowds started moving, he immediately discovered Jiang Chen and Han Yan.

“How dare you? It was you who did it! You're really brave to kill the men from the Qingyi Sect!”

“You're courting death! Even if you have ten thousand lives, you're still going to die

“Brat, who gave you the audacity to kill the men from the Qingyi Sect?!”

The disciples from the Qingyi Sect were angry, and their killing intent was soaring. They immediately surrounded Jiang Chen. With great fury, it seemed like they were going to tear Jiang Chen apart.

“Something big is happening, this guy is really brave to be able to kill disciples from the Qingyi Sect. Since he was discovered, he is finished!”

“He is complete done for! The Qingyi Sect is not a sect one can easily mess with, and since they haven't yet stepped onto the Blissful Island, killing is still allowed here, and they are going to kill him for sure! There's also a Combat Soul warrior from the Qingyi Sect here.”

“I heard that Mao Fang who was killed is actually Mao Sheng’s grandson. Since they were discovered, Mao Sheng definitely won’t let them go easily. It’s impossible for them to die easily now.”

## Chapter 283 – Extremely Daring

---

A fight was on the verge of breaking out. Even the girl and the warriors behind her threw their glances over. From the crowds discussions', they learnt what was happening. The girl had her eyes on Jiang Chen, curious to know how Jiang Chen was going to handle the situation.

“Bastard, I don’t think you ever thought about me! I was actually hiding somewhere when you killed our men! But, you really surprised me! Not only did you not run as far away as you could after killing our men, you still came to the Blissful Island! You’re just courting...”

The Dark Eagle suddenly stopped talking. Someone saw a bright beam shoot out from Jiang Chen’s body, he immediately slashed through the Dark Eagle’s body.

Plop!

The arrogant Dark Eagle was sliced in half by the bright beam. It was separated into two parts, then it fell into the ocean, staining the surrounding water with blood.

“Although I didn’t kill you that day, I can still kill you today.”

Jiang Chen said in a cruel tone. He had just killed an eagle from the Qingyi Sect, and there was no change to his expression. Just this attitude alone was something few people could compare with.

Jiang Chen's actions immediately aroused a storm. No one expected this would happen. Jiang Chen was brave enough to kill a man from the Qingyi Sect on the spot. In their minds, Jiang Chen should be apologizing to them right now, because not only was he outnumbered, there was also a Combat Soul warrior from the Qingyi Sect as well.

"Damn it, this guy is completely ruthless, where did he come from? He just killed someone without even saying anything, he doesn't take the Qingyi Sect seriously at all!"

"I heard that Mao Fang was a rare genius from the Qingyi Sect, and his cultivation base was at the Late Divine Core realm. If this young man really killed him; that tells us how strong he is. But, what really surprises me is his daring attitude! He just killed a demon lord from the Qingyi Sect, he's considered completely offending them."

"Let's see how those Qingyi Disciples plan to deal with this. I'm sure none of them are a match for this young man, but they will definitely not let go of this matter easily. I'm just curious, will this young man really kill all these disciples?"

"You must be joking! He won't do it unless he's a maniac!"

.....

The sound of people talking could be heard everywhere. At this moment, everyone were looking at Jiang Chen. As for those Qingyi



Sect disciples, gloomy expressions could be seen on their faces. Although they were angrily staring at Jiang Chen, and had intense killing intents, none of them dared to attack. They might be arrogant, but they knew one thing for sure; Mao Fang was killed by this young man, and none of them were a match for Mao Fang.

“You got great nerves, who gave you the audacity to kill someone from the Qingyi Sect?!”

A disciple shouted at Jiang Chen.

“Fuck off! Don’t get in my way unless you want to die! I’m here to participate in the trade fair.”

Jiang Chen said in a cruel tone.

“Hmph! Inform Sect Elder Mao Sheng, he will definitely kill these two brats!”

Another man coldly harrumphed. However, right as he finished speaking, Jiang Chen attacked once again. A longsword suddenly appeared in his hand, and with a casual fling, the sword pierced forward with lightning speed. It swept through the disciple’s throat, and in the next second, his head left his body and flew high into the sky.

“What?!”

The disciples shouted out in disbelief. Their expressions changed

dramatically in an instant. No one could have thought that this young man was such a daring maniac.

“Sect Elder, we found the murderer!”

A peak Mid Divine Core disciple shouted out loudly toward the Blissful Island. With his cultivation, shouting with his Yuan energy could send his voice very far. Also, since Mao Sheng was a Combat Soul warrior, his senses and hearing was extremely sensitive. There was no doubt he heard what the disciple just shouted.

“You’re courting death! Makes no difference whether I kill one or all! All of you, prepare to die!”

A ferocious look emerged in Jiang Chen’s eyes. A cold killing intent erupted from his body and swept across the scene. With a sway of his body, he rammed into the group of Qingyi Sect disciples like a ghost. He swung the longsword in his hand like a poisonous dragon. Although all these Qingyi disciples tried to fight back with their full strength, none of them was a match for Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen was like a tiger who had just leapt into a group of tame sheep.

Aaahhh!!! ...

Accompanied by some blood-curdling screeches, in just a few breaths of time, every single Qingyi Sect disciple were killed by Jiang Chen. Their bodies fell into the water, and slowly sunk to the bottom of the ocean. The water was stained with their blood.

“My heavens!”

“What did I just see?! Is this young man a mighty demon? He just killed those men like he was killing some ants!”

“What a daring man, he is extremely daring! The Qingyi Sect has suffered a huge loss this time, all their core disciples were killed even before the trade fair begun. I’m sure Mao Sheng is going to be furious.”

“Good, I admire this little brother’s boldness! If I were him, I would definitely do the same! He had already offended them by killing that Mao Fang, and because of that, Mao Sheng would definitely not let go off him no matter what. Furthermore, all these disciples from the Qingyi Sect were trying to kill him. Since that was the case, I see no reason for why he should be nice to them. Even if he is destined to get killed by a Combat Soul warrior, he has already earned something back by killing so many of their disciples.”

.....

Everyone were shocked by what just happened. A storm swept across the crowd. No one thought they would witness something like this before the trade fair began. All core disciples of the fifth strongest sect in the Eastern Continent, the Qingyi Sect, had been slaughtered.

Bang!

Right at this moment, a loud explosive sound that came from someone erupting with anger could be heard from the island. A tremendous aura shot up into the sky. Hearing this, Jiang Chen shouted at those in front of him, “Everyone, move aside!”

This loud shot shook the crowds and caused their souls to tremble. In everyone’s mind, this young man was an overbearing and merciless maniac. No one had the courage to get in his way.

With extremely great speed, Jiang Chen and Han Yan arrived in front of the girl. Without hesitation, he took out three Earth Restoration Pills from his storage ring and said, “We’ve come here for the trade fair. Here are three Earth Restoration Pills, we want to enter the island now.”

Now, the crowds finally understood what Jiang Chen was up to. After killing everyone from the Qingyi Sect, he had successfully attracted the Combat Soul warrior’s attention. At this point of time, it was impossible for him to run away, because once he was caught, certain death was destined to fall upon him. Therefore, the only escape route was to step onto the Blissful Island before the Combat Soul warrior came. Everyone knew that the Blissful Island was the Master Blissful’s territory, and no one was allowed to fight on the island after the trade fair had begun. This was the rule set down by the Master Blissful, and even the Combat Soul warriors had to obey the rule.

Without hesitation, the girl took the Earth Restoration Pills from Jiang Chen and said, “Young master, welcome!”

Buzz...

The air around the Blissful Island started twisting; Mao Sheng had finally arrived.

“Let’s go!”

Jiang Chen and Han Yan dared not delay even a single second. They turned into two trails of light and dashed toward the Blissful Island. The pretty mermaid stared at Jiang Chen’s back, an amazed look emerged in her eyes, “Ruthless, decisive, extremely daring; I’m sure teacher will love a man like this.”

The girl smiled.

Right after Jiang Chen and Han Yan stepped onto the Blissful Island, Mao Sheng immediately dashed out from the island. Many Combat Soul warriors could be seen following him. All of them had sensed what was happening outside the island. No matter what, the Qingyi Sect was a super power, and this was a major incident where all their disciples were killed outside the Blissful Island, that’s why all these Combat Soul warriors followed. They wanted to see how this incident would end.

When Mao Sheng arrived, he immediately stared at the spot where all the Qingyi disciples were killed. He could still see blood floating on the surface of the water, and some of the dead bodies sinking to the bottom of the ocean. The eagle’s body had also resurfaced from the bottom of the ocean. Looking at all this, he became extremely furious.

Swoosh!

With a pair of red eyes, Mao Sheng threw his glance at Jiang Chen and Han Yan, it seemed as if he was going to devour both of them alive.

“Brat, you did all this?”

Mao Sheng asked with a loud voice.

“That’s right. They tried to kill me, so I fought back and killed them. Is there something wrong?”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders with an unconcerned expression on his face. Even though he was facing a Combat Soul warrior, no signs of being nervous could be found on his face, because he had already landed on the Blissful Island.

“You also killed my grandson, Mao Fang?”

Mao Sheng felt his heart pounding faster and faster. He was so mad it felt like his lungs were going to explode soon.

“Mao Fang tried to kill me, so I killed him.”

Jiang Chen indifferently said.

“Little bastard, die now!”

Mao Sheng was completely furious. With intense killing intent, he struck out with his palm toward Jiang Chen. When a Combat Soul warrior attack, the surrounding air would immediately ignite into flames. The mighty strength of the attack swept across like a gigantic wave as it pushed toward Jiang Chen.

“Brother Yan, Big Yellow, move aside!”

Jiang Chen shouted. Mao Sheng was completely furious right now, he was completely ignoring the rules of the Blissful Island; he just wanted to kill Jiang Chen. However, Jiang Chen believed that the rules of the Blissful Island wouldn't be broken by Mao Sheng.

Han Yan and Big Yellow had long ago prepared for this moment. The immediately moved aside.

“Nine Murdering Flood Dragons!”

Jiang Chen loudly shouted. In an instant, three silver white Flood Dragons emerged from his body and flew toward Mao Sheng's incoming attack.

Bang!

The massive power behind these attacks caused all the air to

violently sweep across the scene, and the entire Blissful Island to shake. Under such tremendous force, Jiang Chen was knocked back nearly 30 meters before he could regain control of his body. However, it caused his qi and blood to start circulating in a messy way, causing him to feel unwell.

“What?!”

Mao Sheng was shocked. Not only him, all those Combat Soul warriors who followed him were shocked as well. All of them had sensed Jiang Chen’s cultivation level, he was only a Mid Divine Core warrior, and he had just fought with a Combat Soul warrior without getting killed. Not only that, he didn’t even seem to be wounded. It was only as if he had just been shaken a little by the backlash from the impact.

“Where did this abnormal monster come from? Why is he so strong? Don’t tell me he’s from the Martial Palace?”

“I don’t think you can find such an abnormal monster in the Martial Palace, or even the Martial Saint Dynasty. He’s actually fighting a Combat Soul warrior with a mere Mid Divine Core cultivation base.”

Many people were astonished by what they had just witnessed. It wasn’t because Jiang Chen had withstood the Combat Soul warrior’s attack, there were actually some abnormal geniuses from the Martial Palace who could fight Early Combat Soul warriors with cultivation bases at the peak Divine Core realm. However, the young man in front of them was only a Mid Divine Core warrior, the difference was simply too huge.



“What you unleashed just now was Fang’er’s Nine Murdering Flood Dragons! Little bastard, I’m going to kill you today!”

Mao Sheng was really furious right now. A massive amount of energy was rolling around his body. He was preparing to attack with all his strength; he wanted to kill this young man in front of him in an instant!

## Chapter 284 – Master Blissful

---

Buzz...

The air surrounding them was thoroughly shaking. A glorious Combat Soul warrior was going to kill a young man using all his power. Although this wasn't something glorious, and it could even be considered shameful, but since the Qingyi Sect had suffered such heavy losses today, combined with the death of his grandson, how could Mao Sheng care about his personal reputation?

“This Mao Sheng has flown into rage out of humiliation, he just wants to kill that young man and ignore the rules of the Blissful Island; can he really do that?”

“Don't worry, no one is allowed to break the Blissful Island's rules. This is related to the Blissful Manor's dignity, the Master Blissful will definitely not allow something like this to happen.”

“What an amazing young man, he can actually fight a Combat Soul warrior! I wonder where he came from. I wouldn't believe this if I wasn't seeing it myself!”

“Not only is he an overbearing and decisive young man, he also has a daring attitude and a careful mind. Since he has now stepped onto the Blissful Island, he now has all the protection he needs.”

.....

No bystanders wanted the event to end so quickly. Being able to witness something so explosive before the trade fair began, they felt like the entrance fee of an Earth Restoration Pills had paid off. None of them felt that coming all the way to the Blissful Island was a waste now.

“Little bastard, come here!”

Mao Sheng unleashed a huge golden hand toward Jiang Chen and tried to grab him.

Bang!

Right at this moment, another huge hand approached from Jiang Chen's back. With a mighty force, it collided with Mao Sheng's huge hand. Following a loud explosive sound, both hands were destroyed at the same time. It was a skinny old man who unleashed the attack just now.

The old man wore a loose grey robe which fluttered in the wind. He had a goatee, and he wore a bright smile on his face. A pair of bright eyes caused this old man to look energetic. Now, he stood in front of Jiang Chen. He was the one who countered Mao Sheng's attack just now.

“Old Man Ling Shan, how dare you get in my way?! This matter concerns the Qingyi Sect, you better step away from this!”

Mao Sheng was really furious.

“Hehe, I, Old Man Ling Shan don’t like seeing seniors bullying juniors! Mao Sheng, you’re a Combat Soul warrior, why are you bullying a Divine Core junior? I really feel shame for you.”

Old Man Ling Shan laughed. He always behaved without any restraint, and his actions all depended on his mood. He never cared about what kind of sect or super power his opponent was.

“Old Man Ling Shan, this brat killed my grandson! He also killed a lot of disciples from the Qingyi Sect! If you protect him, you will become the Qingyi Sect’s enemy!”

Mao Shen was exasperated. He knew much about this Old Man Ling Shan, and if he really wanted to stop him from killing Jiang Chen, the chance of him killing Jiang Chen would be very slim.

“Daddy didn’t grow this old because of your threats, and what’s the big deal with becoming the Qingyi Sect’s enemy? The reason your grandson got killed is because he was weak! As for the disciples who just died? They were too weak as well! I kind of like this young man, that’s why I can’t let you kill him today. Furthermore, this place is the Blissful Island, and you just tried to kill someone on the island. Clearly, you just ignored the rules set by the Master Blissful, you’re looking down on the Master Blissful.”

Old Man Ling Shan still wore the same smile on his face. Some people just couldn’t stand looking at his face, because they would just have this impulse to leave a foot mark on his face. However,

Jiang Chen found this old man to be quite pleasing to his eyes.

“Old Man Ling Shan, don’t try to sow discord here! I just want to kill this brat, and I believe the Master Blissful will understand this. If you still get in my way, I’ll kill you as well!”

It looked like Mao Sheng was going to kill Jiang Chen no matter what happened. It was understandable, though. He had been looking for the person who murdered his grandson, and now, the murderer stood right in front of him. Furthermore, this murderer had once again killed a lot of people from the Qingyi Sect, he had dealt the Qingyi Sect’s face a huge blow. If he didn’t kill this guy right here, would he have any face left?

Swoosh!

Mao Sheng was furious. A blade suddenly appeared in his hand. Formidable energy was constantly leaking from the blade, and it was producing a constant buzzing sound. Without any hesitation, he raised the blade high up into the air, and slashed toward Old Man Ling Shan.

“Stay your hand!”

At this critical moment, a loud shout echoed out from the inner area of the Blissful Island. The shout was so loud that it sounded like a thundering roar. It swept across the Blissful Island and stirred the ocean waves. After that, everyone saw a man with a body full of power and grandeur rushing over with great speed. In just the blink of an eye, he had landed between Mao Sheng and Old

Man Ling Shan.

This adult man was in his forties. Like the warriors behind the girl, he wore a golden armor. However, his armor was much shinier and mightier than that of those Golden Warriors. The entire armor was covered with countless symbols, giving it a touch of mysteriousness. A sharp horn could be found on each shoulder. The man's body was similar to the Golden Lion's body. His angular face carried a domineering expression, causing him to look mighty and vigorous. His aura was actually surpassing Mao Sheng and Old Man Ling Shan's aura.

“That's the Master Blissful! Never thought he would come here.”

“So he is the Master Blissful, what an incredible cultivation! I think he has reached the Mid Combat Soul realm, Mao Sheng just can't compare with him at all.”

“Since the Master Blissful is here, that young man is now safe. The Master Blissful will never allow anyone to violate the rules set down by him.”

.....

The Master Blissful's arrival had attracted many eyes. He was one of the most influential men in the ocean, and the greatest man of this trade fair. No one dared disrespect him even a bit. For those who had come here from afar, they felt their effort had just paid for itself just by getting to someone great with their own eyes.

Jiang Chen also threw his glance at the Master Blissful. With his experience, he could instantly tell what this man's original form was, "Golden Glory Fish, never though this master would actually be such a powerful and rare demon."

Jiang Chen was slightly shocked. The Golden Glory Fish was one of the ocean's overlords. They possessed a bloodline from the ancient era, making that an incredibly rare species amongst all other demon beasts. They had a pair of wings, and were extremely terrifying.

"Brother Mao, why did you break the rules of my island and attack someone here?"

The Master Blissful stared at Mao Sheng with an unfriendly expression. He had held the trade fair once every year for a long time, and the rules set by him was final; no one ever dared break them. Breaking the rules set by him was equal to disturbing the peaceful order of the trade fair, and it also meant that the person didn't take his words seriously. The Master Blissful would never allow that to happen.

"Master Blissful, it was this brat who killed the disciples of my Qingyi Sect first! Not only that, he also killed my grandson! If I don't kill him now, will my Qingyi Sect still have any face left? I hope Master Blissful can chase this guy off the Blissful Island so I can kill him there. I don't think that violates your island rules."

Mao Sheng said.

The Master Blissful didn't reply to Mao Sheng, he instead turned around to Jiang Chen and asked, "What's your name?"

"Chen Jiang."

Jiang Chen replied, but he purposely reversed his name.

"Where did you kill those Qingyi Sect disciples?"

Master Blissful asked.

"Outside the island."

Jiang Chen honestly replied. He knew that Master Blissful was just going through formalities, and the purpose for doing so was to defend the rules set down by himself. As for Mao Sheng's request to chase Jiang Chen out from the island, Jiang Chen believed that Master Blissful was no idiot; he would never do something that would bring disgrace to his reputation. Furthermore, the Qingyi Sect wasn't worth as much as they thought in Master Blissful's mind.

The Golden Glory Fish was a ruthless demon beast species, and they wouldn't just stick to one style when dealing with people. For instance, it all depended on their mood. If someone tried to threaten a man like this, the result would be just the opposite of what that man wished for. At some point, Jiang Chen was also a man like this.



“Brother Mao, Chen Jiang killed your disciples outside the island, he didn’t violate the island’s rules. The trade fair has begun, and those who came here are all my friend, so I can’t just chase them away. As for the grudge between you, the Qingyi Sect and Chen Jiang, you can handle that however you wish after the trade fair ends. I do not want to see any more fighting on my Blissful Island.”

Master Blissful expressed his stand.

“Master Blissful, can’t you just give a little face to the Qingyi Sect? I have to kill this brat!”

Mao Sheng still didn’t want to give up.

“Hmph! Mao Sheng, I’ve already given you face by forgiving you for attacking just now. If you don’t to stay here, then get the fuck out of here! If you want to stay, you have to obey the rules set by me. If you dare strike again; don’t blame me for being cruel!”

Master Blissful coldly harrumphed and became hostile. Then, he waved his sleeve and flew back into the Blissful Manor, leaving behind Mao Sheng who now had a really dark face.

“Haha, Mao Sheng, did you hear that? If you don’t want to stay, just get the fuck out of here! Looks like the Qingyi Sect doesn’t deserve too much face out here.”

Old Man Ling Shan burst into laughter. He did not want to let go of this opportunity to mock Mao Sheng.

The color on Mao Sheng's face kept changing between black and red. At the same time, his heart was pounding extremely fast. It wasn't difficult to imagine how angry he was right now, his trip to the Blissful Island had caused him to lose a lot of face. Not only had he lost a lot of disciples, he even received a huge blow to his face; he had now become the laughing stock for all the bystanders.

Mao Sheng's eyes were glowing red. He stared at Jiang Chen who stood next to Old Man Ling Shan. If he could kill someone with his gaze, Jiang Chen would have been ripped into a thousand pieces by now. Mao Sheng hated Jiang Chen to the core, he really desired to devour Jiang Chen alive. It was all because of this young man that he had lost so much face.

“Little bastard, just you wait, I'll definitely tear you into thousand pieces!”

Mao Sheng gnashed his teeth in anger as he spoke.

“Shaggy old fool, hurry up and get the fuck out of here, stop being a disgrace.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand at Mao Sheng.

“Kaka, old dog, pooh! You're an insult to all dogs! Old fool, why are you still standing here? Do you want to discuss your life with this master dog?”

Big Yellow was happily bouncing around in front of Jiang Chen.

“Damn it, that dog again!”

“That dog really has a filthy mouth, even I can’t help but desire to rip his skin off.”

“Even a puppy is daring enough to show off in front of Mao Sheng. I guess his lungs will explode because of his fury.”

.....

Many people became speechless. This dog was just an amazing creature. His ability to draw out hatred was superb! Just a sentence from him could piss someone off.

“Hmph!”

Mao Shen coldly harrumphed. Then, he turned around and flew toward the Blissful Manor. Since he couldn’t fight on the island, staying here would just make him become a bigger laughing stock.

“Haha, shaggy old fool, return home to your mother and ask her for some milk!”

Big Yellow’s words caused the flying Mao Sheng to stagger, but he just continued flying without turning back.

Finally, it all came to an end. An infamous young man had killed all the disciples from the Qingyi Sect with a ruthless approach, and nearly made a Combat Soul warrior puke blood from anger. The name Chen Jiang had become pretty famous now.

“Little brother, you’re an extremely daring man.”

Old Man Ling Shan turned to Jiang Chen with a smile on his face.

“Thank you for helping us.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist toward Old Man Ling Shan.

## Chapter 285 – The Trade Fair Begins

---

Old Man Ling Shan patted Jiang Chen's shoulder. With a bright smile, he said, "An old man like me really likes someone as daring as you. The Qingyi sect is nothing! Daddy hates seeing those big sects bullying people! They always wear those superior expressions on their faces, disgusting!"

"Haha, what senior said is absolutely right. Why is the Qingyi Sect allowed to kill us, but we aren't allowed to kill them? That's ridiculous!"

Han Yan said with a laugh. Both Jiang Chen and Han Yan had good impressions toward this Old Man Ling Shan. He had just saved them, after all.

"Little brother Chen Jiang, the trade fair is soon starting. You guys just go ahead and have fun, and don't worry. If that Mao Sheng tries to pick on you, this old man won't let him easily!"

After Old Man Ling Shan said that, he just turned around and left.

"That old man is a nice man, this master dog likes him. If he could be my human p-mph... buddy, why are you covering my mouth?"

Big Yellow struggled, as his mouth was covered by Jiang Chen's hand.

“Damn dog, why are you still here?”

Han Yan felt really speechless toward this dog.

The conflict with the Qingyi Sect had come to a temporary stop. Jiang Chen and Han Yan brought Big Yellow and flew toward the center of the Blissful Island. They had paid the entrance fee, so they were eligible to enter the Blissful Manor.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan were flying at a low altitude, so low they almost touch the mountain peak while admiring the island’s splendid scenery. The entire island’s landscape caused them to feel extremely relaxed. The more they saw, the more they felt that this Master Blissful was someone who truly knew how to enjoy life.

Outside the Blissful Island, one after another warrior paid an Earth Restoration Pill and entered the island. After entering, they all proceeded toward the Blissful Manor. When they saw Jiang Chen and Han Yan along the way, they would all give Jiang Chen a smile. The warrior who previously had a minor conflict with Jiang Chen even bowed toward him while showing a flattering smile.

After witnessing Jiang Chen’s ruthless approach, this warrior slapped himself twice while thanking the heavens he was lucky enough to not get attacked by Jiang Chen. If he had been, his end would be the same as those from the Qingyi Sect. A man who was daring enough to kill the Qingyi Sect’s core disciples would definitely not mind killing a mere rogue cultivator.

“Since this is brother Chen Jiang’s first time coming to the Blissful Island, I’m sure you’re not familiar with how the trade fair works, right?”

Three warriors approached Jiang Chen with smiles on their faces and asked. One of them was the warrior who scolded Jiang Chen and Big Yellow as fools earlier.

“Correct, we have no idea how it works.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile. He looked really friendly to them right now. It was really difficult to relate this innocent looking young man to the fierce and ruthless maniac just earlier.

“Since there are so many people participating in this trade fair, I’m sure there will be a lot of rare and unique treasures. But, how is the trade fair being run?”

Han Yan asked.

“Brother Chen Jiang, this trade fair is divided into two parts, and it will last for three days. There is a huge square within the Blissful Manor, and it can hold over ten thousand men at any point of time. The first part of the trade fair is held within this square, and many people will be putting out treasures with hopes of selling them. Some will sell for pills, and some want to exchange items for something they need. Usually, nothing rare or precious will be found there.”

The warrior said.

“What about the second part?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“The second part is the auction that’s held within the Blissful Manor, and it’s usually held on the last day of the trade fair. Many people who possess precious treasures will entrust them to the Blissful Manor, and auction them off on the last day. Of course, the Blissful Manor will take a small cut if this treasure is successfully sold. In other words, you’ll only find good treasures in the auction on the last day of the trade fair.”

“However, those who participate in the auction are all wealthy men, and their treasures is not something ordinary people can afford.”

Both warriors explained the trade fair to Jiang Chen, clearly showing their thorough understanding of the trade fair. Actually, the reason why they were so enthusiastic to explain was to offer apologies, and leave a good impression for Jiang Chen. They did after all offend Jiang Chen earlier.

“I see. I do wonder, can I find the Nine Solar Holy Water during the auction?”

Jiang Chen probed.



“Nine Solar Holy Water? That’s the ultimate holy water, and it’s worth a fortune! I’m afraid it’ll be difficult to find here. You must know, a Saint Rank item like the Nine Solar Holy Water is considered a priceless treasure for all cultivators, who would auction it away? It would be much better to keep it for themselves.”

One of the warriors shook his head. The Nine Solar Holy Water was incredibly precious, it was a Saint Rank item with a pure Yang element. It was so rare that it was considered a rare treasure even in the Divine Continent.

Just a single drop of the Nine Solar Holy Water could completely improve a person’s potential. Without exaggerating, if a pig was fed with a single drop of the Nine Solar Holy Water, that pig’s potential would completely improve. It would be born anew and become a demon pig.

“Thank you for telling us.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist toward the three warriors.

“Don’t mention it. Brother Chen Jiang, if there is anything you need our help with in the future, just let us know.”

The warrior trio cupped their fists toward Jiang Chen at the same time, then they continued flying toward the Blissful Manor.

“Master Blissful is going to earn a fortune from the trade fair

alone. Looks like the entrance fee is worth nothing, the auction is where the fortune lies.”

Han Yan said with a sigh.

“Yea. There are so many people participating in this trade fair, I’m sure all kinds of rare and unique treasures will show up. Those who owns a real precious item will want their treasure to be sold for a good price. Putting it up at the auction is the best option. With that, the final cut earned by the Blissful Manor will be enormous.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head.

“Buddy, with the fortune you have right now, let alone those ordinary people, even some super powers can’t compare with you. When the auction starts, let’s buy every single treasure!”

Big Yellow said wagging his head.

“I just hope we can find the Nine Solar Holy Water. With that, our trip won’t be in vain.”

Jiang Chen took a deep breath. The reason he came here was to find the Nine Solar Holy Water so he could save Yan Chenyu.

The trio followed the crowd and entered the Blissful Manor. It was a manor with enormous space. Looking ahead, they could find rows of finely built buildings, green hills, and clear water almost

everywhere. There was even a waterfall there.

In the Blissful Manor's outer area, there was indeed a huge and empty square. The Whirling Sun Square that held the Qi Province competition was big, but compared to this square in front of them, it could only be considered a small square.

“Damn! Such a huge square, it is at least ten times bigger than the Whirling Sun Square!”

Han Yan sighed. He had finally seen something extraordinary. Furthermore, there was no way he could see so many Divine Core warriors gathering at the same spot in the Qi Province.

“Don't miss this, come closer and have a look! First-rate Mind Concentration Pearl from the ocean, a must have item for all cultivators! It can make you enter a cultivation mode in just one second!”

“Come check this out, 100 Yellow Spirit Plants in a bundle! It only cost 10 Earth Restoration Pills, and you can't find it anywhere else!”

.....

Not long after they arrived at the square, peddlers could be heard bawling everywhere. Many warriors had taken out their items and started peddling.

## Chapter 286 – Fish And Dragons Mixed In Together

---

“Fuck, do you think we’re all idiots? The Yellow Spirit Plant is only a High Mortal Rank herb, it’s not even close to approaching the Earth Rank! It also only has one usage in pill concoction, and you’re actually selling them for ten Earth Restoration Pills? Why don’t you just go rob someone? I’ll buy it for one Earth Restoration Pill, will you sell it?”

“Alright, I can see you’re a straightforward man. I’ll sell them to you for an Earth Restoration Pill. Here’s your one hundred Yellow Spirit Plants.”

On the other side!

“Old man, is your Mind Concentration Pearl real?”

“Of course it’s real! I’ll give you ten of these if you found out its fake! Also, this is a Mind Concentration Pearl from the ocean with great age, it is a must have item for concentrating your mind, a divine cultivation item! I’ll sell it for only 10 Earth Restoration Pills, really affordable!”

With a self-flattering smile, the old white-bearded man held a fist-sized pearl in his hand. The pearl was glowing like a crystal.

“Ten pills are too expensive... I’ll buy if you sell it for five pills!”

“Friend, do you think I’m selling vegetables? Go away if you don’t want to buy it, stop blocking the way for others who might want it. I’m sure someone will appreciate this Mind Concentration Pearl.”

“Fuck, why are you so impatient? Old man... fine, ten pills, sell it to daddy!”

The adult warrior took out ten Earth Restoration Pills and handed them over to the old man. The Mind Concentration Pearl had a great effect on ordinary cultivators, it could help them focus their mind quickly and enter a state of cultivation.

Both deals were witnessed by Jiang Chen and Han Yan. They exchanged glances, and couldn’t help but start smiling.

“Little Chen, what kind of trade fair is this? It’s no different from a bazaar! This is the first time I’ve witnessed such negotiations.”

Han Yan sighed.

“All these people are smart, no one wants to suffer any losses.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Boring, everything being sold here is cheap stuff, nothing interesting. Why don’t we just find a place within this Blissful Manor and sleep for three days, then we’ll just join the auction afterwards.”

A bored expression could be found on Big Yellow's face.

“Big Yellow, you're wrong. Just like the great tides washing away the sand, something good might emerged in a place like this. Since we're here, we should just go around and have a look, we might bump into something really good. You never know when luck will strike.”

Jiang Chen patted Big Yellow's head. After that, the trio started walking around in the square.

With more people coming to the place, business was getting hotter. All sorts of rare and strange items began showing up, and the entire place became very lively.

“Hurry up, have a look here! Ancient Golden Mammoth, a young one! Although it looks weak right now, if you put in your effort and raise it properly, it will grow into a real Golden Mammoth! Think about it, having a Golden Mammoth as your pet, that's something to be proud about!”

Not far away, a robust man wearing hemp clothes was hold a tiny creature in his hand. The creature was about the same size as the current Big Yellow. Its fur was pure white, and it had a pair of big ears and a long trunk. The robust man kept waving it around, showing it to the people.

“Fuck, do you really think we're all idiots? That's just a pig!”

“Damn it, this guy must be an idiot to try and fool us with a pig! If a Golden Mammoth really looks like that, daddy would rather transform into a pig!”

Many people nearly started coughing blood. The robust man really knew how to bullshit! He really considered everyone idiots by trying to say that the pig he held was a Golden Mammoth cub.

“You guys know nothing, none of you have good senses with judging a precious creature!”

The robust man impatiently said.

Jiang Chen who stood not far away shook his head, “Fishes and dragons are truly mixed in together here. You can find all sorts of people here.”

“Little Chen, do you think that pig is a real Golden Mammoth?”

Han Yan asked in a serious manner.

“Fuck! Brother Yan, I never knew you were an idiot! That’s just a pig, and it’s the most ordinary pig you can find! The intelligence of that guy who’s selling it, amazing!”

Big Yellow threw a look of despise at Han Yan.

“It is just a pig, let’s go.”

Jiang Chen looked at Han Yan with a smile. After that, he continued walking toward the other end of square.

“Ten thousand year old Ginseng, take one and you’ll stay young forever!”

“Heaven Rank Glorious Lotus King, there is only one left in this world!”

“Luminous Pearl from the deep sea, it can help you awaken your third eye!”

.....

All kinds of hawking could be heard. Each person was yelling with all their effort, and the words they used to describe their items made black line appear on Jiang Chen’s forehead.

“Damn it, all these bastards are complete liars! Look at that thing, it looks exactly like a carrot! Can you call that a thousand-year-old Ginseng? Isn’t this daylight robbery? And that Glorious Lotus King, can that thing really be considered a Lots King? Although I’ve seen a Lotus King before, I’m sure it doesn’t look like a chrysanthemum! And that item, awakening the third eye with just a Luminous Eye? Fuck!”

Han Yan felt like he was going to go crazy soon. All these sellers



were truly wicked, they could simply claim they had the most valuable treasure in the world. All of them were just blunt cheaters.

“Brother Yan, you really don’t know about this? Although they are cheat, there are still people who will fall for it. In this world, a normal looking item might be a rare treasure, and that’s how they’re manipulating the mentality of a possible victim.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

There were simply too many people in this trade fair. Inevitably, there would also be many cheaters mixed in. But, there were also a lot of people who were genuinely selling treasures. Everyone were taking whatever they needed, some would exchange for pills, some wanted combat weapons, and some wanted combat skills and cultivation skills.

“Little Chen, there is a huge group gathering in front of us. Let’s go have a look.”

Han Yan looked at the crowd in front of him. There were many people gathering there.

The trio walked forward and entered the crowd. They saw an old white-bearded man with a stall in front of him. On top of the stall, there was a rusty scrap metal. Clearly, it was part of a broken sword, and it looked really old. It was similar to the broken sword piece Big Yellow found back in the Whirling Sun City. But, it clearly didn’t have the same origin as the broken sword Big Yellow

had found. If it did, with Big Yellow ability, he would have sensed it by now.

“Old man, who are you trying to fool? Claiming that this scrap metal is a broken piece of a saint weapon... you’re nuts!”

“Yea! This scrap metal looks normal, you should show us something special even if you really want to cheat us.”

“Haha, perhaps this old man is a relative of this the guy who was selling that pig just now. They both came to the Blissful Island for fun.”

.....

The crowd burst out into laughter.

“You guys know nothing! Although this broken sword looks terrible, it’s really a precious treasure! You guys simply don’t have enough knowledge!”

The old man wore torn clothes, but his cultivation base was quite decent. He was at the peak Early Divine Core realm.

“Nah. I’m an expert at evaluation treasures, let me see what’s so special about this broken sword.”

An adult man bent down and grabbed the broken sword with his

hand. After some careful examination, he simply threw it back and said, “Scrap metal.”

“Get lost, you know nothing!”

The old man impatiently waved his hand.

“Haha, old man, how much are you selling this scrap metal for?”

Someone mockingly said.

“I’ll sell it for High-Ranked Combat Weapon.”

The old man said.

“Fuck! A High-Ranked Combat Weapon? You’re too greedy!”

“This old man is delusional! Trying to exchange a piece of scrap metal for a High-Ranked Combat Weapon? His head must have been squeezed by a door before, or perhaps a pig bit him!”

The old man’s words caused the crowd to burst into laughter once again. It was really funny, trying to exchange a High-Ranked Combat Weapon with just a mere scrap metal. Although a Combat Weapon was worth nothing for those disciples and elders from big sects, it was really valuable in the eyes of those rogue cultivators who had limited resources. They had to depend on themselves with their cultivation, that’s the reason why this old who was a

peak Early Divine Core warrior still didn't have any Combat Weapons that fit his style.

“I want this broken sword.”

A voice sounded out from within the crowd, instantly stopping all laughter. Everyone threw their glance at the young man in white. When they saw the face of this young man, they immediately swallowed their mocking words. Because, this young man in white was none other than Jiang Chen!

“Fuck, who is this foolish youngs-”

Someone covered his mouth before the man could finish speaking. This man must have arrive pretty late, which explains why he didn't witness how Jiang Chen slaughtered those Qingyi Sect disciples.

“Are you courting death?”

Someone gazed at the warrior. Then, he explained to him who this young man was and what he had done to the warrior who just spoke through his divine sense. In an instant, the face of that warrior turned extremely pale, and he didn't dare open his mouth again.

“Hehe, young master Chen Jiang surely knows the value of this treasure! You're not going to suffer any losses by trading a High-Ranked Combat Weapon for it.”

When the old man saw that it was Jiang Chen who wanted to buy his broken sword, a flattering smile immediately emerged on his face. He knew Jiang Chen had an incredible cultivation base, so he already thought of him as someone filthy rich.

“Young master Chen Jiang, this is clearly just scrap metal.”

“That’s right! Young master Chen Jiang, this old man is a cheater, don’t be fooled by him.”

Someone tried helping.

Jiang Chen didn’t say anything. With a flip of his palm, he retrieved a longsword from his storage ring and tossed it to the old man. Looking at the longsword, the old man’s eyes instantly lit up. It was a razor sharp longsword, and it was constantly producing a buzzing sound. Clearly, it was a High-Ranked Combat Weapon.

“Young master Chen Jiang is indeed a straightforward man. This treasure belongs to you now.”

The old man respectfully handed the broken sword to Jiang Chen, but he was laughing in his mind, “What a rich idiot, daddy can’t see anything special about this broken sword, but it still let me earn a High-Ranked Combat Weapon! Wahaha, I’m so clever!”

“Sigh! This young man has no experience, he is so easy to fool...”

“Yea... We just can’t understand how rich people think, a High-Ranked Combat Weapon is nothing in their eyes... Lavishly spending like this just tell us he is a spoiled rich kid.”

“Damn it, I should get a scrap metal and sell it as well. I might be able to find some idiots.”

The crowds muttered. Although none of them dared speak louder, the way they looked at Jiang Chen changed, as if they were looking at an idiot.

“Little Chen, why did you exchange the High-Ranked Combat Weapon for a scrap metal?”

Han Yan was puzzled. He asked Jiang Chen through his divine sense.

---

Notes:

[1\]](#) Honest and dishonest people, mixed in together.

## Chapter 287 – Foolish Spendthrift

---

Hearing what Han Yan asked, a smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face, "In no way is this a Saint weapon, only a real Saint can make a Saint weapon. The Saint is a supreme existence in the Saint Origin realm, it is extremely difficult to obtain a broken Saint weapon. But, this isn't a scrap metal either, it's actually a broken King Weapon."

"King Weapon?"

Han Yan was startled, he had never thought of this. "Why can't I see anything special about it?"

"That's because you have no knowledge about the Combat King realm. Those who've reached the Combat King realm are all superior people, they have mastered the Dimensional Laws, which allows them to walk through the void. I can clearly send Dimensional Law ripples from this broken sword, therefore, it must be a broken King Weapon. Exchanging it for a High-Ranked Combat Weapon is actually a big gain for me."

Jiang Chen said.

"The fuck? Little Chen, how can you sense Dimensional Laws from this? And how can you really tell that this scrap metal piece is part of a broken King Weapon?"

Han Yan stared at Jiang Chen, speechless. After knowing Jiang Chen for so long, he had a feeling that this guy knew everything.

There was no questions he couldn't answer.

“Because my eyesight is good.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders. Although this explanation was pretty lame, the fact that he was a reincarnated Saint was even more ridiculous.

“Come, let's go check out some other places.”

Jiang Chen said with a laugh. He was previously pretty disappointed with the trade fair, but after he obtained the broken piece of a King Weapon, his mood immediately became much better. And it also only cost him a High-Ranked Combat Weapon.

A High-Ranked Combat Weapon was considered a priceless treasure in the eyes of other people, but Jiang Chen didn't mind it at all, as he had a few hundred combat weapons right now. Out of those weapons, hundreds of them were High-Ranked Combat Weapons. This was the loot he had harvested back in Inferno Hell.

“Please hold on, young master Chen Jiang, I still have a treasure with me. I was wondering if young master Chen Jiang has any interest in it.”

When the old man who just earned a High-Ranked Combat Weapon saw Jiang Chen leaving, he quickly stopped him. He had an extremely good impression of Jiang Chen right now, and he gave Jiang Chen a blossoming smile. However, his blossoming



smile was pretty much an insult to flowers.

“Oh? What is it? Let me have a look.”

Jiang Chen turned around. He wanted to see what other good stuff this old man could show.

Hearing the conversation, the dispersing crowd immediately assembled once again. They immediately threw their glance at the old man. In their minds, they had branded this man a swindler, no one believe he could show them anything valuable.

Even with this mentality, when these people saw the item taken out by the old man, they were immediately stunned. Some of them even began cursing the old man's mother.

The old man carefully took an item out from his storage ring. The item was the size of an adult palm, and rust covered its surface. It was a bronze plate.

“Fuck his sister! This old guy just can't stop swindling! He took out more trash and claims it is a treasure. Does he really think young master Chen Jiang is an idiot?”

“Damn it, kill this old swindler! This is ridiculous, I really wish I can leave a shoe mark on his old face!”

“Everything this old cheater showed us is trash, and he still has the audacity to sell that trash like it was treasures, how ridiculous!

We should ask Master Blissful to chase this cheater away from the Blissful Island, and permanently ban him from participating in the trade fair!”

.....

The crowds were gnashing their teeth in anger, and they were close to leaping onto the old man and tearing him into pieces. This old man just didn’t know when to stop. Once again, he was bluffing with some trash. Perhaps he knew young master Chen Jiang was filthy rich, and wanted to try and con him for all his money.

“Get lost, none of you know anything!”

The old man had an angry expression on his face. After that, he turned to Jiang Chen with a flattering expression, “Brother Chen Jiang, they have eyes but fail to see, none of them can recognize my treasure’s greatness. Although it looks like a broken bronze plate, it’s really heavy! I found it some time ago, and I can’t exactly tell what it is. BUT, I’m sure it’s something extraordinary!”

“Brother Chen Jiang, don’t get conned by this old cheater again, that’s just a broken bronze plate, not a treasure!”

“Precisely! Brother Chen Jiang, this old swindler is just trying to con you! I think you should return the scrap metal you previously bought.”

The people couldn't stand it any longer, they tried helping by advising Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen threw an examining glance at the broken bronze plate. With his knowledge, he couldn't see anything special about it, no Dimension Law ripples could be sensed either. However, Jiang Chen still took the bronze plate. When the plate fell into his hand, he immediately felt its heavy weight.

“This is only a palm-sized bronze plate, but it actually weighs more than a thousand jin. I can't even tell what material it's made of. It looks like something extraordinary.”

Jiang Chen had mixed emotions in his mind.

“Big Yellow, can you sense anything special about this bronze plate?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“I can't sense anything special about it, even my senses toward treasures. But, my intuition tells me this bronze plate isn't as simple as it looks. Just ask that old man how much he wants to sell this for. Since we have the money, let's buy it for now. We might put it to good use in the future.”

Big Yellow answered through his divine sense.

“How much are you selling this broken thing for?”

Jiang Chen asked.

The old man's eyes instantly lit up when he saw Jiang Chen showing interest. He thought in his mind that he had finally found a filthy rich fool. Clenching his teeth tightly, he said, "One thousand Earth Restoration Pills."

"What?! One thousand Earth Restoration Pills? Fuck, I've finally witnessed what it means to rob someone under daylight! Damn it, why don't you just go and rob someone?"

"I can't stand this anymore, let's beat him to death, we must kill this conman! This old swindler must be crazy because he's poor, he really wants to sell a broken bronze plate for one thousand Earth Restoration Pills; that's equal to one million Mortal Restoration Pills!"

"Brother Chen Jiang, if I was you, I would immediately beat this old fool to death!"

The crowd got angry, no one could stand it any longer; this was clearly a daylight robbery. Only an idiot would be fooled by him!

"One thousand Earth Restoration Pills is too expensive. Furthermore, I have no idea what this item is for. How about I give you five hundred thousand Mortal Restoration Pills?"

Jiang Chen said.

The crowd was stunned. Each and every single person stared at Jiang Chen like they were looking at a ghost. Was there something wrong with this guy's brain? 500,000 Mortal Restoration Pills, that's equal to 50 Earth Restoration Pills, and it could be considered an enormous wealth for any Early Divine Core warrior.

A look of excitement emerged in the old man's eyes. He was merely probing just now, he never thought Jiang Chen really wanted to buy it.

“Brother Chen Jiang, it's a huge difference between 500,000 Mortal Restoration Pills and 1,000 Earth Restoration Pills, how can you negotiate the price like this?”

The old man showed a sad face. On the other side, the crowds really couldn't stand this old man any longer. This old fool just didn't know when to stop! Being able to sell a broken bronze plate for 500,000 Mortal Restoration Pills can really be considered a lucky strike for him.

“Since you don't want to sell it to me, never mind then. To be frank, I feel like I'm actually suffering a loss by paying this price.”

Jiang Chen casually tossed the bronze plate into the old man's arm, then he turned around and left.

“Hey, hey, take it easy young master Chen Jiang, I'll sell it for 500,000 Mortal Restoration Pills! Consider this day your lucky day!”

The old man panicked when he saw Jiang Chen leaving. Without hesitation, he pulled Jiang Chen's sleeve and tucked the bronze plate into Jiang Chen's hand. He decided to sell it for 500,000 Mortal Restoration pills, since that was already a really huge sum. Furthermore, the bronze plate was useless for him, so he might as well exchange it for some resources he could use in his cultivation.

Jiang Chen took out a storage bag and tossed it to the old man, then he stored the bronze plate and left.

“Old man, you're really lucky today!”

Someone teased the old man. The old man minded his own business and put away his stall. With a bright smile on his face, he happily left the place while whistling.

On the other side, when Jiang Chen walked a few steps away from the scene, the robust man who was selling the pig happily came over to him, “Young master Chen Jiang, I can tell you are a man who can see what others cannot! My Ancient Golden Mammoth only cost 100 Earth Restoration Pills, I'm sure young master Chen Jiang won't regret buying it, as it will greatly help you in the future!”

The fuck?!

Han Yan felt a strong desire to slap this robust man. This guy really thought of Jiang Chen as a spendthrift. Clearly, he had seen what Jiang Chen did just now, and considered Jiang Chen a filthy rich fool. If he wanted to sell this pig, the buyer must be the young

master Chen Jiang in front of him, he just couldn't let go of this great opportunity.

“Damn you! You call this stupid creature a Golden Mammoth? Woof!”

Big Yellow loudly barked at the pig. As if it had just experienced the scariest thing possible, the pig stared at the puppy in front of it. In the following second, its body started violently trembling, and within just a few breaths of time, its legs stretched, and its eyes shut; it was dead. The pig was just an ordinary animal, it could not withstand Big Yellow's scariness.

“Haha, brother, your Golden Mammoth just died of fright!”

Someone burst into laughter.

“So you call this a Golden Mammoth? Even a dog can stare it to death, what bullshit!”

Many people started laughing out loudly.

“Young master Chen Jiang, your pet just scared my Golden Mammoth to death. We can't just let this matter go like this, right?”

The robust man threw the pig away like he was throwing some trash away. Then, he turned to Jiang Chen. It looked like he was going to try and con him for a compensation.

“Oh? So what do you want? Why don’t I just give you this dog? But, I do wonder whether or not you actually have the guts to take it.”

Jiang Chen stared back at the robust man, interested.

Big Yellow bared his teeth. If this guy really took him, he wouldn’t be able to see tomorrow’s sun.

“Why would I want your dog? You just have to compensate me 100 Earth Restoration Pills.”

The robust man said.

“Get lost!”

Jiang Chen’s face instantly turned cold, he really did not want to spend any more time with someone like this.

Jiang Chen’s stare made the robust man’s soul tremble. He felt a chill crawling down his spine. Only now did he recall what kind of person this young man was, he was a man who could casually kill the Qingyi Sect’s core disciples. If he offended Jiang Chen now, he would later die without even knowing how. Although Jiang Chen couldn’t kill him on the island, once the trade fair ended, killing him would be a piece of cake.



Jiang Chen turned around and continued walking, leaving behind the robust man who now wore a gloomy expression.

“Hey, why don’t you ask young master Chen Jiang for compensation? He is a rich man!”

Someone teased.

“Get lost! Daddy still want to live!”

The robust man looked back, feeling unlucky that he didn’t have the same fortune that old man did.

## Chapter 288 – Xiao Wei

---

The trade fair was bustling with noise and excitement. An ocean of people packed the entire square, causing it to look like a food market. Every single person here was a great warrior, and the weakest was at least a Late Heavenly Core warrior. Divine Core warriors could be found in every corner of the square.

For the Fragrant Sky City, any of the people here was someone they would have to admire. This showed the difference between territories. Each place had its own way of supporting its own inhabitants, there were numerous territories in the Saint Origin Realm, and the thickness of the natural Yuan energy differed a lot in each one. This was the main reason why those from one place had higher a cultivation level than those from another.

The first day passed, it was a free and unconstrained day for Jiang Chen, Han Yan and Big Yellow. Aside from the broken King Weapon and the broken bronze plate, they didn't find anything interesting.

Even at night time, everyone in the square were still busy, and the trading between warriors was still ongoing. Since the people here were all great warriors, none of them had any problems with their eyesight. That's why they could see all the items clearly, even though it was dark.

“Little Chen, everything here is just trash. We've wandered around for an entire day, but nothing special caught our eyes.”

Han Yan was not in a good mood.

“What do you expect? The real treasures can only be found in the auction in two days. Look, none of the people from the Blissful Manor are here to maintain the trade fair’s order.”

Big Yellow said.

“Precisely. The Blissful Manor doesn’t even put the trade fair in the square in their mind. Master Blissful is only focusing on the auction. An auction of such an enormous scale will definitely bring unimaginable profit for Master Blissful.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head in approval. Master Blissful was a smart man, he would never waste his time on a trade fair like this.

“Little Chen, do you think we can find the Nine Solar Holy Water in the auction that comes in two days?”

Han Yan asked.

“I have no idea.”

Jiang Chen shook his head. The Nine Solar Holy Water was his main purpose for coming here, and he was much more impatient regarding that than Han Yan was.

“So what should we do now? We can’t just monkey around here

all day, right?”

Big Yellow said. He was bored.

“Let’s go to the manor, we’ll find a place to rest and just wait for the auction in two days.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen turned around and started walking toward the manor. There was nothing to see in this trade fair which looked like a food market. Ordinary treasures couldn’t catch Jiang Chen’s interest, and if anyone possesses real precious treasures, they wouldn’t sell it here, they would auction it away in two days.

Jiang Chen also wanted to use these two days to improve his cultivation. After absorbing the Flood Dragon’s blood essence, his Dragon Transformation skill had evolved, and it also gave him a total of 1,600 Dragon Marks, which allowed him to break through to the Mid Divine Core realm. He wanted to spend these two days on absorbing more demon souls and strengthen his cultivation base.

His conflict with Mao Sheng made Jiang Chen realize a fact; with his current combat strength, he was still no match for a Combat Soul warrior. Since he had offended the Qingyi Sect, once the trade fair ended in two days, Mao Sheng would definitely attack him.

Although Old Man Ling Shan was willing to help him, Jiang Chen didn’t like putting his face in the hands of someone else. Furthermore, the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan were

both his enemies as well. He was potentially under fire from all directions. Therefore, increasing his combat strength was the number one priority right now.

The Blissful Manor was a gigantic place, it nearly occupied the entire center region of the island. The gigantic manor was brilliantly illuminated throughout the night, and rows of luxuriously decorated courtyards could be seen everywhere.

With both hands behind his back, Jiang Chen walked toward the Blissful Manor's main gate. There were four gates leading to the manor, and the gate Jiang Chen was approaching was the one closest to the square. No guards were in sight.

“Not a single guard here?”

Han Yan said.

“During the trade fair, they don't need to put any guards out here. Furthermore, no one is dumb enough to cause trouble in the Blissful Manor.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile. After that, he continued walking toward the manor.

After walking a few steps, Jiang Chen and Han Yan saw a beautiful girl gracefully walking toward them. The girl had a soft and curvy body, and her face was very seductive. This was the pretty mermaid who had earlier appeared outside the Blissful

Island.

She wasn't in her usual mermaid form right now, she looked like a perfectly normal human. When the girl saw Jiang Chen, she quickly walked in front of him, and a smile blossomed onto her face.

“Young master Chen Jiang.”

The girl slightly bowed toward Jiang Chen, then she said, “My name is Xiao Wei. I wonder if there's anything I can do for young master Chen Jiang?”

Clearly, Xiao Wei was showing some interest in this handsome young man. As a demon beast herself, she loved a man with a wild nature. Jiang Chen's behavior yesterday was not only wild, it was also incredibly fierce. When he struck, he killed. Xiao Wei had never seen such a resolute characteristic on any young genius, this had made her impression of Jiang Chen really good.

“Miss Xiao Wei, while waiting for the auction to begin in two days, we need to find a quiet place to cultivate. I wonder, could Miss Xiao Wei help us with this? Just let me know how many Earth Restoration Pills I need to pay.”

Jiang Chen straightforwardly said.

“For any other person, it would cost ten Earth Restoration Pills to stay a night here. But, young master Chen Jiang is special. Not

only does Xiao Wei like you, even Master Blissful likes you. Therefore, no matter how long young master Chen Jiang wants to stay here, we won't take a single pill from you. Please follow Xiao Wei, Xiao Wei will bring young master Chen Jiang to a quiet place."

Xiao Wei replied with a smile. After that, she turned around and began walking toward the inner area of the manor.

"Kaka! Little Chen, this girl has her eyes on you."

Big Yellow laughed out heartily, then he started blabbering. Xiao Wei heard what he said, but she didn't show any reaction, as if she didn't really mind at all.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan both glared at Big Yellow at the same time. They really wished they could stitch this dog's lips together. No matter what happened, this dog could twist it to another meaning.

The group walked along a path within the manor. Magnificent hills could be seen around them, it was a place with a really splendid landscape. Along the path were rows of independent courtyards, and each of them were labeled with a number.

Under Xiao Wei's lead, Jiang Chen and Han Yan came to a street. The floor was made from shiny black stones. Along the way, they saw many warriors walking by. Some of them had pleasant smiles on their faces, and some of them looked panicked.

“Most of these people have good items they want to sell in the auction, and they need to register themselves in advance. Also, some are just like you; they have no interest in the trade fair outside, so they just come here to rest until the auction begins.”

Xiao Wei explained.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan nodded their heads. Those who came here, regardless of whether they were staying here until the auction began, or to sell their items; none of them were poor.

“Miss Xiao Wei, are all the items sold at the auction entrusted by outsiders?”

Han Yan asked.

“Of course not! We, the Blissful Manor have many good treasures as well. Usually, the final item will be from us, and we won’t change the order unless someone can take out something even more precious than what we have.”

Xiao Wei said.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan nodded their heads again. They didn’t doubt Xiao Wei’s words, it was expected that the Blissful Manor had a lot of good treasures. It wouldn’t make any sense if Master Blissful didn’t have something good himself, and still wanted to hold the trade fair.



“Miss Xiao Wei, do you have any idea if we can find Nine Solar Holy Water during the auction?”

Jiang Chen probed.

“Young master Chen Jiang, Nine Solar Holy Water is an item of pure Yang; it’s an extremely rare item. I have no idea if it will appear. Since I don’t hold a prominent position in the manor, what I know is limited. Furthermore, those strange cultivators from the ocean and rogue cultivators from the continent might have something unexpected, but they usually keep that secret to the public. I’m sorry I couldn’t answer your question.”

Xiao Wei was really helpful. She tried to answer all of Jiang Chen’s questions, but she really had no idea about the Nine Solar Holy Water. In fact, her words were spoken merely to comfort Jiang Chen. In her opinion, although it was a major auction, it would be incredibly difficult to find Nine Solar Holy Water. After all, if someone really possessed such a rare and precious item, who would want to sell it? Perhaps an idiot?

“Thank you, Xiao Wei.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile. Regardless, this girl left a pretty good impression on him.

“Don’t mention it, young master Chen Jiang. Alright, we’re here. There is a hill behind this courtyard, and it’s considered a quiet place. I wonder, is young master Chen Jiang satisfied with this?”

Xiao Wei brought Jiang Chen and Han Yan to a courtyard. The door to the courtyard was opened. There were three buildings within the courtyard, and it had an elegant landscape with a green hill behind.

“I like this place. Miss Xiao Wei, this is a High-Ranked Combat Weapon, it’s yours now.”

Jiang Chen casually waved his hand. In an instant, a bright light appeared in his hand, then a razor sharp longsword emerged in Xiao Wei’s eyes. Xiao Wei’s expression slightly changed. The longsword was as thin as a cicada’s wing, and it reflected light like a crystal would. Clearly, it was an extraordinary weapon.

“Young master Chen Jiang, this...”

Xiao Wei looked at Jiang Chen with an expression of disbelief.

“It’s yours.”

Jiang Chen walked past Xiao Wei and went straight into the courtyard. Jiang Chen wasn’t a stingy man. Furthermore, using a High-Ranked Combat Weapon to build a good relationship with someone from the Blissful Manor was a good deal.

“Thank you young master Chen Jiang, for giving me this sword.”

While holding the longsword in her hand, a joyful expression emerged on Xiao Wei’s face. Although she was an Early Divine

Core warrior, she was only using a Middle-Ranked Combat Weapon. She never expected Jiang Chen to be such a generous man. By giving her a High-Ranked Combat Weapon, Jiang Chen's image in Xiao Wei's mind had once again improved.

After Jiang Chen and Han Yan walked into the courtyard, Xiao Wei hurried up and closed the door for them. After that, extremely joyful, she left the place.

“Brother Yan, I'm going to enter secluded cultivation and improve cultivation. You and Big Yellow carry on with your cultivation, just don't forget about the auction two days later.”

Jiang Chen said to Han Yan and Big Yellow.

“Alright.”

Han Yan nodded his head.

A courtyard with three rooms, it was perfect for the trio. After Jiang Chen entered his room, he didn't pay any attention to the decoration, he immediately sat down.

“If I want to break through to the Late Divine Core realm, I'll need twice as much as I needed for the Mid Divine Core realm, 3,200 Dragon Marks. With my currently rock solid foundation, I can absorb souls without any worries. Although I have a lot of souls, only a handful of them are Late Divine Core souls...”

Jiang Chen thought to himself.

## Chapter 289 – Snatching Food From A Dog's Mouth? No Way!

---

Jiang Chen went through all the belongings in his storage put, and put all demon and devil souls together. He had so many of them that they simply piled up like a small hill. Most of them were demon and devil souls, and some were crystal cores.

Jiang Chen could use the crystal cores in the future. Now, he wanted to absorb the demon souls while he had a rock solid foundation.

Scanning with his divine sense, Jiang Chen instantly figured out how many demon souls and devil souls he had. He didn't have many Late Divine Core demon souls right now. Before he met the Flood Dragon, he had absorbed quite a number of them, and what remained was mostly Early and Mid Divine Core souls, and a huge amount of Heavenly Core demon souls.

“With my current strength, these Mid Divine Core demon souls can barely provide me any benefits, and the Early Divine Core demon souls are even worse. As for those Heavenly Core demon souls, they're just worthless, absorbing one of those is like a tiger eating an ant; worthless. But, since I can't find any way to use them, I might as well just absorb them all.”

Jiang Chen estimated that with the number of demon souls he has right now, he can at most only form another 600 Dragon Marks. The further he cultivated with the Dragon Transformation skill, the more energy he would need to use in order to form new Dragon Marks. It was completely incomparable to the initial stage.

Whenever Jiang Chen absorbed a huge amount of demon souls and restoration pills, he deeply felt that cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill was something that required enormous effort and a lot of energies. It was a path that devoured all energies, a bottomless hole to fill, and it was also a path that defied all natural orders.

Currently, he was still far away from reaching his goal of having 100,000 Dragon Marks. But, he could only look forward.

Jiang Chen adjusted himself to his best cultivation condition. With the circulation of the Dragon Transformation skill, Jiang Chen began absorbing the demon souls. The demon souls and devil souls that were piled up like a small hill within his storage ring started diminishing at an incredible speed.

The way Jiang Chen devoured the souls was like a massive whale drinking water, it was just incredible. If anyone saw how he cultivation, that person would definitely faint out of fear. Energy consumption like this was not something any ordinary people could imagine. Jiang Chen was truly the king of energy consumption.

One could only understand why Jiang Chen was so formidable by witnessing how frightening Jiang Chen's cultivation method was. Compared to other warriors, the amount of energies he needed to level up was several times more than it was for them. This led to a completely different foundation, and the super abnormal monster, Jiang Chen.

Soon, another day passed, and the morning of the third day arrived. Jiang Chen had finally absorbed all the demon and devil souls he had, and just as he had expected, he had formed another 600 Dragon Marks. What did another 600 Dragon Marks really mean? It meant another 6,000,000 Jin of strength!

But if this incredible amount of strength was used by Jiang Chen, the result it would cause was far greater, because the strength provided by the Dragon Marks could be multiplied!

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. Bone cracking sounds could repeatedly be heard from his body. With every single new Dragon Mark formed, his body would be tempered. The strength of his body could actually be compared to a High-Ranked Combat Weapon.

“Now I have a total of 2,200 Dragon Marks, and the new ones have given me an incredible increase to my combat strength. I finally have the ability to fight that Mao Sheng!”

A confident look emerged on Jiang Chen's face. With his current combat strength, although he wasn't confident in killing any Combat Soul warrior, he had the ability to fight an Early Combat Soul warrior, as a Mid Divine Core warrior! This situation was pretty insane.

Jiang Chen opened the door and walked out from his room. Immediately, he saw a man and a dog staring at each other within the courtyard. A lively look emerged in their eyes when they saw Jiang Chen emerging from his room.

“Little Chen, you’re finally out! We’re damn bored! Today is the last day of the trade fair, if you still hadn’t come out, me and Big Yellow would start walking around in the square.”

Han Yan said. He and Big Yellow had special bloodlines, so ordinary secluded cultivation was useless for them, as they might just break through at any time.

“There is nothing to see in the trade fair.”

Jiang Chen shook his head. He had no interest in the trade fair.

“Buddy, I guess more people have come to the square in the last two days; we might be able to find something new. Let’s go have some fun, staying in this courtyard the entire day is boring.”

Big Yellow clearly couldn’t stand it any longer.

“Alright, let’s just take a walk then.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders. Since it was the trade fair’s last day, he didn’t mind taking a walk.

The trio walked out from the courtyard and proceeded over to the square. When they arrived, it was still packed with an ocean of faces. The number of people here not only hadn’t reduced, it had actually increased by a lot! It seemed like more people had arrived at the island.



“I sense a familiar aura.”

Big Yellow’s ears stood up. He threw his glance toward the source of the smell and said, “There, look over there!”

A look of excitement immediately emerged on Jiang Chen’s face. It looked like Big Yellow had just found some precious treasure. Anything that could be sensed by Big Yellow was definitely something extraordinary.

Soon, Jiang Chen and his group came to a stall. There were already a few men standing around it. The owner of the stall was an old man in his fifties, and on his stall, there was a golden demon soul weakly glowing.

“This is a Flaming Stallion’s demon soul, a Mid Divine Core Flaming Stallion. This dog wanted to come here because of this.”

Jiang Chen immediately sensed the origin of this demon soul, and he finally understood why Big Yellow said he had sensed a familiar aura. The Flaming Stallion was a superior existence amongst the horse species, it was an extremely rare and noble species. Big Yellow was a Dragon Horse, a species born from a Dragon and Golden Stallion. If Big Yellow could absorb this demon soul, he would be able to gain huge benefits.

“Old man, how much for this demon soul?”

Big Yellow impatiently asked.

“500 Earth Restoration Pills.”

The old man glanced at Jiang Chen and spoke with an indifferent tone. Clearly, he was a newcomer who didn't know who Jiang Chen.

“Although a Flaming Stallion is rare, I don't think its demon soul is worth 500 Earth Restoration Pills; that's equal to 5,000,000 Mortal Restoration Pills! Old man, your price is really expensive.”

Someone said.

“500 Earth Restoration Pills, no discount.”

The old man didn't even look at the person, he just indifferently repeated his word. He knew that if someone didn't want this demon soul, he would still consider one Earth Restoration Pill to expensive. But for those who really wanted it, they would buy it even if it cost 500 Earth Restoration Pills.”

“500 Earth Restoration Pills, I'll buy it.”

Jiang Chen took out a storage bag and tossed it onto the stall. The crowd threw their glance over at the young man, and when they saw it was Jiang Chen, they all inwardly sighed.

“Him again! This Chen Jiang is a filthy rich man! 500 Earth Restoration Pills, he didn’t even make a frown when tossing it over.”

“Yea... I heard he exchanged a High-Ranked Combat Weapon for a scrap metal a few days ago, and he also bought a broken bronze plate for 500,000 Mortal Restoration Pills.”

“What a rich spendthrift!”

.....

The crowd started whispering amongst each other, but Jiang Chen just kept smiling. He didn’t mind what other people said about him. As long as it could be useful for Big Yellow, he would spend everything he got for him.

The old man’s eyes lit up when he saw the storage bag with 500 Earth Restoration Pills, and the way he looked at Jiang Chen changed as well. He immediately said, “Little brother, here you go!”

The old man handed over the Flaming Stallion demon soul.

“Hold on.”

Right at this moment, a voice sounded out from behind them. Three people wearing white clothes, each of them held a longsword and were walking toward them. They were two young

men and a girl. They wore prideful expressions on their faces, and they walked in an arrogant manner.

“Damn it, this master dog hates those who look like someone owes them money!”

Big Yellow said in a ferocious manner.

“They’re from the Myriad Sword Sect.”

“That man looks like Lin Anying from the Myriad Sword Sect. I heard is a rare genius core disciple, and he has obtained a spot in the Martial Palace.”

“Those from the Myriad Sword Sect are not someone we can afford to offend, let’s make way for them. This Lin Anying has reached the peak Divine Core realm, and there’s a great chance of him soon breaking through to the Combat Soul realm. He is one of the strongest warriors in the younger generation.”

Many people looked at Lin Anying in awe and veneration. In the Eastern Continent, besides the Martial Saint Dynasty, super powers like the Myriad Sword Sect and Shanguan Clan were feared and respected by almost all. No one dared offend a core disciple from the Myriad Sword Sect.

“I saw this demon soul before you did; I want it now.”

Lin Anying walked in front of the stall and spoke.

“Damn you! Get the fuck outta this master dog’s face!”

Big Yellow couldn’t stand it any longer. Damn it! He had never seen anyone so shameless! Jiang Chen had for it, so it didn’t matter whether or not Lin Anying saw it first.

“Where did this damn dog come from? How dare you talk like that to senior disciple Lin? Are you seeking death?”

The girl shouted at Big Yellow.

“Fuck off, bitch! Your face looks like a shoe, don’t show it off and scare people! Get the fuck outta here, and stop making people vomit!”

Big Yellow was furious! He didn’t care who these three people were, he couldn’t stand anyone who tries to snatch away something he wanted, even if they were from the Myriad Sword Sect!

“Damn dog!”

The girl was extremely furious. No girl who took great care of their appearance could stand these kinds of words. She was instantly enraged, and a strong desire to kill Big Yellow with a slap emerged in her mind. However, Lin Anying stopped her. This place was after all inside the Blissful Manor, and no fighting was allowed during the trade fair.

“Brother Chen Jiang, I’m Lin Anying from the Myriad Sword Sect. I have a Ferghana Horse, and this Flaming Stallion demon soul would provide my Ferghana Horse huge benefits. I hope Brother Chen Jiang can give this demon soul to me?”

Lin Anying told Jiang Chen. He was at the scene when Jiang Chen killed those disciples from the Qingyi Sect, so he knew Jiang Chen was a ruthless man. That’s why he tried speaking with a rather polite tone. However, his words left no room for negotiation. He spoke as if the demon soul belonged to him.

## Chapter 290 – Damn Bitch

---

That's how arrogant a genius from the Myriad Sword Sect was. Anything he wanted would be his, no one dared fight him for it.

For a moment, not one person dared say anything. Even the old man who sold the Flaming Stallion demon soul had a gloomy expression. Everyone stared at Jiang Chen, they wanted to see if the Chen Jiang who dared kill Qingyi Sect disciples was daring enough to fight the genius from the Myriad Sword Sect.

“Young master, I think you should just give up this demon soul and let this Myriad Sword Sect disciple have it.”

The old man cautiously said. He in a dilemma as well! There was no way he could offend someone from the Myriad Sword Sect, and there was also no way he could afford to offend someone who casually tossed him 500 Earth Restoration Pills.

Furthermore, it was out of good intentions that this old man asked Jiang Chen to give up. Messing with the Myriad Sword Sect was no joke; it would cost him his life.

“If that is the case, thank you.”

Lin Anying said. Then, he stretched his hand and grabbed toward the demon soul. Just when everyone thought Jiang Chen had given up, a hand suddenly grabbed onto Lin Anying's wrist.

It was Jiang Chen's hand!

"I'm sorry, I've paid for it; this demon soul belongs to me."

Jiang Chen indifferently said. No one should ever dare take something that belongs to Jiang Chen, let alone this item which was needed by Big Yellow. Even if Jiang Chen was willing to give up, Big Yellow wouldn't agree. So of course, Jiang Chen wouldn't give up either.

Just because Jiang Chen didn't want trouble didn't mean he was afraid of trouble. He wouldn't actively go and provoke the Myriad Sword Sect, but he wouldn't let them bully him. Furthermore, in his mind, Jiang Chen exactly how the real relationship between himself and the Myriad Sword Sect was.

"Kid, do you know what you are doing?"

A cold expression emerged on Lin Anying's face. He ferociously gazed at Jiang Chen, like a poisonous snake.

"Put your stinking hand away, and don't show a superior expression in front of me."

Jiang Chen opposed with equal harshness.

Jiang Chen's words brought a storm to the crowds. More people had gathered around, and when they saw someone was in a conflict with the Myriad Sword Sect, their expressions



immediately changed.

“Oh heavens! This Chen Jiang is a really daring man, not only did he kill those from the Qingyi Sect, he’s now offending a genius from the Myriad Sword Sect!”

“Although the Qingyi Sect is strong, they’re still weaker than the Myriad Sword Sect. By offending Lin Anying, I’m afraid this Chen Jiang is going to suffer.”

“Humph! I actually like how this Chen Jiang behaves. The Myriad Sword Sect always bullies people around because they’re strong, and no one dares fight back. But, this Chen Jiang has the courage to fight back. He is the first man who came and asked for a price, and he paid 500 Earth Restoration Pills for it.”

.....

The crowds were whispering amongst themselves. All of them were staring at the center of conflict, trying to figure out how things would go. One thing was for sure, these people from the Myriad Sword Sect wouldn’t easily let go of this matter.

“Bastard, who gave you the audacity to talk like that to senior disciple Lin? Are you courting death?”

“What a reckless ant! Trying to fight for something that belongs to the Myriad Sword Sect? Just with that alone, you deserve a hundred deaths!”

Another two Myriad Sword Sect disciples scolded loudly. One of them even unleashed his Yuan energy. He stretched out his arm and grabbed toward Jiang Chen.

“Get lost!”

Han Yan let out a furious shout. At the same time, a powerful force was unleashed from his body. Pushed by this powerful force, the disciple let out a miserable shriek as he was sent flying about 30 meters away.

“Humph! So this is the Myriad Sword Sect? Your core disciples are trash who only knows how to scream!”

Han Yan said in a rude manner.

“Absolutely disgraceful! How dare you attack the Myriad Sword Sect? Outrageous!”

The female disciple became extremely furious. She pointed her finger at Han Yan’s nose while cursing at him.

“Get lost, bitch!”

Without saying too much, Han Yan slapped the female disciple’s face. The slap carried tremendous force, Han Yan didn’t show this girl any gentleness. With this slap, the Divine Core genius disciple

from the Myriad Sword Sect was knocked far away without any means of resistance. She landed onto the ground not far away.

The slap brought an even greater storm to the crowd. Everyone threw their glance at Han Yan's face. No one had expected this! Not only was this Chen Jiang a strong man, even the young man who followed him was terrifying!

“Oh heavens! Why are there so many abnormal monsters? Where did these two young man come from? Attacking the Myriad Sword Sect's disciples, they are extremely daring!”

“That is a genius disciple from the Myriad Sword Sect, but she was sent flying with a slap from that young man without any ability to resist! Just how strong is that man?”

“Attacking someone in the trade fair, he is extremely daring! This has violated the rules set by Master Blissful.”

.....

Everyone were shocked. Slapping a core disciple from the Myriad Sword Sect during the trade fair, this was the first time in history!

“How dare you!”

Lin Anying's face became darker, and a powerful force was unleashed from his body. Moving his arm, he continued grabbing toward the demon soul on the stall. But too bad, no matter how

much strength he used, there was no way he could break free from Jiang Chen's hand. Jiang Chen's hand was holding him back firmly, like a huge steel clamp.

“Big Yellow.”

Jiang Chen casually called Big Yellow. After that, Big Yellow leapt onto the stall, opened his mouth, and swallowed the demon soul.

“You're courting death!”

Witnessing this, Lin Anying became completely furious. As a rare genius from the Myriad Sword Sect, he would be respected no matter where he went. Not once had he faced such an insult before. This made him decide to kill Jiang Chen. Although he had witnessed how Jiang Chen killed those Qingyi Sect disciples, there were no Late Divine Core warriors amongst them; even he would be able to kill them all. Therefore, Lin Anying didn't take Jiang Chen seriously.

Pop!

A brief vibration could be sensed in the air. Lin Anying had unleashed his Yuan energy on the other hand, and he swung his palm toward Jiang Chen. The energy ripples that came from his palm immediately shattered the old man's stall, frightening the old man and causing him to quickly fall back. There was no way he could be dragged into a fight of this scale.

Bang!

Jiang Chen raised his palm at the same time and pushed it toward Lin Anying's palm. After that, they both took a few steps back. They stood face to face.

Lin Anying didn't take Jiang Chen seriously. But he didn't know, in Jiang Chen's mind, he was nothing.

“Senior disciple Lin, kill them!”

The female disciple climbed up from the ground and roared out with no regard for her image. The slap she received today gave her a burning shame. Not once had anyone dared do this to a disciple from the Myriad Sword Sect.

“Stop!”

Right at this moment, a soft shout came from not far away. Everyone looked toward the source of the shout and saw a group of Golden Warriors coming in fast. The leading person was Xiao Wei.

Lin Anying retracted his energy when he saw that the men from the Blissful Manor were here.

“Why are you fighting here? Don't you guys know about the rules of the Blissful Manor?”

Xiao Wei said with an extremely cold voice. She was completely different from how she behaved when she brought Jiang Chen to his courtyard.

“It’s nice of you to come here, miss! These two men attacked out Myriad Sword Sect disciples, they violated the rules of the trade fair; they should be punished!”

Lin Anying said with a grin on his face.

“Young master Chen Jiang, why did you do that?”

Xiao Wei turned to Jiang Chen and spoke with the same cold tone.

“They were the ones who struck first.”

Han Yan briefly explained what happened just now. The crowds were the witnesses, and indeed, it was the Myriad Sword Sect who were being unreasonable first. Those two disciples who got slapped were the ones who tried to attack Jiang Chen, what they did was a violation of the trade fair’s rules. There was nothing wrong with Han Yan attacking them. But of course, only Jiang Chen and Han Yan who weren’t afraid of them dared do this. If it was any other people, they would have already surrendered under the mightiness of the Myriad Sword Sect.

“Bullshit! If we were the ones who attacked first, why haven’t you suffered from any injuries?”

The female disciple still behaved arrogantly.

“That is because you are weak! Damn bitch, go home and raise your children!”

Han Yan waved his hand at the female disciple. He showed no politeness in his words.

“Alright. Representing the Blissful Manor, I’ll give you all a warning. If this happen again, we’ll act according to the rules.”

Xiao Wei looked at both Lin Anying and Jiang Chen, and she secretly gave Jiang Chen a flirtatious look. Then, she brought the group of Golden Warriors and left.

Xiao Wei’s actions stunned a lot of people. This didn’t look like something the Blissful Manor would do. Many people could still remember, during last year’s trade fair, two warriors started fighting because of a minor conflict, violating the rules. In the end, both of them had their legs broken, and were tossed into the ocean. But today, only a warning.

Although it was the Myriad Sword Sect who started the conflict today, it was in fact Han Yan who attacked first. According to the rules, Jiang Chen and Han Yan would have to face serious consequences. But, the beautiful mermaid had only given them a warning. Clearly, she was siding with Jiang Chen and Han Yan.

“Senior disciple Lin...”

The female disciple was gnashing her teeth in anger. But, before she could finish speaking, Lin Anying waved his hand and stopped her.

“Chen Jiang, very good, I’ll remember what happened today.”

Lin Anying said in a cold manner.

“I suggest you forget it.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Humph!”

Lin Anying coldly harrumphed. Then, he turned around and left the square, both disciples following him. All three of them had dark faces. If they weren’t on this island, they wouldn’t let go off this matter so easily. Not once had anyone dared slap the Myriad Sword Sect in the face. But, since they were still in the Blissful Manor, and the fact that the Myriad Sword Sect was here to participate in the auction, he still didn’t want to break the rules, as it would spark a conflict between the Myriad Sword Sect and the Blissful Manor.

The old man quickly wiped off his cold sweat when he saw the Myriad Sword Sect disciples finally leaving. He was glad he didn’t get involved in the conflict between Jiang Chen and Lin Anying. If



not, he might have died.

“We still ended up provoking the Myriad Sword Sect.”

Han Yan sighed.

“It would happen sooner or later. Let’s go.”

Jiang Chen still had a calm look on his face. He didn’t take this conflict to heart. The conflict between himself and the Myriad Sword Sect would happen sooner or later, it was destined to happen ever since he killed Yang Shuo back in Inferno Hell.

## Chapter 291 – The Auction Begins

---

Jiang Chen didn't take the minor conflict with the Myriad Sword Sect to heart. He and Han Yan continued walking around the square, but they didn't find anything that interested them. On the other side, after Big Yellow ate the Flaming Stallion's demon soul, he laid down on Jiang Chen's shoulder. He seemed sleepy and dispirited.

“Little Chen, Big Yellow is going to sleep.”

Han Yan said.

“Sleeping is a good thing for this dog. Let's go, we'll head back to the courtyard now.”

Without saying anything else, Jiang Chen turned around and started walking toward the Blissful Manor, leaving the square. Every time Big Yellow started sleeping, he would gain huge benefits when he woke up. The Dragon Horse bloodline was beyond imagination, after absorbing the Flaming Stallion demon soul, Big Yellow would sleep once again, and he might break through to the Late Divine Core realm upon waking up.

For other people, there was no difference between the Flaming Stallion's demon soul and any other demon soul, but for Big Yellow, there was a huge difference. He had the Dragon Horse bloodline, making him a supreme existence amongst all horses. He was also able to absorb all horse bloodlines and make it his own, improving his own bloodline. He would also become much

stronger from absorbing bloodlines than he would from a sudden breakthrough. Therefore, after Big Yellow absorbs the Flaming Stallion demon soul, his cultivation would become a few times strong. The evolution of the bloodline also allowed him to break through to the Late Divine Core realm.

With Big Yellow's mighty abilities, he would be able to fight any ordinary Combat Soul warriors upon breaking through to the Late Divine Core realm, and he would become a great help to Jiang Chen.

When they entered the courtyard, Big Yellow had already entered a deep slumber. Jiang Chen placed him in one of the rooms.

Soon, an entire day passed, and it early in the morning. The enter Blissful Manor had become extremely lively; today was the day of the auction everyone had looked forward to. The three day trade fair had come to an end, and today's even was the main attraction. All the precious rare and unique treasures would appear during the auction. And as everyone knew, the treasures that would appear during the auction were not something those treasures sold in the trade fair could compare with.

Knock, knock, knock!

Gentle knocking could be heard from the courtyard's door. Jiang Chen opened the door and saw Xiao Wei smiling outside the door.

"Young master Chen Jiang, the auction is starting soon. Master Blissful has given a special guest treatment to young master Chen

Jiang; this is the token for private room number three.”

Xiao Wei handed over a palm size plate. The plate was made from pure gold, and it looked magnificent. The number ‘3’ was carved onto it.

Jiang Chen and Han Yan were both startled. They never expected this kind of treatment from Master Blissful.

Jiang Chen took the golden place. With a smile on his face, he said, “Miss Xiao Wei, please send my thanks to Master Blissful.”

Jiang Chen didn’t have any bad impressions of this Master Blissful. When he had a conflict with Mao Sheng, Master Blissful did help him settle it. Furthermore, Master Blissful must have been very satisfied with Jiang Chen’s performance that day, that’s why he gave Jiang Chen special treatment.

“I still have some auction related matters to settle. Xiao Wei will take leave now. Young master Jiang Chen, you can just go to the auction hall later; with this golden token, someone will bring you to your room.”

Xiao Wei bowed slightly toward Jiang Chen, then she turned around and left. Before she left, she didn’t forget to show Jiang Chen a flirtatious smile.

“Little Chen, I’m sure this girl has her eyes on you.”

Han Yan teased.

“Beat it!”

Jiang Chen gazed at Han Yan in a helpless manner. Right at this moment, a tremendous aura suddenly leaked out from one of them rooms. Following the leaking aura, golden beams of light emerged, causing the air to begin vibrating.

“It’s Big Yellow, he’s breaking through.”

Jiang Chen was really happy. He never thought it would take such a short amount of time for Big Yellow to level up this time. He had broken through to the Late Divine Core with just one day of sleeping. This showed that the Flaming Stallion’s demon soul greatly benefited Big Yellow.

“Damn it, this dog is really pissing me off! Breaking through to new levels while sleeping, it’s really making me envious!”

Han Yan felt like he was going to cough up some blood. The cultivation path was tough, it would take ordinary people a long time to break through to the next level, and they also needed a perfect chance to do so. But, this dog just broke through to a new level just by sleeping... If anyone else knew this, they would be pissed off and start coughing blood.

“We can’t judge this dog using common sense, you’re just looking for pain by comparing yourself to him.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders. He had long ago gotten used to how Big Yellow broke through to new realms and stages.

Bang!

A loud explosive sound could be heard, then the room's door was shattering by a powerful force. After that, a huge and majestic dog the size of an adult bull strolled out from the room. His dog head raised high up, as if he was floating through the heavens.

“Big Yellow, can't you just stay low profile? I know you just had a breakthrough, but that door didn't offend you, right? Luckily, everyone is busy with the auction. Otherwise, they would definitely ask you to compensate for the door.”

Han Yan said.

“That's what we call momentum... never mind, it's something really superior, a mere mortal like you can't understand what it is.”

Big Yellow was incredibly prideful. He had finally broken through to the Late Divine Core realm, causing his combat strength to experience a great surge. It also made him become even prouder of himself.

“That's enough, hurry up and transform back, the auction is

going to start soon.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Damn you! Transforming my mighty and majestic body into a puppy makes me feel depressed! Little Chen, with our strength right now, we don’t have any reason to be scared of those Combat Soul warriors out there, why can’t I just remain as I am right now?”

Big Yellow was showing his unwillingness.

“No way! The auction hasn’t even started yet, I don’t want any unnecessary trouble.”

Jiang Chen rejected. In the end, Big Yellow could only murmur to himself as he transformed into a puppy. After transforming, he jumped back onto Jiang Chen’s shoulder.

After that, the trio exited the courtyard and started walking toward the auction hall.

A huge auction hall was built in the center of the Blissful Manor. It was so huge that at least ten thousand people could stay in it at the same time. It had an appearance like a giant tower. With such a massive venue, most people who came to this trade fair would be able to join the auction.

When Jiang Chen and Han Yan arrived at the auction hall, the

place had been packed with an ocean of people. However, since there were people from the Blissful Manor around, the place was still in good order.

“Damn it, it took me an Earth Restoration Pill to enter the Blissful Island, and now they need me to pay another Earth Restoration Pill in order to enter the auction hall! This Master Blissful is really wicked.”

“Precisely, he’s too wicked! But never mind that, since we’re already here, if we don’t experience such a major event, we might not be able to sleep after we return home.”

“It’s only an Earth Restoration Pill! No matter what, we must go in and see what kinds of precious treasures will appear.”

.....

Many people were unhappy about the entrance fee, but still, they were willing to pay so that they could enter the auction hall. Even if they didn’t have the resources to buy any treasures, they still wanted to experience this grand event; they wanted to see what kinds of treasures would appear in this auction.

Soon, Jiang Chen and Han Yan arrived in front of the auction hall’s front gate. He retrieved the golden plate given to him by Xiao Wei. When the Golden Warrior who stood in front of him saw it, his expression immediately changed, and he looked at Jiang Chen with respect.



“Honorable guest, you’re our most valuable guest, you don’t need to pay any entrance fee. Please follow me.”

The Golden Warrior showed a welcoming gesture. Under numerous envious eyes, Jiang Chen followed the Golden Warrior and entered the auction hall. They were heading to the second floor.

The auction hall was an arch shaped building, and there was a 3 meter tall stage right in the middle; it was the auction stage. In front of the stage were a lot of seats, all pointing toward the stage, making sure that every single audience member could clearly see the treasures on the stage.

As for the second floor of the auction hall, that was where all the private rooms were located. Those who had the privileges of staying in one of those rooms were all wealthy people with great influence. For this year’s auction, each of these private rooms was occupied by a Combat Soul warrior. Jiang Chen was the only exception.

Soon, private room number three was in sight. After Jiang Chen and Han Yan entered the room, the Golden Warrior gently shut the door behind them.

The decoration within the private room was simple. There was a long solid wood table right in the center, and in front of the table there were a few big rattan chairs. In front of these chairs, there was a crystal clear glass. Jiang Chen could see the entire auction hall when sitting on the rattan chair, and he could also clearly see all the treasures placed on the stage.

“This place is really nice, I never thought we’d receive such grand treatment.”

Han Yan sat down on the rattan chair with his legs crossed. His expression show that he was enjoying himself. Compared to the tight seats downstairs, this private room really was grand treatment for the special guests.

Ten minutes later, an ear-splitting bell ringing sound could be heard throughout the entire auction hall. It instantly calmed down the noise. After that, an old man in a gray robe slowly descended from above and landed right onto the stage.

The old man was in his fifties, and his sleeves fluttered with every soft breeze passing by. His oily face carried a friendly smile, leaving a good impression on all those who watched him. Furthermore, this old man had a pretty strong cultivation base; he was actually a peak Divine Core warrior.

Cough...

When the old man landed on the auction stage, he cleared his throat and looked around. After that, with a loud and clear voice, he said, “Welcome friends, welcome to this year’s auction! I’m the auctioneer, Xu Neng, and I’ll be the ceremony master for today’s auction. Next, I’ll explain the rules for the auction...”

The old man started explaining the rules without any stops, but most people thought he was just speaking nonsense. The old man’s

name was Xu Neng, and one could tell he was a capable man from his name. If he wasn't, he wouldn't be assigned to be ceremony master.

[TL: Neng means capable.]

“What a talkative old man, hurry up and start the auction!”

“Yea! Daddy is going to fall asleep!”

Many people couldn't take it anymore. This old man sure knew how to spout eloquent speeches.

“Alright, I think everyone should have a clear understanding of the rules now. Next, I'm going to mention the most important thing for this auction; everyone's wealth will be calculated with Mortal Restoration Pills.”

The reason for this was to make the auction simpler. All treasures would be bid on with Mortal Restoration Pills; it was the base currency for this auction.

# Chapter 292 – Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm

---

The whole audience became silent. Everyone stared at the auction stage, waiting for Xu Neng to bring out the first auction item.

Xu Neng didn't disappoint the audience this time, he didn't give another long-winded speech. With a flip of his palm, a bright longsword instantly appeared. The longsword was constantly producing a buzzing sound, and it was glowing in a cold shine.

Many people could identify that it was a High-Ranked Combat Weapon, but it was merely an ordinary High-Ranked Combat Weapon. However, for those Divine Core warriors, a High-Ranked Combat Weapon was something really precious.

A Combat Weapon was extremely precious. Usually, due to lack of wealth, it was very difficult for Early Divine Core warriors to obtain a High-Ranked Combat Weapon. There were even some Mid Divine Core warriors who didn't possess High-Ranked Combat Weapons. After all, for the ordinary rogue cultivators, it was incredibly difficult to obtain pills or resources for their cultivation, and the price of a High-Ranked Combat Weapon was quite high. The most inferior type would cost them at least 100-200 Earth Restoration Pills.

Earth Restoration Pills was the lifeline for Divine Core warriors. It wasn't enough even for their cultivation, so spending them to buy a Combat Weapon was too much.

“This is a High-Ranked Combat Weapon, and the starting price is 1,000,000 Mortal Restoration Pills. The auction starts now.”

Xu Neng announced a starting price that wasn't too high.

“1.1 million.”

“1.2 million.”

.....

The audience sitting downstairs kept bidding. Some people had earned quite a lot of money during the trade fair, and they didn't have a High-Ranked Combat Weapon. Therefore, they wanted to buy one now.

But the special guests on the second floor were all quiet. They didn't pay any attention to a High-Ranked Combat Weapon of that quality. They knew that the auction had just started, and the items shown at the initial stage would just be some ordinary items. The real deal would appear later.

Master Blissful did after all have to consider everyone's feelings. If the entire auction was all about rare and precious items, those people downstairs would only be bystanders, and there would be nothing for them to do here. Therefore, the auction started auctioning some ordinary items. It also served to make the atmosphere livelier.

In the end, a rogue warrior from the ocean won the auctioned High-Ranked Combat Weapon for 1.5 million Mortal Restoration Pills. This was basically the standard price for ordinary High-Ranked Combat Weapons. There were after all different qualities amongst all High-Ranked Combat Weapons. For example, the Axe of Thunder and the Bloodthirsty Sword Jiang Chen possessed were both top quality High-Ranked Combat Weapons, and they would cost at least a few times more than this combat weapon.

There was nothing special about the next items, they were all some combat skills and martial skills, and some ordinary pills. The auction continued for nearly an hour, but none of the special guests on the second floor had started bidding yet. On the opposite, the atmosphere downstairs had become heated. All the warriors were yelling and shouting their bids.

“Alright. All the previous treasures were mere appetizers. Next up will be the real deals. Everyone, please hold your breath, try and guess what this is!”

Xu Neng flipped his palm. In an instant, a crystal ball appeared and started floating on the auction stage. Following the appearance of this crystal ball, the temperature in the entire auction hall dropped immediately. Many people could feel a chilly sensation from it.

When everyone looked at the crystal ball, they immediately saw a thumb sized Ice Silkworm floating within. The Ice Silkworm had a transparent body, and it looked like a real crystal as it motionlessly stayed within the crystal ball.

“A Crystalized Artic Ice Silkworm.”

Jiang Chen’s expression changed slightly, and he nearly shouted out loudly. He never thought he’d see this thing in the auction.

“Everyone, hold your breaths. I believe those who are knowledgeable enough has found out what this is! Inside this crystal ball, there is a real Arctic Ice Silkworm! Furthermore, over the years, it has been completely crystalized! The value of this thing, I believe you should know even without me explaining. The starting price is 10.5 million!”

Xu Neng said with a bright and clear voice.

What Xu Neng said brought a storm across the entire audience. Ten million, and it was only the starting price! No one could predict the final price for this Arctic Ice Silkworm.

“Little Chen, why is this Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm worth so much?”

Han Yan asked.

“The Arctic Ice Silkworm is a rare creature that lives in the North Arctic. There is a tremendous amount of cold energy within its body, and even now that it’s captivated by the crystal ball, the cold energy can still leak out. In order for an Arctic Ice Silkworm to crystalize, not only does it need an extremely cold environment, it

also requires long period of time. A Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm is a real treasure, you can find cold source energy from the Northern Region, as well as a massive amount of energy. The starting price is too low, it will soon go up.”

Jiang Chen explained.

“Why does it seem like you know everything?”

Han Yan gloomily rolled his eyes. Still puzzled, he asked again, “But since this item is so freezing cold, it will be very difficult for someone ordinary to even get close to it, let alone absorb it. Who would spend so much wealth to buy it?”

“What you said is correct, the Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm is worthless for ordinary warriors. However, for those with naturally cold physiques who cultivates cold skills, it’s considered an ultimate treasure. If Little Yu is able to obtain this Arctic Ice Silkworm, she will receive tremendous benefits, and it might even make her Nine Yin Body evolve immediately.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. Although there were still no news regarding the Nine Solar Holy Water, this Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm had actually surprised him. Even though it couldn’t make Yan Chenyu wake up, once she did wake up, this Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm would give her tremendous benefits.

“I completely forgot about Little Yu’s unique physique! Looks like we have to get this Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm no matter what.”



Han Yan threw his glance at the Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm. His eyes glowed in the same way as Jiang Chen's did.

“10.6 million.”

A deep voice came sounded out from one of the private rooms on the second floor.

“That's from the Shangguan Clan.”

Han Yan said.

Jiang Chen's face darkened. Currently, he was at conflict with the Qingyi Sect and the Myriad Sword Sect, and he didn't want conflict with the Shangguan Clan. But, the world was really small, the Shangguan Clan were the first ones to call out a price.

“Looks like someone from the Shangguan Clan has a cold physique, or is cultivating some cold skills.”

Big Yellow said.

“10.8 million.”

Someone from another private room bid. It was a rogue Combat Soul warrior from the ocean.

“Humph! 20 million.”

The elder from the Shangguan Clan, Shangguan Chong coldly harrumphed. After that, he bid 20 million.

“25 million.”

The warrior from the private room bid once again, and he increased the bit with another 5 million, causing the scene to immediately become intense once again.

“25 million! Those Combat Soul warriors are filthy rich! I wonder who that person is, he’s so daring to fight with the Shangguan Clan!”

“The Shangguan Clan is super rich, and they will get whatever they want. Although that man is a Combat Soul warrior, he has no idea who he is messing with.”

Many people became excited. It was as if the auction for the first precious treasure had caused them to feel a strong smell of gunpowder.

“30 million.”

Shangguan Chong’s tone became angrier. After calling out his bid, Shangguan Chong continued and said, “Please give a little face

to the Shangguan Clan.”

Hearing this, Xu Neng’s friendly smile was replaced with a cold expression, he immediately said, “Attention, friend from the Shangguan Clan, this is a fair competition, you can’t disturb other people’s decision.”

The Blissful Manor had to stand firm on this. If they didn’t, with the existence of the two superpowers, Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan, who would dare bid after them? If that really happened, all the precious treasures would belong to these two super powers. The Blissful Manor would not allow that to happen.

However, after Shangguan Chong bid 30 million, the rogue Combat Soul warrior didn’t want to bid any more. It seemed like he didn’t want to have any conflicts with the Shangguan Clan.

“The Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm, Shangguan Clan has bid 30 million, will anyone bid higher? Anyone? This is the only one we have, if you miss it, you’re going to regret it for the rest of your lives. Does anyone have a higher bid?”

Xu Neng asked. When he found out that no one else wanted to bid any higher, his face instantly darkened. As a qualified auctioneer, he clearly knew that this Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm would at least reach 40-50 million. But, because of Shangguan Chong’s threatening words, no one else dared bid further. This really pissed Xu Neng off.

“Since no one else is bidding, I’ll now announce; the Shangguan

Clan wins this for 30 mill-...”

“50 million.”

Before Xu Neng could finish speaking, a calm voice sounded out from private room number three. Xu Neng was startled for a moment, then he immediately showed a joyful expression.

The 50 million bid brought a storm to the entire audience.

“Damn! Who is that person? He directly ramped the price up to 500 million, incredible!”

“He clearly wants to fight with the Shangguan Clan. Shangguan Chong asked the man to give them some face just now, but this man obviously wants to slap their face.”

“I think it’s Chen Jiang who bid just now. That man is incredibly overbearing! Not only has he offended the Qingyi Sect and Myriad Sword Sect, he’s now going to offend the Shangguan Clan! I wonder how many lives he has!”

.....

The audience was agitated, especially when they found out that the person who bid was that young man, Chen Jiang. This young man really knew how to offend people, he had completely offended all the super powers.

“Haha, good! Young master Chen Jiang has just bid 50 million, the Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm is definitely worth this price! Does anyone else have a higher bid? Anyone?”

Xu Neng was laughing out loudly, and his mood was instantly lightened. His words were actually for the Shangguan Clan, and he couldn't help but speak with a happy tone.

Within private room number three, Jiang Chen was calmly sitting on the rattan chair. He didn't want any conflict to arise with the Shangguan Clan. He could let go of anything else, but not this Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm.

## Chapter 293 – Ardent Scene

---

The audience burst into an uproar. The entire auction hall was filled with a strong smell of gunpowder. It was hard to imagine how furious Shangguan Chong was right now. A Combat Soul warrior had just back off, but now there was a reckless young man who stood out and fought with him.

“Humph! 60 million.”

Shangguan Chong coldly harrumphed. As a Combat Soul elder from the Shangguan Clan, it would be really embarrassing if he lost to a young man. Therefore, he bit 60 million.

“80 million.”

But, just after Shangguan Chong bid, Jiang Chen’s voice sounded out from private room three once again. The insane amount, 80 million came from Jiang Chen’s calm voice.

The 80 million bid once again sent a storm through the audience. An even greater uproar arose in the audience, no one could remain calm any longer. Even Xu Neng who stood on the auction stage was so shocked that his mouth was wide open. 80 million Mortal Restoration Pills, it had far exceeded the actual value of the Arctic Ice Silkworm. Xu Neng didn’t expect the price to reach such heights.

Right at this moment, Jiang Chen’s image had become huge in Xu Neng’s mind; he was starting to fall in love with this young

man. As an auctioneer, if he could make the price of an item exceed the actual value, he would be able to get a huge reward.

“Insane! This Jiang Chen is insane! 80 million Mortal Restoration Pills, how can he be so rich?”

“It’s called being filthy rich. Looks like Jiang Chen is going to get this Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm no matter what, and he doesn’t even care that doing so is the same as offending the Shangguan Clan. I wonder if the Shangguan Clan will make an even higher bid.”

“I don’t think so. The Shangguan Clan aren’t stupid, 80 million has exceeded the Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm’s actual value. Furthermore, they also don’t know if Jiang Chen will make another bid.”

.....

The audience was heated. Everyone were discussing amongst themselves. The name Chen Jiang had once again become a hot topic.

“Good, very good!”

Shangguan Chong said the word ‘good’ twice, and his voice was filled with rage. Anyone could tell how angry he was, and how much he hated Jiang Chen.

“Little Chen, I guess you’ve pissed off that old man from the Shangguan Clan.”

Han Yan smiled.

“Since I’ve killed Shangguan Wei in Inferno Hell, the Shangguan Clan will seek to kill me sooner or later, I don’t care about offending them. Furthermore, along my journey from the Red City to the Black Sect, Little Yu has always been by my side, and I didn’t do my best to protect her. That’s why, no matter what price I have to pay, I will get this Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm for her.”

There was a calm expression on Jiang Chen’s face. He didn’t care about how angry Shangguan Chong would become.

“80 million, do you think that old man will bid any higher?”

Han Yan asked.

“Absolutely not. Although Shangguan Chong is a Combat Soul warrior, he doesn’t have too much authority in the Shangguan Clan; there is definitely a limit to how much he can bid. If the price exceeds his limit, he would have to stop. Furthermore, Shangguan Chong also fears I’ll continue outbidding him, as that would push the price of the item to an insane amount. That would do no good for him at all.”

Jiang Chen smiled.



“What if that old man purposely pushes the price and sets you up?”

Han Yan asked.

“Don’t worry, he is the one who should be afraid. No one will be able to remain calm if the price keeps going up.”

Jiang Chen’s experience was vast, and he was able to precisely judge people. He knew that after bidding 80 million, Shangguan Chong would definitely stop following.

“Young master Chen Jiang just bid, is anyone willing to bid higher?”

Xu Neng asked with a loud voice. Shangguan Chong’s room was deadly silent, they didn’t bid.

“80 million going once, going twice... Sold! The Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm belongs to young master Chen Jiang! Congratulations, young master Chen Jiang!”

Xu Neng shouted toward the private room where Jiang Chen sat. After that, a girl walked out from behind the auction stage. It was Xiao Wei. She carried the Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm and walked toward Jiang Chen’s room.

“What a reckless bastard! How dare he fight the Shangguan Clan?!”

Within the Shangguan Clan's private room, A Divine Core disciple said while gnashing his teeth in anger.

“This Chen Jiang has offended the Qingyi Sect and the Myriad Sword Sect, and now he's fighting us, the Shangguan Clan. Does he really think he has nine lives?”

“Brother Xiao is cultivating in the Martial Palace, and he has broken through to the Early Combat Soul realm. Since he is cultivating the Cold Quintessence Skill, if he could get this Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm, his cultivation would be greatly improved! Damn that Chen Jiang!”

“Once the auction comes to an end, we have to get him no matter what!”

.....

All disciples from the Shangguan Clan now had undying hatred toward Jiang Chen.

“That's enough. There are too many people who wants him dead, he won't be able to leave alive. Once this auction comes to an end, many people will go after him and settle their scores. At that point of time, we'll snatch that Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm from him.”

Shangguan Chong waved his hand, signaling his men to calm

down.

On the other side, the door to the third private room was opened. Xiao Wei carried a golden plate in her hand as she walked into the room. On top of the plate was the Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm.

“What an astonishing deal, young master Chen Jiang.”

Little Wei said with a beautiful smile on her face. “Here is your Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm.”

“I appreciate your help, Miss Xiao Wei.

Jiang Chen replied with a smile. He stretched his hand forward and made a grabbing gesture, then the crystal ball flew into his palm and was stored into his storage ring. With Jiang Chen’s eyes, he could tell that the treasure was genuine with a casual look. He trusted the Blissful Manor’s reputation.

“It’s Xiao Wei’s pleasure to serve young master Chen Jiang.”

Little Wei replied with a seductive smile.

“Shall I give you the 80 million Mortal Restoration Pills now?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“No need, you can pay us in total once the auction comes to an end. Young master Chen Jiang, please carry on with the auction. Xiao Wei will leave now.”

Xiao Wei bowed slightly toward Jiang Chen, then she turned around and left.

The next three items, although they were all rare treasures, Jiang Chen didn't bid on any of them. These treasures were useless for him. Although he was rich, he wouldn't spend his wealth on useless things. After all, he needed resources for his cultivation as well.

The three treasures were obtained by the Myriad Sword Sect, Shangguan Clan, and the Golden Lion. Ever since the Crystalized Arctic Ice Silkworm appeared, all the following treasures were obtained by the special guests on the second floor. The audience downstairs could only be spectators.

“The next item can actually be treated as one of the real precious items in this auction. I think it's time for me to it to all of you. Friends, pay good attention, this item is something all warriors desire!”

With a bright and clear voice, Xu Neng once again made the atmosphere within the auction hall tense.

Everyone had their sights locked onto Xu Neng's hand. In the next second, a scroll appeared in his palm. It was glowing in a golden color, and judging from its appearance, there was nothing

special about it.

“Within this scroll there is an incredible movement skill called Heavenly Wings. It’s a High-Ranked Earth Movement Skill! Starting price is 40 million!”

Xu Neng shouted out the starting price with his Yuan energy. His words echoed throughout the entire auction hall.

“What? A High-Ranked Earth Movement Skill? Oh heavens, how could someone be so generous and auction it away?”

“In the Saint Origin Realm, the most precious things are powerful combat skill and cultivation skills, but a powerful movement skill is even rarer! A High-Ranked Earth Movement Skill is extremely rare, and superpowers like the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan doesn’t have a single one of those!”

“Precisely! Although the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan has a rich amount of resources, and might High-Ranked Earth combat skill and cultivation skills, they most like do not have a movement skill at such level. I think the fight for this Heavenly Wings skill is going to be intense, many people will bid for it!”

.....

Once again, everyone in the audience became agitated. As warriors themselves, they all clearly knew the value of a movement skill. It was much more precious than combat skills of

the same level. A powerful movement skill could increase any warrior's overall combat strength by a lot. When a warrior had great speed, not only would it help him in combat, it would also provide him a great advantage when running away from a fight.

This advantage had clearly been demonstrated by Jiang Chen. The Nine Phantom Wolves had provided him a lot of help in his past battles.

“45 million.”

Right after Xu Neng finished speaking, someone immediately called out their bid. The voice came from a private room on the second floor, it was the Combat Soul elder from the Qingyi Sect, Mao Sheng. All the disciples Mao Sheng brought with him had been killed by Jiang Chen, so he was all by himself right now. He didn't bid on anything before this, but when he heard the name 'Heavenly Wings', he instantly bid 45 million.

“50 million.”

Old Man Ling Shan also made a bid. A High-Ranked Earth Movement Skill, not only were the Combat Soul warriors interest, even a Combat King warrior might be interested.

“60 million.”

“70 million.”

“80 million.”

.....

In just the blink of an eye, the Heavenly Wings’ price had gone up to 120 million. That bid was made by the Shangguan Clan. When this insane price was called out, all those rogue cultivators and ordinary powers went silent. Many people had no choice but to give up. Although they really wanted to get this skill, their resources were limited.

“130 million.”

Ye Xiao from the Myriad Sword Sect bid 130 million.

“140 million.”

“150 million.”

“160 million.”

Shangguan Chong bid 160 million. Everyone knew that this was a fight between the Shangguan Clan and the Myriad Sword Sect. No one else could get involved in this any longer.

“Little Chen, don’t you have any interest in this skill?”

Han Yan asked Jiang Chen.

“I have the Nine Phantom Wolves and Dimensional Shift skills. This Heavenly Wings is useless for me. Brother Yan, are you interested in that skill?”

Jiang Chen looked at Han Yan and asked. He had no interest in this Heavenly Wings skill, the Nine Phantom Wolves was the Bloody Combat Wolf's innate ability, and after he had inherited its bloodline, the innate ability would improve naturally following the improvement of his cultivation. Furthermore, the Dimension Shift was much more powerful than this Heavenly Wings, it was nothing something the Heavenly Wings skill could even compare with. But, since Jiang Chen hadn't broken through to the Combat King realm, he still couldn't unleash the Dimensional Shift's full power.



## Chapter 294 – A Trap

---

“No, it’s useless for me as well. I possess the Ancient Divine Devil’s bloodline, and it has completely awakened. Following the improvement of my cultivation base, the innate movement skill and combat skill from the Ancient Divine Devil will awaken.”

Han Yan shook his head. He had a lot of advantages from his bloodline, so he wasn’t interested in this Heavenly Wings skill. Big Yellow didn’t need it either, as he already had the Wing of Light which allowed him to be fast as lightning. It was also something this Heavenly Wings skill couldn’t compare with.

“200 million.”

Just as the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan became silent for a short moment, Jiang Chen casually bid 200 million.

When the bid was made, no one could stay calm any longer. Many people were so shocked they jumped up from their seats. Countless eyes stared in Jiang Chen’s direction, and many of them felt like they were going to cough up some blood.

“Damn it, this Chen Jiang must purposely be causing trouble! He actually bid 200 million? Just how wealthy is he?”

“This guy didn’t bid once before this, but when a winner was decided between the Myriad Sword Sect and the Shangguan Clan, he immediately ramped the price up to 200 million. This is an insane number, I can barely even believe it!”

“Looks like something exciting is going to happen! Since Jiang Chen has offended both the Myriad Sword Sect and the Shangguan Clan, it looks like he is going all out to fight them all the way.”

.....

Nobody could remain calm. Chen Jiang Chen was such an amazing man, an extremely daring one! Fighting head to head with superpowers like the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan, putting aside everything else, just his courage alone is something no one could compare with.

Boom!

Two massive energies erupted from the Myriad Sword Sect and the Shangguan Clan's rooms, and it swept across the entire auction halls. Both energies carried extreme anger, especially the energy from the Shangguan Clan room.

However, right at this moment, another tremendous energy swept across the auction hall. This energy was even more powerful than the ones from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan. It instantly pushed down both energies.

“The auction is still ongoing, please control your emotions.”

A tyrannical voice sounded out. The voice belonged to Master Blissful. The entire auction was under his control; he would never

allow anyone to cause trouble here.

“Little Chen, I thought you didn’t want this movement skill? Why are you bidding for it?”

Han Yan curiously looked at Jiang Chen.

“I am helping Master Blissful increase the price.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders. He still carried an indifferent expression on his face.

“Damn it, you are such a wicked man.”

Han Yan gazed at Jiang Chen, he immediately understood what Jiang Chen was trying to do. This guy wanted to ramp up the price, causing either the Myriad Sword Sect or Shangguan Clan to start bleeding. They had after all become his enemies, Jiang Chen didn’t need to be nice to them.

“Kaka! Buddy, I like your wickedness!”

Big Yellow let out a pleased laughter.

“Aren’t you worried they might give up once you ramp up the price?”

Han Yan said in a worried tone. After all, 200 million was not a small amount.

“Don’t worry, the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan are both superpowers with an enormous amount of resources. 200 million is nothing to them.

Jiang Chen had a confident look on his face. He wanted to set a trap down for both superpowers. He would never be courteous toward his enemy. Furthermore, he was also helping the Blissful Manor by increasing the price, as they would be the ones to benefit the most from it.

“210 million!”

Ye Xiao from the Myriad Sword Sect made a higher bid while gnashing his teeth in anger.

On the contrary, Shangguan Chong remained quiet after Ye Xiao made his bid. He wanted to see if Jiang Chen had the courage to continue bidding.

“250 million.”

No one expected this, Jiang Chen actually increased his by another 40 million with no hesitation!

“Bastard!”

Ye Xiao was furious. It wasn't difficult to imagine how angry Ye Xiao was right now. If Jiang Chen stood in front of him right now, Ye Xiao might just ignore all the rules and tear him into pieces.

This was clearly a provocation, a serious challenge to the Myriad Sword Sect's dignity. It wasn't just a slap to their face anymore.

Ye Xiao was really angry right now. But on the other side, Xu Neng was extremely happy; he was smiling with his mouth wide open. His old face looked like a blossoming flower. At this point of time, he really wished he could run to Jiang Chen and call him father.

“Elder, should we increase the bid? The Heavenly Wings is a High-Ranked Earth Movement Skill, it's a really rare and precious skill.”

A young disciple from the Shangguan Clan asked.

“No, we don't want it anymore, let that Ye Xiao play with that kid. I have no idea what Chen Jiang's background is. Let's just sit back and watch for now; definite death awaits him when the auction ends.”

Shangguan Chong didn't hide the anger on his face. Since Ye Xiao and Chen Jiang was in an intense bidding war, it was better for him to sit back and watch.

“Brother Chen Jiang is indeed a wealthy man, he just increased the bid to 250 million. Are there anyone else who wishes to bid higher?”

Xu Neng shouted, his head pointing toward the Myriad Sword Sect’s room.

“260 million!”

Ye Xiao once again increased his bid. From his voice, everyone could clearly feel that he was on the verge of going berserk.

“300 million.”

But, right after Ye Xiao bid, Jiang Chen immediately increased it to 300 million.

Bam!

A dull, reverberating sound could be heard from the Myriad Sword Sect’s private room. Without looking at what actually happened, everyone knew that it must be the sound of Ye Xiao destroying a table with his palm.

“Damn it, 300 million!! What kind of hatred does this Chen Jiang have for the Myriad Sword Sect?”

“This is a sky-high bid! I wonder, will the Myriad Sword Sect bid

again?”

“This is insane, they are fucking rich! This amount of wealth could make daddy piss my pants!”

.....

Everyone were shocked. No one had expected this enormous bid. Chen Jiang was simply amazing. First, he had fought in a bidding war with the Shangguan Clan, and now it was the Myriad Sword Sect.

Within the Myriad Sword Sect’s private room, Ye Xiao was so angry that it seemed like flames of fury were going to burst out from his eyes. The beard was trembling, and his sleeve was violently fluttering even though there was no wind. The solid wooden table in the private room was completely destroyed.

“Elder, this Chen Jiang is ridiculous, I don’t believe he has 300 million in wealth!”

The female disciple who was slapped by Han Yan said with a gruesome voice.

“I think that bastard is purposely increasing the bid, he is trying to make us suffer losses so that we become a laughingstock.”

Lin Anying said while gnashing his teeth in anger.

“Humph! Trying to play with me? That kid is too young! Since you want to play, I’ll play! The actual value of the Heavenly Wings skill is at most 200 million, I want him to pay the price himself!”

Ye Xiao coldly harrumphed. A ferocious expression could be seen on his face.

“400 million.”

This time, Ye Xiao bid with a calm voice. He increased the bid by another 100 million, ramping the price of the Heavenly Wings skill up into an enormous amount. Ye Xiao had made up his mind, after Jiang Chen made his next bid, he wouldn’t bid again. He was giving up the Heavenly Wings skill to Jiang Chen, causing Jiang Chen to have to pay 400 million for it. At that point of time, he would be jumping into a hole that was dug by himself.

“The fuck?! 400 million?! Will the price increase more?”

“This is a rare scene! With this alone, my trip to the Blissful Island has paid for itself.”

What happened brought yet another storm to the entire audience. Just as everyone were waiting for Jiang Chen to make another bid, the private room he was in had become completely silent.

“What happened? Don’t tell me Chen Jiang is giving up?”



“I think he’s hesitating. After all, the bid has gone up to 400 million.”

Right at this moment, every single person was staring at the third private room, but no voice was coming out from Jiang Chen. Now, every single person from the Myriad Sword Sect became extremely nervous. If Chen Jiang stopped bidding, the seemingly clever bid from them would turn out to be a foolish one instead, and they would be the ones to jump into the hole.

“Haha, congratulations to the Myriad Sword Sect, you’ve bought the Heavenly Wings skill for 400 million! It’s really worth the price, congratulations!”

A loud laughter burst out from Jiang Chen. His words stunned many people, and Ye Xiao stagger, he almost fell down onto the ground.

“What the fuck?”

“I finally understand, this Chen Jiang was clearly setting the Myriad Sword Sect up, he purposely increased the bid even though he never wanted this movement skill! The Myriad Sword Sect has fallen hard this time.”

“Wicked, extremely wicked! Where did this Chen Jiang come from? He’s like one of those super existences from the big sects!”

At this point of time, even an idiot could see what happened. The Myriad Sword Sect was fooled by Jiang Chen. The reason Ye Xiao made the 400 million bid was to set Jiang Chen up, but in the end, he was the one who suffered from the trap. He walked himself into trouble.

Within the Myriad Sword Sect's private room, Lin Anying and the other disciples stood there quietly. They knew how angry Ye Xiao was right now. If his fury could turn into real flames, the entire auction hall might just be burned down.

“Good, Chen Jiang, good! I'll remember this, once the auction comes to an end, I'll make sure you regret still being alive!”

Ye Xiao was gnashing his teeth so tightly that crunching sounds could be heard. It was really difficult for him to accept what just happened.

“Haha, congratulations Myriad Sword Sect, for obtaining the Heavenly Wings movement skill! That's really good for you!”

Xu Neng burst into laughter. He placed the scroll on a golden plate, then handed it to Xiao Wei who stood next to him. After that, Xiao Wei carried the golden plate and walked toward the Myriad Sword Sect's private room.

“Wakaka! Fun, this is so fun! Buddy, you truly are a wicked man!”

Big Yellow was bouncing up and down within the private room. His impression toward the Myriad Sword Sect was not good, and he just had a conflict with the disciples from the Myriad Sword Sect yesterday because of the Flaming Stallion.

“Little Chen, why did you stop increasing the bid?”

Han Yan asked with a smile on his face..

“If I increased it one more time, I would be walking myself into trouble. The 400 million bid was just perfect.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders. Ye Xiao’s heart must be bleeding right now.

As for Shangguan Chong, he felt relieved now, and he even felt delighted. But, he still detested Chen Jiang. Because of what he did today, he wouldn’t be able to leave this place alive once the auction ended.

After the Heavenly Wings movement skill was auction away, Jiang Chen didn’t make any bids for the next couple of items, but the other private rooms on the second floor were fighting intensely. Even the Shangguan Clan had made two bids. As for the Myriad Sword Sect, they were completely silent, and they hadn’t made a single bid. Ye Xiao was still extremely furious.

According to Jiang Chen’s estimation, the Myriad Sword Sect must be waiting for the auction’s final item. Unless they found

something they really wanted, they wouldn't make any bids.

Right at this moment, Xu Neng took out a rock the size of a human's head. It was pitch black rock, and it was glowing in a dark light. It gave an eerie feeling to those who looked at it.

# Chapter 295 – Nine Soul Restoration Pill

---

The black stone had a devilish charm. Its dark amber was breathtaking, and it was clearly an extraordinary treasure.

“This is a Perfect-Ranked Devil Source Stone, and it was brought to us by a special man from the ocean. The stone was found in a devil cave deep underneath the ocean. Vast amounts of natural devil energy filled the cave and gave birth to this Devil Soul Stone. It contains a massive amount of devil energy, and it’s as hard as pure steel. Even ordinary High-Ranked Combat Weapons can’t break it. The starting price for this Perfect-Ranked Devil Source Stone is 10 million.”

Xu Neng announced.

But this time, the stone didn’t get too much attention from the audience. That was because, although a Perfect-Ranked Devil Source Stone was precious, it was not something any warrior could use. Those from the Eastern Continent were mostly decent cultivators, and very few of them were cultivating devilish skills, with the exception of some rogue warriors or strange cultivators from the ocean. Those people would cultivate a devilish skill in order to achieve a stronger cultivation base in a short amount of time.

As for this Devil Source Stone, unless it was bid for by someone who was cultivating a devilish skill, or a real devilish existence, ordinary people wouldn’t spend 10 million on it.

“11 million.”

But still, someone made a bid. It was a man in black sitting downstairs. His body was entirely covered by a long black robe, giving off an eerie aura. Clearly, he wasn't a decent cultivator.

“15 million.”

Another voice sounded out from private room three. It wasn't Jiang Chen who made a bid, it was Han Yan. Although other people didn't want this stone, Han Yan was different.

“Brother Yan, you have the Ancient Divine Devil's bloodline, why do you still care for a Devil Source Stone?”

Big Yellow asked.

“What I care for isn't the devilish energy contained within the stone, but its material. I'm preparing to create a Natal Combat Weapon for myself once I break through to the Combat Soul realm, and this Perfect-Ranked Devil Source Stone is a good material for that.”

Han Yan said.

“He's right. For any strong warrior, a Natal Weapon is far better than those ordinary combat weapons, and it can help the warrior unleash incredible power. More importantly, a Natal Weapon's strength will increase together with the improvement of the

owner's cultivation rare, but it's very rare for a warrior to make his own Natal Weapon. A Natal Weapon is directly linked to the warrior's life, and creating it costs a huge amount of effort and mental strength. It's really difficult, and the success rate is extremely low. But, since Brother Yan has the Ancient Divine Devil's bloodline, I believe he will be able to succeed."

Jiang Chen explained. When Han Yan mentioned the Natal Weapon, he couldn't help but recall his Heavenly Saint Sword. He had put a lot of effort into making it, and it was only a Superior Weapon when it was born. But, following Jiang Chen's growth into the strongest man in the entire Saint Origin Realm, it became a terrifying peerless Saint Weapon.

But too bad, the Heavenly Saint Sword had fallen from the Saint Cliff, and Jiang Chen had no idea if it still existed or not.

After Han Yan bid 15 million, the man in black threw his gaze over to the third private room and went silent. The entire audience clearly knew that those in the third private room were not someone they could easily mess with; it was better for them not to fight with Chen Jiang. Furthermore, 15 million was a huge sum for ordinary Divine Core warriors.

"Alright, looks like no one else is going to bid for it. This Perfect-Ranked Devil Source Stone belongs to young master Chen Jiang!"

This time, Xu Neng announced the result quickly. This was because he had a really good impression of Chen Jiang.

The auction carried on, and not long after that, Xiao Wei once again came into the room while carrying a golden plate.

“Young master Chen Jiang, master said this Perfect-Ranked Devil Source Stone is a gift for you.”

Xiao Wei said with a smile on her face.

“If that is the case, please help me express my gratitude to Master Blissful.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile. He had helped the Blissful Manor earn quite a lot of money today, so giving him this Devil Source Stone for free was nothing much for them.

The auction hall still had the same heated atmosphere. All sorts of treasures kept appearing, Earth-Ranked cultivation and combat skill, and even two Superior Weapons were auction away. But, both weapons were obtained by the Myriad Sword Sect and the Shangguan Clan. Jiang Chen didn't jump into the bidding war this time, he was still waiting for the final treasure to appear; he was hoping to see the Nine Solar Holy Water.

“Alright, next up will be the auction's final item. This precious treasure was entrusted to us by a friend who came from a place far away! Also, our friend made a certain request, this final item will not be auctioned away with Mortal Restoration Pills!”

A complex look emerged on Xu Neng's face. His words made the



audience incredibly tense. Everyone were wondering what treasure it was, and they were even more curious, as the rules had been changed.

Under the enquiring eyes from the entire audience, a palm-sized jade bottle emerged on top of Xu Neng's palm. It was a golden colored jade bottle, and no one knew what material it was made from. Just this jade bottle alone was a rare treasure.

When this jade bottle appeared, a pure Yang aura instantly leaked out from it, shocking everyone who sensed the aura.

As for the most shocked person, Jiang Chen who was in the third private room was the one.

“Nine Solar Holy Water!”

Jiang Chen jumped up from his rattan chair and nearly shouted out loudly. That pure Yang aura came from the Nine Solar Holy Water. Jiang Chen had cultivating the Nine Celestial Solar Energies in his past life, and when he was in his peak form, he was able to condense Nine Solar Holy Water, that's why he was very familiar with its aura. He had no doubts about the contents within the jade bottle; it was definitely Nine Solar Holy Water!

This was a huge surprise, even Jiang Chen didn't have too much hope of seeing the Nine Solar Holy Water during this auction.

“Within this bottle there are three drops of Nine Solar Holy

Water! It's a Saint-Ranked item, and I believe everyone knows about it! As for how precious it is, I don't think I have to explain."

Xu Neng's voice was trembling. Putting such a rare and precious item up for auction was really a reckless waste of heaven's good gift. In his opinion, there must be something wrong with the person who wants to auction this away.

Indeed, Xu Neng's words once again brought a gigantic storm to the entire audience. No one could remain calm any longer. Numerous powerful energies could be sensed from the private rooms on the second floor. Clearly, even superpowers like the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan were shocked.

"Damn it, such a waste! How could someone want to auction away the Nine Solar Holy Water? If I obtained it myself, I would definitely consume it myself!"

"A single drop of the Nine Solar Holy Water can cleanse and purify a man, turning him into a genius! A superpower like the Myriad Sword Sect who has so many geniuses, if they give one drop to a genius, that will make his talent become even more peerless! Not only that, it will improve his cultivation! Even a Combat Soul warrior would benefit a lot from just a single drop of Holy Water, it can stimulate his potential and make him break through to a higher stage!"

"I never thought the auction's final item would be the Nine Solar Holy Water! The Blissful Manor must have poured into a fortune to get this! I believe the special guest's on the second floor are going crazy right now."

.....

Everyone present were stirred up again. The Nine Solar Holy Water gave rise to yet another storm which swept through the entire audience.

“The Blissful Manor really put the Nine Solar Holy Water up for auction after they got it. If it was any other people, they would definitely hide it like the most precious treasure.”

Han Yan said.

“If it was the Blissful Manor who obtained the Nine Solar Holy Water, I’m sure they wouldn’t take it out for auction. It looks like it belongs to someone else. Just now, Xu Neng mentioned that it was a friend of theirs who entrusted it to them, and it looks like the person doesn’t want any Mortal Restoration Pills; he only wants some other treasures. If my guess is correct, the owner of this Holy Water must have given some of it to Master Blissful. If not, Master Blissful wouldn’t help him with this matter. But I wonder, what will the person want in exchange for the Nine Solar Holy Water?”

Jiang Chen’s eyes shone brightly.

“Little Chen, what if the thing he wants is really demanding?”

Han Yan worriedly asked.

“No matter what he wants, I’m going to get this Nine Solar Holy Water. I have an enormous fortune right now. Furthermore, aside from the Mortal and Earth Restoration Pills, I still have a few hundred combat weapons. Furthermore, the Revival Pills, Bloody Fleeceflower Roots, and the few other things given to me by Xuan Ye are all precious items.”

Jiang Chen was determined to get the Nine Solar Holy Water, as it concerned Yan Chenyu’s life.

The audience calmed down after a short moment of making noise. Everyone stared at Xu Neng on the auction stage, waiting for him to announce what the requirements for getting the Nine Solar Holy Water was.

Xu Neng cleared his throat and continued, “I’ve mentioned it just now; the Nine Solar Holy Water was entrusted to us by a friend. He doesn’t want any Mortal Restoration Pills, nor Earth Restoration Pills. Even if you have Heavenly Restoration Pills, he doesn’t want them either. He told us, here are three drops of Nine Solar Holy Water, anyone who has 3 Nine Soul Sizing Pills will be able to exchange those for this precious treasure.”

Xu Neng’s words caused many people to stare at him, dumbfounded.

“Nine Soul Restoration Pills? What is that? Why have I never heard of it before?”

“Me neither, but it sounds like a rare pill. I wonder if the Myriad Sword Sect or Shangguan Clan have this pill?”

“Interesting, this is the first time an item hasn’t been auction away with Restoration Pills.”

.....

Many people had confused looks on their faces. The Nine Soul Restoration Pill was an extremely rare pill, and only a real alchemist knew what it was.

“Little Chen, what is a Nine Soul Restoration Pills?”

Han Yan had no idea about it as well, that’s why he asked Jiang Chen. In his mind, Jiang Chen was a man who knew everything.

“The Nine Soul Restoration Pill is a kind of pill that can nourish a person’s soul, an extremely rare and precious pill. The process of concocting it is much more difficult than any other similar pills. The nine its name represents the nine herbs with different characteristics that can provide nourishment to a person’s soul, and each characteristic requires nine different herbs. In other words, in order to concoct this Nine Soul Restoration Pill, it requires 81 different herbs that are useful to the soul. Also, some other natural herbs are needed to concoct a complete pill.”

Jiang Chen continued, “The soul nourishing pill is rare and precious, and finding all 81 different types of herbs is even more

difficult. Furthermore, it's extremely difficult to find an alchemist in the Eastern Continent who can perfectly blend over a hundred different types of herbs, as well as 81 types of soul nourishing herbs together. Concocting a pill like this is almost impossible. Not only does it require massive resources; the alchemist can't make any mistakes. A single mistake will destroy every natural ingredient in an instant."

## Chapter 296 – The Cruellest Bet Underneath The Heavens

---

After Jiang Chen finished his explanation about the Nine Soul Restoration Pill, Han Yan was so astonished that his mouth was wide open. Such a complicated method of concocting a pill, it was simply not something an ordinary alchemist could do. Even the most powerful alchemist from the Martial Saint Dynasty wouldn't have confidence in concocting one.

“No wonder the Blissful Manor wants to exchange the Nine Solar Holy Water, even they don't have the Nine Soul Restoration Pill.”

Han Yan said with a sigh.

“That goes without saying. If the Blissful Manor had the Nine Soul Restoration Pill, they would trade it with that man directly, and we wouldn't be seeing the Nine Solar Holy Water in this auction.”

Big Yellow said, “Although the Nine Soul Restoration Pill is extremely rare, it can only help with restoring a person's soul. The Nine Solar Holy Water can provide unimaginable advantages to anyone.”

“Little Chen, we don't have this Nine Soul Restoration Pill either. Looks like it will be hard to get this Nine Solar Holy Water. The owner of the Nine Solar Holy Water must be a wealthy man, so unless we can take out the Nine Soul Restoration Pill, we won't be able to get the Holy Water.”

Han Yan said.

“Yes, I don’t have the Nine Soul Restoration Pill, but neither does the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan. The superpowers from the Jian Province doesn’t have the ability to concoct a pill like that.”

A smile appeared on Jiang Chen’s face. As a Saint-Rank Alchemist, his accomplishments within alchemy was hard to imagine. He knew very well about the difficult of concocting a Nine Soul Restoration Pill.

Xu Neng’s glance swept across the entire audience. He could see many people whispering amongst each other, but none of them showed any signs of bidding for the Nine Solar Holy Water. It was no longer an auction, but a trade with a specific criteria.

“Friends, is there anyone who has Nine Soul Restoration Pills? A Nine Soul Restoration Pill can be exchanged for a single drop of the Nine Solar Holy Water, and I’m sure you all know that this trade is definitely worth more than you give!”

Xu Neng’s words were actually directed at the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan. In his mind, if there were anyone here who was able to take out a Nine Soul Restoration Pill, it must be someone from either of these superpowers.

“Haha, Xu Neng, don’t ask anymore. Even the best alchemist from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan wouldn’t be able



to concoct this pill.”

A loud laugh burst out from one of the private room, it was Old Man Ling Shan.

“Auctioneer Xu Neng, although the Shangguan Clan doesn’t have the Nine Soul Restoration Pill, we can give you all the ingredients required to concoct it. I wonder if this is enough for us to exchange with the Nine Solar Holy Water.”

Shangguan Chong asked.

“Is the Shangguan Clan joking, or slapping Master Blissful’s face? The Blissful Manor has all the resources, and is the strongest power in the ocean; they simply don’t lack any rare treasures and ingredients. I know the Shangguan Clan can provide all ingredients and herbs, but do you really think the Blissful Manor doesn’t have those?”

Right after Shangguan Chong finished speaking, an indifferent voice sounded out from the third private room. Everyone were familiar with the voice by now, it was the voice of Chen Jiang!

“Fuck! This Chen Jiang is clearly fighting the Shangguan Clan head to head, he just won’t let go of any opportunity!”

“But, what Chen Jiang said seems reasonable. If the Shangguan Clan is able to provide all the ingredients and herbs, the Blissful Manor will definitely be able to do so as well. But what that person

wants it the Nine Soul Restoration Pill, not the raw ingredients. What he's lacking is an alchemist who can concoct the pill."

.....

Discussions filled the auction hall once again. Everyone felt as if Shangguan Chong just spoke bullshit.

"Chen Jiang youngster, when I, Shangguan Chong am speaking, you're not allowed to interrupt! Get lost!"

When Shangguan Chong heard what Jiang Chen said, he couldn't restrain the anger within his heart any longer. He desired to rush over to Jiang Chen and devour him alive.

"Don't try to show off in front of this master dog, you're just a reckless old bastard! If there's a chance later, this master dog will have a chat with you about life!"

Big Yellow's words was heard by everyone in the auction hall, and it made everyone burst into laughter. It also made the fury within Shangguan Chong's heart stronger. He was a highly revered Combat Soul Elder from the Shangguan Clan, a respectable person no matter where he went. But, a dog just insulted him, he couldn't endure it any longer.

"Silence please!"

Xu Neng quickly calmed the audience down before Shangguan

Chong went out of control. The Blissful Manor had already received a reward from that person, and they would have to give it back if they couldn't help him find a Nine Soul Restoration Pill.

“The friend who entrusted the Nine Solar Holy Water to us clearly mentioned that he only wants Nine Soul Restoration Pills with 100% effectiveness. If the Shangguan Clan doesn't have it, don't force yourself.”

Xu Neng said.

“Auctioneer Xu Neng, the Myriad Sword Sect can also provide all the ingredients and herbs required to concoct a Nine Soul Restoration Pill. Furthermore, we have a powerful Combat Soul alchemist, he can try to concoct this pill.”

Ye Xiao from the Myriad Sword Sect expressed his willingness as well. The Nine Solar Holy Water was right in front of them, and they didn't want to let it slip away, no matter how heavy the price they needed to pay; they just had to get it!

“The Myriad Sword Sect is even better at joking than the Shangguan Clan! Try to concoct the pill? That's even more bullshit! Putting aside our friend who is in urgent need for a Nine Soul Restoration Pill, even if he wasn't in urgent need, how certain is your alchemist that he can successfully concoct this pill? Also, how certain is he that he can make it 100% effectiveness?”

Jiang Chen once again jumped in the conversation.

“Fuck! This guy is completely fearless! It looks like he’s going all out against the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan!”

“But his words do make sense. The Nine Soul Restoration Pill is extremely difficult to concoct, and that person also wants it to be a 100% effectiveness pill. I don’t even think the alchemist from the Myriad Sword Sect has full confidence in making it, right?”

.....

Chen Jiang’s name had become completely famous in today’s auction. Regardless of who it was, Shangguan Clan or Myriad Sword Sect, he didn’t take any of them seriously. Since the beginning of the auction, he had repeatedly fought both these superpowers.

“Bastard, saying that the Myriad Sword Sect can’t concoct this pill? Don’t tell me you, Chen Jiang can concoct it? Why don’t you take a piss and look into your own reflection, find out who you really are!”

Ye Xiao angrily said. His hatred toward Jiang Chen was much stronger than his hatred toward Shangguan Chong. He was fooled by Jiang Chen and was forced to pay 400 million for the Heavenly Wings skill, and this made him feel awful, like he had just swallowed a fly.

“I might be weak when it comes to other things, but I sure know how to concoct pills. Also, I have successfully concocted a few hundred Nine Soul Restoration Pills, I’m an expert at this.”

Jiang Chen said with a loud and clear voice. His words spread throughout the entire auction hall, and was clearly heard by every single person.

At the same time, on top of the auction hall, there was an isolated room, and two men sat inside. Both of them were looking at a large crystal ball in front of them. Inside the crystal ball, the entire auction hall was displayed.

One of the men had a body full of power and grandeur, and he wore a golden armor that shone brightly. He was Master Blissful! As for the other man, he wore a black suit and a bamboo hat. The hat covered his face with shadows, so no one could see his real identity. He too had a majestic body, just like Master Blissful. Because he wore a tight suit, his big muscles were perfectly visible. It looked like there was an explosive amount of strength within his muscles.

Judging from this man's aura, he was pretty young.

Both Master Blissful and the man in black had gloomy expressions, but when they heard what Jiang Chen said, their eyes suddenly lit up.

“Who is this guy?”

The man in black asked with a vigorous voice.

“He is Chen Jiang, a rare genius from the younger generation. He’s a ruthless and decisive man, and he has absolutely no respect for the law. Although this is the first time I’ve met him, I really like this guy. But, I have no idea if he really can concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pill.”

Master Blissful said.

Back in the auction hall!

The entire audience burst into laughter immediately after Jiang Chen finished speaking.

“Haha, what a joke, I’ve finally witnessed what it means to shamelessly boast! Youngster Chen Jiang, you should really take a piss and look into your own reflection! With your Divine Core cultivation base, even if you were an alchemist, there is no way you can concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pill!”

Ye Xiao burst into the laughter. This was the first time he laughed with so much joy since the auction started.

“Youngster Chen Jiang, you should know your own limits! Even if you really want the Nine Solar Holy Water, you shouldn’t shamelessly boast like that!”

Shangguan Chong obviously wouldn’t let go of any opportunity to add a mocking comment.

“Auctioneer Xu Neng, this guy is talking nonsense and disturbing the auction’s order. In my opinion, you should chase him out from this auction hall, chase him away from the Blissful Island!”

Mao Sheng commented as well. His words were like razor sharp swords pointed at Jiang Chen. His hatred toward Jiang Chen was much greater than Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong’s hatred. Both of them had only suffered losses to their dignity and wealth, but Mao Sheng had lost a few core disciples and his own grandson.

“Humph! Don’t talk if you don’t have the ability to back it up!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed.

“Young master Chen Jiang, do you really know how to concoct a Nine Soul Restoration Pill? Are you sure this isn’t a joke?”

Xu Neng asked as he furrowed his brows. He had a pretty good impression toward Jiang Chen, but that didn’t mean he could accept Jiang Chen’s joke. Furthermore, in Xu Neng’s opinion, Jiang Chen couldn’t do it. Jiang Chen was after all just a Divine Core warrior, so the strength of his soul wouldn’t be enough to support the pill concoction process.

“Of course I’m serious about what I said. I want to buy three portions of the ingredients required to concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pill. Once I successfully concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pills, I’ll exchange it for the Nine Solar Holy Water.

Jiang Chen spoke with the utmost confidence.

“If he can successfully concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pill, I, Ye Xiao will forever walk backwards!”

Ye Xiao coldly harrumphed.

“Precisely! This brat is clearly looking for trouble! Even the Combat Soul alchemist from our family can’t concoct this Nine Soul Seizing Pill, and this boy is just a mere Divine Core warrior, what a joke!”

Shangguan Chong said with a grin on his face.

“Really? If I manage to concoct a 100% effectiveness Nine Soul Restoration Pill, will you both eat dog shit in front of everyone here?”

Jiang Chen said with a loud voice.

“Bastard, what did you just say?”

“How dare you insult me? You deserve a thousand deaths!”

Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong immediately became furious. Someone was actually daring enough to ask them to eat dog shit in front of everyone! With their status, this was a daylight insult!



“Since both of you are so certain that I can’t concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pill, why don’t we have a bet? I’ll concoct the pill in front of everyone here. If I fail, my life will be yours, but if I succeed in concocting it, both of you will have to eat dog shit in front of everyone, fresh dog shit.”

Jiang Chen’s words was like a bomb being dropped in the audience, and it immediately caused the entire audience to boil.

# Chapter 297 – Come Eat The Dog Shit

---

“What the fuck? This bet is so cruel! Asking the Myriad Sword Sect and the Shangguan Clan’s elders to eat dog shit? Damn it, how did he come up with that?”

“It sounds like that Chen Jiang already has a plan. Don’t tell me really can concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pill?”

“Impossible, he’s only at the Divine Core realm, there is absolutely no way he can do it! I’m sure he’s just trying to piss both Ye Xian and Shangguan Chong off with the bet.”

.....

The bet was absolutely cruel, it could definitely be considered the cruelest bet underneath the heavens. Ye Xian and Shangguan Chong were body so angry their necks turned red, and they couldn’t even speak a single word because of the extreme fury they felt.

“Wakaka! You two old fools are so honorable! This master dog can make eight different flavors of shit!”

Big Yellow’s wild laugh could be heard clearly.

Plop...

Many people fell down onto the ground. Even Jiang Chen and Han Yan were staggered, and nearly fell back into their rattan chairs. This dog was truly abnormal.

“Fuck his sister, eight different flavors? This dog is a weirdo!”

“Damn it, where did this dog come from? Could he be any more abnormal than this?”

“Oh heavens, daddy can’t stand it anymore! This is ridiculous, that bet is too cruel! Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong are definitely not going to accept it.”

“It’s hard to tell, but I’d accept it. This Chen Jiang is clearly trying to insult them! He is unable to concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pill, that’s why there is no harm in accepting the bet, except for the small amount of shame. But if they reject the bet, they will feel even more shame. Furthermore, once Chen Jiang loses the bet, they can just kill him on the spot.”

Few people could stay calm. This dog was really cruel; he was truly invincible within the realm of cruelty.

Within the isolated room, Master Blissful was laughing. Even the man in black was laughing so much that his shoulders were trembling.

“Damn it, this guy is a genius, I like him! That dog as well, it’s pretty amazing!”

The man in black's words startled Master Blissful. His tone was a little strange actually, as if it was similar to Chen Jiang's tone.

“Young master Nangong, what do you think?”

Master Blissful looked at the man in black.

“I like this Chen Jiang. Nobody can take out the Nine Soul Restoration Pill, so why don't we just let him try? What if he can really concoct it? My condition doesn't allow me to drag on any longer-cough cough... damn it, here it comes again!”

The man in black suddenly started violently coughing as he was talking to Master Blissful. His body was trembling, as if he was suffering from tremendous pain.

“Chen Jiang, are you sure you can concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pill?”

Master Blissful's voice appeared in the auction hall.

“Of course I am. I can do it now.”

Jiang Chen replied in a confident manner. The Nine Soul Restoration Pill was indeed extremely difficult to concoct. In order to merge so many herbs and ingredients together, the consumption of the alchemist's soul energy would be tremendous. Ordinary

alchemist, even Combat Soul alchemists would feel extreme difficult in concocting the pill. But, with the help of the Great Soul Derivation skill, Jiang Chen had unlimited soul energy, so he had no reason to fear the huge consumption of his soul energy. Furthermore, his peerless ability to concoct pills had no comparison within this realm.

“Alright, if that is the case, I’ll let you give it a try. The herbs and ingredients will be provided by the Blissful Manor. If you really can concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pill, you don’t have to pay for the ingredients, but if you fail, you have to pay me for them. Do you agree with this?”

For Master Blissful, this was a win-win deal. If Jiang Chen was unable to concoct the pill, he would have to pay for the ingredients, but if Jiang Chen really managed to concoct it, he would be using three portions of the ingredients needed to concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pills to become friends with a powerful alchemist, which was worth much, much more than the ingredients.

“No problem.”

Jiang Chen replied.

“Alright, prepare the ingredients.”

Master Blissful said.

Not long after that, a few Golden Warriors appeared on the auction stage. They poured out a bunch of herbs and ingredients. When these ingredient appeared on the stage, a strong smell of herbs immediately filled the entire auction hall, causing those who smelled it to feel relaxed and pleased.

These herbs made up the three portions perfectly, and they were precisely enough to concoct thee Nine Soul Restoration Pills.

“Young master Chen Jiang, please come to the auction stage.”

Xu Neng said, his face pointing toward the third private room.

Jiang Chen opened the window and leapt out from it, then he landed on the auction stage.

“Don’t you think this Chen Jiang is too prideful? There is always a risk when concocting pills, but he only requested three portions of the ingredients. Does he really think he can concoct a 100% effectiveness pill with these?”

“It looks like he really knows what he is doing, perhaps he really can do it?”

“Who knows? Let’s just wait and see. I still don’t believe a Divine Core warrior can concoct such a pill.”

Even at this point of time, the majority of the audience still didn’t believe that Jiang Chen could really concoct the Nine Soul

## Restoration Pill.

Jiang Chen's calm expression remained on his face. When he threw his glance at the herbs, he couldn't help but feel surprised about how wealthy the Blissful Manor was. All the ingredients require to concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pill were here.

Jiang Chen didn't immediately start, he instead threw his glance toward the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan's private rooms. With a loud and clear voice, he said, "Both of you, do you have the courage to bet with me? If you don't, I'll start concocting the pill now."

With his words, Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong once again became the center of attention.

"Do it!"

"Accept the bet!"

The audience jeering. There was a saying that bystanders never feared a disturbance growing bigger, their only goal was to watch the show.

Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong's expressions both became extremely ugly. It wasn't that they didn't have the courage to bet with Jiang Chen, it was that the bet was too cruel. It was so cruel that they couldn't afford to lose.

“I don’t believe a Divine Core alchemist can concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pill. Fine, I’ll accept your bet! But if you lose, I’ll tear you into pieces on the spot!”

Shangguan Chong said loudly. His entire voice echoed through the entire auction hall. It wasn’t difficult to imagine how angry he was right now.

“Youngster Chen Jiang, daddy also accepts your bet! If you lose, I’ll slice you into a thousand pieces!”

Ye Xiao accepted the bet as well. Both of them really hated Jiang Chen, and more importantly, there were extremely confident they would win. The Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect both had Combat Soul alchemists, and they had witnessed how these alchemists concocted pills. With the huge gap between the Divine Core realm and Combat Soul realm, they concluded that there was no way Jiang Chen could concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pill, let alone on with 100% effectiveness.

In Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong’s minds, Jiang Chen was actually insulting them, and since that was the case, they wouldn’t let Jiang Chen get what he wanted. They believed Jiang Chen was just pretending. Once Jiang Chen failed, they would have a reason to kill him so that they could settle their scores.

Hearing what they said, Jiang Chen pretended he was startled.

“Haha, brat, now you’re scared! If you don’t have the ability, don’t disgrace yourself, come over and get yourself killed now!”



Shangguan Chong burst into laughter. In his eyes, Jiang Chen was startled because he was scared.

“I'm scared?”

Jiang Chen said with a grin, “The bet is already locked in, and the audience will be our witnesses. I hope the two of you don't deny this later! Big Yellow, start preparing!”

“Kaka, I'm always prepared, and I'll make sure the portion is enough for both of them!”

Big Yellow was really happy. He felt really excited about what was going to happen.

“The fuck? I thought Little Chen was just making fun of them, but he actually meant it? Big Yellow, does Little Chen really know how to concoct pills?”

Han Yan was shocked by Jiang Chen once again.

“Is there anything that guy doesn't know?”

A grin emerged on Big Yellow's face in front of Han Yan. He was really happy right now! No one knew about Jiang Chen's alchemy abilities, except for him, that is. Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong were going to lose for sure, and Big Yellow wouldn't show them

any mercy later on. He promised them a big portion of his shit just now.

“He can even concoct a complicated pill like the Nine Soul Restoration Pill?”

Han Yan had mixed emotions. He had been in a coma, that’s why he had no idea whether or not Jiang Chen was a powerful alchemist, and felt shocked.

“Don’t worry! In the entire Eastern Continent, he is the only one who can concoct this pill.”

Big Yellow had the utmost confidence in Jiang Chen.

“Bastard, is he a reincarnation of an Immortal?”

Han Yan felt slightly depressed. He now knew that he had met a truly abnormal person. But, when he thought back, ever since he had met Jiang Chen, it had seemed like he was a guy who knew everything; he was like a vast library that contained the answer to everything.

The audience became restless, and everyone stared at white-clothed young man, Jiang Chen. Only now did they realize, this young man wasn’t joking! No person would bet their lives with their enemies as a joke!

“Don’t tell me this guy is really an alchemist?”

“It’s hard to tell, but even if he really is an alchemist, this Chen Jiang only has a Divine Core cultivation base. How can he concoct a complicated pill like the Nine Soul Restoration Pill?”

“Let’s just continue watching. If he can’t do it, I’m sure Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong will rush onto the stage and tear him to pieces.”

.....

The entire audience was looking at the auction stage. In the entire auction hall, only Jiang Chen was being focused on.

“Silence please!”

Xu Neng shouted out loudly, “Young master Chen Jiang is going to begin concocting pills, no one is allowed to disturb him!”

After that, Xu Neng turned around to Jiang Chen. With a smile he asked, “Young master Chen Jiang, can you start now?”

“Yes.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. Xu Neng walked to a corner on the auction stage and stared at Jiang Chen without blinking his eyes.

“Humph! Let’s see what this little bastard is going to do.”

Ye Xiao coldly harrumphed, his words filled with despise.

“What a reckless junior, his arrogant will get him killed for sure.”

Shangguan Chong sat straight on the rattan chair, looking calm and relaxed.

Jiang Chen ignored the mocking words from those two. He calmly stared at the herbs next to him, then he unleashed Yuan energy from his body. With the help of this force, all the ingredients on the auction stage flew up into the air.

Buzz...

After that, an extremely powerful soul force dashed out from Jiang Chen's body like a tsunami. With the help of this soul force, all herbs with the same characteristics were grouped together. After they were grouped, Jiang Chen perfectly divided them into three portions. Each portion was enough to concoct 1 Nine Soul Restoration Pill.

“What a powerful soul force, this guy really is an alchemist!”

“Never thought this guy had this ability! I underestimated him before.”

“Just keep watching. There are many Divine Core alchemists, but none of them can concoct this Nine Soul Restoration Pill.”

When sensing Jiang Chen’s tremendous soul force, those who doubted him before this immediately had a change in their expression. But, this could only prove that Jiang Chen was indeed an alchemist, it was still hard to tell if he really could concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pill.

## Chapter 298 - Uproar

---

Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong's expressions changed slightly. Jiang Chen really being an alchemist was not something that had expected, so they were somewhat surprised. But, they didn't panic at all. After all, being an alchemist and being able to concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pill was two completely different concepts.

Within the isolated room in the auction hall, both Master Blissful and the man in black stared at Jiang Chen without blinking their eyes, especially the man in black. A nervous expression could be seen on his face. Only he knew how important the Nine Soul Restoration Pill was to him.

On the auction stage, Jiang Chen opened his mouth and spat out the dazzling True Dragon Flame. The scorching flames immediately turned into an ocean of flames, which covered all the ingredients within.

Hiss...

In an instant, the sound of the ingredients melting could be heard from the ocean of flames. The flames were burning at an incredibly high temperature, causing the temperature in the entire auction hall to increase.

“What?! He's melting and purifying so many herbs at the same time? Is he courting death?”

A shocked man exclaimed. He was a respectable alchemist

himself, and although he wasn't amazing when it came to pill concoction, his knowledge within the field was not something any ordinary people could compare with. He knew very well how difficult it was to concoct a pill, and in order to concoct an advanced pill such as the Nine Soul Restoration Pill, the alchemist couldn't afford to make a single mistake during the entire concoction process.

But for Jiang Chen, not only was he melting and purifying all the ingredients at the same time, he was actually going to concoct all 3 Nine Soul Restoration Pills at the same time! This was ridiculous!

“Haha, what a dumbass! With this method, if he really succeeded, I would eat dog shit immediately!”

Shangguan Chong immediately burst into laughter. When he saw how Jiang Chen was concocting the pills, his confidence was immediately boosted. He knew he had won the bet. In his mind, the method Jiang Chen used to concoct the pills was basically a way of giving up.

Master Blissful and the man in black also furrowed their brows. Although they weren't alchemists, but as great warriors, they did have some knowledge regarding alchemy. The method Jiang Chen used to concoct pills wouldn't result in the pills being good, let alone any pills at all. This method was just a waste of ingredients. Jiang Chen's actions made Master Blissful and the man in black disappointed. They really thought that this young man was just messing around.

On the auction stage, a grin emerged on Jiang Chen's face. He

never paid any attention to those mocking gazes. In the field of alchemy, he was a grandmaster. No one could understand his extraordinary concoction skills.

Not only the Nine Soul Restoration Pill, with the help of the Great Soul Derivation Skill, even those pills that were ten times more difficult to concoct he would be able to concoct without any problems.

Whoosh...

The flames were dancing within the air, constantly making whooshing and hissing sounds. While controlling the flames, Jiang Chen only wore a calm expression on his face.

When concocting a pill, just having strong soul force and a soul cultivation skill wasn't enough, one would also need incredible flames. If it was in the past, Jiang Chen might have faced some difficulty when concocting this Nine Soul Restoration Pill, but with the amazing True Dragon Flames, he was able to burn anything down quickly. Together with the True Dragon Flames and Great Soul Derivation skill, every single herb was quickly melted down.

Pill concoction was a boring process, but none of the people in the auction hall felt the time passing slowly. It had been two hours since Jiang Chen started concocting the pills, and the purifying was still going on with no problems.

Now, no one dared underestimate Jiang Chen anymore. Two hours was more than enough for them to have a brief



understanding of Jiang Chen's ability. Some guys with sight as good as an eagle's had found out that with Jiang Chen's control, the essence of those herbs were being extracted bit by bit, and none of it went to waste.

Continuously doing this for two hours, if it was any other ordinary alchemist, they might have already depleted their soul force. Furthermore, extracting the essence of hundreds of herbs from different characteristics at the same time, this require precise control from the alchemist; it was not something any ordinary alchemist could do.

But, Jiang Chen did it! At least, up until now. Nothing had gone wrong so far, and no signs of panicking could be found on his face. He still wore the same calm expression, and his soul force and Yuan energy was still stable.

"I didn't expect this Chen Jiang to be so amazing, his precision when controlling the purification of the herbs is incredible!"

"Precisely! I believe most alchemists won't be able to do this."

"Let's continue watching, the purification has yet to finish. Furthermore, the most difficult part is the merging stage."

.....

Many people stared with shocked expressions. No one had noticed how much time had gone by.

In the blink of an eye, another two hours had passed. At this moment, Jiang Chen had completely extracted every single herb. The audience could clearly see all different kinds of herb essences floating within the ocean of flames, circulating around like countless tiny crystals. They looked pure without any impurities.

“My heavens! A few hundred herbs, and he only used four hours to extract all of them! I would need at least twenty days to do that!”

“This is amazing, did you guys see that? The essence of each herb was perfectly extracted, none of it went to waste! No impurities can be found either! If they are successfully merged, it will become a 100% effectiveness pill! This Chen Jiang is really terrifying!”

“I’ve finally witnessed what a real genius is today! Not only does this man have great talent and powerful combat strength, he’s even a grandmaster of alchemy! If I hadn’t witnessed this myself, I wouldn’t have believed it at all!”

“Let’s continue watching, he is going to merge all the ingredients into the pills, this is the most difficult stage of the entire concoction process! Because each herb has different characteristics, they will repel each other, and if he loses control of this, everything will explode in an instant, and all the herb essences will turn into ashes!”

.....

The expressions of the spectators changed once again. Putting

aside the question whether or not Jiang Chen really was able to concoct the pill, just the fact that he had perfectly extracted a few hundred herbs in four hours was more than enough to shake both heaven and earth!

In the private rooms on the second floor, Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong's faces turned really ugly. When they thought about the ridiculous bet with Jiang Chen, both of their hearts started violently trembling.

“Senior disciple Lin, do you think that Chen Jiang will successfully concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pills?”

The female disciple from the Myriad Sword Sect carefully asked.

“Don't worry, that's absolutely impossible! The most difficult part isn't purification and extraction, but merging them together, creating the pill. With his Divine Core cultivation base, he can't do it at all!”

Lin Anying said with the utmost confidence.

“Precisely, that guy is too arrogant! I'll let him know the real meaning of death!”

Ye Xiao said in a cold tone. It wasn't hard to see that he wasn't as calm as he previously was.

On the other side, Master Blissful and the man in black wore

surprised expressions on their faces. Their opinion toward Jiang Chen changed once again.

“Smah! Never thought Little Chen would be able to do all this!”

Han Yan felt really surprised as he watched Jiang Chen. Back in the Black Sect, the most amazing alchemist he knew was Guo Shan. But, when he saw Jiang Chen concocting the pill today, he realized Guo Shan couldn't compare with him at all.

“Don't talk to me, I'm brewing right now.”

After saying that, a fart escaped from Big Yellow, instantly stunning Han Yan on the spot.

Blergh!

Han Yan threw up.

“Damn it! Couldn't you just tell me earlier?! Puh! It stinks!”

Han Yan's face instantly turned pale, and he hurriedly moved far away from Big Yellow. Only now did he realize, the reason Big Yellow had kept so quiet during these last four hours was because he was brewing his shit.

Sigh!

Han Yan let out a long sigh. Suddenly, he felt a tremendous pity for Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong. Big Yellow's fart was so powerful, and if he really pooped, the power would be more than enough to destroy their spirits.

On the auction stage, no emotions could be seen on Jiang Chen's face, he still wore the same calm look. After all the herbs had been purified, he was getting ready to merge them into the final three pills.

This step was indeed the most difficult part in the entire concoction process, but for Jiang Chen, it was nothing.

The audience watching him with shocked expressions. They saw Jiang Chen's palms beginning to wiggle, then, as if summoned or instructed by something, all the herb essences in the ocean of flames started gathering.

The ocean of flames had been divided into three areas, and each area contained hundreds of herb essences. Jiang Chen was going to merge all three Nine Soul Restoration Pills together now.

Hiss...

The herb essences started knocking into each other and producing hissing sounds. This was the most difficult step, and it required very strict control from the alchemist; he needed to be as precise as he could.

Right at this moment, panic struck every single person who was watching. The three most panicked spectators were Ye Xiao, Shangguan Chong, and the man in black who was sitting together with Master Blissful. Whether or not Jiang Chen could successfully concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pills was directly related to them.

The tense atmosphere remained as it was for another two hours. Witnessing the herb essences in the ocean of flames perfectly merging together, without showing any signs of self-destruction, sweat finally began appearing on Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong's faces. They couldn't remain in their seats any longer.

“Don't tell me this Chen Jiang is going to succeed?”

“Looks like he is on the last step, this is unbelievable!”

“Let's see if he can make it through the last step.”

Everyone were incredibly tense. If Jiang Chen really succeeded, they would be witnessing the birth of a miracle.

Another hour later.

Haa!

Jiang Chen suddenly let out a loud shout. The ocean of flames was violently dancing around, and the temperature within the entire auction hall rose once again. Following Jiang Chen's loud

shout, three thunderous sounds could be heard from the ocean of flames.

After that, three golden beams dashed out from the flames, and started flying around above the auction stage.

Right at this moment, everyone stood up with their mouths wide open and stared at those three golden pills that were flying around in the air.

“Nine Soul Restoration Pill!”

Within the auction hall’s isolated room, the man in black suddenly stood up from his seat and shouted.

“All three pills can fly in the air themselves, they are sentient pills! These are 100% effectiveness Nine Soul Restoration Pills!”

“Oh heavens, what did I just witness?! He really concocted the Nine Soul Restoration Pills, and all three of them at the same time!! This is enough to shake both heaven and earth!”

“Monster! No one will be able to believe this unless they witnessed it themselves!”

Everyone were shocked. Jiang Chen’s actions once again a massive uproar amongst the entire audience.

## Chapter 299 – Come Receive The Shit

---

The entire auction was in a massive uproar. Three bright golden Nine Soul Restoration Pills were flying around in the air, constantly producing buzzing sounds. At the same time, a golden radiance showered down onto the audience, while a medical fragrance made them feel refreshed.

Xu Neng was the one who stood closest to the pills, causing him to be the person who inhaled the most medical fragrance. When the fragrances entered his body, Xu Neng could feel his soul being nourished, and his vitality receiving a boost.

The Nine Soul Restoration Pill was a rare medicinal pill that helped heal a man's soul. It could provide the soul with tremendous benefits.

“They really are 100% effectiveness Nine Soul Restoration Pills! This Chen Jiang really surprises me!”

Master Blissful was pleasantly surprised. At the same time, the status of Jiang Chen within his mind had been raised to a whole new level. No one would look down upon such an excellent alchemist.

Jiang Chen retracted the True Dragon Flames into his body. After that, with a grabbing gesture, as if they were being summoned by Jiang Chen, all three Nine Soul Restoration Pills turned into three golden lights and fell into Jiang Chen's palm.



“How is this possible? This is impossible!”

Shangguan Chong’s voice was violently trembling, and his face had turned extremely pale. When he thought about the bet between himself and Jiang Chen, he felt a small desire to kill himself.

“How could this guy concoct the Nine Soul Restoration Pills? I don’t believe it! This can’t be real!”

Ye Xiao’s reaction wasn’t much different from Shangguan Chong’s reaction. He had just lost a bet he had absolute confidence in winning.

“Young master Chen Jiang, please come here and meet me.”

Master Blissful’s voice sounded out once again, but this this time, his tone carried a hint of respect.

“Please hold on, I need to fulfill the bet with those two guys.”

Jiang Chen replied with a grin on his face. There was no way he could let Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong off easily, that wasn’t his style.

His words were like oil being poured onto a burning fire, causing the audience to burst into an uproar. Everyone stared at the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan’s private rooms.

Wakaka...

Right at this moment, a wild disharmonious laugh sounded out above the audience. Following that, the audience saw an adorable puppy flying out from the third private room. The puppy flew circles around the auction hall while wildly laughing.

“Haha, this master dog has spent the last few hours preparing! I’m sure I have more than enough shit for both of you! May I know which flavor you two prefer? This master dog can take care of any special requests!”

Big Yellow’s words made a lot of the people feel dizzy. Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong were even worse off, they nearly fainted out of anger, because their bet was to eat dog shit once they lost, and there really was a shameless dog here.

“Fuck! Where did this crazy dog come from?! Can he really adjust the flavor of his poop? Puh! Disgusting!”

“This is fucking disgusting, the bet was extremely cruel! I’m guessing Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong must be super pissed right now!”

No one here could take it. The image of both men devouring dog shit, they just couldn’t imagine it in their heads.

“Bastard!”

Ye Xiao furiously roared out. A powerful energy immediately blew the window frame on the second floor off. With fluttering clothes, Ye Xiao flew out from his private room. He glared at Big Yellow with a strong desire to devour this damn dog alive.

“You guys weren’t even born when I became one of the strongest men in my region, who gave you the audacity to insult me here? You’re simply courting your own deaths!”

Shangguan Chong showed his face as well. He stood on the edge of the window on the second floor. A few disciples from the Shangguan Clan stood behind him as well. All of them wore the same ugly expressions.

“You two old fools, you lost the bet! You are all from big superpowers, don’t tell me you’re going to deny your promise! You’re losing an extreme amount of face here.”

Big Yellow stood up like a human and pointed his paws at both men while scolding them.

“Humph! We have so many witnesses here, there is no way you can deny it! If I lost, I would give my head to you without saying anything, but you? Both of you are elders from big superpowers! So disappointing! But, regardless of matters, we had a deal, and you have to accept your loss.”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed.

“Big Yellow, give them an appetizer first!”

Han Yan shouted at Big Yellow. After that, he immediately covered his mouth and nose. Jiang Chen saw this movement and was startled for a moment. He didn't know what the meaning behind Han Yan's movement was.

“Kaka, alright! This master dog has been brewing this for so long!”

While saying that, Big Yellow once again started flying in circles. After that, a scene that no one could forget for the rest of their lives played out. Since this incident, all these people started dreaming about ripping this dog's skin off.

Pfft! Pfft! Pfft! ...

The only thing the audience saw was Big Yellow holding his butt up. With each move he made, a world shaking fart would erupt from his body. Each fart sounded like a drum strike, loud and clear.

To make things worse, the dog's farts had color. In an instant, the air within the entire auction hall became somewhat green.

After that!

Blergh...

“Fuck you! Blergh!”

“Ugh... this stinks like hell! Ahh!! Blergh...”

“Puh! You better kill me now! Someone, please, hurry up and kill that fucking dog! Blergh...”

At this moment, everyone were throwing up, covering the clean auction hall with their puke. While vomiting, someone quickly used their Yuan energy to block the green air from getting close to them.

Blergh...

Xu Neng vomited, Jiang Chen vomited. Jiang Chen finally realized why Han Yan covered his mouth and nose in advance!

Wakaka... Pfft! Pfft! Pfft!

Big Yellow wildly laughed as he flew around, farting. Furthermore, he purposely pushed most of the green air toward the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan.

“Chase this dog out from here now!”

“Damn it, this stinks! How can someone have such stinking farts?! No, this isn’t a fart anymore, this is a weapon!”

“Young master Chen Jiang, please ask that dog to stop! Daddy can’t stand it any longer! Blergh...”

.....

No one could withstand it any longer. This was no different from a massacre. Perhaps only Big Yellow was able to make so many great warriors throw up at the same time.

Back in the third private room, Han Yan had shut the window tightly, and he was laughing so hard he couldn’t even remain standing.

Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong were both Combat Soul warriors, so they responded quickly. They used their Yuan energy to block off the green air when they saw it. But, their expressions were many times darker than that of everyone else. This dog’s fart had such incredible power, and if he really pooped? Damn it, they just couldn’t imagine what would happen then.

“Big Yellow, stop it immediately!”

Jiang Chen slapped Big Yellow’s head. He didn’t know that this dog actually had such an ability. In the end, he too was suffering from it.

Hehe...

Big Yellow replied with an evil laugh, then he stopped farting. The entire auction hall had become a mess, it was a horrible scene.

“Wahaha, this dog is so fierce, so wicke-, cough cough...”

Within the isolated room, when the man in black saw what was happening in the auction hall through the crystal ball, he became convulsed with laughter.

“How is it, buddy? How is my mighty fart?”

Big Yellow instantly jumped back onto Jiang Chen’s shoulder. Jiang Chen’s face instantly turned pale out of fear.

“Damn dog, you better not poop on my shoulder!”

Jiang Chen gritted his teeth and warned Big Yellow. He knew this dog very well; anything was possible when it came to him.

After that, Jiang Chen waved his hand and unleashed a layer of flames, burning away all the green air. Together with the help from some of the warriors who blew the poisonous gas away with their Yuan energy, fresh air finally returned to the auction hall.

However, everyone in the auction hall still had dark faces. They stared at Big Yellow with hatred and fear; this dog was simply

ridiculous.

“Ye Xiao, Shangguan Chong, accept your loss; come receive the poop!”

Jiang Chen shouted toward Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong in an imposing manner.

Now, everyone felt pity for Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong. The fart alone had already been so terrifying, and if they were really forced to eat the dog’s shit, would they still be alive afterwards?

With Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong’s status, this was even worse than killing them.

“Bastard, how dare you insult our elder?! You’re courting death!”

A younger generation disciple from the Shangguan Clan couldn’t hold his anger any longer. He leapt forward and pushed his palm toward Jiang Chen.

“Humph! What a clown.”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. In an instant, he countered the disciple with his palm, sending a massive energy wave onto the young disciple. The disciple let out a blood-curdling screech as he exploded into a bloody mist.



Underneath the heavens, perhaps only Jiang Chen dared kill a disciple of the Shangguan Clan in front of so many people.

However, in the minds of the spectators, there must have been something wrong with the Shangguan Clan disciple's brain. He was only a Mid Divine Core warrior, wasn't he too reckless by attacking Jiang Chen? With Jiang Chen's and the Shangguan Clan's current relationship, did he really think Jiang Chen would show mercy because of his background?

“Little bastard, who gave you the audacity to kill someone from the Shangguan Clan?!”

Shangguan Chong was furious! The energy of a Combat Soul warrior instantly swept across the auction hall. He stretched out his hand and grabbed toward Jiang Chen.

While facing such a ferocious attack, Jiang Chen didn't even move a little bit from the auction stage. This was because he knew someone would stand out for him.

“Stay your hand!”

Indeed, a loud shout sounded out through the entire auction hall. In the following second, Master Blissful appeared. He casually unleashed a bright beam and shattered Shangguan Chong's attack.

“Why are you fighting here? Do you still have any respect for me?”

Master Blissful was clearly angry, because this was his place.

“Master Blissful, I’m sure you know what’s going on here. Furthermore, it was the Shangguan Clan who struck first just now.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Master Blissful, I didn’t mean to violate the rules of the Blissful Island, but this guy has insulted me! I can’t let this matter be settled easily!”

Shangguan Chong’s fury soared higher with each passing moment.

“Precisely! We must kill this little bastard!”

Ye Xiao had the same intense killing intent.

Master Blissful furrowed his brows. Although he was one of the strongest people in the ocean, he didn’t want to offend superpowers like the Myriad Sword Sect and the Shangguan Clan.

“Chen Jiang, can you give me some face and give up this bet?”

Master Blissful looked at Jiang Chen.

“Alright, since that’s what Master Blissful wants, I’ll respect your request. They don’t have to eat the dog shit, but they have to receive it. Big Yellow, give it to them.”

Jiang Chen turned around to Big Yellow and spoke.

# Chapter 300 – Abnormality In The Ocean

---

“Alright!”

While wagging his tail, Big Yellow pointed his butt toward Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong. This was a posture that no one could stare at straightly. In an instant, Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong's expressions changed dramatically, and their bodies started violently trembling because of the fury within.

Just Big Yellow's posture alone could be considered the biggest insult to both the Myriad Sword Sect and the Shangguan Clan.

Under the audience's shocked gazes, Big Yellow's ass suddenly became bigger. After that, following an explosive sound, a huge glowing green poop shot out from his ass and flew toward Ye Xiao.

A split second afterward, another explosive sound was heard. Big Yellow shout out a second massive poop that was as big as a human's head, and it flew toward Shangguan Chong.

GRAAAAAAAH!

Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong were like some provoked ancient barbaric beasts, and they instantly entered a violent rage. Both of them let out wild roars, waved their hands and unleashed a Yuan energy beams. The beams were scorching hot, and could effortlessly melt Big Yellow's poop.

Just like everyone had expected, Big Yellow's poop was even more powerful than his fart. The pungent smell coming from both poops was enough to kill someone. Many people strived not to throw up. For the first time in their lives, they were paying so much attention to two dog poops.

It was impossible to ask Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong to eat dog poop. Both of them were highly revered men, and they would rather die than suffer that kind of insult. Big Yellow's actions just now had severely insulted them; today's incident would definitely become a permanent stain that would follow these two well-known men for the rest of their lives. They would become laughing stocks wherever they went in the future.

Therefore, Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong countered back with hatred. When both Yuan energy beams hit the poops, an explosive sound swept across the scene. However, what happened next was out of everyone's expectations, it shocked every single person in the most terrifying manner.

The poops that were supposed to disappear were only shattered by the Yuan energy beams, and they only turned into tiny bits of poop.

Furthermore, those tiny bits of poop were still shooting toward both men with lightning speed.

Fuck!

Some simply closed their eyes. What was going to happen next

was something really unbearable to witness.

Those tiny bits of poop were like the water splashing from the surface of a pond, and they covered every single corner they possible could. For the first time, frightened expressions emerged on both Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong's faces, as if they had just seen the most horrifying thing underneath the heavens. In an instant, they unleashed their Yuan energy once again.

But too bad, there was simply too many pieces. Furthermore, Big Yellow's poop was like some sticky worms, and they carried some strength. Also, the pungent smell had distracted the two men's focus. Therefore, even with their incredible cultivation, they didn't manage to destroy all the tiny bits of poop.

A scene that made everyone feel like they were about to vomit blood unfolded. Two respectable great Combat Soul seniors were hit by countless tiny bits of dog poop. The pungent smell lingering on their bodies was enough to simply kill someone. Even worse, they were hit twice on their faces. Even if it was just two tiny bits of dog poop, it was something unbearable.

To make things worse, one tiny bit fell right above Ye Xiao's lip! The pungent smell which could make anyone go crazy immediately snuck into his nose.

Blergh...

The great Combat Soul warrior threw up on the spot.

“Ah!!! Damn dog, I’m going to tear you into a thousand pieces!”

Ye Xiao was completely enraged, and so was Shangguan Chong. Their Yuan energies trembled violently and shattering the long robes covering their bodies, then it swept across the entire auction hall. This was a massive insult, this was even worse than directly killing them! From today onwards, they could no longer hold their heads up high and walk straightly. They must kill this damn dog and tear him into a thousand pieces! They must break all of that damn Chen Jiang’s bones and burn him into ashes!

Both men were at the brink of collapsing, they had completely lost their minds. Without hesitating, they both attacked Big Yellow at the same time.

“Enough!”

Master Blissful suddenly shouted out loudly. He stretched out both hands and unleashed two huge cage, then he threw them at Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong. In an instant, both rampaging men were under his control. They were only Early Combat Soul warriors, and Master Blissful had broken through to the Mid Combat Soul realm. The gap between them was pretty large.

“Master Blissful, are you sure you want to be the Myriad Sword Sect’s enemy?”

“Let go of me! If you don’t, I’ll send everyone from the Shangguan Clan and destroy every single thing on this Blissful Island!”

Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong yelled. Both of them were completely enraged, not once in their entire lives had they been this mad! This caused them to become hostile against the Blissful Island, regarding consequences. They must kill Jiang Chen and Big Yellow no matter what! If they don't, they wouldn't have any face left.

“Humph! Are you threatening me? Don't you forget where you are right now! On this island, no one dares break the rules set by me! The trade fair is far from ending, no one is allowed to fight here. I not killing you two is already giving a lot of face to the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan!”

Master Blissful coldly harrumphed. As a demon lord of the ocean, although he didn't want to offend superpowers like the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan, he didn't fear them either.

Stunned by Master Blissful's imposing energy, the two men's hostile auras finally calmed down a little. They realized this wasn't the Eastern Continent; they were in the vast ocean! If they really started fighting here, they would be at a disadvantageous side.

“Master Blissful, between us and that guy, one of us has to die! Are you sure you want to stand on his side and become an enemy of two superpowers?”

Ye Xiao said.



“Let me repeat myself; this place is the auction hall, and as long as you’re on my Blissful Island, you have to obey the rules set by me. You can settle your scores once you leave the island.”

Master Blissful said once again. His words gave enough face to the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan. Although he admired Jiang Chen, he didn’t want to offend both superpowers because of him.

Jiang Chen handled the situation with a calm expression. Just showing himself and stopping the conflict could be considered a great help from Master Blissful. Furthermore, the grievance between himself, the Myriad Sword Sect and the Shangguan Clan was not something Master Blissful could solve. After all, the strength and resources of both superpowers was not something the Blissful Island could compare with.

“Alright, if that’s the case, we’ll wait until the trade fair comes to an end.”

Shangguan Chong said with a loud voice. Master Blissful had made a concession, and they couldn’t push him too much. Although they had strong backgrounds, it didn’t mean that their combat strength was high as well. A demon lord like Master Blissful was wild in nature, he had a ferocious side hidden within himself, and if he was pushed too much and really killed them, their deaths would be for nothing.

“The auction ends now. You can all take rest in the manor, and leave the Blissful Island tomorrow.”

Master Blissful announced to the audience.

The Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect were the first to leave the auction hall and return to their courtyards. They had been greatly insulted during the auction, and that made Ye Xiao and Shangguan Chong feel very shameful while in public. With their current circumstances, they should supposedly leave Blissful Island immediately, but before they killed Jiang Chen, none of them would leave.

The auction had ended, and under the lead from the Blissful Manor's personnel, the crowd left the auction hall in an orderly manner. Everyone were whispering amongst each other. Chen Jiang and his dog had catapulted themselves into the limelight, and two massive poops had become a permanent memory for everyone. Both superpowers, the Myriad Sword Sect and the Shangguan Clan had become laughingstocks.

The trade fair would come to an end by tomorrow. Every year before this, most warriors would have left the island by now, but this time, none of them left. Everyone stayed back and waited for the grand show that was about to happen tomorrow.

The Myriad Sword Sect, the Shangguan Clan, and the Qingyi Sect; all three of them were determined to kill Jiang Chen. Therefore, once the trade fair officially ended tomorrow, they would definitely be a great show to watch, everyone knew this.

After the crowds left, the auction hall was left with Master

Blissful, Xu Neng, Jiang Chen, Han Yan and Big Yellow.

“Brother Chen Jiang, here are three drops of Nine Solar Holy Water, take a look.”

Master Blissful grabbed the Nine Solar Holy Water from Xu Neng’s hand and passed it to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen’s eyes instantly lit up. He took the jade bottle and placed it into his storage ring. He didn’t have to look at it, just from the aura itself, Jiang Chen knew it was the real Nine Solar Holy Water.

Here are the three Nine Soul Restoration Pills. Also, here are the Mortal and Earth Restoration Pills for the items I won in the auction before this.”

Jiang Chen handed the three Nine Soul Restoration Pills to Master Blissful. At the same time, he took out a storage bag. Within the bag there was a massive amount of Mortal and Earth Restoration Pills. It was the price of those items he had won in the auction.

“Brother Chen Jiang, you don’t have to give me these pills. For those items you won in the auction, just take them as a gift from me; consider them a token of friendship. Actually, I wish you could stay here for a few more days, but because of your conflict with the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan, I think you should leave tonight.”

Master Blissful continued and said, “Although I have no fear of those two superpowers, I don’t want to become their enemy either. After all, I have put in a lot of effort in order to build this island, and once I become their enemy, everything here will most likely be destroyed.”

“Thank you, Master Blissful. Chen Jiang understands the situation.”

Jiang Chen had a pretty good impression of Master Blissful. This man was genuinely helping him.

“Alright, Brother Chen Jiang, I think you should leave now; take this opportunity before the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan notices anything. If you can, please come back and meet me in the future.

Master Blissful said.

Right after Master Blissful finished speaking, the entire Blissful Island started violently shaking. After that, wild wind started blowing from the ocean, and the ocean waves’ started snarling.

“What’s happening? Such tremendous activity has never happened in the ocean!”

Master Blissful’s expression changed. With the wild wind blowing, Jiang Chen and the others could clearly feel the temperature of the ocean changing, and that caused the

temperature on the Blissful Island to drop significantly.

“The temperature is dropping quickly, this has never happened before! Is something big going to happen?”

Xu Neng’s expression changed as well.

Rumble!! ...

Billows flowed into the sky, and the activity was becoming greater and greater. Big Yellow’s ears stood up, then he immediately told Jiang Chen through his divine sense, “Little Chen, something big is happening in the ocean; we can’t leave now!”

Jiang Chen’s expression finally changed. Even without Big Yellow’s words, he could sense that something unusual was going to happen.